This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google™ books

https://books.google.com



The GREAT WAR

THE STANDARD HISTORY
OF THE
ALL-EUROPE CONFLICT

Edited by
H. W. WILSON

Digitized by Google

Ex Libris
C. K. OGDEN

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

THE GREAT WAR

VOLUME 4



Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



Frontispiece Vol. IV. "THE GREAT WAR". From the Painting by C. M. Sheldon.

"The Smile of Victory."

Digitized by Google

THE GREAT WAR

THE STANDARD HISTORY OF THE ALL-EUROPE CONFLICT

EDITED BY

H. W. WILSON

Author of "With the Flag to Pretoria"
"Japan's Fight for Freedom" etc.

and

J. A. HAMMERTON

Editor "Harmsworth History of the World"

PROFUSELY ILLUSTRATED

VOLUME 4

LONDON
THE AMALGAMATED PRESS LIMITED
1915

Digitized by Google

CONTENTS OF VOLUME 4

PAGE

CHAPTER LXVI.
The British Offensive, and the Second Battle of Ypres - - - - - 1

CHAPTER LXVII.
The Fighting Around the Persian Gulf - - - - - - - - - 37

CHAPTER LXVIII.
Botha's Victorious Campaign in German South-West Africa - - - 53

CHAPTER LXIX.
The Battles of Hooge, Rouges Bancs, and Festubert - - - - - 67

CHAPTER LXX.
Italy's Entry into the War - - - - - - - - - - - - 95

CHAPTER LXXI.
The Marvellous Work of the Red Cross - - - - - - - - 121

CHAPTER LXXII.
Germany During the First Year of the War - - - - - - - 145

CHAPTER LXXIII.
The Strategy of General Joffre, and the War of Attrition along the French Front - - - - - - - - - - - - - - - 169

CHAPTER LXXIV.
The "Silver Bullets": a Dramatic Story of World-wide Finance - - 197

CHAPTER LXXV.
The French Advance Towards Lens, and the Battle of "The Labyrinth" 225

CHAPTER LXXVI.
The Fall of Lemberg, and the Russian Retreat from Galicia - - - 253

CHAPTER LXXVII.
The Gigantic Attempt to Envelop the Russian Armies - - - - - 281

CHAPTER LXXVIII.
The War and the Worker: A Year's Survey - - - - - - - 309

CHAPTER LXXIX.
The Battle of Rue d'Ouvert and Stony Mountain, and the Struggle round Hooge - - - - - - - - - - - - - - 329

CHAPTER LXXX.
The Incomparable Achievement of the Belgian Army - - - - - 343

CHAPTER LXXXI.
"For Valour": Heroes of the Victoria Cross in the First Year of the War 365

CHAPTER LXXXII.
An Inside View of Russia in War Time - - - - - - - - 393

CHAPTER LXXXIII.
The Heroic Struggle on Gallipoli Peninsula, and the Suvla Bay Battles - 409

SPECIAL PHOTOGRAVURE PLATES

"The Smile of Victory" - - - - - - - - - Frontispiece
Her Majesty Elizabeth, Queen of the Belgians - - - - Facing page 28
Flight Sub.-Lieut. R. A. J. Warneford, V.C. - - - - Facing page 94
Right Hon. David Lloyd George, M.P., Minister of Munitions Facing page 197

Digitized by Google

Stack
Annex
5
014
713
v.4

THE GREAT WAR

THE STANDARD HISTORY OF THE ALL-EUROPE CONFLICT

VOLUME 4

CHAPTER LXVI.

THE BRITISH OFFENSIVE AND THE SECOND BATTLE OF YPRES.

The Superiority of German Staff Work—The Difficulties of Sir John French and his Staff—The Germans Profit by the Lesson of Neuve Chapelle—No Important Forward Movement Possible on the British Front—Gauging our Weakness, the Germans Resume their Attack on Ypres—Violent Conflict at St. Eloi—British Counter-Attack Succeeds—Opening of Battle for Hill 60—Heroic Defence by the East Surreys—French Division North of Ypres Broken by Sudden Gas Attack—Extreme Peril of the Unsupported Canadian Division—Fifty Thousand Germans Attack Eight Thousand Canadians—Magnificent Stand Made by Our Overwhelmed and Enveloped Colonial Troops—How the Canadian Scottish and the 10th Canadian Battalion Recovered the Guns—The Left Wing of the Canadian Division is Involved—Heroic Frontal Attack by Combined British and Canadian Forces Saves Ypres—Heroic Part Played by British Territorials and Yeomanry in the Desperate Struggle—The Miners of Durham Hold the Gravenstafel Ridge—Shell-Trap Farm and the Monmouth Territorials—A London Shopman, with Six Men, Holds the German Army at Bay—A Soldier's Account of a Soldiers' Battle.

AS we have seen in the previous chapter, the chief of the combined German and Austrian Staffs, General von Falkenhayn, took steps to anticipate the grand attack which the Allies in the west intended to make in the spring of 1915. But the urgent necessity of driving back the Russian armies that had invaded Hungary, owing to Hindenburg's failure in strategy, brought about a reversal of Falkenhayn's plan. In the long ordeal of battle it had been proved that the plan of campaign drawn up by the former conqueror of France and Austria — Moltke — and developed and put into execution in August, 1914, by his nephew, was based on a wrong view of the general position.

The younger Moltke and his generals had proceeded on the assumption that France was the weaker and Russia the stronger of their enemies. They had therefore attacked the weaker nation in overwhelming force, while practically standing on the defensive against the stronger nation, until by their victory in the west they could concentrate all their principal armies against the foe they most feared—Russia. At least six-sevenths of the entire military strength of Germany was used against France in the first phase of the war. With perhaps two exceptions, all the twenty-five and a half German army corps of the first line were employed on the western front, with most of the thirty army corps of the first reserve. Hindenburg won the victory of Tannenberg in East Prussia in August, 1914, mainly with Landwehr and Landsturm troops, and part of the garrisons of Königsberg and Thorn. All the best German troops, numbering over two and a half millions, were then in Belgium and France.



ON THE ROOF OF AN OFFICERS' BOMB-PROOF SHELTER.

Falkenhayn was a man of a trenchant and able character. He came to the opinion that the elder Moltke, with all his followers, had been disastrously wrong, and when he got into his hands the entire control of all the military forces of Germany and Austria-Hungary — which happened after the dismissal of Hindenburg—he completely reversed the Moltkean plan of campaign on a double front. Recognising that France was the stronger enemy, he adopted for the

2025822

Digitized by Google

time a purely defensive position against her, and used all other available forces for an offensive campaign against the relatively weaker armies of Russia. It was a bold and novel plan, which had been advocated by Bernhardi, and undoubtedly it was sound. Had it been adopted in August, 1914, the probabilities of a decisive German success, first against Russia and then against France, would have been greatly increased. For Russia certainly began the war with a comparatively small force of men and guns, and if Germany and Austria had combined both their first-line armies and a large part of their reserve troops against her, she would have been badly defeated. Kieff and Odessa would have been lost, and in all probability St. Petersburg—or Petrograd, as we must now call it.



A STREET IN SHELL-SHATTERED ARRAS.

The Germans would have had little to fear in a defensive campaign against France. This is proved by the course of events on the western front in the spring of 1915. The excellence of organisation of the German Staff work in this defensive campaign was incomparable. It showed that nations like the Japanese, the Chilians, and the Turks were not mistaken when they regarded the War Academy in Berlin as the best centre of military knowledge in the world.

Since the days of Frederick the Great our country has followed the lead of the Prussians in many military matters, and the tradition then established was maintained by our War Office down to the outbreak of the present hostilities. The reorganisation of our Army after the Boer War was partly guided by the German model. If Mr. Brodrick did little more than introduce the German style of cap, his successors made some attempt to develop—though timidly and half-heartedly—the German system of organisation in England. We remained, however, far behind our masters in the foresightful preparation of the weapons and instruments of war, and in the intellectual quality and organising genius of our Staff work. These lessons we had to learn, along with the French, by costly experience of actual war.

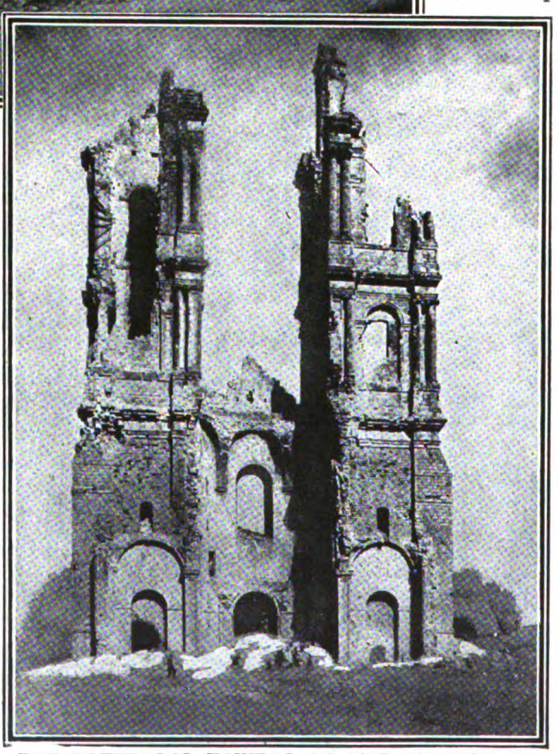
The German lead in organisation

The German Staff gave us our first lesson in trench warfare on the Aisne. We used open trenches and few heavy howitzers, few machine-guns, and fewer high-explosive shells. In spite of these disadvantages, our men, by their superior courage and superior personal skill, stormed the plateau by the river. But the German Staff was equal to the occasion. It at once introduced, on a vast general scale, the system of barbed-wire entanglements, shrapnel-proof trenches, and an extraordinary number of machine-gun redoubts.

The French Staff at once reorganised its work on the German model, and took immediate steps to increase its heavy artillery, to speed up the manufacture of shells, and to double the number of machine-guns used by every battalion. By February, 1915, the French nation, within the limits of its crippled industrial strength, was well on the way to profit by all that it had learned on the battle-field from the German Staff.

Activity of the French Staff

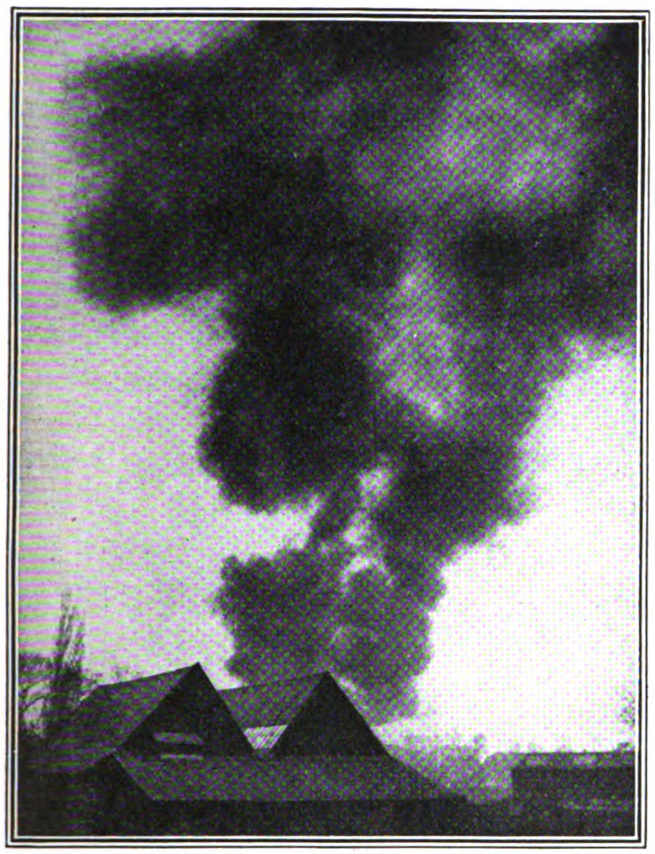
Our country was not so alert and active, not so generally intelligent and generally well organised. This was partly due to the fact that our people inclined to look upon the war as an adventure which did not require their entire energies. But in a more direct way it was occasioned by a gap between our War Office and the Commander-in-Chief in the field and his Staff. In France the Commander-in-Chief in the field was, for most practical purposes, in the position of a dictator. Parliament was his servant, for the mind and soul and energies of every Frenchman were bent upon the task of defeating and expelling the invader, and deputies, senators, and all the members of the Government were anxious only to know what they could do to assist General Joffre and his Staff. This intense and universal spirit of co-operation endowed General Joffre with the unexpressed but real powers of a dictatorship.



THE TOTTERING TOWERS OF THE CHURCH AT MONT ST. ELOI.

The position of Sir John French and his Staff was entirely different. They alone knew by actual experience what was needed in all the changing and developing conditions in modern scientific warfare into which mighty nations threw their entire forces. But between Sir John French and the eager, patriotic British people stood the War Office, manned by men who were apt to think—for, as Mr. Lloyd George has said, the professional mind is very conservative—that the lessons of the South African War were the last word in military science. Then, again, between the British

Digitized by Google



A GERMAN SHELL BURSTING OVER THE SHATTERED TOWN OF YPRES.

people and the War Office there interposed Parliament, containing men with a certain gift for persuasive oratory or a certain amount of wealth and degree of rank, but without a first-hand knowledge of science, and quite devoid of any power of appreciating and solving modern military problems. There were also in our country some large bodies of persons of a very unwarlike temper—descendants of the stocks that had been half frightened and half scornful of the use of the sword ever since the days of the Armada. They were very anxious for the maintenance of the principle of voluntary enlistment—which in ancient practice meant the use of the press-gang—because, for three hundred years, men of their way of thinking had escaped from the duty of defending their country by land and sea, while growing increasingly prosperous through the blood shed by the more spirited and patriotic members of our noble and working classes.

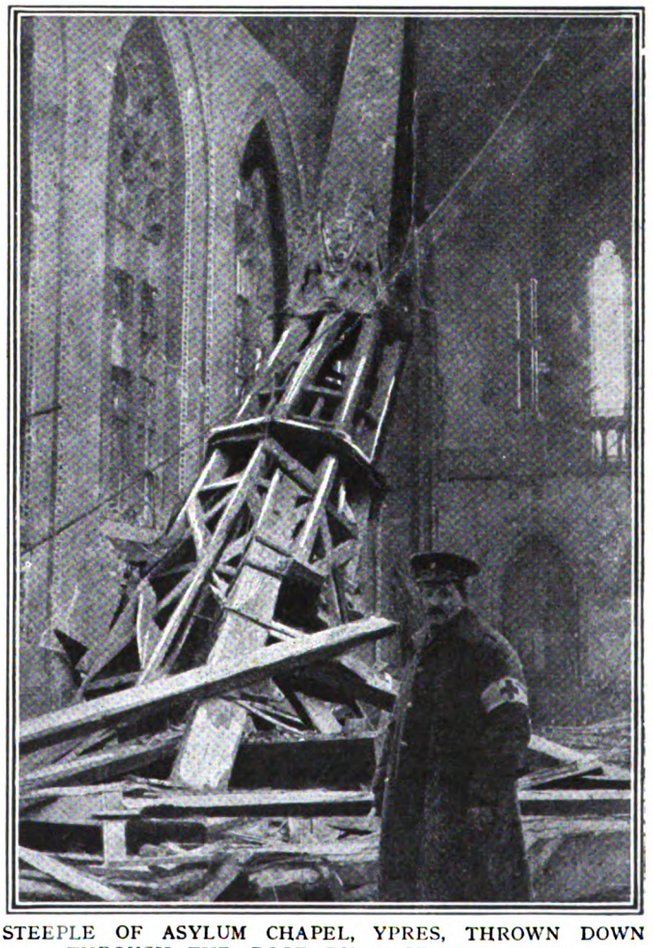
Sir John French, therefore, remained at the mercy of the authorities at home. If they thought that shrapnel was more useful against concrete and armour-plated trenches than high-explosive shell, or that a generous allowance of machine-guns to a battalion was a useless luxury, their judgment in the matter obtained. Even at Neuve Chapelle, in the middle of March, 1915, the British artillery was mainly restricted to the use of shrapnel shell, and the high-explosive projectiles were supplied by the gunners of General Foch's armies who assisted in the battle.

Home judgment and ammunition

After Neuve Chapelle the German commanders along the British front—Prince Rupert of Bavaria and the Duke of Würtemberg—took effectual steps to prevent the repetition of the British success. The German Staff at the opening of the war had provided their armies with steam trench-making machines. To these machines were added, along the German front in the spring of 1915, concrete-making machines. The German Staff feared most of all a grand offensive movement by Sir John French around Lille or by General Foch north of Arras. Therefore, on both these sections of the front concrete systems of entrenchments were constructed with steel loopholes and perfect cover against rifle, machine-gun, and shrapnel fire. Tens of thousands of newly-trained machine-gun parties with new machine-guns were brought to the Franco-British front to hold the first line of trenches. Most of the infantry were withdrawn into concrete shelters in the last line, connected by telephone with the advanced observation posts, from which every movement of the opposing forces was watched. The support trenches were linked to the front by means of tunnels, which the Germans said "resembled the Englishman's 'Tubes' in London." The idea was, of course, to mitigate the consequences of sudden bombardments like that which had opened the Battle of Neuve Chapelle, and at the same time to maintain along the front an annihilating fire-power against any sudden infantry attacks. The new German system was admirably conceived and perfectly executed. As a British officer said, when we made our first capture of a small section of the newly-modelled German trenches: "Our men are better men than the Germans, but the German Staff work has us completely beaten."

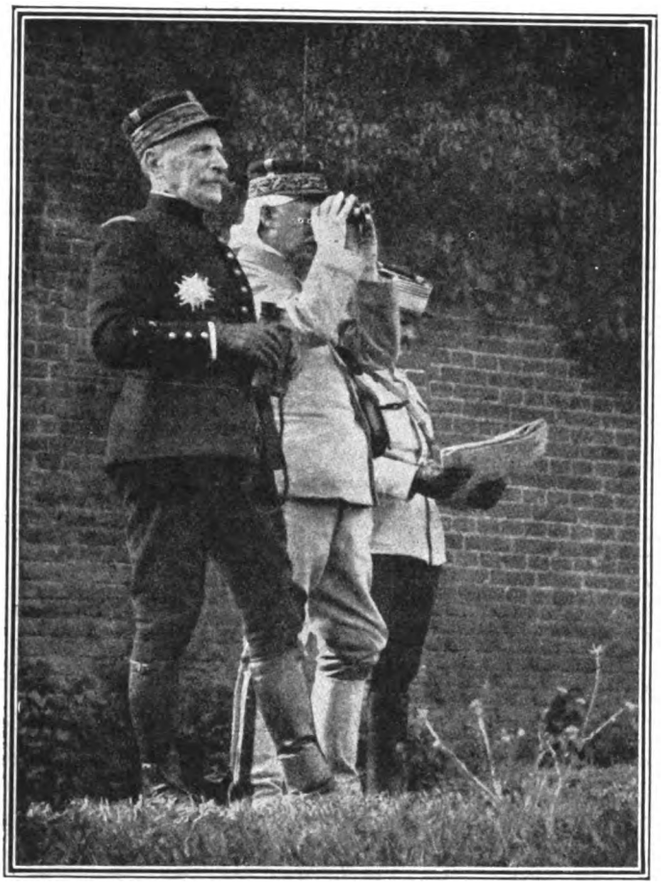
Concrete trenches and machine-guns

To speak quite frankly, in the warlike operations on the Continent of Europe, Great Britain remained almost impotent at the time when France and Russia had the right to expect that our enormous resources of human force and industrial power would mature into the decisive factor in the Great War. At the opening of hostilities our politicians had talked much about organising at once the entire energies of our country in the cause of civilisation. After nine and more months of battles on land, in which Belgium and France, Serbia and Russia, wavered between



STEEPLE OF ASYLUM CHAPEL, YPRES, THROWN DOWN THROUGH THE ROOF BY A GERMAN SHELL.

Digitized by Google



GENERAL FOCH (LEFT) WATCHING THE DEVELOPMENT OF FRENCH OFFENSIVE MOVEMENT NORTH OF ARRAS.

national disaster and national salvation, our unattacked, rich, busy, highly-industrialised free country still played almost as small a part as crippled and manacled Belgium in the land operations in the vast and world-shaking struggle. The various fronts held by the Allies measured about 1,656 miles. The Russians held a front of 850 miles, the French held a front of 540 miles, the Serbians and Montenegrins defended 218 miles; the British front was 30 miles long, and the Belgian lines about 18 miles long. This was apparently the utmost we could do in the decisive theatre of war at a time when, according to an extraordinary statement made by Mr. Lloyd George, we had thirty-six divisions of troops ready for battle. Thirty-six divisions are eighteen army corps; in eighteen army corps there are nearly three-quarters of a million of infantrymen, supported by an artillery corps of more than 2,000 light and heavy field-guns. With 500 heavy howitzers, including our converted 9·2 in. naval gun, and 500 heavy pieces of artillery from the Creusot and other French works, and twenty million high-explosive shells, we might have had, in the late spring of 1915, a tremendous battering-ram at least equal in power to the Grand Phalanx with which Mackensen was endangering the entire military position of Russia. As, however, it appeared from Mr. Lloyd George's speeches that we were producing in a month, after three-quarters of a year's organisation of our industries on a war basis, less high-explosive shell than German and Austrian factories were turning out in a day, our long and loudly announced grand advance in the spring of 1915 did not take place.

Our failure in shell supply

What stores of war material we prepared for the liberation of Belgium were partly diverted to the operations in the Dardanelles. These operations were designed mainly with a view to opening a short, direct, and convenient route for supplying Russia with munitions of war to enable her to maintain the pressure against Hungary. Owing to the superiority of German Staff work in the Gallipoli Peninsula and the lack of high-explosive shells for our naval bombardment of the Turkish position, the forcing of the Dardanelles was not achieved in time to help Russia, She not only lost her footing on the Hungarian plain, but was deprived of the magnificent railway system in Galicia, and thrown back entirely upon her own meagre, inadequate railways, where her position became for the time difficult. So difficult was it that the port of Archangel was closed to ordinary traffic for some time in the spring to enable the French and British military authorities to pour into Russia all the war material they could possibly spare. Our proposed great offensive movement was not a matter of vital necessity at the moment, but to prevent the breaking of the Russian front and the destruction of one or more of the Russian armies was almost a matter of life and death. For this reason among others our main army serving in France and Flanders did not receive the heavy reinforcements that were expected to reach it in the spring.

Why our Army was held back

During all the late spring and early summer the British Expeditionary Force, by reason of its weakness in armament, had to remain on the defensive, no important forward movement being possible. The utmost Sir John French's men achieved, through a lack of high-explosive shell and of additional heavy artillery, was to make some heroic bayonet and grenade attacks on the first and second lines of German trenches. But most of these local operations were in the nature either of counter-attacks or of diversions, intended to pin the Germans to their positions and prevent the movement of hostile troops. All the important offensive operations on an important scale after the affair at Neuve Chapelle were conducted by the French, who possessed large and unfailing supplies of high-explosive shells of all calibres, including the biggest.

The situation on the western front was then practically stationary. In the great battles beginning at Charleroi and Mons in August and ending at Ypres in November, 1914, the German Staff had two and a half million troops in France and Flanders, and then increased their number to three million and more. When this force of such unparalleled magnitude was greatly reduced by casualties, strong drafts and new formations brought it up again at the beginning of the winter of 1914 to two and a half million men. But when Hindenburg opened his second campaign against Warsaw, the losses on the Bzura were so heavy that about half a million troops were taken from France and Flanders. This left fifty army corps on the western front, composed in all of two million men, of whom one million two hundred thousand were infantry. Then, when the Grand Phalanx was formed under Mackensen, twenty-four battalions of the Prussian Guard, eighteen battalions of the Eighteenth Army Corps, sixteen battalions of the 56th Division, nine battalions of the 16th Bavarian Division, and nine battalions of the 119th Division were taken, mainly from the British and Belgian front, to form the spear-head of the Phalanx. In all about three army corps were removed from the western front. The French, British, and Belgian troops were then faced by 1,128,000 German infantrymen only, holding a front of five hundred and eighty-eight miles. A considerable stretch of this front was the mountainous land of the Vosges, which could be defended with comparatively small forces, armed with a large number of machine-guns and artillery.

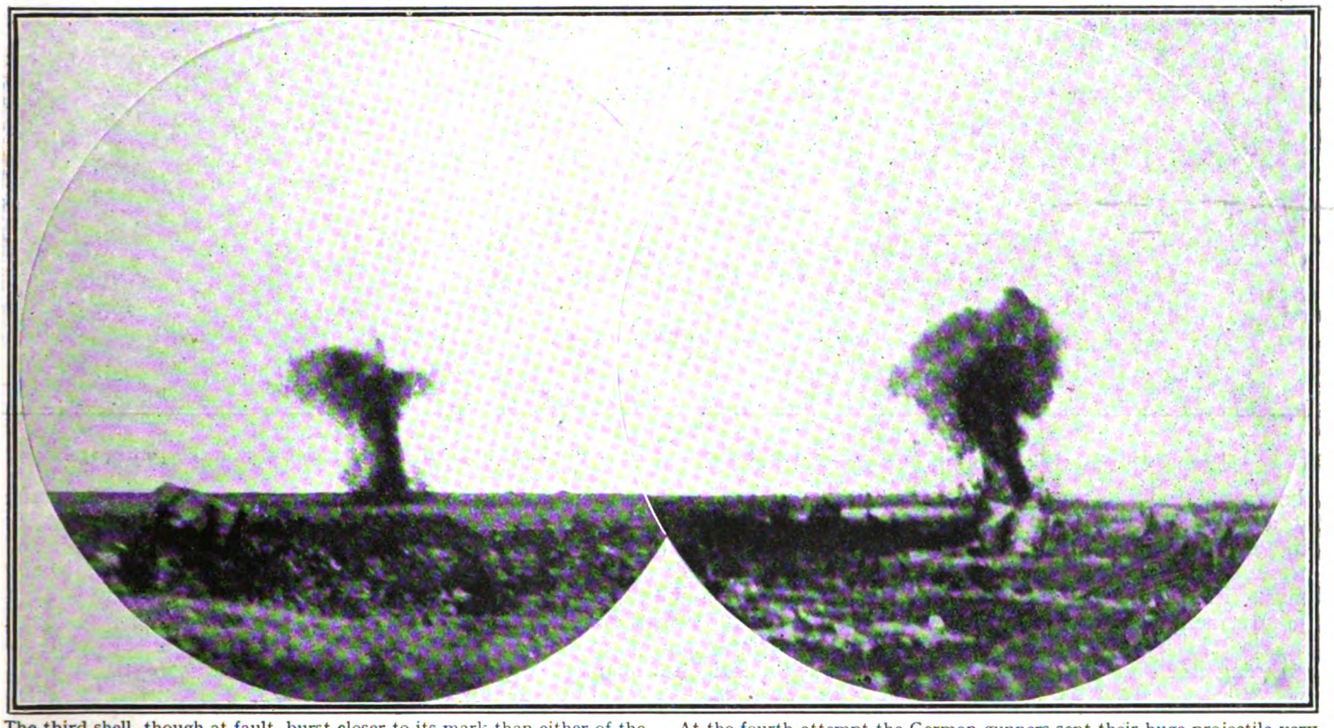
But there remained at least some four hundred miles of front in country of an ordinary character, where on the Continental system of reckoning, the trenches required a garrison of two men to a yard. There were needed, therefore, 1,408,000 infantrymen to garrison a fairly level front, and at least another 300,000 infantrymen to hold

Digitized by Google



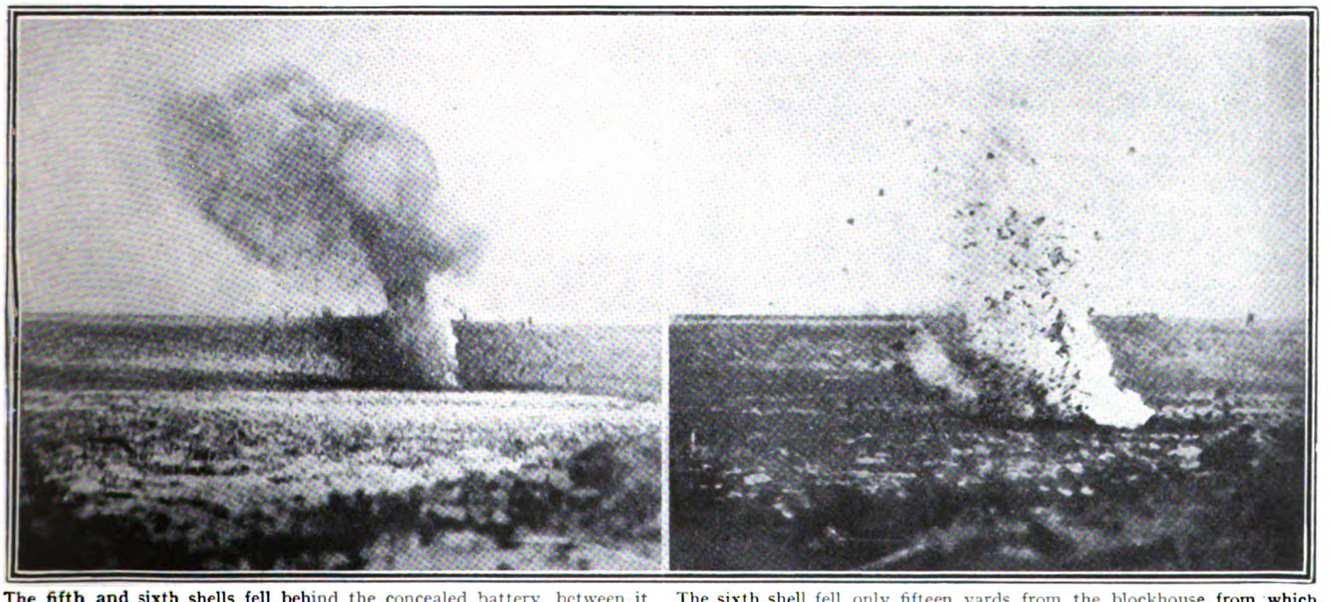
At the first attempt a German 150 mm. shell burst well in front of the concealed French battery, far wide of the mark.

The second shell burst much closer to the battery and more to the right. This photograph was taken some seconds after the explosion.



The third shell, though at fault, burst closer to its mark than either of the previous two.

At the fourth attempt the German gunners sent their huge projectile very near to the French position.



The fifth and sixth shells fell behind the concealed battery, between it and a blockhouse eighty yards to the rear.

The sixth shell fell only fifteen yards from the blockhouse from which these instantaneous photographs were obtained.

FAILURE OF GERMAN GUNNERS TO LOCATE A CONCEALED FRENCH BATTERY.

Digitized by Google



THE AWFUL EFFECT OF A FRENCH MINE EXPLOSION UNDER A GERMAN TRENCH.
French Staff-officers watching the explosion of a great mine under a German trench. Effect of the explosion is shown on opposite page.

the mountainous, or very hilly regions. So, altogether, at a low estimate, the Germans required over a million and a half of infantry. This was the number they had possessed in France and Flanders early in the winter of 1914. In the spring of 1915 they were about 400,000 infantrymen short on the western front. They were this amount short for defensive purposes. For a strong and sweeping offensive movement they were nearly a million men short.

The French Army, on the other hand, had sixty-two and a half army corps on the front, according to a statement published by the French Staff, which enabled it to put a million and a half infantry into the trenches. France also had another million and a half men in her depots. Belgium, in spite of her calamities, had three army corps in the field, while Britain increased her original small force of two army corps and a division to something more than a quarter of a million men. We had, indeed, a million men ready in regard to drill and training, but for reasons already mentioned their equipment was incomplete. The general result was that the French Commander-in-Chief had to do what he could in the way of an offensive movement with his own men and munitions, leaving the British force to stand, like the Belgian force, on the defensive.

The offensive left to Joffre

In these circumstances General Joffre spent some months in improving his position. As we have seen in the study of the French actions at Perthes, in Champagne, and at Soissons, on the Aisne, the German commander countered every attack by rearranging his troops and massing them as quickly as possible at the point of danger. This he did by means of the lateral railway lines running in the rear of all his front. These lateral railway lines became the object of a series of systematised attacks by General Joffre.

He intended to get his heavy guns and howitzers, at important intervals along the front, in such a series of positions that they could at the decisive moment rake the German system of lateral railways, and thus prevent the transport of troops, artillery, and munitions from point to point. This was all done by way of preparation for the launching of the grand allied attack that would clear France, and perhaps Belgium, of the invaders. General Joffre wished to win beforehand so many points of vantage against the enemy's lateral lines of communication that he would be able to check all considerable attempts at concentration while he was making his great thrust forward. None of his preparatory operations revealed what point he had selected for the attempt to break the German front.

He advanced against at least ten sections of the German lines. In particular he attacked round Lille, towards Lens, towards St. Quentin, towards La Fère, over the plain of Champagne, through the Argonne, towards Metz, towards Saarburg, towards Colmar, and towards Mulhouse. Everywhere his immediate object was to get gun-positions dominating the roads and railways used by the Germans. But it was difficult for the German Staff to divine whether the French commander was not at any given place of attack opening a path for an advance in large force. There was an incessant pushing movement by General Joffre, and wherever the Germans staggered more French forces were at once brought up. The enemy had therefore to counter-attack in a very strong and determined manner in order to save himself. In Alsace a small local victory won by an advanced French battalion brought an entire German army corps to the assault of the lost hill position. This showed how nervous the German Staff was getting. The British Expeditionary Force came in for many blows by reason of its defensive attitude. Whenever the French Army won a striking local success over the Germans, and then violently defeated a counter-attack, the German Staff seems to have ordered the Duke of Würtemberg or the Crown Prince of Bavaria to strike out at the British

German Staff getting nervous

Digitized by Google



WEEKS HAD BEEN SPENT IN SAPPING TO REACH THIS GERMAN POSITION.
The French in possession of the mined position. Artillery officers contemplating the result of their work.

front. It was not always cool, sound, strategical calculation, but often a rankling passion to avenge the Neuve Chapelle defeat that inspired the movements against the British lines.

Immediately after the Battle of Neuve Chapelle an attempt was made to return the sudden blow by rushing part of the line held by our Second Army, under General Sir Horace Smith-Dorrien. As a point of attack the enemy chose the village of St. Eloi, at the important junction of two main roads running from Ypres to Armentières and Warneton. Our lines enclosed the village eastward, and included a large mound on the south-east of it. The hostile sappers had run a mine under the mound, and after a hurricane fire of heavy shells on our eastern trenches the Germans exploded the mine, and then launched an infantry attack. Our riflemen and gunners brought the enemy down in large numbers, but the Prussian system of close-packed formations proved successful.

Our first line of trenches was carried, and though our infantry still offered a determined resistance, they were enfiladed, and compelled to retreat as evening fell. The hostile force then drove on, took our support trenches and the mined mounds, and occupied the village. At half-past two on the morning of Monday, March 15th, our 82nd Brigade attacked in the darkness, and at the bayonet-point captured part of the trenches in the village. It was here that the Canadian troops had their first deadly tussle with the Germans, for Princess Patricia's battalion marched from its billets, joined the 4th Rifle Brigade, and attacked the mound with great vigour and fighting skill. At the same time two Irish battalions—the 2nd Royal Irish Fusiliers and the 1st Leinsters—with the 2nd Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry and the 4th Rifle Brigade, distinguished themselves in the heroic counter-attack. In the first rush our troops were only partly successful, but just before dawn the men of the 82nd Brigade and the "Stonewall" 80th Brigade stormed all the barricades the Germans had built across the streets, mastering the terrible fire of the enemy's machine-guns, and recaptured all their trenches eastward and westward of the village.

The fighting at St. Eloi

The fighting in the darkness, lighted only by searchlights and by the blaze of shells, was extremely fierce. But except for the mound, which was mined and bombarded into shapeless ruin, all our lost ground was recovered by Monday morning. The German commander was at the end of his resources, for he only sent out two hundred men to make a last assault. A few may have got back by crawling; the rest were heaped up before our trenches. It afterwards appeared that our artillery, judging their target by a sort of divination, placed their shells right on the German supports and broke them up. This was the reason why our counter-attacks were so successful.

Assault on Hill 60

A month then passed without the enemy attempting to retaliate. This was a sign of weakness on his part, and Sir H. Smith-Dorrien looked for a point of attack. There was a small hill about two miles north-east of St. Eloi, known as Hill 60 (so called because its height—60 metres or 200 feet—enabled it to be distinguished on the map). It was not much of a position in itself, but it screened the German batteries firing on Ypres from the neighbouring ridge westward at Zandvoord. The Bedfords had driven their trenches close to Hill 60, and their sappers tunnelled below the ground and constructed three large mines under the low rise. As a matter of fact, the German sappers were also busily engaged in mining under the Bedfords' trench, but our men heard them at work, and laboured with exceeding energy to outrace them. The race in destruction was won on the evening of Saturday, April 17th, when our mines exploded, blowing three large craters in the hill. Nearly all the one hundred and fifty German troops manning the hill

Digitized by Google



SECTION OF GERMAN BARBED-WIRE ENTANGLEMENTS RUSHED BY THE BRITISH.
The passage was forced under heavy gun fire, indicated by the pall of smoke in the background.

trench perished, and the Bedfords leaped up, charged, and captured a quarter of a mile of the enemy's broken line.

So suddenly was the assault carried out that our men met with scarcely any resistance. They occupied the craters, building up defences of sand-bags, and though the German guns and howitzers bombarded them all the night they did not suffer much damage. The real fight opened at seven o'clock on Sunday morning, April 18th, when a strong German infantry force advanced in close formation against the hill. Our guns caught them; but they were Saxons and brave fighters, and they pressed on up the hill slope for a bayonet charge. But by this time the Bedfords had been reinforced by the West Kents, and the West Kents are one of the finest fighting regiments in the world; they may have equals in the Worcesters and others, but they have no superiors. In addition, we had about thirty motor machine-guns, which were brought to the hilltop. The machine-guns took the enemy in front, while our shrapnel fire raked his flank. Twice the Germans tried to charge up the hill. Our men sang songs as the foe charged, and killed him first in hundreds and then in thousands.



IN A BRITISH TRENCH AT YPRES.
The photograph was taken a few moments before the order was given to charge the enemy's lines.

All day Sunday the German commander continued to hurl his troops against our trenches. As the hill formed a salient, the German corps commander was able to attack it from three sides, and bring a cross-fire to bear on our hastily-made defences. All day our men held out without reinforcements, waiting until the enemy collected for the charge, and then meeting him with magazine-rifle fire and with the sweeping stream of bullets from the machine-guns. But by continuing the pressure at all costs, the hostile commander managed to capture the southern edge of the hill at about six o'clock in the evening. The British brigadier-general opposing him had, however, full control of the situation, and sent up a battalion of Highlanders and the Duke of Wellington's Regiment to strengthen the weary Bedfords and West Kents. The Highlanders, tall, sinewy men, went to work with the bayonet and hand-grenade, and greatly helped to sweep the Germans from their last foothold. Night fell with our troops firmly entrenched in the conquered position.

The rival claims to Hill 60

Meanwhile the German commander, writing his nightly reports to headquarters, anticipated events by saying that he had recaptured the hill. So the next day the neutral world was astonished to hear from Sir John French that Hill 60 was in his possession, and to learn from the Duke of Würtemberg that he also possessed Hill 60. Thus it came about that a little local affair, on an unimportant mound, became one of the most famous conflicts in the Great War. For some months there had been an increasing disagreement between the daily official reports published by the German and French Staffs. The neutral public did not know what to think of the matter, and by tacit, spontaneous agreement in Europe and America, Hill 60 was made a test case.

This was extremely awkward for Duke Albrecht of Würtemberg and his too-confident subordinate general. All they could do in the circumstances was to turn their statement into a prophecy by the recapture of the lost

Digitized by Google

mound of earth. But, naturally, Sir John French acquired a deep and personal interest in the now world-famous hill of conflicting reports. Large reserves of British troops were moved towards the position; our artillery there was reinforced, and our rough sand-bag defences were improved by the engineers. All Sunday night the German guns thundered against the little hill. The intense, hysterical rage of the Germans at being caught in a misstatement, and then baffled by force of arms, caused them to cast off the last shreds of civilisation. One more scrap of paper was torn up—the Convention signed at The Hague on July 29th, 1899, by which the German Government, with all other civilised Powers, undertook not to employ projectiles whose only object was to diffuse asphyxiating and noxious gases. Our men on Hill 60 were smitten on three sides by projectiles filled with compressed poisonous gases. The East Surrey Regiment, who held the mound at the latter part of the long fight, suffered terribly. Their faces and arms turned a shiny, grey-black colour, and they groaned as they struggled for breath, the membrane of their throats thickened, and their lungs were eaten up by the chlorine fumes. Death in many cases was very slow in coming; the horrible, ghastly torture lasted from one to three days.

Germans use poisoned gas

But in spite of the fumes our men fought on. Private Dwyer, of the East Surreys, holding a position on the crest, was especially remarkable for his heroic fighting skill. In between the bursts of artillery fire, hostile storming parties with hand-grenades tried to bomb their way through our trenches. But they were beaten back in violent and bitter hand-to-hand fights in the labyrinth of winding approaches surrounding the trenches. The battle went on till Wednesday morning, April 21st, when the enemy was again driven over the edge of the hill. By this time the Germans had brought their field-guns within close range of our position; but our airmen and gunners made the adventurous hostile infantry pay for its daring, and by Wednesday evening the German guns had had enough of it and withdrew.

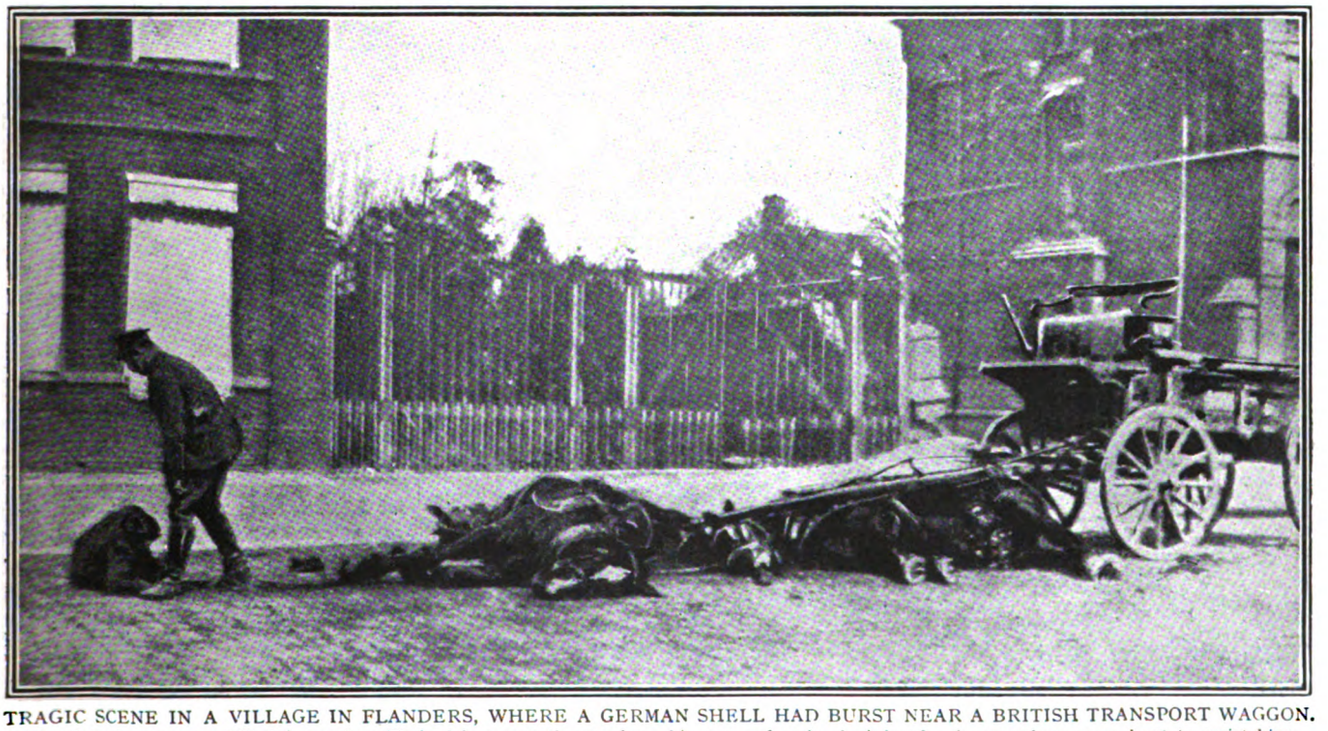
Some of our officers and men on Hill 60 had stood against the German guns and the Prussian Guard at Ypres the previous November, and they said that the little hill battle was by far the more terrible ordeal. The ground



BELGIAN VISCOUNT (LEFT) AND A COMPANION IN THE BELGIAN TRENCHES.
They are wearing captured German helmets.

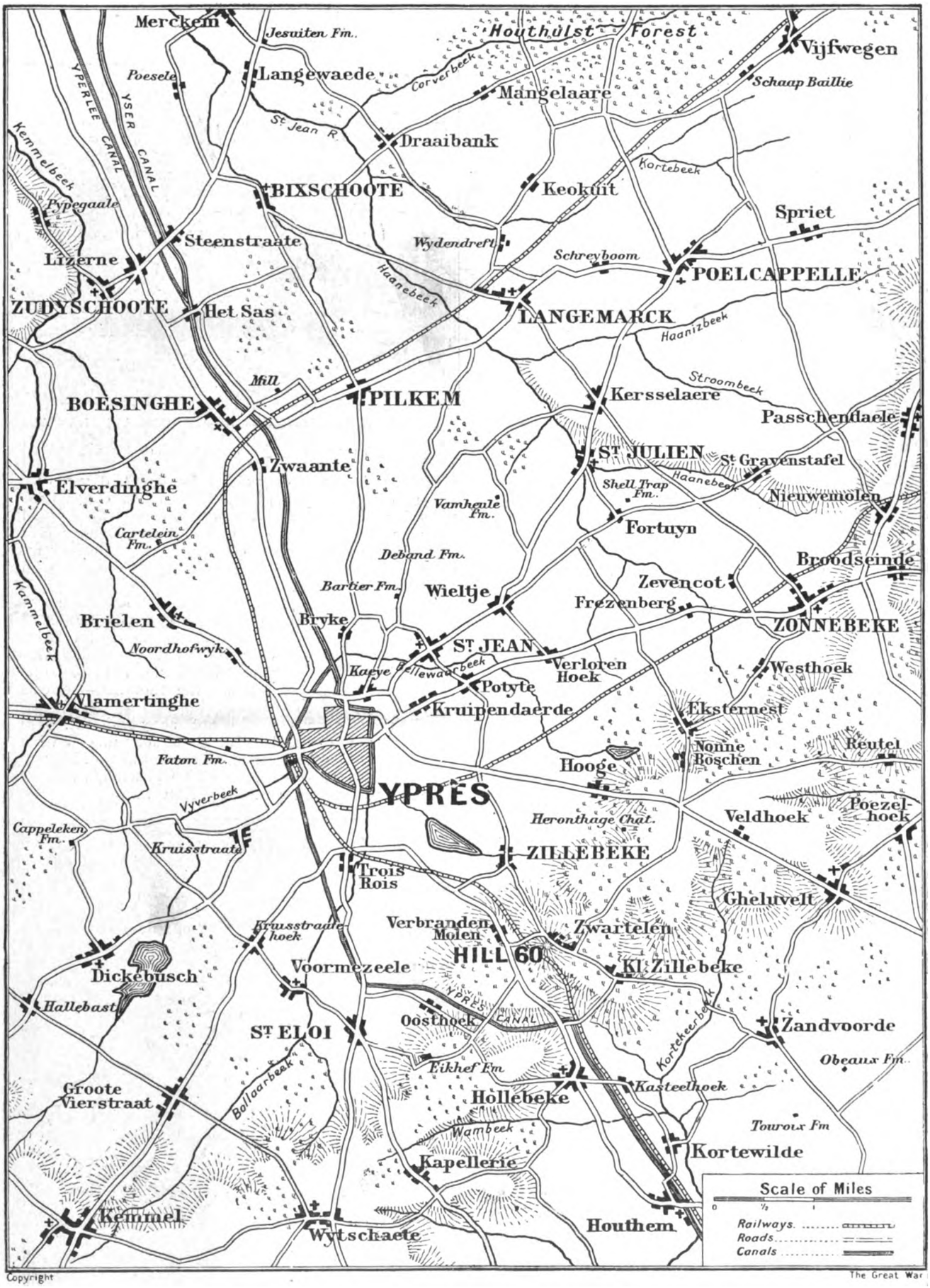
our troops held was only about two hundred yards long and two hundred yards broad. Hundreds of guns were massed against it, and for four and a half days the mound was buried in tons of metal and high-explosive, and wreathed in clouds of poison gas. Yet our men did not give way, though the shell fire destroyed whole sections in an instant, and so filled the trenches with dead bodies that reinforcements could only reach the front line by climbing over their dead comrades. In spite of the infernal destruction, the wonderful British soldier remained not only cool but cheerful. What cheered him was the fact that he did not need to be told that the Germans perished by the thousand—he could see it.

Still the Germans would not accept defeat. They waited until the wind blew at about four miles an hour from their trenches, and then, on the morning of May 5th, they completely blotted out Hill 60 in a high, greenish-yellow fog of poison gas. The East Surreys, who had



TRAGIC SCENE IN A VILLAGE IN FLANDERS, WHERE A GERMAN SHELL HAD BURST NEAR A BRITISH TRANSPORT WAGGON.
The four horses were killed instantly. Their driver was thrown from his seat and seriously injured. A comrade is seen about to assist him.

Digitized by Google



Copyright The Great War

MAP SHOWING THE PLACES MENTIONED IN OUR HISTORICAL NARRATIVE OF THE BRITISH OFFENSIVE AND THE SECOND BATTLE OF YPRES.

Digitized by Google



FIELD KITCHEN OF THE FRENCH ARMY IN THE VICINITY OF NEUVILLE ST. VAAST.

beaten the enemy back on May 1st, now had to retire to escape complete asphyxiation. But when the gas-cloud passed they charged back up the hill, where the enemy in turn had placed a great number of machine-guns. Helped by a heavy shell fire from our guns, the East Surreys reached some of their lost trenches in the first rush, and then fought on indomitably. In the end, neither side held Hill 60. There was no hill to hold. It was blown up and scattered by tens of thousands of high-explosive shells. But we held the trenches close by, and formed them into the base of our salient round Ypres.

In the meantime the entire salient of Ypres had become the scene of a long and most desperate battle—one of the most desperate battles in the whole war. Our delay in resuming the offensive after Neuve Chapelle was an undisguised revelation of weakness, and the German Staff decided therefore to attack. Reinforcements amounting to about 150,000 men were sent through Belgium, in addition to the troops sent to replace the larger part of the Prussian Guard and other first-line soldiers moved to the eastern front to form the Grand Phalanx. In the matter of men, however, the odds were not against our Second Army, as we had fairly large reserves. Falkenhayn, who directed the operations, was not relying on infantry power. In this respect he had a severe lesson at Ypres the previous autumn, and he profited by it. In spite of the material needed to build up the 4,000-gun battering-ram against Russia, the German Commander-in-Chief had such enormous resources that he was still able to overwhelm us with artillery fire. He brought up the great Krupp naval guns, and the 17 in. howitzers and 11 in. howitzers which had been used along the Belgian coast in repelling Admiral Hood's battleships and monitors.

Desperate battle round Ypres

This new siege train was placed in position against Ypres, and provisioned with an extraordinary amount of shells. But even this was not enough to ensure absolute success. So about the end of March a new weapon of destruction



BARRICADE OF ELECTRIFIED WIRE IN FRONT OF A FRENCH TRENCH.

was brought to the front. All along the German lines round Ypres—northward, southward, and eastward—gas-cylinders were placed on March 30th, 1915. Each steel cylinder was about fifty-three inches long, and was filled with various kinds of gases—chlorine and formaline being most widely employed. The cylinders were stored in bomb-proof casemates, in the proportion of one to every six and a half feet of the front. The officers directing the gas operations then waited until the wind was in an easterly or north-easterly direction. They had a long time to wait as the south-westerly spring breezes were blowing.

They patiently whiled away the time by putting their troops through the respirator drill, and our men afterwards noted that among the German respirators taken were some marked with the date 1911. Apparently the German Staff had contemplated employing poisonous gas at the time of the Agadir crisis. In this case, as in others, they had only agreed to Germany signing the Hague Convention against the use of asphyxiating gases with the object of preventing other countries from preparing in advance any form of defence against the weapon they intended to use. They were especially apprehensive of the use of gas by our country, which, by some, was

German respirators dated 1911

Digitized by Google

supposed to be the feature of the famous war plan prepared by Admiral Cochrane, son of the scientific Lord Dundonald. They believed in getting their blow in first, and used the humanitarian machinery of The Hague in order to disarm us, while they were secretly arming themselves. This was one more instance of the scheme of universal slaughter prepared in every detail by the German military class.

For more than three weeks the Germans vainly waited for a steady, favouring wind. It never came, and on Thursday, April 22nd, after they had been killing dogs by the hundred in asphyxiating experiments, they resolved to profit by a south-easterly wind blowing towards the French part of the front, north of Ypres. Here a French Colonial division of Zouaves and Turcos held the line stretching from Dixmude to Langemarck. Behind them was the Yser Canal, and in front of them a tract of wooded country held by part of the Duke of Würtemberg's army. At Langemarck the allied line was continued by the men of the Canadian Division under General Alderson. Behind the Canadians was the village of St. Julien, and on their right was Zonnebeke and the Roulers road, from which our lines swerved round south-west to Hill 60. The German general calculated that, if the French Colonial Division was broken north of Ypres, the line of the Canadians could be turned and Ypres captured in a sudden, driving, overwhelming sweep. The German soldiers appear to have been instructed in this plan, for their battle-cry was: "Forward and into Ypres!"



IN THE FRENCH LINES—OFFICIAL PHOTOGRAPH OF A COMMUNICATION TRENCH.

Although the Germans were unexcelled in the art of trench-making, the French proved not less thorough in their construction.

The gas-cylinders were opened about five o'clock on Thursday afternoon. The gas had been pumped in under great pressure, so that when the cylinders were opened it spurted out with great force, and did not float upon the wind until it was about a hundred yards from the German trenches. There, losing its impetus, it gathered into a low-lying cloud of greenish colour, which turned yellow as it streamed up to a height of about two hundred feet. The ghastly fog-bank drifted slowly down the wind, remaining thick on the ground owing to the density of the gases, and pouring into the French trenches and surprising all the troops there.

Ghastly effects of the chlorine

First their eyes began to smart under the influence of the formaline vapour, then the deadly chlorine acted on the membrane of their throats, and so thickened it that they began to choke. Last, and worst of all, the chlorine entered the delicate fabric of the lungs and ate it away with a horrible, torturing, burning effect, leaving the stricken, helpless victims outstretched in the trenches, fighting in vain for air, and perishing in the most cruel of agonies. The luckiest men were those who quickly fell half suffocated, and got into the thickest poison-fumes, for they had a fairly quick death. Those who were able to drag themselves away, with their throats nearly closed, their lungs half burnt out, and their eyes protruding from their blackened faces, had sometimes to endure a week's torture before they won the peace of the grave.

There was no defence against the gas. The unprepared Frenchmen and Algerians either died, or fell back towards the Yser Canal, half blind, and suffering greatly. Then behind the gas-cloud came the German troops. Their advanced outposts wore gas-proof helmets, while the main force of infantry was provided with respirator masks. They brought up machine-guns and occupied the low ridges north of Ypres, and forced a passage across the canal by Steenstraete and Het Sas villages, and constructed fortified bridge-heads on the western bank. More than a thousand bodies of half-choked, but still living men were picked up by the enemy, and proudly numbered among their prisoners. Thirty guns were captured, including four 4·7 in. British guns which had been lent by the Canadian Division to strengthen the lines held by their French comrades.

The position of the Canadian Division was then one of extreme peril. They were holding a line of about 5,000 yards, with two brigades in the trenches and a third brigade in reserve. The 3rd Brigade had joined on with the French line a little south of the hamlet of Poelcappelle. The 2nd Brigade continued the British line southward towards Zonnebeke. When the French retired, the 3rd Brigade was left jutting out into the void, and the Germans began to assail it in the rear as well as in the front. Brigadier-General Turner showed a magnificent grasp of the situation. He extended his men in open order in a south-westward direction, while still holding on to Poelcappelle. Brigadier-General Curry, commanding the 2nd Brigade, also extended his men quickly towards Poelcappelle. The result was that the two Canadian Brigades were drawn out into a very thin line, which formed a sort of broad, blunt wedge covering the northern approaches to Ypres from Zonnebeke to the Yser Canal.

Peril of Canadian Division

Against the Canadians were at least two German army corps, supported by innumerable machine-guns and heavy artillery. Reckoning infantry forces alone, there were 50,000 Germans against 8,000 Canadians, and when the attack opened there still was a gap on the left of the Canadians' thin and hastily re-formed line. There was no time to bring up the reserve brigade from its billets and hurry British reinforcements with guns to the northern side of

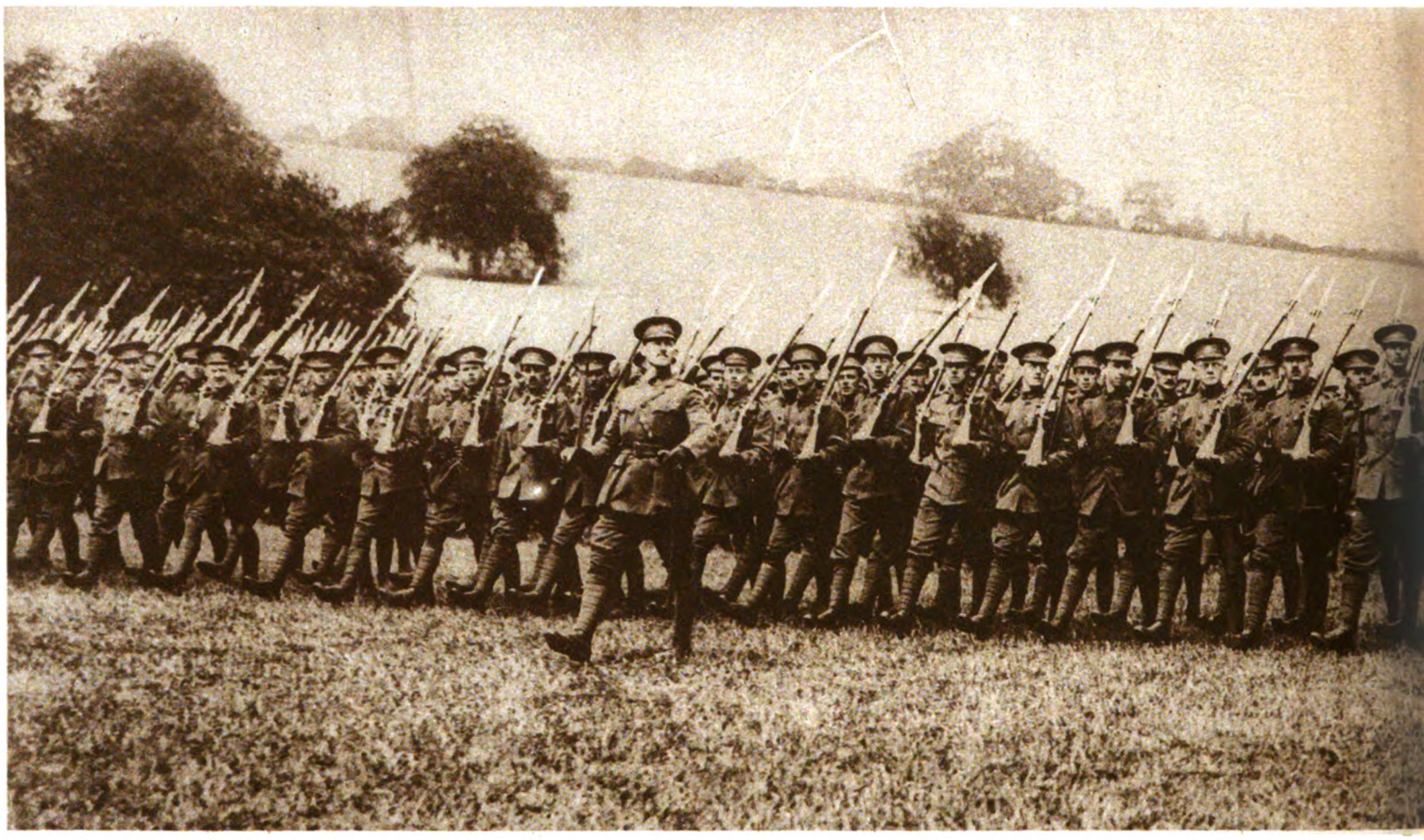
Digitized by Google



[Elliott & Fry.

Admiral Sir Henry Bradwardine Jackson, K.C.B.,
Appointed First Sea Lord, May 27th, 1915.

Digitized by Google



Field-Marshal Sir Evelyn Wood, V.C., inspecting the Inns of Court Officers



Remarkable photograph of a British attacking party taking cover in a newly-

Digitized by Google



Training Corps, which gave so many able young officers to the New Armies.

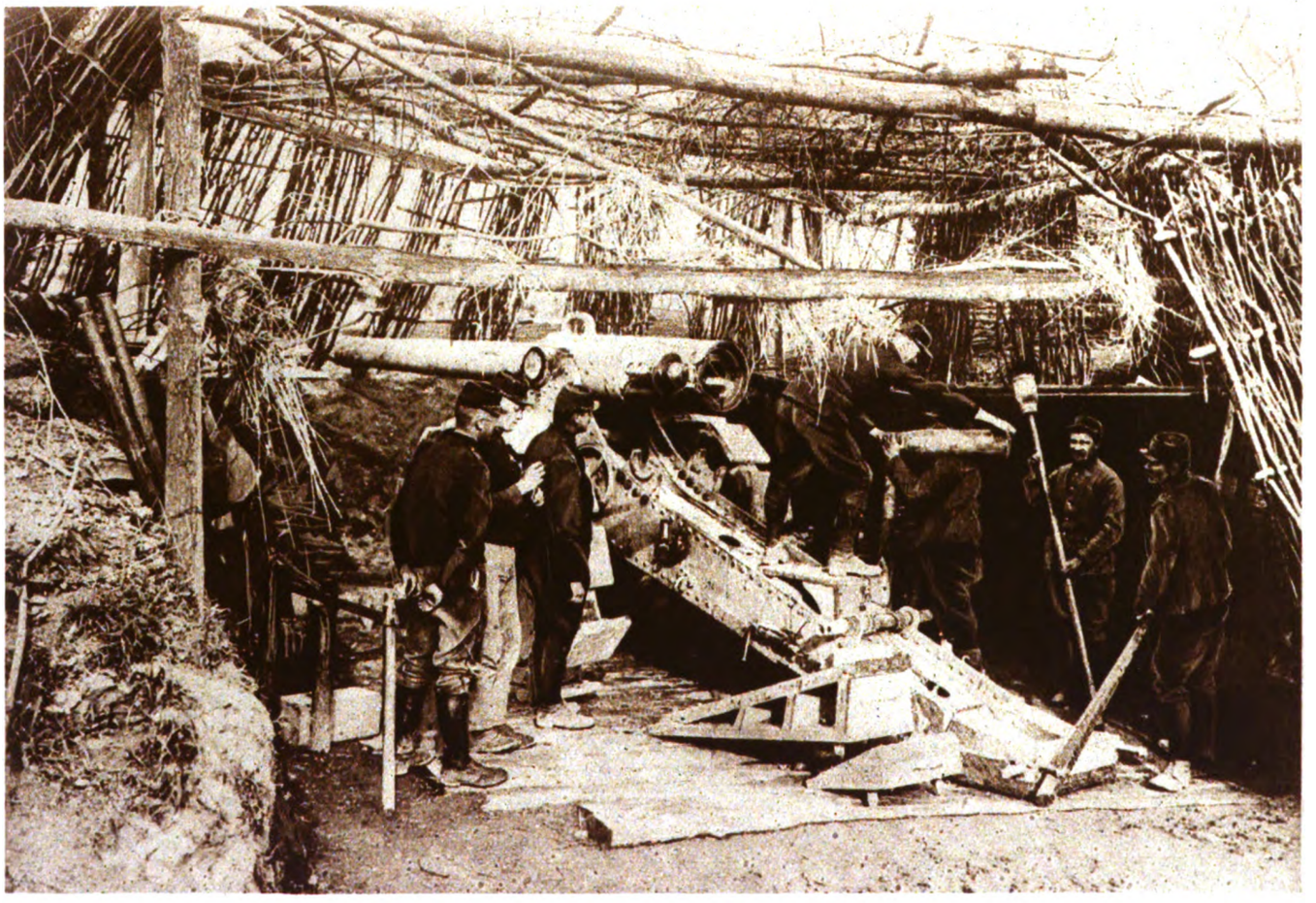


Captured German trench, the broken wire entanglements being seen on the left.

Digitized by Google



A French "75" trained on the Germans at 2,800 yards. Only the muzzle is visible.



Serving a French heavy gun in position in the St. Aubin region.

Digitized by Google

Ypres. The result of the unexpected gas attack had been obtained so quickly that the German forces had swung against the Canadians long before any help could arrive.

The Canadians were raw troops, most of whom had been neither trained nor disciplined at the outbreak of hostilities. Their officers were mainly men of the professional classes—young lawyers, college professors, estate agents, and business men. There was just a sprinkling of veterans of the Paardeburg days. The divisional commander, General Alderson, was a brilliant man of war, who had won fame by his masterly handling of the regiment that never lost a trench—the West Kent. He had some first-rate British Staff officers, but as a whole his division was formed of troops of the third class, according to the Continental way of estimating soldiers. They were neither regulars of the first line nor reservists of the second line, but quite a new formation, trained since the war began. As a matter of theory, therefore, they should have done badly. For they were in such a position of extreme and overwhelming danger that, had they been first-line troops like the French soldiers retiring on their left, they might have been excused for giving ground. Their situation was hopeless and agonising; for if they gave ground, with the odds at more than five to one against them, Ypres was lost.

How Ypres was saved

To the eternal glory of Canada, they rose to the tragic occasion, these eight thousand overwhelmed men, and saved the British Army from a terrible disaster. All through the evening and night of Thursday they held their ground, with the apex of their newly-formed line running in the direction of St. Julien. The enemy did not at first show much daring. He was too cautious at the opening of the conflict in seeking for the path of least resistance. With quick and cool resourcefulness the amateur forces of Canada met the veteran first-line troops of Germany and fought them off, taking the fiercest assault at the apex above St. Julien instead of at the gap near the canal.

Time was thus gained for the 1st Brigade to arrive, together with British reinforcements. Then about midnight the Canadians, under the direction of their skilled and resolute commander, General Alderson, made the stroke that really saved Ypres. In front of the Canadian Scottish of the 3rd Brigade and the 10th Battalion of the 3rd Brigade was a wood containing the four lost guns that had been lent to the French. The trees could be seen in the light of the misty moon about five hundred yards away. The wood was occupied by 7,000 German troops, who had built forts defended by machine-gun parties with sand-bags. No enemy was visible as Colonel Leckie led the Canadian Scottish forward and Colonel Russell Boyle led out his 10th Battalion. But when the leading companies were in the hollow, about two hundred yards from the mass of trees, the line of hostile machine-guns squirted upon them a continuous sheet of bullets.

Canadians' heroic advance

Yet the four charging lines never wavered. When one man fell another took his place. The survivors of the two battalions burst over the low ridge and through the hedge where the Germans were entrenched, and then entered the shadowy wood. Here it was wild hand-to-hand fighting in clumps and batches amid the brushwood, the Canadians having only their rifles against the machine-gun forts forming the German support line. The brushwood fighting suited the Canadian temperament in the white-hot stage. Yelling, rushing, stabbing, firing, they got the Germans on the rush, turned them into a demoralised mob, broke into their last trench, and chased them through the wood. Two more Canadian battalions were waiting outside as a reserve, to be flung into the fight at the critical moment. But there was no critical moment. The 2,000 charging troops swiftly routed more than three times the number of enemies and, leaving a broad trail of dead and wounded foes behind them, swept out from among the trees and went at the double another five hundred yards into the German lines. There, however, they were brought under a cross-fire, and in a stubborn fight they retired and entrenched round the wood they had captured. In the wood they recovered their 4·7 in. guns, or at least the wreck of them, as the pieces had been blown up by the enemy.

All through the night the battle continued, the enemy's shrapnel fire sweeping the wood as a tropical storm sweeps the leaves in the forest. At six o'clock on Friday morning the left wing of the Canadian Division by the wood became terribly involved. The German commander tried both to break it and to outflank it. This movement General Alderson answered by another forward leap. Two Canadian battalions of the 1st Brigade, with 4,000 British troops, advanced against the German position. Guns and Maxims played on the thin khaki lines as they moved forward in quick rushes. The 4th Canadian Battalion came under an annihilating fire, but as it wavered, its commanding officer, Lieut.-Colonel Burchill, came forward with a light cane and rallied his men, only to fall dead at their feet. That should again have dismayed them; instead, it only maddened them. With a scream of anger, the entire battalion surged forward, and in a direct frontal attack, carried out in clear daylight, the German trench was stormed at the bayonet point. This trench was the most important point in the enemy's movement of advance, for it represented the apex in the breach made in the Allies' original line. The position



ON THE ALERT IN A FRENCH FIRST-LINE TRENCH.

Digitized by Google



Elliott & Fry.

LT.-COL. RUSSELL LAMBERT BOYLE.
10th Alberta Battalion (killed).



Swaine.

BRIG.-GENERAL M. S. MERCER.
Commanding the First Canadian Brigade.



Swaine.

LT.-COL. C. B. LECKIE.
Commanding the Canadian Scottish.

was not only captured by the Canadians and the British, but was held by the victorious troops for four days under a continual bombardment. The men never budged, and when they were at last relieved by fresh troops the line was still held as they had won it.

Meanwhile, Brigadier-General Turner with the 3rd Brigade held the left flank of the new salient north of St. Julien. Twice on Thursday the Germans attacked through a fog of poison gas, but the brigade held the wood all the Thursday night. Then on Friday morning the brigade was again suffocated by a cloud of deadly fumes. The gas was especially thick over the trenches held by the 48th Highlanders. They could not live in it, so they gave ground and let the gas blow away; then the heroic survivors charged back through a terrible cannonade and rifle fire and recovered their trenches. Their commander, Colonel Curry, was a magnificent leader. Directed by him, the battalion held on with the bayonet when their ammunition ran short, and at a loss of six hundred and ninety-one officers and men out of a total strength of eight hundred and ninety-six, the 48th Canadian Highlanders fought both the masses of Germans round St. Julien, with a handful of Buffs, Turcos, and Zouaves holding the east of the village.

Highlanders' fight to the death

One Highlander company with its medley of Allies fought to the death in the village. Not one man got away. At last the situation became dramatically critical. The Dublin Fusiliers were coming up at the double to reinforce the overpowered Canadians. Could the Highlanders hold out? They did! When the Dublins were still a quarter of a mile away, the fight in the Canadian second line—the first line had been lost—was over. Ypres was saved. Among the wounded officers of the Canadian Highlanders was a lineal descendant of Colonel McKay, who climbed the Heights of Abraham at Quebec with General Wolfe. Buried by a heavy howitzer shell, he crawled to a dressing station with a bad wound in his head. He was adjutant to the regiment, and though half unconscious he gripped all the time some regimental papers with which he had been dealing when the "coal-box" fell.



Elliott & Fry.

BRIG.-GEN. R. E. W. TURNER,
V.C., D.S.O.
Commanding the Third Canadian Brigade.

Equal in heroism to the 48th Canadian Highlanders were their comrades of the same brigade, the Royal Highlanders of Montreal. One of the Royal Highlanders' officers, Captain McCuaig, fell seriously wounded in a hastily-made trench, and, refusing to move, continued to direct his men. At last the situation became desperate. A considerable force of German troops swung past the unsupported left of the brigade, and slipping into the wood of St. Julien, attacked the Canadians from the rear. The Montreal Highlanders then received peremptory orders to retire. The men wanted to carry their maimed captain with them. But he would not let them do so, knowing that the burden of his body would slacken their speed of movement and add to the risk of all their lives. All he asked for was two more loaded revolvers in addition to that which he was holding in his right hand. Then he ordered his men to draw back as quickly as they could, and with his three revolvers he waited, his smitten body racked with pain, to strike down the first line of the oncoming Germans, and thus win more time for his men to retreat. The end of this very gallant man reminds one of the conduct of Captain Oates, in the South Pole Expedition. The British race does breed great-hearted gentlemen.

How Captain McCuaig died

On Friday afternoon, April 23rd, seven battalions of British troops arrived and strengthened the Canadian line. At the same time the Zouaves and the Belgian Carabiniers attacked the Germans from the west along the Yser Canal and recaptured the village of Lizerne. But this gain was outbalanced by the advance of the heavy German artillery along



CAPT. McCUAIG.
Montreal Royal Highlanders (killed).

Digitized by Google



THE ONCOMING FOE—OUR MEN AWAITING THE ORDER TO CHARGE.

An extraordinarily vivid photograph of a rare incident. For once the Germans came out to charge a British trench, and our men are seen awaiting the order from their officer to meet the foe in the open.

Digitized by Google



"PARDON, KAMERAD!" DEMORALISED GERMAN SOLDIERS IN THE ACT OF SURRENDERING EN MASSE INTO THE HANDS OF THE VICTORIOUS FRENCH.

the northern section of the Ypres front. The Canadian salient, with its ill-made, shallow trenches, was fearfully battered by heavy shells; and though each attempt made by the hostile infantry to carry our trenches under cover of the bombardment was defeated, the pressure of the two massed German army corps became overpowering. For the Germans only fought rearguard actions against the French and Belgians along the Yser Canal, while swinging their main forces against the Canadians and British troops. Ypres was their objective. All Germany was feverishly anxious for news of the capture of Ypres.

Our men fell back upon St. Julien, and then, with the 3rd Canadian Brigade still fighting on a double front, the brigade uncovered St. Julien and retired towards Ypres. For several hours after the brigade had retired, the sound of rifle firing still came from St. Julien village. There the Canadian rearguard, every man of whom deserved the Victoria Cross, fought a long and hopeless battle against annihilating odds, and perished to save their comrades.

Superb example of British courage

With the retirement of the Canadian left, the Canadian centre held, and the 2nd Brigade under Brigadier-General Curry had to repeat the manœuvre of the 3rd Brigade. The Brigadier-General extended his line and flung his left flank southward, and fought on until Sunday afternoon. By this time his field fortifications had been wiped out by the high-explosive shells of the enemy's heavy artillery. But the men held on until they were relieved on Sunday by British troops.

In the meantime a remarkable achievement had been performed by the British Brigade during the retirement of the Canadians from St. Julien. General Alderson was in personal command of the reinforcements, and under his directions the left wing of the Canadian Division broke connection with the Canadian centre, leaving a gap in our lines a little below St. Julien. Through this gap poured the British soldiers. They were going to their death, most of them, in a break-neck assault upon the advancing victorious German front. As they passed the heroes of Canada, the veterans of the British Army gave a great, deep-throated cheer of admiration for the wonderful recruits from the land of the maple leaf who had saved Ypres.

Then the British Brigade went on to death and victory. The Germans swept it, front and flank, with machine-gun fire and sprayed it for a thousand yards with shrapnel. Our men went down like waves breaking on a beach. But though wave after wave fell spent and broken, the tide of British courage moved onward. All the artillery of two German army corps could not arrest its movement. Neither could the German infantry. Our troops went over the enemy trenches with the bayonet, drove in the German front, and completely stopped the German advance all along the line. It was this magnificent tiger-leap of the British reinforcements that rounded off the superb defence of the Canadians and saved our position. By Sunday evening our lines ran from Fortuin, south of St. Julien, towards Passchendaele in a north-easterly direction. British troops garrisoned the rough trenches, with the shrunken 2nd Canadian Brigade in reserve. But the enemy still continued to press the attack on Ypres in a furious manner, by artillery bombardments varied by advances of massed infantry. On Monday morning, April 26th, Brigadier-General Curry again led his tired and battered men, reduced to a quarter of their original strength, into the firing-line.

All that day they held the apex of the British position north of Ypres, and they did not retire to their billets until the following Wednesday. This concluded the deathless feat of arms of the Canadian Division, by which it won the right to stand side by side with the immortal 7th Division of the regular British Army, by whose magnificent tenacity Ypres was in the first instance saved from German attack. What is particularly remarkable about the feat of arms of the Canadians is that it was the achievement of one of our new formations. The men were scarcely of the military standing of our Territorial troops. They occupied the same position as the civilians in the armies that Lord Kitchener had formed since the outbreak of hostilities. Yet they equalled the finest performances of the best regular troops—the performances of the Iron Division of France and the Immortal Division of Britain. Great was their deed, but greater was its significance. The German Staff must, when they learnt of it, have begun to reflect seriously upon the probable qualities of our new national armies.

A deathless feat of arms

In the new Battle of Ypres the heroism of the Canadian troops was well matched by that of the British Territorials and Yeomanry. Splendid work was done by the Durham miners, forming the 8th Durham Light Infantry, under Lieutenant-Colonel Turnbull. These unseasoned troops, unused to trench work, were called upon in the middle of the night of April 24th to relieve the Winnipeg Rifles on the Gravenstafel ridge, north of Zonnebeke. The enemy

Digitized by Google

were only three hundred yards away, and the miners were heavily bombarded with gas shells, and then attacked by a German force at least twice their own strength. Yet they held on for seven hours before they fell back in good order. Then, during their retirement, they were enveloped by the Germans, but they hacked their way out with bayonet and bullet, and displayed a stubborn courage all through the action against overwhelming numbers. Other Territorial troops of the Durhams held the line around Zonnebeke and Frezenberg on Monday, April 26th, and fought with great tenacity.

Story of Shell-Trap Farm

For all the people of the North of England the ground between the canal at Ypres and Gravenstafel and Zonnebeke was hallowed in the spring of 1915. There were the Northumberland Territorials, forming part of the great counter-attacking brigade, in leading which General Riddell fell. They assaulted the village of St. Julien in the afternoon of April 26th in order to save our left wing near the canal. There was no time to reconnoitre the position, and all that the men could do was to storm along until they were stopped. This soon happened, because the enemy had put up wire entanglements and directed his guns on the barrier. But the Northumberlands got into the enemy's trenches in isolated parties, and under a terrific bombardment they held their position until the evening. The York and Lancaster Regiment also distinguished itself, when reinforcing the Rifle Brigade, by helping to shatter the German advance. The Northumberland Fusiliers, less than 1,000 men, faced a great German column, which formed the main strength of the enemy's attack, fought it with machine-gun fire and a minute of mad rifle fire, and completely broke it up. When the head of the column was blown away, the rest of the German troops broke from the line and fled to cover.

Shell-Trap Farm was one of the pivots of the battlefield, and was held by North of England men. The farm was a group of old Flemish buildings in the north-eastern part of the Ypres salient, near Fortuin. It won its new name from the extraordinary number of shells which the Germans dropped into it, until they knocked it into shapeless piles of bricks and pitted the ground, which they carpeted with fragments of metal. Then the attacking infantry tried to win the ruins as a shelter for their machine-gun parties. The result was a series of most desperate hand-to-hand conflicts. First a company of the 2nd Essex charged through the enemy's terrible artillery fire and captured the farm, bayoneting every man there. But in the night the Germans recaptured the position. At dawn, however, two platoons of the 1st East Lancashires went out with the bayonet and killed or routed the Germans. They were bombarded all day, about ten shells being sent for every Englishman holding the trench, and the next night the German infantry once more stormed and carried the farm. But the South Lancashires then swept like a whirlwind through the shelters and dug-outs and cleared them of Germans.

Shell-Trap Farm then became one of the most important posts on our line. It remained the everlasting target of the German howitzers in the Forest of Houthulst, and in the wood in front of Roulers. But many weeks passed before the German infantrymen attempted again to storm it. The moat round the farm was choked with dead bodies, English as well as German, but, as our soldiers could see with their own eyes, the enemy's losses had been something like ten times as heavy as ours.

How the Monmouths held on

In the first place, the farm seems to have been held by a patrol of the Monmouth Territorials. They were cut off by shell fire, and a shell came through the roof and killed all the officers and non-commissioned officers in the building. One man then swam the moat and went to headquarters to report the condition of affairs. The Brigadier-General sent a message saying he hoped the "Terriers" would stick. The messenger got back to the farm through the curtain of shell fire, and soon afterwards a bandolier was flung over the moat to a waiting despatch-rider. In it was a scrap of paper on which was written "Of course we'll stick." And the little shattered Territorial patrol hung on to Shell-Trap Farm and beat back the enemy until our artillery



WONDERFUL CAMERA-RECORD OF A THRILLING MOMENT AT BOIS LE PRÊTRE.
On the left a grenade is being fired from a section of the advanced French trenches into the German lines. On the right the troops are on the point of leaving the trenches for a bayonet charge.

Digitized by Google



HOW THE NORTHUMBERLAND FUSILIERS MET AN ATTACK ON THEIR FIRST-LINE TRENCHES AT YPRES.

The trenches of "The Fighting Fifth" were distant only about a hundred yards from those of the enemy. In the early hours of morning the Germans attacked in force. They were met, however, with steady and continuous rifle fire, while the machine-gun seen on the left of the picture did some excellent work. It was, said an eye-witness, pretty hot work for a few minutes. But our men could not miss the masses of the advancing foe, and then our artillery began to play on the attacking force and on their communication trenches in the rear.

Digitized by Google



BRITISH RESPIRATOR PARADE AND INSPECTION.

An addition to our soldiers' daily routine, made necessary by the poisoned-gas campaign of the enemy.

began to register hits on the spot. The few survivors then left the shell-trap, and the Germans took their place, only to be blown up by our guns, and then poked out by the bayonets of the 2nd Essex.

The men of Lancashire and Essex were again engaged side by side at the end of April. They were holding at night a line which was suddenly enveloped in a great cloud of poison gas. The wind carried the fumes most densely against the Lancashire Fusiliers. Most of the men, being without respirators, retired to let the gas pass before they charged and recovered the trenches. But there was no need for a charge, for one of the Lancashire Fusiliers, John Lynn, jumped on the parapet with a machine-gun and poured a stream of bullets towards the German trenches. He worked by guesswork, being at first unable to see through the poison-cloud. Then, as it thinned out, he caught the oncoming German line and shattered it, and with his throat half choked and his lungs badly burned, he remained crouching on the parapet, waiting for the next charge. The second time the Germans made only a half-hearted attempt to capture our trenches, and the single-handed heroic soldier smote them once more before they regained their own lines. Private Lynn died the next day from asphyxiation, being awarded in death the V.C.

Lancashire Fusilier's brave deed



"AFTERNOON TEA."

British wounded, on their way to the base hospital, are afforded a welcome relief at a small French railway station where tea was prepared for them by Red Cross men.

The 7th Argyll and Sutherlands had a happy adventure in one of the gas-clouds. Their brigadier ordered them to rush through the gas and retake a trench from which our men had been driven by the fumes. The Scotsmen went at the double through the green wall of death, recaptured the trench, and then began to see what had happened to them. Not a man was hurt. Yet the brigadier, who afterwards went through the thinnest point of the gas-belt in order to reach his men, suffered very badly. In spite of his sufferings, however, he refused to go back for medical treatment. Maybe the long-headed, canny Scotsmen held their breath while they were racing through the fog of death. But even this must have wanted some doing, and the feat of the Territorial Highlanders was one of the most remarkable things in the war.

In addition to the continual clouds of poison gas, the troops defending Ypres had to withstand for nearly three weeks an artillery fire of extraordinary violence. The Germans had brought up from the coast more powerful parks of big howitzers and large-calibre guns than they had used in October and November of the previous year. Our entrenched infantry had to endure a deadly enfilading fire from pieces of ordnance of all sizes—from the 17 in.

Digitized by Google



GENERAL JOFFRE PRESENTING DECORATIONS TO FRENCH OFFICERS AFTER THE BATTLE OF ARRAS.

Dicke Bertha to the Minenwerfer, that threw out a sausage-shaped cylinder of high-explosive. On one small field through which our lines ran nine hundred shells of large calibre fell in two hours. It may be doubted whether the Russians on the Dunajec between Gorlice and Tarnow received more shells per man than our troops did in the last week of April and the first eight days of May. Had the German guns been able to place their shells exactly on our trenches, our entire defending force between Zonnebeke and the canal north of Ypres would have been annihilated by high-explosives.

During the critical days following the break and retreat of the French Division our men were fighting on three fronts. They had the enemy in their rear as well as on their left flank and before their eastern firing-line. They had hostile machine-guns at the back of them, hostile heavy batteries and surging waves of attacking infantry north of them, and the weight and metal of the principal forces of the Duke of Würtemberg directly in front of their old trenches. Terrific as had been the violence of the German attack in the first Battle of Ypres, it was surpassed in horror by the mechanical and chemical means of destruction employed by the enemy in the second battle for the shattered Flemish mediæval city. All our men could do was to sit tight and endure, day after day, the stifling gases and the terrible shells. They crouched hard against the sides of the trenches, or sheltered in the dug-outs, and there they were frequently called to dig their comrades from under masses of earth and overturned sand-bags.

Germans fear their own gas

Had the German infantryman possessed the pluck and dash displayed by his countrymen in the first battle, he might have won Ypres. But apparently he was frightened by his own poison fumes. He had been told so much about their deadliness that he was afraid to advance until the green fog had entirely disappeared. Then, when he did advance, his reception at the hands of our infuriated troops took the heart out of him. The Englishman is a very patient creature, with an extraordinary capacity for long-suffering. As the Belgian chronicler Froissart said in the days of Edward III., "The Englishman suffers very patiently for a very long time. But," added Froissart, "in the end he pays back terribly." It was so at Ypres. When our men went Berserker, the silent, frigid fury of their onset was like nothing else seen on this bloodstained planet. They lived only in hope of an infantry attack by the enemy. The men of one battalion, holding the extreme right of the northern face of the salient, actually leaped from their trenches and cheered the Germans when they saw the flash of enemy bayonets. "Give us a chance to get at you! Oh, God, give us a chance to get at you!" they shouted. The Germans did not get at that battalion. Most of them were piled up dead or disabled within fifty yards of our trenches; the rest fled.

Froissart's verdict verified

Not a single German infantry attack was pressed home. The men could be seen forming up on the Gravenstafel ridge in double battalions or in brigades, and then advancing under cover of a furious bombardment from their massed guns. Over the riddled fields they came, in solid masses of a green-grey colour, until our men could see the tense, anxious faces. But every time great gaps would suddenly be blown out of the advancing host, as our artillery caught them in the open with shrapnel. Before the gaps could close up our storm of rifle fire and the stream of bullets from our machine-guns would widen the gaps and break off all the edges of the surging grey masses.

For the first time in the war a large number of the German

Digitized by Google

infantry showed signs of abject terror. There are cowards in every army, and the first-line battalions of Germany were not free from them. But in the summer, autumn, and winter of 1914 and the early spring of 1915 the general reputation of the German troops in the western theatre of war was good. They fought skilfully, and when in difficulty they stood their punishment like men. But in the second Battle of Ypres the German infantry went to pieces. They showed no driving power, and lost all their best opportunities when there were large gaps in our line. They relied for their victory entirely upon their guns and chemicals, and when they found that our angry men, far from being annihilated, were waiting to get at grips with them, they either became mad or helpless with terror.

The fiendish cruelty of cowards

The madmen among them went to the extreme limit of cruelty. After bayoneting our asphyxiated and helpless troops, left behind in the continual retreats from the poison clouds, they took several of our wounded, both Canadians and British, and crucified them by means of spikes on the doors of Flemish farm buildings. According to the evidence taken on oath by the Mayor of Exeter, an extinguished fire was found beneath the feet of one of our dead, crucified soldiers. It was the Würtembergers under Duke Albrecht of Würtemberg who did this thing. On the other hand, many of the Würtemberg troops became sentimental and pious in their terror. One middle-aged German ran blindly in the charge made by his battalion, and when the charge was shattered by our rapid rifle fire the man continued to plunge forward until he nearly reached the trench held by the North Somerset Yeomanry. Then he knelt down and said his prayers. The Somersets just waited until he had finished praying.

Our cavalry played a fine part in the later fighting on the Ypres salient. The North Somerset Yeomanry and the Leicestershire Yeomanry suffered heavily, and while the former were partly forced back the Somerset men managed to stick to their position. About the same time the 3rd Dragoon Guards were buried in the ruins of their blown-out trenches, and the wood in which the 1st Royals were lodged was set on fire. The position was restored on May 15th by a splendid charge of the 10th Hussars. The Germans at the time held a position by the two farms at Verloren-Hoek, between Zonnebeke and Ypres. First of all our aeroplanes circled over the Germans and reported the result of the first ranging shots of our artillery. Then the target was found, and our batteries worked at high pressure for a time, and as their limbers were nearing depletion three British armoured motor-cars came down the road from Ypres, swung round Frezenberg, and opened on the German trenches at point-blank range with quick-firing guns. After all this preparation the 10th Hussars made their great charge. One of our airmen, watching them from the skies, said that they came forward in the steady and regular manner of a parade movement. With them were the Leicestershire Yeomanry and a squadron of the Royal Horse Guards. In a swift, violent dash the cavalrymen took the trenches and destroyed or routed the hostile garrison at Verloren-Hoek. But no sooner had the German infantry been defeated than their heavy guns

10th Hussars' great charge



REPRESENTATIVE GROUP OF OUR INDIAN SOLDIERS IN A NATIVE MULE WAGGON. A QUAINT PHOTOGRAPH TAKEN IN A FRENCH VILLAGE.

Digitized by Google

bombarded the lost position, with the result that our men were blown out of the recovered line.

The second Battle of Ypres was a contest of flesh and blood against a gigantic machine. Whenever men met men our soldiers won. But when our front was hidden in a gas-cloud or the smoke of a great curtain of exploding German shells our troops had to retire, and then return and win back their position by a hand-to-hand contest. Yet both the Canadians and British Territorials were men fresh from home, flung suddenly into the most nerve-shattering conflict without, for the most part, having seen a shot fired in battle. They had to endure one of the most violent artillery bombardments, complicated by the horrible devilry of the poison-gas clouds. The breaking of the French line occurred in so unexpected a manner that there was no time for Staff preparations. Ypres had to be saved with a wild rush by every man available to fill the gap and strengthen our thin and enveloped line.



EVENTIDE ON THE BATTLEFIELD.
With a French burial party. So many a hero—friend or foe—passed to his last resting-place.

The Territorials were led by amateur officers like the Canadians—by men who had spent their lives mainly in business offices. Nobly did they play their part, but owing to the suddenness of the first overwhelming surprise of the gas attack against the French Division, Sir Horace Smith-Dorrien and his Staff had to leave the event largely in the hands of their men. It was a soldiers' battle. Leaders like General Alderson planned and executed the counter-strokes, but the continual victories were won by the personal fighting quality of the private soldier. He was not defeated, because he would not admit defeat. Everything was against him—position, guns, numbers, superiority of machine-guns, gas-attack equipment, and the means of defence against gas attacks. The Germans had every possible advantage, but our men won through because they were one of the finest fighting stocks in the world, though perhaps they did not know it. The virtue of the race rose triumphant above imminent disaster, and it was the virtue of a peaceful commercial race, stamped both by Napoleon and by the modern Germans as a race of shopkeepers. Undoubtedly, we did keep shop, and grew prosperous thereby; but when the time came for our business men, miners, and mechanics to handle a rifle, there was not much difference between them and the most famous of their fighting forefathers. And if any difference were there, the balance of merit resided with the modern Briton. In the second Battle of Ypres some of our troops held their trenches without relief for twenty-one days. Some of the men at Crecy, Agincourt, or Waterloo would have flinched from such a superhuman ordeal.

A soldiers' battle

In the trenches for twenty-one days

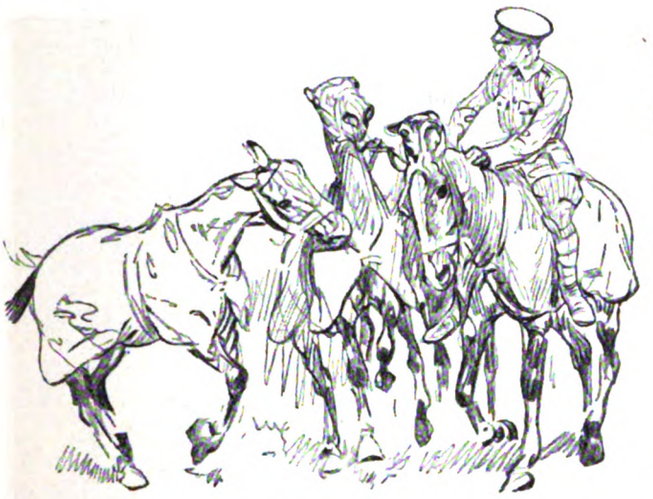
A German Staff officer went so far as to remark to a foreign war correspondent visiting the German lines that our Territorial battalions were even better fighters than our regular troops. The praise was excessive, and reminded one of the old Roman proverb of being beware of the enemy when he comes bearing gifts. Our superbly-trained soldiers of the regular Army could not be placed second even to our heroic Territorials. Both of them had special qualities. The regular was the supreme master of his profession; the Territorial, lacking the perfect training of his comrade, had a higher degree of cultivated intellectual power, and a noble kind of courage, born of imaginative fear quelled by an ecstasy of will-power. A highly-educated man is likely to go into his first battle in a state of tense apprehension, but when his native strength of character tells on his imagination he is apt to fight in a white heat of heroism. Thus did our Territorial troops and the Canadians, who resembled them in training and station of life.

Prominent among the tens of thousands of heroes of the second Battle of Ypres was Lance-Sergeant Belcher, of the London Rifle Brigade, a Territorial battalion. He was a characteristic representative of our nation of shopkeepers, being a young business man in one of the large furniture firms of London. The London Rifle Brigade did fine work all through the long, wearing fight. They first held a trench near Shell-Trap Farm, and with their left resting on the hamlet of Fortuin they endured a terrific bombardment, losing one hundred and seventeen men from shell fire in a single day. Yet when the German infantry attacked in the darkness they wiped out the assailers.

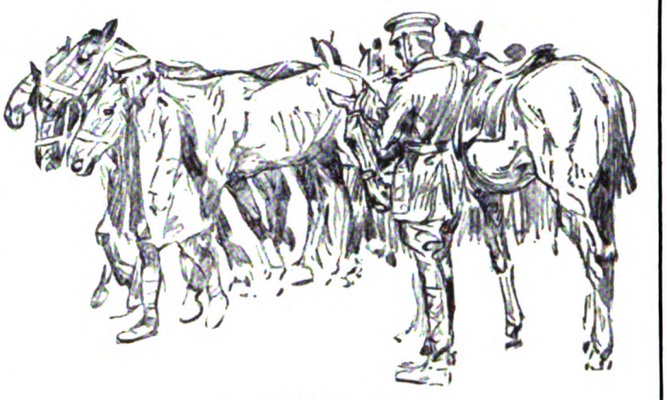
At last there were only two hundred and seventy-eight men left out of the Territorial battalion, and ninety-one of these fell during the day in the fierce attack made upon the trenches held by our cavalry on the road running from the hamlet of Wieltje up towards St. Julien village. Lance-Sergeant Belcher was in charge of an advanced breast-work south of this road on the morning of May 12th. The sand-bags were blown in by the hostile guns, and the violent and continuous bombardment went on until Belcher was left with only eight of his men and two Hussars. This little band elected to hold on by the road after the troops near them had been withdrawn. Except for them, the road was clear for the Germans to break through our front by Wieltje and make a flank attack on our Fourth Division.

Four of Lance-Sergeant Belcher's men were knocked out, and the trench was blown to bits. Yet all during the day the sergeant and his remaining troops—seven men in all—held the German army at bay, for every time the enemy collected for an attack Belcher ordered rapid fire. The Germans were only from one hundred and fifty to two

Digitized by Google



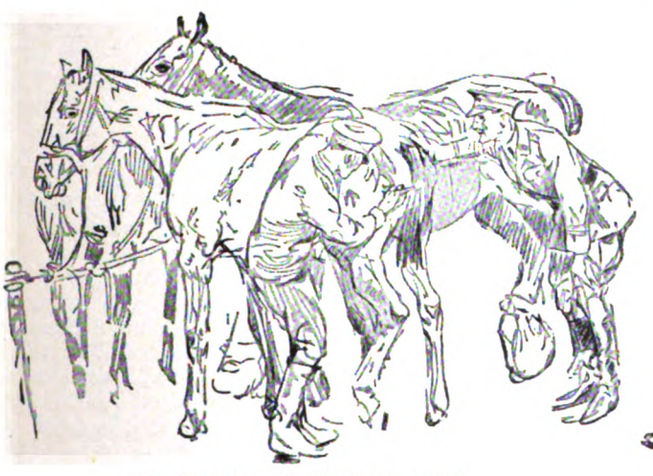
Fit Again.



To the Rest Camp.



In the Rest Camp—The Hay Cart.



The Sick Lines—Probing for Shrapnel.



Back to the Base.

MORE SKETCHES OF EQUINE LIFE FROM AN OFFICER AT THE FRONT.

These delightful pencil sketches, illustrating phases of equine activity at the front, were sent to THE GREAT WAR by the well-known animal artist, on active service as an officer, to whom we and our readers are indebted for the sketches on page 365 of our second volume. They are reproduced untouched.

Digitized by Google

hundred yards away. But by maintaining a bold and also a skilful front, and by using so quick and deadly a fire that the breastwork seemed fully manned, the amazing London Territorial completely daunted the advancing German column, held the Wieltje road in the most critical phase of the battle, and saved a British division from a disastrous flank attack. This achievement ranks with that of the Worcesters at Gheluvelt in the first Battle of Ypres.

Seven men save a division

But the Worcesters were a battalion when they saved the British line. Belcher and his men were only seven riflemen.

Similar in method and scope to the achievement of Lance-Sergeant Belcher, though perhaps not quite so important as the saving of an entire division, was the deed of Captain Railston, of the 1st Rifle Brigade. His trenches were almost blotted out by shell fire; traverse after traverse was destroyed, and the men fell in great numbers. A retreat was suggested, but Captain Railston would not think of it. He carried on so well that, though he was twice buried and wounded by heavy shell fire, he held the Germans off all day. Only three men and the captain were left, but by running up and down the trench and firing rapidly when a hostile advance was attempted, the four defenders held the position until two companies of another regiment arrived to support them. Captain Easton, of the 4th East Yorks Territorials, also held out with desperate and resourceful tenacity. He was hit three times, but he continued to move up and down the line, directing and cheering his men, who drove the enemy back with magnificent courage under a murderous bombardment.



LANCE-SERGEANT D. BELCHER, V.C.
London Rifle Brigade.

Then in the desperate conflict of May 8th, when the Germans tried to break our line at Frezenberg, fine gallantry and fighting skill were displayed by Sergeant H. Crook, Corporal E. Smith, and Pte. W. J. Tookey, all of the 1st Yorkshire Light Infantry. The sergeant handled a desperate position with such coolness and ability that it was largely due to his efforts that our line remained unbroken. Corporal Smith undertook to carry a message for reinforcements under a terrific shell fire. The trench was full of dead and wounded; he could not work along it, but crawled outside to carry out his task. Private Tookey also took a message under heavy fire. When he crawled back to a wood, he found it occupied by the enemy, and waited until darkness fell; then he moved out and reported to his commanding officer. Captain Henry Mallison was in charge of the Yorkshiremen at Frezenberg, and directed the fire that drove back every infantry attack delivered by the enemy. All day the British trenches were raked and shattered by a severe and accurate bombardment, but not until night, with both flanks turned and no relief in sight, did Captain Mallison and his men retire fighting to their second line, a thousand yards in the rear.

Another hero of the Ypres battle was Sergeant W. Cooke, of the 2nd Dublin Fusiliers. Hidden on the roof of a farmhouse, he was sniping the enemy in a very effective manner when a gas-cloud swept over the ground. The green flood was only seven feet high, and the sergeant escaped it, but on coming down, when the air seemed to have cleared, the remnant of the poison fumes made him feel dizzy. So back he climbed to his place on the roof. There he saw a German lieutenant with ten men crawling down a trench towards our lines. With deadly rapid fire the Irish sergeant picked off the ten enemy privates. Then leaping from the farmhouse roof, he ran to the end of the trench, and levelling his rifle at the officer, took him prisoner.

But the stories of individual heroism in the fiercest of all struggles for Ypres are too numerous for the purpose of an historian. Officers and men won military honour by the hundred. Even the main actions of all the battalions cannot be related. But in addition to the regiments already mentioned, the 3rd and 8th Middlesex, 1st Highland Light Infantry, the 2nd Seaforths, the Welsh Regiment, and the 2nd East Kents added to their glory. On the fatal night of April 22nd it was Colonel Geddes of the Buffs, with a detachment of five battalions, who occupied the gap in our line. The Pathans, Sikhs, and Gurkhas arrived after a long night march from the south, and went furiously into action on Monday, April 26th. But the enemy had won so strong a position from Pilken to Gravenstafel that our reinforcements could not do more than save Ypres.

The breaking of the French line on our left gave the Germans a sweeping field of fire over our lines of communication. Ypres itself was the most dangerous spot on the battlefield, and the entire civil population fled, leaving the street littered with dead and wounded, the rubble of fallen houses, and shattered vehicles. The shells poured on all our rear at Vlamertinghe, where our men were billeted, on our base at Poperinghe, the bombardment of the Hazebrouck railway line being terrific. This mighty curtain of shell fire was employed by the enemy to prevent reinforcements coming up while they were making a grand effort to break through to Calais. Sir John French at last decided to shorten the Ypres salient, and on the night of May 3rd our troops withdrew from Zonnebeke and Zevencot towards Wieltje and Frezenberg. The enemy then tried to cut through our shortened salient by a driving attack on its southern base, which was the famous Hill 60. But after a desperate struggle this movement was defeated. Then on May 8th the hostile massed guns poured out a tornado of high-explosive shells on our entrenchments left of Zonnebeke. Every yard of ground seemed to be churned and pulverised, and our new trenches were pounded into ruins. But when the German infantry advanced to drive us out of Ypres they were slaughtered in a ghastly way.

The Ypres salient shortened

At one point of our lines they had to advance over a thousand yards of open ground. Battalion after battalion of them melted away under our fire. At other points they reached our trenches, only to be driven off with bayonets. All along the curving front they were repulsed. But our lines—which had a front of nearly sixteen miles and a depth of more than five and a half miles before the French Division was asphyxiated on our left—were reduced in the first week in May to a shallow, blunt curve, with a depth of only three miles and a front of only eight miles. Our position, therefore, was much more exposed to the concentrated fire of the German artillery from three sides.

In the second week in May the German bombardment of our Ypres position was resumed with fury, the German infantry attacking from the north-east and south-west.

Digitized by Google



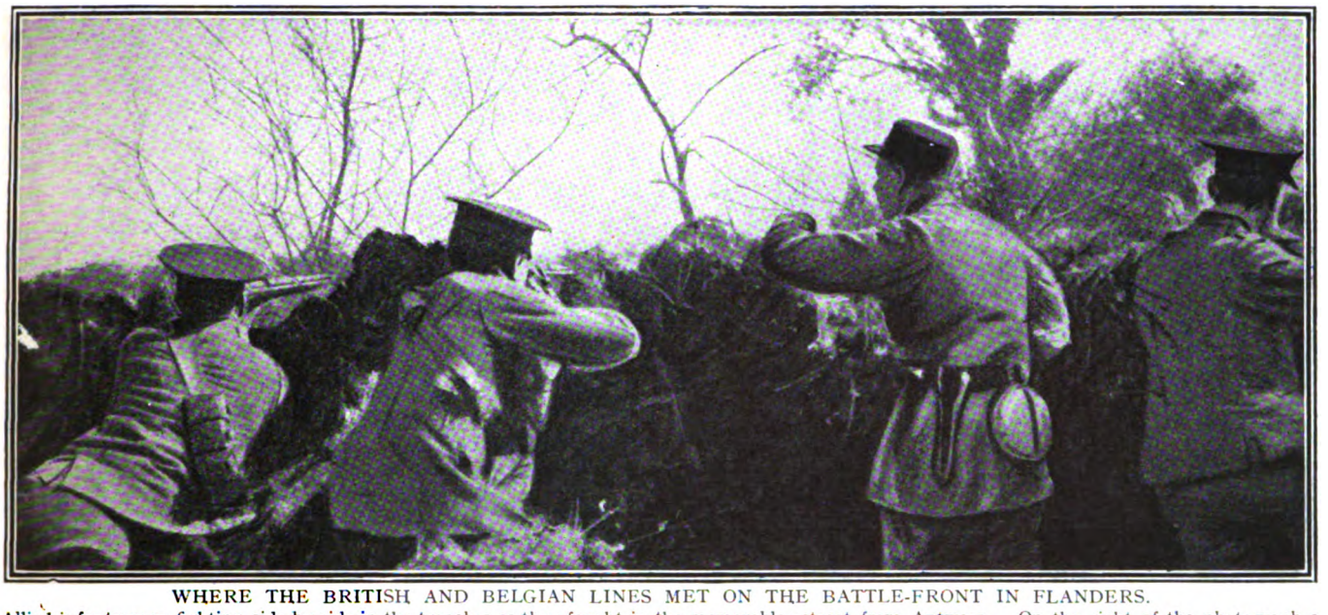
Presented with "THE GREAT WAR." Part 49.

Photo. Boute.

Her Majesty, Elizabeth, Queen of the Belgians.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



WHERE THE BRITISH AND BELGIAN LINES MET ON THE BATTLE-FRONT IN FLANDERS.
Allied infantrymen fighting side by side in the trenches as they fought in the memorable retreat from Antwerp. On the right of the photograph a Belgian officer is seen directing the fire of his own men against the ruthless ravagers of their country.

Here trenches were lost and recovered, and lost again, and again recaptured. The chief attacks came from the wooded tract south of the Menin road. The Germans came on always in close formation, until it was reckoned that 150,000 of them had been vainly sacrificed in the second Battle of Ypres. The town was worth nothing to us. It was a weakness, and not a source of strength. On pure strategic considerations we should have retired over the canal, and have made this water and the Douve River the moats guarding our first and second lines. But Sir John French would not retire from Ypres because moral motives were at the time of more importance than sound, scientific dispositions. The entire German public wanted Ypres. All that happened in the eastern theatre of war interested them less than Ypres. So, by the most desperate feat of endurance in history, our troops held on to Ypres against overwhelming odds, while using their main strength and striking at the enemy in another direction.

We have refrained until now from introducing into this history any direct, first-hand descriptions of fighting by our men; for one man's picture of his section of a modern front is usually too fragmentary a thing for the general purpose. Yet in the wild, confused, and desperate conflicts that marked the second phase of the struggle for Ypres, the adventures of many a single soldier of our Second Army had an uncommon representative character, especially when he was marched from point to point in rapid manœuvres, each ending in a violent contest. We shall, therefore, conclude this chapter in the epic of Ypres with a hitherto-unpublished description of the large share of fighting that fell to a private in the Queen Victoria's Rifles. It is calculated to bring home to the reader, in a way no general account can do, the prolonged intensity of effort which was required of each individual in this great soldiers' battle:



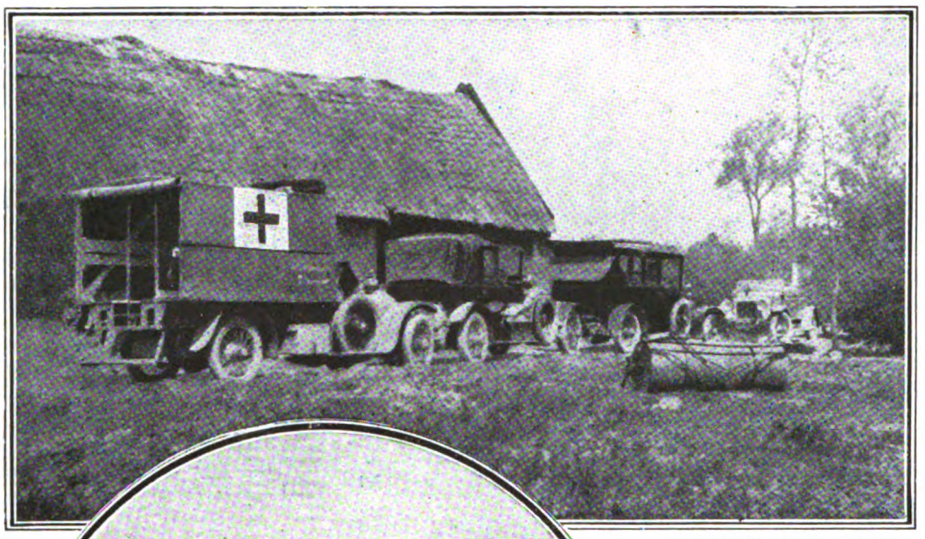
THE FIRST TERRITORIAL V.C.
Second-Lieutenant Geoffrey Harold Woolley, of the Queen Victoria's Rifles. At Hill 60, on the night of April 20-21st, 1915, he picked up a hand-grenade which had been thrown into the trench, and before the fuse had burned to the charge threw it out, thereby saving many lives.

At 7 p.m. on Saturday night, April 17th, 1915, while on rest at "Canvas Town" (the hut encampment near Vlamertinghe), a terrific bombardment commences. We know this is the beginning of a big attack at Ypres, and that Hill 60, on which the R.E.'s have been working for weeks preparing mines, is to be blown up. The bombardment continues all night, but does not disturb my sleep. At 7 a.m. the next morning (Sunday, 18th) we are awakened by the shouting of "stand to" orders. Battalion sports had been arranged, and the enjoyment to which we had been looking forward is knocked on the head. We hastily get our breakfast. Orders are made and cancelled, but we finally move off at 9.15 a.m. and march to Ypres. Here we are put in a temporary billet, in a remaining undamaged portion of a fine old convent.

We "stand by," and I disport myself on the lawn outside smoking and chatting, but not for long. Very soon comes the order for my platoon and another to "fall in" in clean fatigue, and we march a short distance to what is known as the Lille Gate. Here we collect barbed-wire entanglements, and proceed in the direction of the firing-line. All is well till we pass Brigade Headquarters and get on to the railway track. Then shrapnel begins to fly about in a very discomforting fashion, but we practically take no notice. Slightly wounded men, chiefly K.O.S.B.'s from last night's attack, pass us continually, and serious cases come by on stretchers. An R.A.M.C. stretcher-bearer is hit in the head by a shrapnel bullet. One of our fellows takes his place. We reach the railway cutting, close to the dressing station, and leave our entanglements; then return to Brigade Headquarters and make several more journeys with ammunition, rifle, and hand-grenades. A shell catches the roof of a barn adjoining Headquarters, and it is soon in flames. There are several casualties. We make our final journey, and this time we carry the goods through a long communication trench. It is a tedious job, for wounded men are continually passing us on their way to the dressing station. We reach the front-line trench. Two companies following us are to make a charge at 6 p.m. There is no time for us to get out in safety, and our officer decides it is better to take our chance in the trench. The whistle blows at 6 p.m., and the fine Yorkshire lads are over the parapet.

A terrific bombardment follows. The air is thick with fumes from asphyxiating gas, and our eyes smart terribly. We are practically useless, but do what little we can handing along ammunition, bandaging and helping the wounded. I have to close my eyes as a man is brought along—his brains are hanging out of his head. When news comes that the attack has been successful and the bombardment ceases, we file along the communication trench into the railway

Digitized by Google



BEHIND THE FIRING-LINE AT YPRES.
Ambulances waiting to convey wounded out of the danger zone.



GALLANT RED CROSS WORK UNDER FIRE.
A French Red Cross doctor, after tending a wounded soldier in a communication trench near Moncel, is conducting his patient to a place of safety. A dead comrade is seen lying in the foreground.



THE HUNS' VENGEANCE ON BRICK AND STONE.
Baulked twice by the British in their effort to take Ypres, the Germans made every prominent building in the beautiful old-world city a target for their big guns, with the result that only shaking ruins of the historic Cathedral were left, all the exquisite stained glass being shattered.

cutting, and eventually arrive safely back at our billet at 9 p.m. Our casualties in the two platoons total four wounded only—surprisingly small considering. We have some hot stew, having had nothing to eat since our hurried breakfast before leaving our huts; then we turn in, and I am soon sound asleep.

At 7 a.m. the next morning (Monday, 19th), we are hurriedly paraded (the whole battalion), and are marched in the direction of the railway once more, but this time across fields, and not by the road as yesterday. We are halted when we arrive at the embankment, and take possession of a dug-out—about a mile from Hill 60. Adjoining the embankment is a large pond, and I take the opportunity of having a wash. The day passes uneventfully. Beyond us motor-ambulances pass continually bearing the wounded from the dressing station to hospital. About mid-day the Germans begin shelling Ypres with their renowned "Jack Johnsons." It is fortunate we shifted, I am thinking. At dusk a party goes back to fetch rations and the post. I light a candle in my dug-out, and read the letters I have received, after which I try to snatch a few hours' sleep, but cold keeps me awake.

The next day (20th) is spent in a similar fashion till seven p.m., when orders come along to get ready to march away. We go across fields, and very shortly come under disconcerting shell and rifle fire, entailing a number of casualties, finally reaching some more dug-outs in a wood on the left of the railway cutting. Shelling continues. My friend Devereux and I secure a dug-out between us, and start work improving it with our entrenching tools as far as is possible. About 11 p.m., 13th and 14th platoons are called out. We leave our packs and haversacks in the dug-out, and our captain leads us once more to the cutting. He is wounded just before we gain the communication trench, and the platoon officer, Mr. Summerhayes, takes his place. We are all unaware what is in store for us. A roughly-made communication trench from the original fire trench to the summit of Hill 60 is traversed.

We are soon busy firing. Dawn (21st) gradually appears, and the enemy begins bombarding with hand-grenades. One by one I see my pals fall. Maisey and Pearson a little way on my right are lying—never to move again. Mr. Woolley * takes command after Major Lees and Mr. Summerhayes have been killed, and the remaining officer of the Bedfords in sight. What a roar and tumult! Maxim guns are hammering away, shrapnel bursting above us, and blinding flashes follow the explosion of hand-grenades. My rifle becomes too hot to hold, and I throw it aside for another. A bomb explodes a few yards away on my left among the Bedfords. What happens to them I don't know. I feel no longer a human being. Simply mechanically I continue firing. A glance to the rear—Corporal Peabody is attending a wounded man. Mr. Woolley appears at the mouth of the communication trench and encourages us by saying reinforcements are coming up. A blinding flash, and something hits me full in the face—a feeling as though someone has smacked the bristle side of a stiff brush in my face. My hand instinctively goes up—no, there is no blood. Only fine particles of earth have reached me, but Devereux and Wickens are both wounded from the same explosion, and grope their way to the rear.

"Pals fall one by one"

The Devons begin to arrive, and as they come up, we make our way to the rear—crawling on hands and knees along the low, badly-damaged communication trench into the original fire trench, and from there to the communication trench leading on to the railway cutting. Passing the Northumberland Fusiliers on our way, we reach another communication trench, leading from the railway to the support dug-outs, which are in what was once a wood. But few trees are left—mostly short stumps, for the tops have been blown off. Here we are gathered into some sort of order, and go across a couple of fields to some more dug-outs.

Till now my nerves have stood me well; but as I recall the fearful sights I have witnessed, and realise the majority of my pals are gone, I give way and break down, sobbing like a child on its mother's knee. Presently I pull myself together and have a little food. It is about 11 a.m. (Wednesday, April 21st). I obtain permission to return to the wood to secure my pack. With some difficulty I locate the position of the dug-out Devereux and myself had occupied the previous night, but I happen to spot the packs. The dug-out had been transformed to a shell hole, and it was lucky for us both we weren't in it at the time; my haversack is missing.

Night falls, and tired out, cramped though my position is, I sleep soundly till late the next morning (Thursday, April 22nd.) About

* Sec.-Lieut. G. H. Woolley, awarded Victoria Cross, May 22nd, 1915.

Digitized by Google

mid-day we receive orders to be ready to move. We work our way back across the fields, keeping well under cover of hedges till we reach Zillebeke, turning off from there to the left and once more regaining the railway. A few minutes' halt, and we proceed along the embankment to the Lille road into Ypres. A mile the other side of Ypres a halt is made, and the battalion is formed up once more. Food is eaten. Presently we again fall in, and General Smith-Dorrien makes a speech congratulating the regiment on the part it had played, after which we proceed to a new hut encampment about a mile farther back, arriving there about 4 p.m. Most of the fellows, being very fatigued, dropped down in their places in the huts to sleep; the more energetic went in search of water for washing, others to surrounding farms for coffee and eggs; I was among the last.

Presently French transports come hurrying from the direction of the firing-line. No notice was taken at first, but the stream seems never ending. All manner of rumours fly around. I return to the camp. Everywhere troops are asking questions, yet all is marvellously orderly. Soon comes the order to "stand to." We are paraded, magazines are charged, and all ready to march off. Official news comes that the enemy has broken through the first line of the French, but the Canadians are holding the second line. We are marched across a couple of fields, and begin digging a trench. We are on this for a couple of hours or so, and then return to our huts, being told to be ready to move at a moment's notice. Two hours' sleep is snatched, and we are on the move again, and go along the railway track in the direction of Vlamertinghe. We bivouac in a field. Our field kitchens supply hot tea, and rations are issued.

Dawn breaks (Friday, April 23rd), and we take cover from aeroplane sight, lining the hedges. About 10 a.m. the brigade starts on the move. Our battalion brings up the rear. We pass Vlamertinghe and proceed towards Elverdinghe. No one knows where we are bound for, yet we are all under the impression we are going to a permanent encampment for a rest. We reach a farm and rest in a field.

Another meal is made, and about 4 p.m. the brigade is on the move again. We pass a village, and after about a three-mile march we reach the Yser Canal and cross a pontoon bridge. Our battalion is spread out in extended order on the far side of the embankment. We are in reserve to an attack. The attack is successful, and we are told certain trenches are taken. We remain on the embankment all night, and about mid-day the following day (Saturday, April 24th), orders arrive to be ready to move. We tramp across fields, recently ploughed and sown, passing the village of St. Jean on our right. Everywhere troops are on the move. An enemy aeroplane has seen what is happening, and soon shells begin to drop—not a few here and there, but a perfect hailstorm of metal. Troops are moving up everywhere. Order is kept marvellously considering. We stumble along as quickly as we can. I don't know who is leading us, or where we are making for. The air is thick with smoke, and breathing becomes difficult. Presently we reach a partly-built rampart, and are told to spread ourselves out as much as possible, and dig ourselves in behind it. Operations are soon begun. Higher up a shell has burst among our men; another bursts within a few yards of the spot where I am working. I have just time to fall flat—surely that can't have missed me?—yes, I am quite all right, though Chalmers has got a nasty piece in his thigh.

"A hailstorm of metal"

We are only digging a few minutes when orders come to advance towards a farm building. Making our way in our own time we reach a pile of mangel-wurzels—I stay behind this for a breather. Half-right from this, about two hundred yards away, is a trench, and it is there we are to make for. Having recovered my breath, I make a dash. The enemy have evidently spotted us, and a machine-gun is soon busy. Gad, I never heard so many bullets whistle past me before! I reach a sort of "don't care" mood, and plod across to the trench as best I can, for I am absolutely whacked. I reach it in safety, and flop down on some straw in the bottom, thoroughly exhausted.

The trench is held by Canadians, but they are very few, and my company links up with them. Apparently this was originally a support trench, but owing to the enemy having been successful in taking some trenches of ours in front of a wood, this position is now a front-line one. We arrive just after the Germans had made an attack on some other trenches, and had been repulsed, and as they retreat across an open space, between a farm building and the wood, we are able to pepper them well from our position. The range



RESPIRATORS IN THE TRENCHES.
Photograph taken under fire of Belgians working a machine-gun and wearing respirators as protection against German poison-gas.



FRENCH MACHINE-GUN AND CREW IN A TWIG-LINED TRENCH.
First in the field with the mitrailleuse in 1870, the French quickly showed their efficiency in machine-gun warfare in their second great struggle against the German foe.



THREE HIGHLANDERS WHO DEFEATED FIFTY HUNS.
Attacked at La Bassée by fifty Germans while escorting a convoy, these gallant Scots put a period to the fighting days of no less than seventeen of the foe, and the other Huns fled for dear life.

Digitized by Google



"PROTECTION AGAINST ENGLISH GAS BOMBS."

A German paper published the above illustration with the description quoted. The gentle Hun is represented as wearing "a face mask and oxygen apparatus for rendering aid to the asphyxiated." The fact that Germany introduced poison gas, and that the British at this time had made no use of it whatever, was ignored.

was eight hundred yards, but I think we accounted for a few—anyhow, not many reached the wood. This is the first occasion on which I have had a real target—and didn't I enjoy it, too!

As darkness came, we began to get busy improving the trench. There was a plentiful supply of good turf to be dug behind the trench, and very soon we began to make ourselves a fairly safe shelter. Rain, however, began to fall, and this did not cheer our spirits. Dawn arrives (Sunday, April 25th). About 7 a.m. heavy rifle fire opens from the wood, which is half-left from our position, and presently we observe the cause—a kilted regiment is advancing to attack. The bark of a dog sounds above the rifle fire, and, sure to behold, there is the figure of a big black dog running ahead of the Scotties. What a fine sight—yet what a terrible sight!—for an enormous lot of the poor chaps are falling. The distance is far too much to cover (about eight hundred yards), and in broad daylight, too. Very soon the attack is given up, and those who are left make their way back. Things quieten down a bit. I snatch an hour or two's well-needed sleep.

About 2 p.m. the enemy start shelling some farm buildings about fifteen yards in the rear of our trench, but about one hundred yards from the spot where I am. They are sending over some very heavy stuff. My pals must be having a pretty hot time up that end. The farm buildings are used as a headquarters by the Canadians. The range is soon found, and smoke issuing from the buildings shows us a fire has occurred. Soon ammunition begins to cackle off, and this goes on for some hours. A lot of stores, etc., must have been lost. The bombardment lasts about three-quarters of an hour, during which time I count ninety shells that have been sent over. News come along that one of the shells dropped on the parapet of the trench farther up on the right, and Corporal Beard and Rifleman Monker had been injured. Dusk comes on, and being anxious to fill my bottle, I volunteer to get some water from the pump at the farm. I take another fellow with me, and we pick our way through the ruin to the pump, and begin filling the bottles. There are a lot of other fellows (Canadians) also on the same search; others are in search of whatever they can find in the way of spare rations, etc.

Suddenly another shell comes over, bursting beyond the buildings. Fellows scuttle away like rats; my pal and I make hasty tracks for our trench again. Having reached it in safety I sit down and laugh, for it is really most amusing to see everyone suddenly dart away in all directions, dropping the tins of jam which they had been confiscating. The rest of the night passes peacefully, and we are able to continue the work of fortifying our trench. Roberts, unluckily, gets a stray bullet in his arm. But it is a nice, clean wound.

Devastated village homes

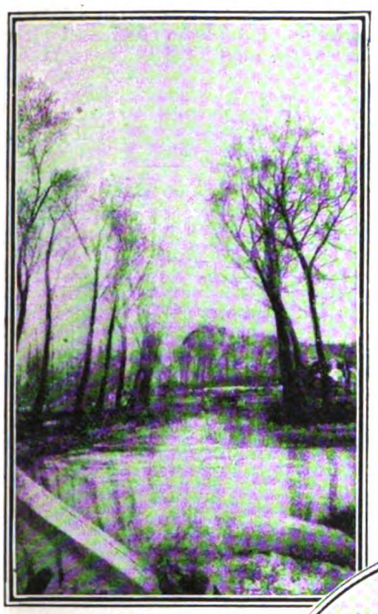
The grey dawn (April 26th) begins to appear, and with it a heavy mist. About 4 a.m. our adjutant appears, and tells us to hurry and get ready to be relieved. It is most essential to get away before the mist rises, for it is now almost broad daylight. We file out and are led across fields, reaching the village of St. Jean, through which we pass. What havoc and devastation has been done! A few days ago people were living here, and now, roofless houses, shattered walls, shell-holes dotting the cobbled road. Furniture is lying in the streets, the smouldering remains of a motor-ambulance stands on the side of the road; dead men and horses are lying everywhere, and not always whole bodies, alas! We leave the road, and go across country once more; at last, striking the canal, we move along the banks. This embankment is now a mass of dug-outs, for it has been heavily shelled since we were last there. All had seemed so undisturbed before, and I plucked cowslips which grew among the grass. We rest a few minutes when we have crossed the pontoon bridge, and then continue our march back to the farm near Elverdinghe. We are all played out by this time, and many



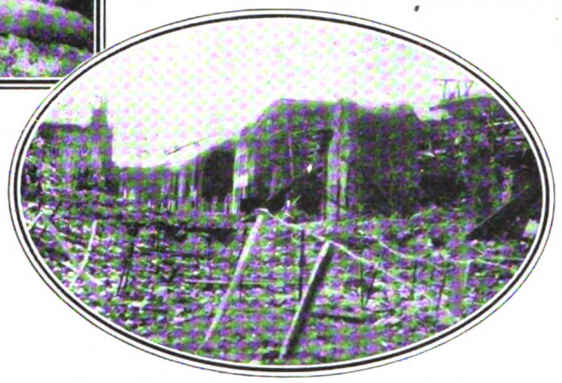
TRAPPED VICTIMS OF THE TEUTONS' POISON GAS.

The two photographs given above show French soldiers suffering from the initial effects of the poison gas introduced by Germany into "civilised" warfare.

Digitized by Google



SCENE OF THE FIERCE FIGHTING NEAR ARRAS.
The river was here the dividing line between the French and German forces, which were separated by about two hundred yards.



A STREET IN BATTLE-SCARRED CARENCY.
In and around this village, north of Arras, the French won a great victory in May, 1915. Remnants of German wire entanglements are to be seen in the foreground.

Once more the pontoon bridge is crossed, and we occupy a newly-made trench adjoining the French. It is only for twenty-four hours, and we are relieved the following night. What a mixture of troops there is at this part of the line! French, British, Canadians, Indians, Turcos, Zouaves, and Moroccans! I shouldn't think the enemy could break through again in a hurry. We reach our barn once more soon after midnight, but have very few hours of sleep, for we know we have to be on the move again at daybreak. At 4 a.m. (Saturday, May 1st), we sleepily "fall in," and go across fields to some woods, and are told we shall bivouac here for a bit. We are all soon busy fixing up shelters of sorts, with the aid of branches and our waterproof sheets. We rest undisturbed at night.

The following morning (Sunday, May 2nd) our chaplain arrives, and delivers a short service. It is an impressive sight to see us formed in a square, and hear us singing hymns, our voices echoing through the woods. The weather is glorious. I could enjoy living here like this for months, if the weather kept fine. Just after we had our tea, the ominous cry of "Orderly sergeants at the double" rings through the wood. We march some miles across the fields; presently we are halted and told to lie down with our equipment on. The brigade is apparently in reserve in case it's needed, as the enemy has been attacking during the day. We lie in this field and shiver for several hours; the night has turned very cold. We are not allowed to smoke, as no lights must be shown. Soon after midnight we learn "the situation is well in hand, and the battalion may return to the woods."



BRIDGE OF BOATS ACROSS THE AISNE.
The engineers of all the allied armies had extensive practice in building, rebuilding, and destroying bridges.

have had to fall out on the way. Now for a wash and a shave, for I have had neither for seven days. A pond close by, though not very clean, is very welcome, and after a good scrub down I feel a new man. The rest of the day is spent in lounging about and feeding. There is plenty to eat, for beyond our own parcels, those of our killed and wounded pals are split up amongst us, and these are not inconsiderable in number.

We remain at this farm resting till Thursday, April 29th, getting three full nights' sleep. On this day we receive orders to parade at 6 p.m. for the trenches again. We are going to reinforce another regiment.



AN INTERVAL FOR REFITTING.
Some of our gallant French allies in an interval between the fighting have sat down to a little tailoring and shoe-making. As shown in the view, their linen has been attended to likewise.

We march back by road, via Vlamertinghe. The enemy seems to have made a mess of the town since last I saw it. We reach the woods just before daybreak (Monday, May 3rd), and re-erect our shelters. During the afternoon we have orders to shift to another part of the woods. No sooner have we settled down than the order comes to march up once more and "fall in." Another march across fields—the same old game—"stand by" in case needed. We dig ourselves in and are allowed to sleep. I dig a fairly comfortable and safe hole for myself into which I crawl, and am soon sound asleep, only to wake shortly, feeling rain falling on me, and an uncomfortable wet feeling underneath me. I get up, and find I have been lying in a pool of water. Feeling cold and miserable, I take a little run up and down to get the blood moving in my body. As daylight begins to show itself, the cheerful news comes that we are to proceed back to a hut encampment for a rest.

A long tiring march via Vlamertinghe, Oudendhem, and we reach some huts at a village. Tired out though I am I cannot resist the bubbling stream I espy a few hundred yards in the distance, and laden with my washing equipment and a clean set of underclothes, I make ahead for it, and am soon enjoying a good swim. A run round the field in the sun, and I quickly dress. The afternoon I spend lying in a field writing letters. After tea I "turn in," and get a good twelve hours' sound sleep.

Rumours about Hill 60

Soon after breakfast the following morning (Tuesday, May 4th) rumours fly about to the effect that Hill 60 had been lost. At 10 a.m. we have a rifle inspection, after which there was to be a parade for pay. This is cancelled, and orders are suddenly flung at us to draw rations for twenty-four hours, and proceed to march away. At 1 p.m. we move off in the direction of Ypres once more; the other regiments in our brigade are ahead of us. We march across country, and about 4 p.m. rest in a field. Our cookers supply us with stew and tea, then we are on the move again, and the sinking of the sun sees us in a reserve trench about one and a half miles behind the firing-line. We only stay here about an hour, for we move higher up and occupy the dug-outs on the railway embankment, where we remain all night, and during the next day (Wednesday, May 5th). At dusk we move up to the support dug-outs in the Larch Wood, on the left of the railway cutting behind Hill 60, but not single-handed. In addition to our full marching order we have to carry ammunition, rations, etc.

Another fellow and



A PRIVILEGED SPOT.
This little town was one of the few that could boast of a belfry unharmed by gun fire. A French soldier is seen here on fatigue duty as water-carrier.

Digitized by Google



LIEUTENANT-GENERAL SIR HERBERT PLUMER, K.C.B.
Appointed in January, 1915, to the command of the Fifth Army Corps, Lieutenant-General Sir Herbert Charles Onslow Plumer, K.C.B., was specially mentioned by Sir John French, in the despatch of June 15th, for his "fine defence of Ypres throughout the arduous and difficult operations during the latter part of April and the month of May."

myself share the weight of a box of ammunition. Gad, what hot going! Sweat pours off me, and soaks through all my clothes, overcoat included. I don't know how, but by sheer grit we at last "get there." One's power of endurance is unknown until really tested. Having "delivered the goods," we are told off to remain in the dug-out till called for.

We are in support to an attack which commences about 3 a.m. (Friday, May 7th), and "stand to" in readiness. The attack is successful, and we are not needed, and I snatch an hour or two's sleep in my dug-out. When I awake I am shocked to hear that our adjutant, Captain Culme Seymour, has been killed. The colonel, too, I learn, has "gone sick." We remain where we are throughout the day, and at dusk, another regiment having come up during the day to relieve us, we go back in small parties across the fields, skirting the ruined Zillebeke village, and alongside the reservoir, eventually reaching some dug-outs. They are known as the artillery dug-outs, having been made for the R.F.A. We strip ourselves of our kit, and at 9 p.m. parade with rifles and bandolier, and are taken across to Brigade Headquarters. Here we are given bundles of fifty sand-bags.

Ypres in flames

Another journey across the fields to the Larch Wood. It is easier going this time without our heavy kit to carry. We return to our dug-outs and sleep till morning (Saturday, May 8th). We are not allowed to light fires, but by the aid of rifle rags, pieces of candles, and other kinds of fat I brew some tea and have breakfast. During the day we bask in the sun, sleep, read, or write letters. At night my company is paraded again with rifle and bandolier. We draw spades at headquarters.

To-night we are on a digging fatigue, and tramp across the fields to the railway cutting, and, acting under an R.E. officer, we are soon working repairing a communication trench which has been badly damaged by shell fire. We get back just before dawn (Sunday, May 9th).

During the day the enemy continues to search for a battery of guns. Some of their shells come uncomfortably close to us, and one actually drops on our embankment, and three of our fellows are wounded. Ypres is shelled every day, and is now in flames. It is a lovely sight at night—portions of the ruined cathedral and a church steeple stand silhouetted against the red glow of the sky. Night falls—another fatigue to the firing-line. The following day (Monday, May 10th) passes in the same way as the previous day or two. Only a certain number of men are required to-night, and it is "D" company's turn to "stand by," so we are undisturbed.

The next night (Tuesday, May 11th) we are on a ration fatigue. Our guide is a man from the South Lancs, and he takes us along the railway. This is, of course, the shortest route, but we know the Germans have it pretty well marked. We start off with a few shrapnel bursting over on our right. We rest for a few minutes by the embankment. Hardly have we sat down than I hear the "plunk" of a bullet, followed by an exclamation of pain by poor little Jameson, who is lying just in front of me—he has got it in the thigh. Two men remain behind with him and we proceed, the rest reaching the cutting in safety. On the return journey two more fellows are hit. We rest till dusk the following evening (Wednesday, May 12th) when the brigade is relieved.

Another long tiring march to a village, where we rest for three-quarters of an hour and have some hot tea; then proceed to a hut encampment. We arrive there about 6 a.m., and after a little breakfast I am soon fast asleep. A draft of one hundred and forty men arrives. The next day (Friday, May 14th) I don't feel at all well, and the following day (Saturday, May 15th) I report sick, and am sent to hospital—13th Field Ambulance at Reninghelst—where I remain till Monday, May 17th, when I am shifted in a motor-ambulance to Boeschepe. This hospital is little or no improvement on the last, but my case nominates me for base, and I am removed on a stretcher to a bone-shaking old horse-drawn Red Cross waggon.

Invalided to the coast

A long ride and I arrive at Bailleul, and am placed in a clearing hospital, where I remain till next morning. Another ride in a motor-ambulance to the Bailleul Station, and thence to the ambulance train—six hours' journey, and evening finds me being placed in a nice soft bed in a pleasant room overlooking the sea at No. 14 General Hospital, Wimereux, near Boulogne. And now here I sit, gazing with longing eyes across the glorious blue sea in the direction of dear old England. When, ah! when, shall I see it again?



A FRENCH AERIAL "TORPEDO" ABOUT TO BE FIRED.
One of the new weapons employed in a war remarkable in history for the employment of machinery against men. The above view is of a French trench from which an aerial "torpedo" is about to be fired, while a second projectile is being held in readiness for the next shot.

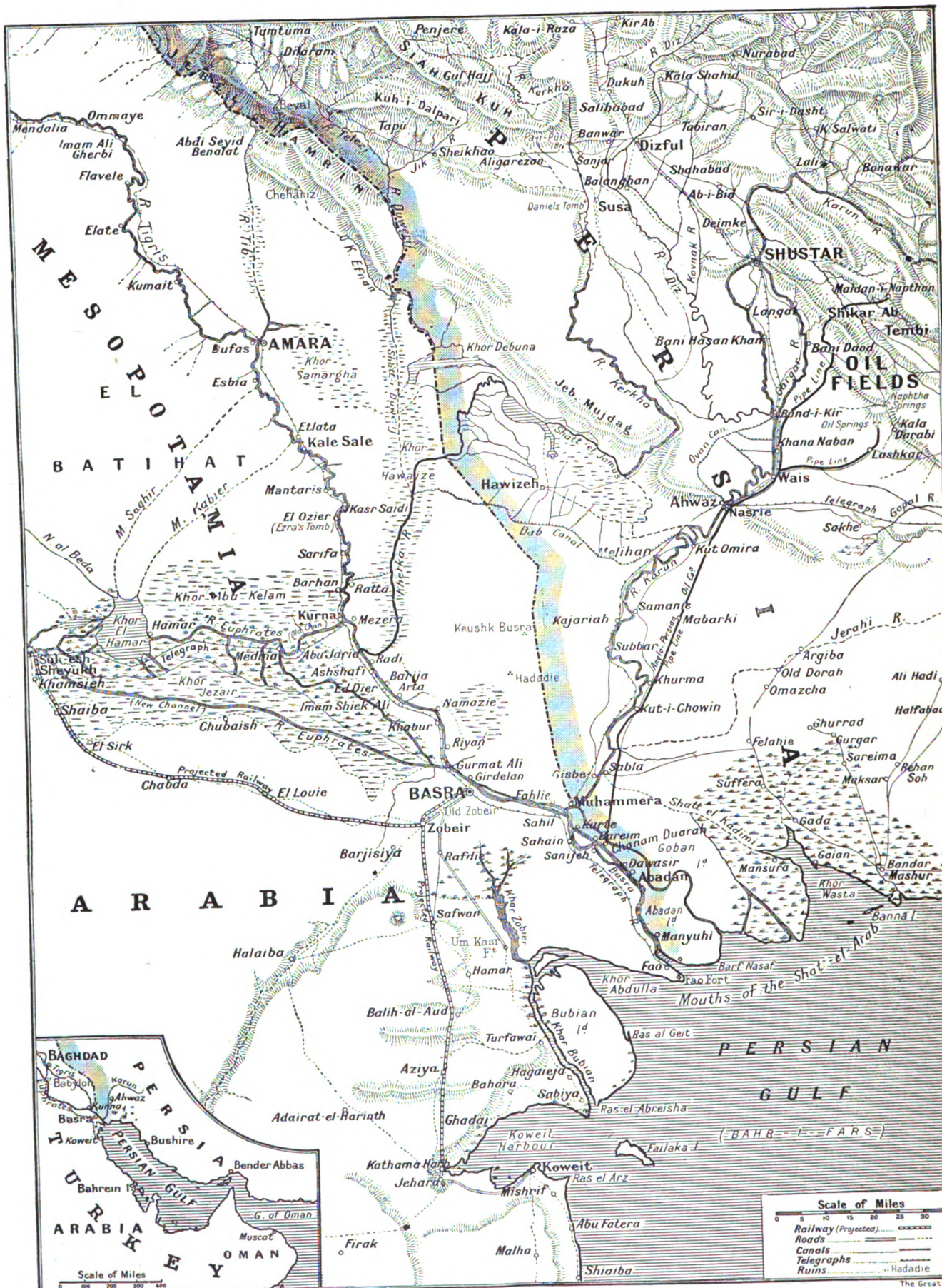
Digitized by Google



PICTURESQUE WAR-TIME SCENE IN NORTHERN FRANCE.

French engineers conducting a cavalry regiment over a river. Some of the horses were conveyed across the water in pontoons, while others swam across. The engineers were equipped with swimming jackets for the work in hand.

Digitized by Google



MESOPOTAMIA—THE STORIED LAND "BETWEEN THE RIVERS" WHERE GERMANY PLOTTED AND TURKEY PAID THE PRICE.

Specially-drawn map of the region of the Persian Gulf, showing the valleys of the Euphrates and Tigris, the mouths of the Shat-el-Arab, the oil-fields, and the areas of the fighting between British-Indian and Turkish troops from November, 1914, to June, 1915.

Digitized by Google



INDIAN TROOPS IN

CHAPTER LXVII.

THE PERSIAN GULF.

THE FIGHTING AROUND THE PERSIAN GULF.

Turkey, under German Influence, Jeopardises her Asiatic Possessions as well as Constantinople—The Storied Land around the Euphrates and the Tigris—British Interests in the Persian Gulf—German Traders and the Native Chiefs—The Bagdad Railway Scheme—Our Reply to the Turkish Challenge—The Expeditionary Force from India—A Night Attack by the Enemy—Operations on the Shat-el-Arab—General Barrett enters Basra—Turks Driven Across the Tigris near Kurna—British Occupation of Mezera—Seizure of Kurna—German and Turkish Stories of British Defeat—The Withdrawal from before Ghadir—Further Reinforcements from India, under Lieut.-Gen. Sir J. E. Nixon—The Battle of the Tamarisk Woods, near Shaiba—Flight of the Enemy—Turkish Leader's Reported Suicide—British Occupation of Nakaila—Sandstorms and Floods Delay the Pursuit—Fighting by Land and River—Surrender of Amara.

WHEN Turkey, flattered, cajoled, and perhaps threatened by the Kaiser's emissaries, threw down the gage of battle to Great Britain and her Allies in November, 1914, she jeopardised not only Constantinople, but also her Asiatic possessions which, since the end of the Balkan War, had formed the greater part of the decaying Ottoman Empire. "He that hath command of the sea," said Francis Bacon three hundred years ago, "is at great liberty"—and this liberty permitted Great Britain to choose the time and place of her attack.

Stretching across Asia Minor from the shores of the Mediterranean Sea, the Sultan's possessions bend southward until they touch the head of the Persian Gulf. Here, in the narrow strip of land between Persia on the one side and the Arabian desert on the other, the Rivers Euphrates and Tigris flow towards the Gulf, their waters making this region one of the most fertile in the world. At Basra, about sixty miles from the sea, they unite, and make their way together under the name of the Shat-el-Arab.

The land around the Euphrates and the Tigris is one of the oldest and most famous homes of civilisation. According to some authorities, the Garden of Eden was here, and here certainly is the site of the once mighty city of Babylon. Secular as well as sacred history is full of memories of this fertile region, and so, too, are romance and legend. Bagdad was the scene of the wondrous adventures of Haroun al-Raschid, as narrated in the "Arabian Nights," and though these are mythical, the Sultan himself really existed, living in great magnificence amid his city's "shrines of fretted gold." Basra, a city nearer the sea, is also associated with the "Arabian Nights" and with the life of Sindbad the Sailor. To the Tigris valley belongs the great historical exploit known as the Retreat of the Ten Thousand, for it was by this route that Xenophon led the lost army of the Greeks until they saw the sea in the distance, greeting it with rapturous cries of welcome, for, like ourselves, they belonged to a sea-girt land. The influence of the Greeks is seen in the fact that the district between the Tigris and the Euphrates is called Mesopotamia, the word meaning "between the rivers."



[*Elliott & Fry.*

LIEUT.-GEN. SIR ARTHUR ARNOLD BARRETT, K.C.B., K.C.V.O.
Commander of the British-Indian Expeditionary Force in the Persian Gulf.

In the seventeenth century, about a hundred years after the great Turkish Sultan, Sulyman the Magnificent, had conquered Bagdad, the land between that city and the coast became part of the Ottoman Empire, then just at the height of its power, and in spite of frequent disorder and rebellion it remained so until our own days. But even before this Englishmen had visited the Persian Gulf. Far off in the reign of Elizabeth our traders made their way thither by sea, and since that time our interest in the lands bordering it has been maintained and increased.

The increasing interest of Britain in the Gulf is largely owing to its nearness to India. At Bundar Abbas, a place at its mouth, the East India Company had a station early

Digitized by Google



[*Elliott & Fry.*

BRIGADIER-GENERAL WALTER S. DELAMAIN, C.B.
Commander of the Poona Brigade.

in the seventeenth century, and for nearly two hundred years there was here constant fighting between this company and its Dutch and Portuguese rivals. The companies and their wars passed away, but Britain and her Indian Empire remained, and to strengthen this much was done in the nineteenth century to extend our influence along the shores of the Gulf. It was surveyed and buoyed by ships of our Navy, which also performed the more difficult task of hunting down the pirates and acting as the policeman of this inland sea. Political residents were sent to various places along the coast, but, except Bahrein Island, no territory was taken. Britain's mission there, as elsewhere, was to keep the peace, this being done to allow the Arab and Persian tribesmen to live undisturbed in their own way.

Two years ago, or thereabouts, Great Britain added to her interests and responsibilities in this region. At the head of the Gulf very valuable oil-fields were discovered, and these were soon opened and worked by the Anglo-Persian Oil Company. In 1913, when oil began to be extensively used as fuel for the Navy, it was announced that our Admiralty had secured a controlling interest in these oil-fields, and evidently they were intended to furnish a great proportion of the oil required by our ships.

Great Britain and Turkey were for long the two Powers most concerned in this region, but late in the nineteenth century a third appeared there, and this was Germany. German traders, prominent among whom was the firm of Wonckhaus, took up their abode here, obtained concessions from native chiefs, and, as in Africa, used fair means and foul to extend the influence of the Vaterland.

A word or two about Wonckhaus & Co. may not be out of place here, as the career of this firm shows the careful and persevering way in which the Germans went to work to obtain a foothold. Presumably they were agents for a Hamburg firm, and they began by dealing in shells and pearls, and making the acquaintance of the native population around the Gulf. At first they were at a small place called Lingah, but in 1901 they transferred their headquarters to Bahrein, opening branches a little later at Basra and Bundar Abbas. They appeared to have plenty of money, but, as far as one could see, they did not make very much out of their trading enterprises. The next step was to ask the Sultan of Bahrein for a monopoly of the pearl fisheries of the Gulf—which incidentally did not belong to him—and when Great Britain stopped this, an attempt was made to secure the island of Halul, in the centre of the Gulf. This, too, failed owing to British action.

The firm of Wonckhaus

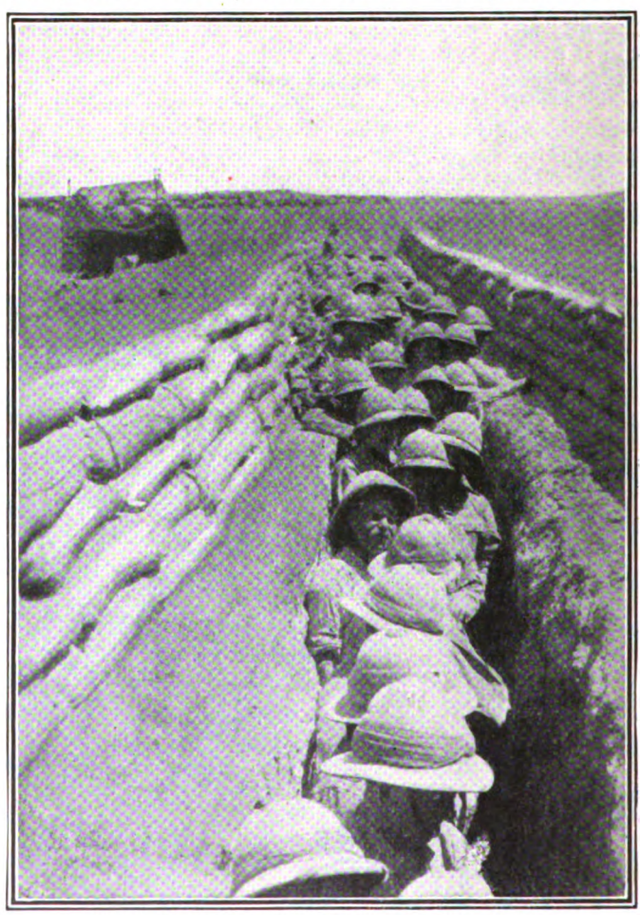
On another island in the Gulf is Abu Musa. There some Arabs had secured a concession for working the deposits of red oxide, and in 1906 this was taken over by the indefatigable Wonckhaus. The Sheikh of Shargah, who had granted the concession, objected to the transfer, and appealed to Great Britain, the result being that the employees of Wonckhaus were forcibly removed from the island. Now came the time for which the German Government had been waiting, and, we think we may say, preparing. A protest was lodged, but the case was obviously weak, and soon it was abandoned. An attempt, following somewhat similar lines, to secure a concession for carrying out irrigation works in the valley of the Karun also failed. Wonckhaus & Co., however, were undismayed, and in the same year, when the Hamburg-Amerika Line began to run a line of steamers to the chief ports on the Gulf, they appeared publicly as the agents of that famous house.

Germany's great scheme for bringing this district under her authority was the construction of a railway—the Bagdad Railway—which should connect the Mediterranean Sea with the Persian Gulf. To this the Turkish Government had assented, and a German company, behind which was the Deutsche Bank, had been formed to carry out the work. Great Britain, however, was not unaware of this project, nor yet of Germany's other intrigues in this neighbourhood, and something had been done to thwart them. The question of the railway was being discussed by the representatives of the two countries when the Great War broke out.

Bagdad Railway intrigue

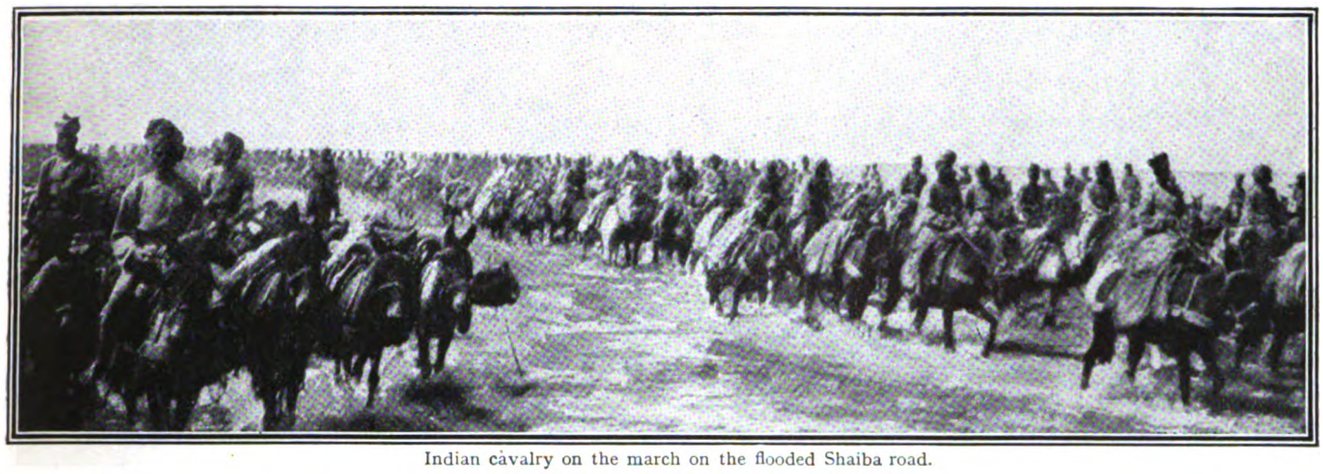
It did not require a genius to point out the advisability of sending a British force into the Persian Gulf in November, 1914. By doing so we were answering promptly the Turkish challenge, giving a fresh proof of the omnipotence of our sea-power, and taking the offensive, which counts for so much in war. But these were, after all, only minor considerations. The major ones were that we were protecting our material interests in the Gulf and in the oil-fields and were striking a blow at Germany, without whose support Turkey would be a negligible quantity.

The force detailed for this expedition was provided by India, and consisted of a division of infantry and certain



THE BURDEN AND HEAT OF THE DAY.
British troops entrenched in the vicinity of the Persian Gulf. The condition of the weather at the time is indicated by the fact that the men were wearing sun-helmets.

Digitized by Google



Indian cavalry on the march on the flooded Shaiba road.



After the fight at Shaiba—Turkish prisoners escorted by Gurkhas.



Advance of the gallant Dorsets near Basra. Of the eighteen miles of their route, nine miles were under water.

Digitized by Google



A TROPHY OF VICTORY.
British-Indian troops with a gun taken from the Turks in the Persian Gulf campaign.



VIEW ON THE SHAT-EL-ARAB, NEAR BASRA.
Basra was occupied by the British on November 23rd, 1914.

auxiliary troops—pioneers, sappers and miners, and light cavalry. The division was commanded by Lieutenant-General Sir Arthur Barrett, and consisted of three brigades, each of which contained one battalion of British troops, the remainder being native regiments. The British battalions were the 2nd Dorsets in the Poona Brigade, the 1st Oxfordshire Light Infantry in the Ahmednagar Brigade, and the 2nd Norfolks in the Belgaum Brigade.

The grass had not grown under the feet of Sir Arthur Barrett, and when war was declared by Turkey the Poona Brigade under Brigadier-General Delamain was at Bahrein, while the remainder of the division was ready to sail from Bombay. On November 7th General Delamain left Bahrein for the fort of Fao, which stands at the mouth of the Shat-el-Arab. With him were H.M.S. Odin, an armed launch, and some Marines with a Maxim gun from H.M.S. Ocean. For an hour the guns of the Odin bombarded the fort, and then, the Turkish fire having been silenced, the soldiers and Marines were landed. Fao was then occupied, and without loss of life a base for further operations was secured.

Fao Fort occupied

Leaving the Marines at Fao, General Delamain's brigade was taken up the Shat-el-Arab, and was disembarked at Sanijeh, about thirty miles from the sea, where the men prepared an entrenched camp and waited for the arrival of their comrades from India before advancing to Basra.

Meanwhile, General Delamain's task was to clear the Turks and their Arab auxiliaries from the neighbourhood, and thus to facilitate the coming advance. On November 9th the enemy attacked the camp at night, but was repulsed, and on the 11th two Indian battalions drove him from a village which he occupied. On the 15th there was a fight in which the Anglo-Indians were not quite so successful, as they retired without driving the Turks entirely from the neighbourhood of Sahain. However, supported by the gunboats on the river, they shelled the enemy out of his trenches, suffering on their part some thirty-five casualties.

Two days previously the brigades from Bombay had reached the mouth of the Shat-el-Arab. Crossing the bar they steamed up the river on the 14th, passing Abadan, the headquarters of the Anglo-Persian Oil Company, where the refinery, with its extensive tanks and buildings, looks very out of place in the barren surroundings. At Sanijeh, where the Poona Brigade was, they disembarked, a difficult feat owing to the banks of the river, which are here about eight or ten feet high, being very muddy and slippery.

Turkish defeat near Sahil

While the troops were resting in the camp at Sanijeh, news reached General Barrett that a Turkish army was advancing from Basra against him, and so on the 17th he ordered the Anglo-Indians to move forward to meet it. They found Sahain deserted, and the fight took place near Sahil, a few miles farther up the Shat-el-Arab. The Turks were entrenched among date groves, and between them and our men was a bare plain, which, in addition to its lack of cover, recent rain had turned into a quagmire. In spite of these disadvantages our men advanced steadily, as soon as the artillery, both from the batteries and from the gunboats, had prepared the way for them. With an English regiment at either end of the line, the Turkish position was carried in about three hours; the Turks fled in disorder before the final charge with the bayonet could be delivered. They were pursued for about a mile, but the state of the ground made it impossible for this pursuit to be effective, while, according to one report, a mirage hid them from the eyes of our men.

The Turkish force engaged in this battle was estimated at 4,500 men, and its losses were stated to have been over 1,500. Many wounded, eight guns, and much ammunition fell into our hands. The Anglo-Indian troops had three hundred and fifty-three casualties, thirty-eight officers and men being killed. Of these one hundred and thirty were sustained by the Dorsets, which battalion had the place of honour in the attack on the Turkish trenches. On

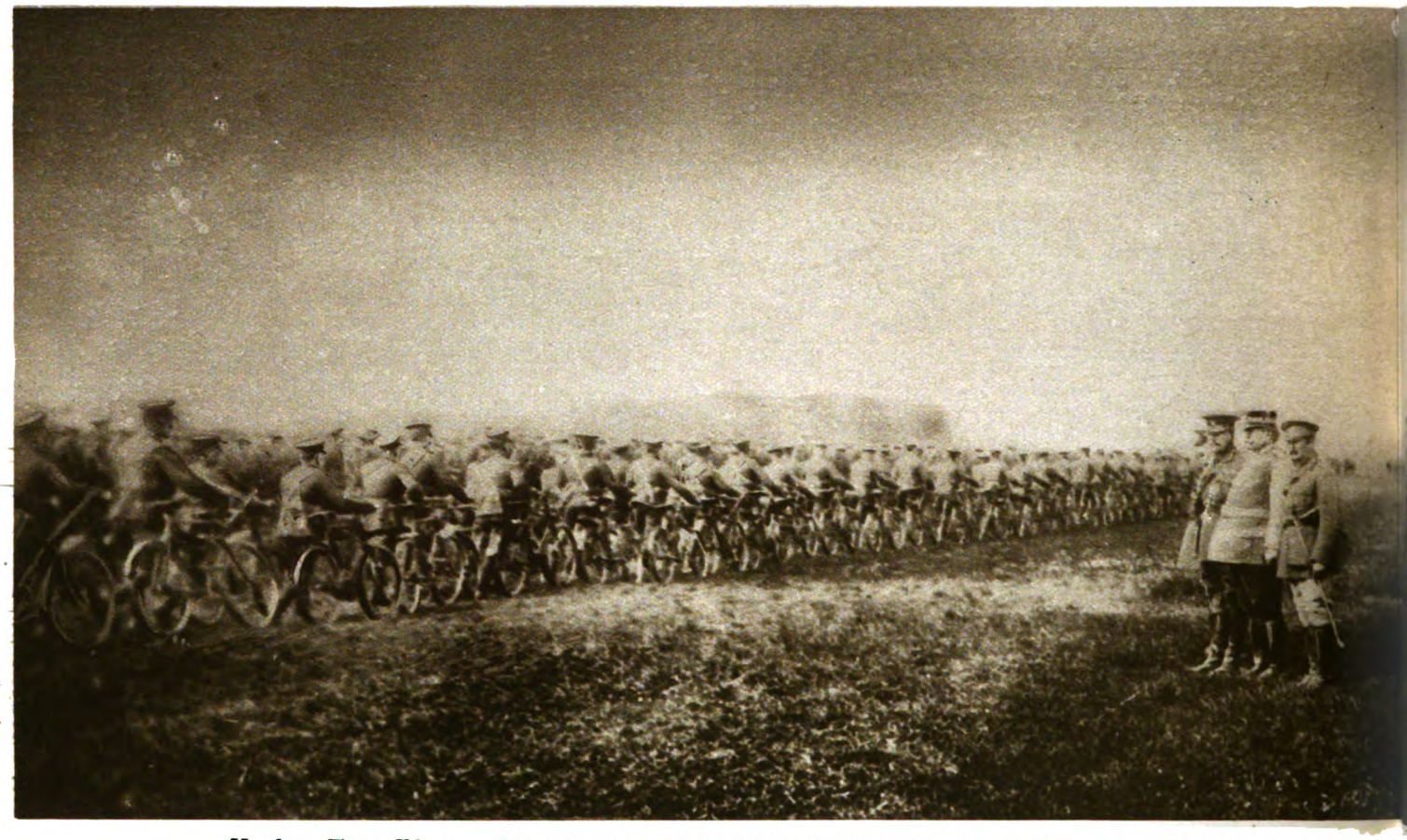
Digitized by Google



[Photo: S. d'A.

General Joffre with Sir John French and Sir Douglas Haig at the Front.

Digitized by Google



Under Two Flags: March-past of British Cyclist Section before Sir John French, Sir D



Regiment of Chasseurs Alpins marching past General Joffre (a

Digitized by Google



[Photo: S. d'A.

...uglas Haig, General Joffre, the late General Gough, and Allied Staff officers in France.



[Photo: S. d'A.

...a cinematograph) after a distribution of decorations in Alsace.

Digitized by Google



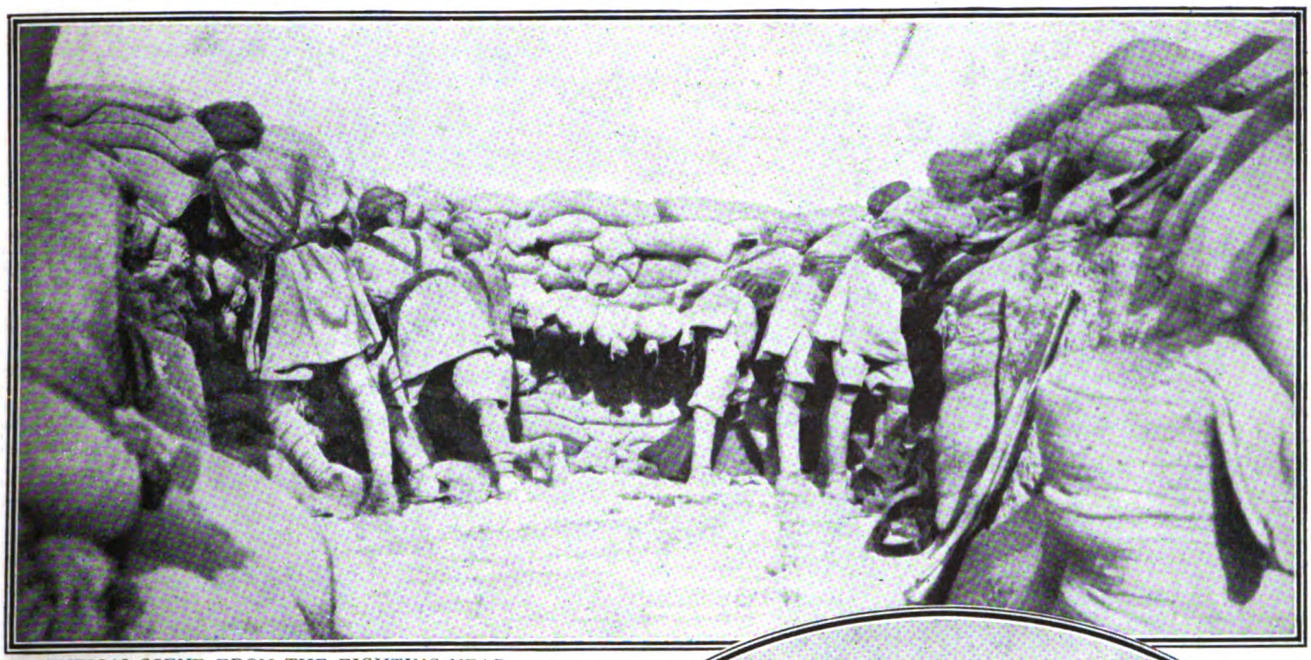
British Army officers in front of their billets in the Ypres salient.



[Photo: S. d'A.

Mr. Asquith and Sir John French with Allied Staff officers at the Front.

Digitized by Google

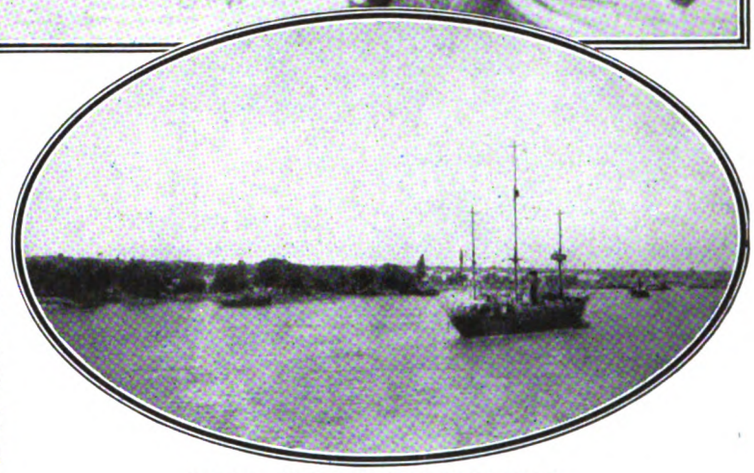


TYPICAL SCENE FROM THE FIGHTING NEAR THE PERSIAN GULF.
Indian troops firing from a sand-bag protected trench in Mesopotamia.

the same day a storm sank many of our boats, with heavy loss of rations and kits.

A day or two after this engagement word was brought to the British camp that the Turks had evacuated Basra, and that the Arabs had begun to plunder the place, in which were a few British residents. Accordingly, on the 21st, General Barrett asked for two battalions to make a dash to the city, and the two selected were the 2nd Norfolks and the 110th Mahrattas. These were crowded on board two paddle-steamers, the Medijeh and the Blosse Lynch, their embarkation being very difficult owing to the mud and rising tide. The rest of the division was ordered to march across the desert to the same objective.

General Barrett enters Basra



BASRA, FROM THE SHAT-EL-ARAB.
H.M.S. Espiègle in the foreground.

To impede an advance up the river the Turks had sunk some steamers therein, and at the same place had stationed a battery of guns. These were silenced, the other obstacles were also overcome, and on the 22nd the two battalions and General Barrett entered Basra—to find that the custom-house had just been set on fire. No opposition was offered to their entrance, and soon the British flag was flying over the German Consulate. During the night the remainder of the force, having accomplished a march of thirty miles, encamped just outside Basra.

The formal occupation of Basra took place on the afternoon of the 23rd. The Union Jack having been hoisted, a proclamation was read aloud in Arabic, and a salute was fired by the warships in the river. On the 24th the military governor, Major Brownlow, took up his residence at the German Consulate, the Consul and some other Germans being taken off to India. Basra, which now came into British hands, is the centre of the date trade, and a port through which some £2,000,000 of goods pass every year. From it the Hamburg-Amerika Line had been running steamers, and it was intended to be the terminus of the Bagdad Railway.

During the remainder of the month a camp was prepared outside Basra, and preparations were made for dealing with further Turkish attacks, which would doubtless be delivered from the great military station of Bagdad. Attention was also paid to Kurna, a town on the right bank of the Tigris, where, so our scouts discovered, a Turkish force was collecting. To ascertain its strength, Lieut.-Colonel Frazer was sent out on December 3rd, with some Indian troops, a detachment of the Norfolks, some artillery, and other units, his small force being supported by gunboats and armed launches. The enemy was encountered on the left bank of the Tigris, nearly opposite Kurna, and there the troops were landed, while the warships went ahead and shelled the town. Leaving seventy prisoners and two guns in our hands, the Turks were promptly driven across the river, but this was all our men could do. Kurna was evidently strongly defended, and although Colonel Frazer's column reached the bank of the river opposite the town, it was not prepared to force its way across in the face of a heavy fire. Accordingly it was withdrawn to its original camp below Kurna, which was hastily entrenched, while word was sent to Basra that further assistance was necessary. In this engagement the assistance of the warships was very valuable. The Espiègle and the Lawrence silenced some of the enemy's guns, but the latter vessel and also the armed launch Miner were damaged by shells.

On the 6th, Brigadier-General C. I. Fry arrived with the 7th Rajputs and the rest of the Norfolks, and the attack was renewed. Mezera, a town on the left bank of the Tigris, was occupied, and for the second time the Turks were driven across the river to Kurna; but, for the second time our men were compelled to retire after reaching the river bank.

Mezera and Kurna taken

Another plan was then tried. To the north of the town some sappers swam across the Tigris, and having got a steel hawser across, constructed a flying bridge. Across this the 104th Rifles and the 110th Mahrattas marched, and as soon as they were entrenched, Kurna was practically

Digitized by Google



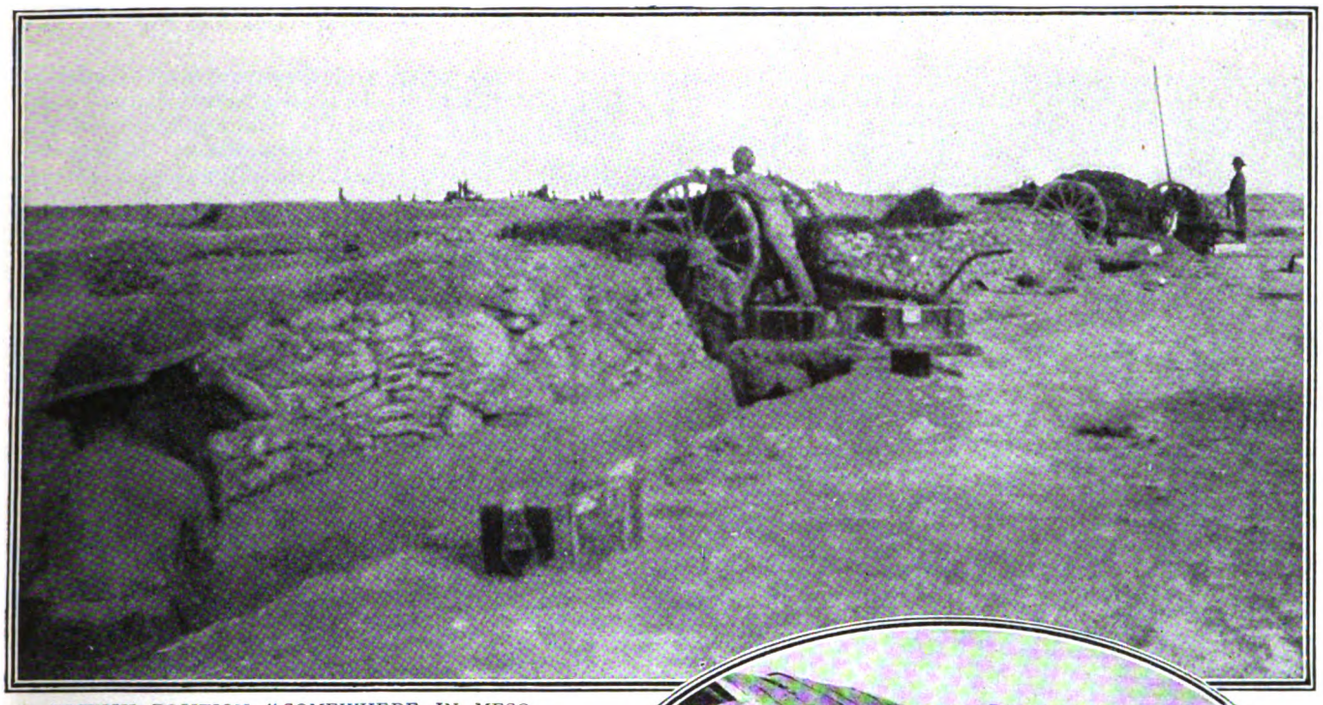
Indian cavalry advancing under difficulties near Basra. They are riding through floods from six inches to three feet in depth.



A moving and picturesque spectacle. Arrival of an Anglo-Indian convoy at Shaiba. Pack mules about to be unloaded. Artillery in the background.

OUR LOYAL INDIANS CONQUERING NEW TERRITORIES IN THE EAST FOR THEIR KING-EMPEROR.

Digitized by Google



A BRITISH POSITION "SOMEWHERE IN MESOPOTAMIA."

The photographs on this page give a vivid impression of two meteorological aspects of the Persian Gulf campaign. In the above picture is seen an entrenched and gun-protected position "somewhere in Mesopotamia." It had the advantage of being dry.



AN UNEXPECTED INUNDATION.

In February and March the Tigris and the Euphrates usually overflow their banks and flood the surrounding country, with results such as that shown above. Our men were hard put to it to rescue their kits from the rising waters.

enveloped. The Turkish leaders realised this, and on the 8th they offered to surrender. General Fry told them that the surrender must be unconditional, and on this intimation the town and garrison were given up to the British, who subsequently occupied the place. In it were 1,100 soldiers and nine guns. Our losses in these operations were about one hundred and sixty killed and wounded. Entrenched camps were established at Kurna and Mezera, and the whole district between those places and the sea was securely held by the British.

For some weeks after the British seizure of Kurna neither side undertook any offensive operations. The Anglo-Indian force was engaged in strengthening its position, General Fry's measures including the despatch of a garrison to Ahwaz, a town well inside the Persian frontier on the Karun River, and important because the pipe line from the oil-fields passes near it.

Enemy reports of British defeat

On January 21st, 1915, a brigade, supported by three gunboats on the river, was sent out from Mezera in order to ascertain the strength and disposition of the Turkish force which was gathering in the neighbourhood, and which, during the previous two or three days, had been harassing our patrols and outposts. After a northward march of about six miles, the enemy's outposts were sighted on a range of sandhills, behind which was the Ratta Canal. An artillery duel began, in which the enemy's aim was very bad. Our men then advanced, drove the Turks across the canal, and themselves approached within six hundred yards of it, from where they were able to shell the Turkish dhows and camp. About noon, having fulfilled their mission, they received orders to retire, and returned unmolested to Mezera. Their total casualties were about fifty, and the loss of the Turks was estimated at four hundred or thereabouts. The report brought back to General Barrett was that the enemy had about 5,000 men and six guns.

This withdrawal of our troops was hailed with delight in Germany and Turkey, and was transformed into a great British defeat, as the following statement issued in Constantinople on the 23rd shows: "On the 21st instant an English force, under cover of three gunboats, took the offensive against our troops near Kurna, but they were driven back with heavy loss."

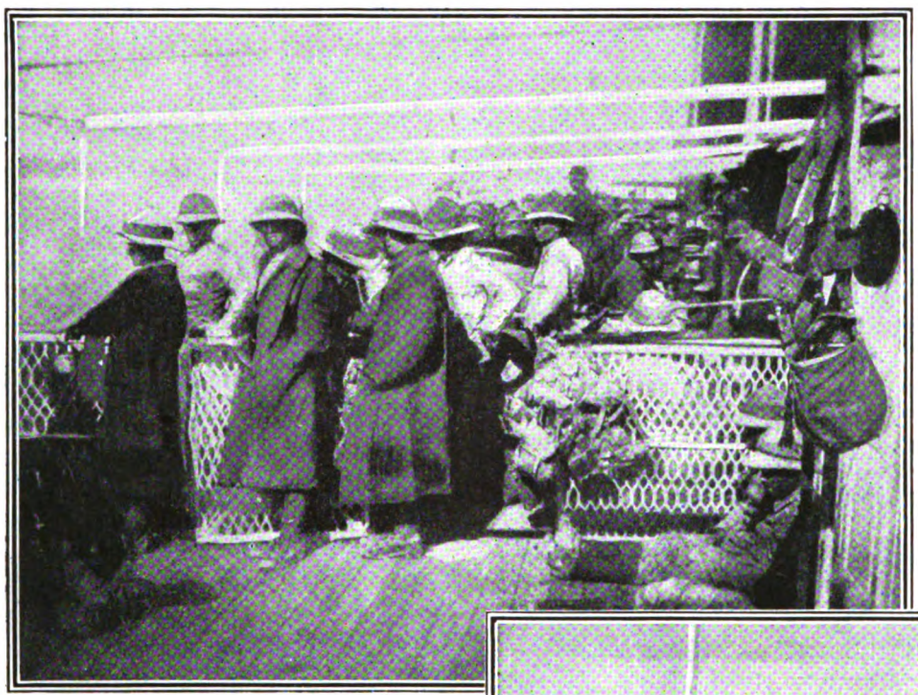
In February and March the Tigris and the Euphrates usually overflow their banks and flood the surrounding country, and for the time being this put a stop to the fighting. In Persia, however, there was an engagement on March 3rd, in which the British forces lost heavily. Near Ahwaz a few Turkish regiments were gathering around them a body of discontented tribesmen from Persia and Arabia, and to discover the strength of this force, a British contingent was sent out from the town. At Ghadir the Turks and their allies were located, but unfortunately they were much stronger than we had believed possible, and in the face of some 12,000 foes, our men had no option but to retire without undue delay.

The withdrawal was safely effected, but not without difficulty. The Turks made determined efforts to cut off the retreat, and several times hand-to-hand fighting took place. However, Ahwaz was reached at last, and as the enemy did not return to the attack, it was assumed that he had lost heavily. His casualties were estimated at six hundred killed and many wounded. The losses of the Anglo-Indian force were nearly two hundred. The 7th Rajputs had four of their white officers killed and their colonel severely wounded.

Severe hand-to-hand fighting

On the same day (March 3rd) a body of cavalry made a reconnaissance towards Nakaila, a place about twenty-five miles north-west of Basra. While returning to camp

Digitized by Google



EN ROUTE TO THE PERSIAN GULF.
Scene on board a transport conveying part of the British-Indian Expeditionary Force which so greatly distinguished itself in the fighting against the Turks in the neighbourhood of the Persian Gulf.

they were followed by 1,500 enemy horsemen; but these were skilfully drawn on to a position where infantry with machine-guns and field-artillery were concealed. These opened fire upon them, and having suffered heavily they fled back to Nakaila. Unfortunately, in this little affair four British officers were killed and two were wounded severely.

In anticipation of the end of the flood season, the authorities in India sent further reinforcements to Ahwaz and Kurna, and with these went Lieut.-General Sir J. E. Nixon, K.C.B., who on his arrival took over the command of the whole force. Nothing was said officially about its composition and numbers; but, speaking in the House of Lords on March 16th, Lord Crewe described it as "a considerable army," and we shall probably be not far wrong if we estimate the number of soldiers then in this theatre of war at 30,000 or 40,000.

The Turks also received considerable reinforcements, probably from Bagdad, and on April 11th they attacked three of our positions. Kurna, Ahwaz, and Shaiba, one of the forts protecting Basra, were the three; but one only was seriously assaulted On the 11th, and also on the 12th, Kurna was bombarded at long range, but no infantry attack followed, and the



AT THE MOUTH OF THE SHAT-EL-ARAB.
British officers in a transport on their way to the battle-front in Asia Minor.



MAJOR-GENERAL C. V. F. TOWNSHEND, C.B.
With Colonel Sir Percy Cox he commanded the forces which captured Amara.

only damage done was the destruction of part of the bridge across the Tigris Our guns, both those on shore and those in H.M.S. Odin, however, appear to have inflicted a good deal of loss upon parties of the enemy who were seen in boats. Similarly, at the same time, Ahwaz was bombarded; but here again no damage was done, and although large bodies of hostile cavalry appeared on the horizon nearly all round the British position, they made no offensive movement.

German officers lead the Turks

On Shaiba the attack was more determined, but was equally ineffective. After a certain amount of artillery fire, the Turkish infantry, led by some German officers, advanced in extended order towards the south, south-west, and west of our lines. For three hours in the morning they came steadily on, and then they began to dig themselves in. In the afternoon the attack from the south was renewed, but this made no further progress. During the night of the 12th the Turks kept up a desultory fire, and early on the following morning our cavalry found that a

Digitized by Google

party of them had occupied some rising ground about a mile to the north of our position. These men were easily dislodged by an Anglo-Indian attack, and the enemy next approached from the west and was driven back with equal ease. When our men ceased their pursuit they had captured eighteen officers, three hundred men, and two guns. Many of the prisoners were in a starving and hopeless condition, and some had marched the whole of the five hundred miles from Bagdad.

The battle near Shaiba

The prisoners reported that the attacking force was composed of about 10,000 regular infantry, 1,000 regular cavalry, and perhaps 12,000 irregular levies of Kurds and Arabs. They had assembled at Nakaila and were commanded by Suliman Askeri and Ali Bey. In addition to the direct attacks, armed parties of them were sailing about on the flood water between Basra and Shaiba, with the object of interrupting the British communications.

The time had now come for a British offensive, for although the Turkish attacks had been repulsed, the enemy, strong and undaunted, was still entrenched near Basra, and



[*Elliott & Fry.*

COLONEL SIR PERCY COX, K.C.I.E.
Chief British Resident in the Persian Gulf. He shared the command with Major-General Townshend in the capture of Amara.



BRIG.-GEN. C. I. FRY AND STAFF OF 18TH BRIGADE.
The 18th Brigade captured Kurna and the Turkish garrison, including the Vali of Basra, over 30 officers and 1,100 men.

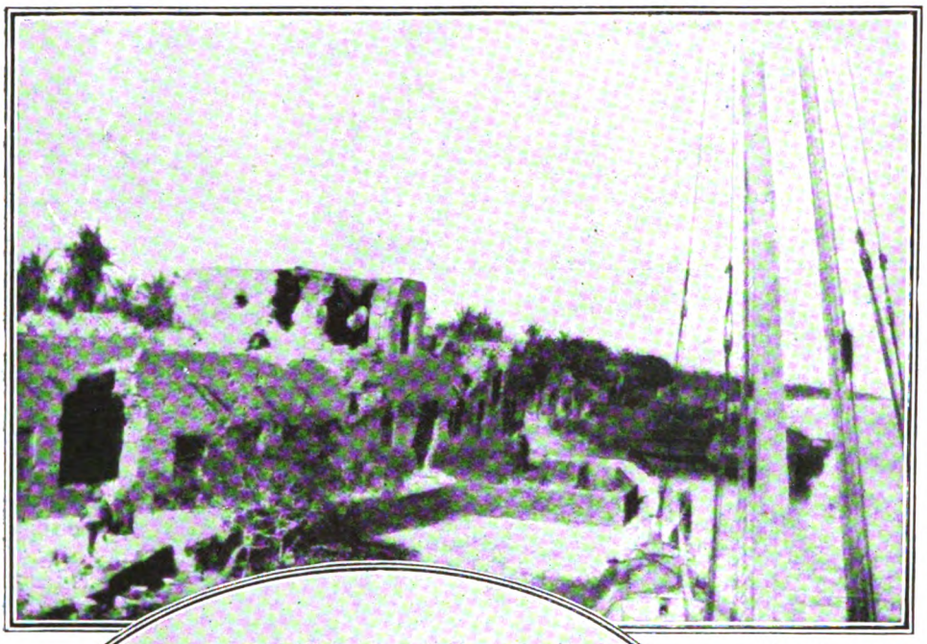
on the 14th there was an engagement which really deserves the title of a battle. The whole Anglo-Indian force moved out from its camp near Basra towards Zobeir, a few miles to the south. Very soon the Turks were driven from an advanced position about two and a half miles away, and then our men found themselves in front of their main lines.

This main position was in the shape of a crescent with tamarisk woods behind it and on either flank. In the wood and in well-concealed trenches before it were some 15,000 Turkish soldiers, with six big guns. Towards them the the Anglo-Indian troops advanced steadily for five hours, from 11.30 in the morning until 4.30 in the afternoon. The plain was absolutely bare, the heat and glare were terrific, and although the enemy could not be seen, a constant and accurate rifle fire came from his trenches. Nevertheless, our men struggled on, and about 4.30 the Dorsets and the 117th Mahrattas led the way into the trenches, a great charge made by the whole line driving out the enemy at the point of the bayonet. According to one account, the Turks hastened their flight because they mistook an advancing line of hospital carts for fresh batteries coming into action. In this battle the British



BETWEEN THE BATTLES IN ASIA MINOR.
Officers attached to the British-Indian Expeditionary Force enjoying a rest and smoke in the desert.

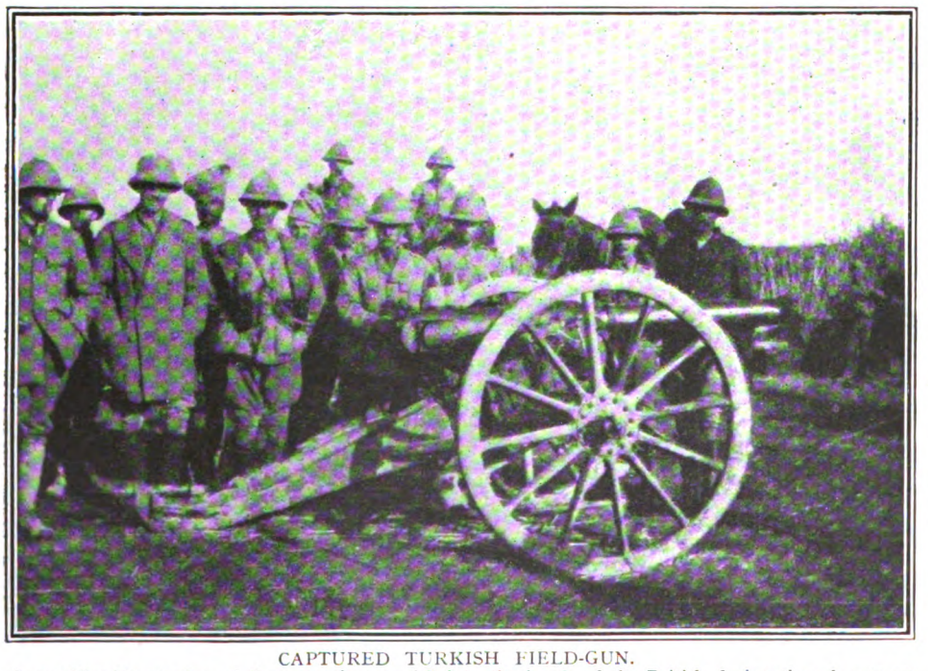
Digitized by Google



KURNA AFTER ITS CAPTURE.
Effects of the British bombardment on a custom-house by the Tigris.



WAITING FOR THE TURKS.
Indian artillery in readiness somewhere on the Persian Gulf battle-front.



CAPTURED TURKISH FIELD-GUN.
A considerable number of the enemy's guns fell into the hands of the British during the advance up the Shat-el-Arab.

casualties were about seven hundred, and the list contained the names of seventeen British officers killed, these including Lieut.-Colonel H. L. Rosher, of the Dorsets, Lieut.-Colonel T. A. Britten, of the 110th Mahrattas, and Major G. C. M. Wheeler, of the 7th Lancers. The victory, however, was worth the heavy price paid for it, for the Turks were thoroughly routed; they fled in great disorder to Nakaila, and report said that their leader, Suliman Askeri, committed suicide.

The action was followed by a vigorous pursuit. By river and by road the Turks sought safety in flight. Twelve boats full of fugitives were either taken or sunk, and the total losses of the enemy were about 2,500, of whom over seven hundred were prisoners in our hands. The booty taken included large quantities of tents, equipment, stores, and ammunition, as well as several machine-guns. The neighbourhood of Basra was entirely cleared of the enemy, who soon continued his retreat beyond Nakaila, which was occupied by our cavalry on the 17th, and it was ascertained that there were no Turks nearer than Rattava, which is fifty miles from the city.

This victory near Shaiba was decisive, and the month of May was mainly occupied in clearing the country of the remnants of the enemy. Only near Ahwaz and Kurna were the Turks at all troublesome. In the former locality they were found to be in some strength on the Kharkhed, and thither our troops marched against them. Unfortunately, however, the march was delayed by severe sand-storms and by a rapid rise of the river, and before the enemy's camp was reached, the Turks had fallen back to Amara, thus vacating Persian soil. The British column, therefore, which was led by General Gorringe, was occupied in punishing the tribes which had assisted the enemy. Of these one or two offered some resistance, but this was soon beaten down, and their strongholds, with some of their other property, were destroyed. Others asked for terms and surrendered a number of rifles.

Turks vacate Persian soil

The Turks near Kurna were dealt with on May 31st, soldiers and sailors both taking part in the enterprise. Starting at 1.30 a.m., our men, partly by wading and partly in boats, succeeded in turning the enemy's position, while his guns were soon silenced by our artillery and naval guns. By noon the heights had been seized and the Turks were in flight, leaving behind them three guns and about two hundred and fifty prisoners.

Digitized by Google



TURKISH PRISONERS IN SHAIBA FORT.
The British victory near Shaiba in April, 1915, was costly but decisive, and many hundreds of prisoners were taken.

As the force from Ahwaz had done, the Turks from Kurna retreated to Amara. This is an important town on the Tigris about sixty miles from Kurna, and it was the next object of our attentions. A flotilla consisting of the Comet and some launches, carrying General Townshend and Sir Percy Cox, the chief British Resident on the Gulf, reached the place on June 3rd, and at once the Governor surrendered it, the garrison of one thousand men becoming prisoners of war.

In and around Amara the British captured about eighty officers and 2,000 men, seven field and six naval guns, twelve large steel barges and four river steamers, and a quantity of rifles and ammunition. This ended a successful campaign. The Turkish forces in Mesopotamia had been defeated and partly destroyed, and the whole of the country between Amara and the sea was in British hands. The delta of the Shat-el-Arab was protected by the garrison firmly planted at Kurna and Mezera, on either side of the Tigris, and the mouths of the river were guarded by British warships.



HIDDEN FROM THE ENEMY.
British gun protected by sand-bags and cleverly concealed by an earthwork. The photograph was taken in the vicinity of Kurna.



PICTURESQUE VIEW OF THE 10TH MULE CORPS ON PARADE AT BASRA.
In the arid wastes of Asia Minor no less than in the hilly regions of the North-West frontier of India the mule proved a most serviceable aid to our gallant troops.

Digitized by Google



Copyright

MAP OF GERMAN SOUTH-WEST AFRICA TO ILLUSTRATE THE MOVING STORY OF GENERAL BOTHA'S BRILLIANT CAMPAIGN AGAINST THE GERMANS.

Digitized by Google



PARADE OF THE IMPERIAL LIGHT HORSE.

CHAPTER LXVIII.

BOTHA'S VICTORIOUS CAMPAIGN IN GERMAN SOUTH-WEST AFRICA.

With the Aid of Brilliant Lieutenants South Africa's Soldier-Premier Outgenerals, Outmanœuvres, and Outwits the Enemy How Germany Prepared for a Place in the South African Sun—Her Hopes of a Boer Rebellion—General Botha, having Quelled the Malcontents Stirred Up by Beyers, Christian De Wet, and Maritz, Takes the Field with the Northern Army—General Smuts and the Southern Command—A Circle of Steel Drawn Round the Foe—Germans Poison the Wells with Cattle Dip—The Movements Conducted by Sir Duncan Mackenzie, Colonel Van de Venter, and Colonel Berrange—Death of Sir George Farrar—Surrender of Windhoek "by Telephone"—General Botha's Historic Entry into the Capital—The War against Nature and against Man—Triumphant Conclusion of the Campaign.

BY the end of the nineteenth century Africa, like the rest of the world, had been explored and divided up, and in this division Germany secured a share—or, rather, we should say, several shares. One of these was a big stretch of land on the west coast, north of the Orange River, which divides it from the Cape of Good Hope. In April, 1884, the German Government announced that Herr Lüderitz, a Bremen merchant who had taken possession of certain points on this coast, was under the Kaiser's protection. Since then this territory has been known as German South-West Africa. The northern part, however, is sometimes called by its older name of Damaraland, and the southern part Namaqualand.

This colony contains 320,000 square miles, and is therefore just about the size of Germany and Italy together. On the west it has a sea coast of about eight hundred miles; on the north it is bordered by the Portuguese colony of Angola; and on the east by Bechuanaland, a British protectorate. Its southern frontier, the shortest of all, is the Cape of Good Hope. It has a population of about 100,000 natives, mainly Bushmen and Hottentots, and about 15,000 German settlers. A large part of the colony is mere desert, but much of it is suitable for farming, and in this the Germans have made their homes and introduced their cattle. South-West Africa is fairly rich in minerals, especially diamonds. In 1906 extensive diamond mines were discovered near Lüderitz Bay, and these have put a good deal of money into German pockets. Copper is also found in the country, but as far as is known at present little or no gold is there.

On the coast there are two ports—Swakopmund about the centre, and Lüderitz Bay, called also by its older Portuguese name of Angra Pequena, in the south. Near Swakopmund the British have a little settlement called Walfish Bay. The capital of the colony is Windhoek, a town in the interior about two hundred miles from Swakopmund. On this possession the Germans have spent a good deal of money, chiefly in building railways and in developing their two ports. The main lines of railway form three sides of a square of which the sea coast is the fourth. Starting from Swakopmund, a line runs east to Windhoek, and then turns south, and makes for Keetmanshoop, completing the round by reaching the coast again at Lüderitz Bay. In addition to these main lines there are two others. One runs south from Seeheim to Warmbad, a place only a few miles from the British frontier, and the other serves the extreme north of the colony. We do not know what was in the minds of the Germans when they laid these lines over



GENERAL BOTHA AND STAFF ON THE SOUTH-WEST AFRICAN VELDT. It is noticeable that General Botha and his officers are levelling their glasses in different directions. The success of the campaign was the more remarkable because the South African Premier was known to be suffering from ill-health at its commencement.

Digitized by Google



AN INTERESTING VIEW OF A ROUGH-AND-READY TROOP TRAIN IN GERMAN SOUTH-WEST AFRICA.
Officers and men alike belonging to General Botha's victorious forces contented themselves with the inconveniences of this form of travel.

some hundreds of miles of inhospitable desert, but perhaps they, too, like Cecil Rhodes, dreamed of "Empire to the northward."

When the Great War began, the Germans in South-West Africa were ready with their plans. In 1904 they began a war with a native race—the Hereros—whom they extirpated with fiendish cruelty after nearly three years of fighting. At the close of the war a number of disbanded soldiers had settled on the land. These formed a very useful reserve, and with the 3,500 regular troops in the colony and a number of volunteers, the Governor may possibly have had something like 10,000 men at his disposal. This force was well furnished with artillery, and included a camel corps some five hundred strong. Ammunition and military stores of all kinds were also plentiful.

German hopes of Boer rebellion

The Governor, Dr. Seitz, and his associates, realised probably quite as well as we did ourselves that they would get no help whatever from Europe, but they had high hopes that a successful rebellion of the Boers in British South Africa would be of material assistance to them. Accordingly, early in August, 1914, their two ports—Swakopmund and Lüderitz Bay—were abandoned and all works of naval importance were destroyed; and their garrisons, with their stores, retired to Windhoek. The Germans then bent all their energies towards assisting the Boer rebels, and the story of this failure has been told already in Chapter LII.

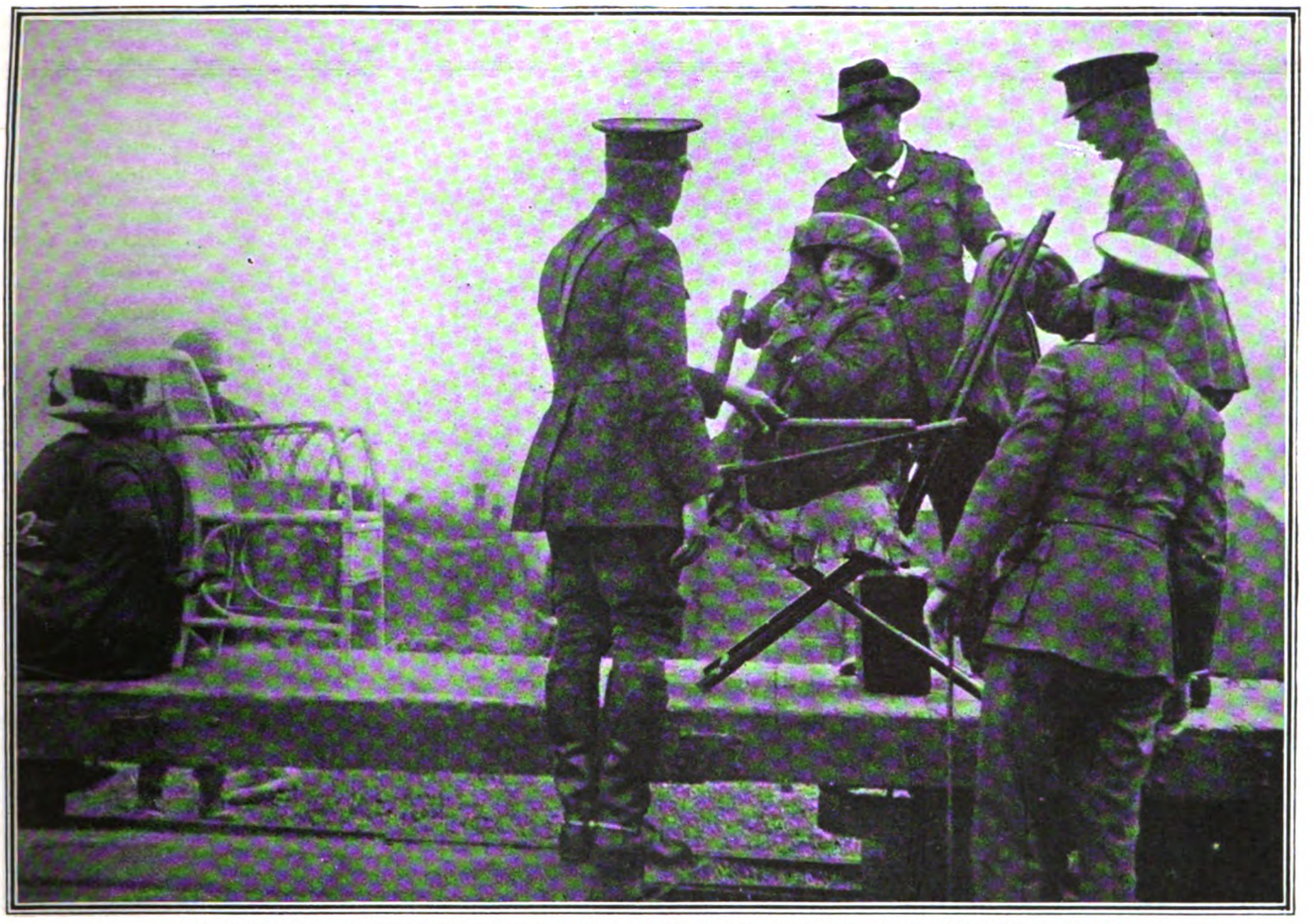
The question of South-West Africa did not escape the attention of the Imperial Government, and soon after the outbreak of the war there was some correspondence on the subject between the Colonial Secretary, Mr. Lewis Harcourt, and General Botha. Mr. Harcourt said that the authorities in London attached a good deal of importance to the conquest of this German colony, and asked the South African people to undertake the work, and so to perform "a great and urgent Imperial service." Botha's task was not an easy one, for there was a certain difference of opinion about the desirability of an offensive campaign against Germany, but after due consideration he and his colleagues decided to accept the invitation "in the interests of South Africa as well as of the Empire." Towards the cost of the work the Imperial Government offered a loan of £7,000,000.

Owing to the rebellion, it was some months before Botha was able to give his mind and the resources of his country to this task, but he never lost sight of it, and as soon as the back of the Boer revolt had been broken, preparations were made for an invasion of German South-West Africa. As early as September 18th, 1914, Lüderitz Bay had been seized by our sailors; a little later the valuable diamond mines passed into our possession, and on Christmas Day a body of South African troops reoccupied Walfish Bay, which had been temporarily in the possession of the Germans. On December 31st the Union Government announced that they proposed to commandeer men for the coming campaign, and not to depend wholly on volunteers; for, as their communiqué said: "In view of the danger of invasion, it will be necessary to employ much larger forces than at first intended, in order to destroy the enemy and rebel forces, so that they may never again menace the peace of South Africa." Further proof of the ubiquity of the Navy was given on January 14th, 1915, when Swakopmund was occupied. It was found absolutely deserted, but undamaged. The Germans, however, had sown the place with mines, and before these had been discovered and removed two troopers of the Imperial Light Horse had been blown to bits.

Swakopmund sown with mines

The two German ports were now in Botha's hands, but there were other entrances into South-West Africa, and these, too, had to be secured. The Orange is crossed at two main drifts—Schuit Drift and Raman's Drift—and the latter of these had been seized by our men during the

Digitized by Google



GENERAL AND MRS. BOTHA AT A RAILWAY STATION IN GERMAN SOUTH-WEST AFRICA.
Mrs. Botha made a long special railway journey to bid her husband "God speed" in his advance into the enemy's country.

rebellion, when there was a good deal of fighting along the line of the river. Early in January, 1915, an attack was made on Schuit Drift. This was seized, and the enemy driven across the river.

At the beginning of February the four principal gates into the German colony were held by the Union forces, the climatic conditions were becoming more favourable, the rebels had been crushed, and Botha could press forward with his plan of invasion. This was well conceived, well planned, and well executed, and as it was furthermore justified by its complete success it deserves to be studied by all those interested in military operations. It cannot, of course, be compared with the gigantic movements in Europe, but within its own limited sphere it was a model campaign.

The plan proposed was an enveloping advance on Windhoek from the coast and from the south, the railways to be taken on the way. For this purpose the Union forces were divided into two armies, called the northern and the southern. The former, which was commanded by Botha himself, was to assemble at Swakopmund, and to march along the railway line to the German capital. The southern army, under General Smuts, was entrusted with a more complicated task. For the first part of this it was divided into three columns. One under Sir Duncan Mackenzie was to advance inland from Lüderitz Bay, while another, under Colonel Van de Venter, was to move across the Orange and along the railway leading from Warmbad. The third column, under Colonel Berrange, was to start from Kimberley, and after crossing the Kalahari Desert, was to clear the enemy from the south-eastern section of the colony. In the neighbourhood of Keetmanshoop the three were to unite, and Smuts was to lead them northwards to join Botha.

A circle of steel

While this circle of steel was being drawn around the Germans they made one effort to break through. At Kakamas, on the Orange, a British garrison stationed there to protect Schuit Drift was suddenly and violently attacked by about six hundred Germans on February 5th. At eight o'clock in the morning big guns and Maxims opened fire upon the station, but the defenders were ready, and in a short time the assailants were beaten off. They lost nine men killed, twenty-two wounded, and fifteen taken prisoners, while on the Union side the casualties were one killed and two wounded. On hearing of the engagement, Colonel Van de Venter marched out from Upington to cut off their retreat, but the Germans were too quick for him.

German effort to break through

Since its occupation by the British, Swakopmund had been a very busy place. Men and stores were landed there in considerable quantities, and a railway line, protected by blockhouses and sea walls, was built along the few miles of coast which separate the port from Walfish Bay. Early in February General Botha left Cape Town to take over the direction of operations, and on his way he called at Lüderitz Bay, near where Sir Duncan Mackenzie's men had been encamped for some time past, engaged in making preparations for their campaign. Proceeding to their bivouacs, which were about forty miles inland, the Premier reviewed them and told them he hoped they would soon get the order to move forward.

On the following day, February 12th, Botha reached Swakopmund, and on the 22nd his army moved out, a heavy fall of rain having made its task easier. On the 23rd Nonidas and Goanikontes, two stations on the line to Windhoek, were occupied without serious fighting, although some resistance had been expected, as the Germans were in some strength at the former place, and with their outposts and patrols there had been several skirmishes. Nearly a month was then spent in preparing an advanced base, and in finding out something about the strength and disposition of the enemy.

On March 19th Botha was ready for another advance.

Digitized by Google

In accordance with his orders, two brigades of mounted men left Husab, he himself accompanying the first, which was commanded by Colonel Brits. Its object was to attack Riet, an important place south of the railway, which commands the high road to Windhoek, where the enemy was known to be in strength; and to complete its work, the Bloemhof commando was ordered to move round its flank, to seize the dominating height of Schwarze Kopje, and to cut off the enemy's retreat.

At daybreak on the 20th the brigade came in front of the German position, which was a very strong one. Its right rested on the Swakop and its left on the foothills of the Langer Heinrichberg, while its guns, skilfully placed, commanded both the main road and the river. A frontal attack was necessary, and our men advanced without flinching, their progress being splendidly assisted by the guns of the Transvaal Horse Artillery. At length they reached the German lines, and in the evening the enemy was driven out in disorder. For some reason or other the Bloemhof commando failed to reach its allotted place, and so the retreat was unhindered. During the engagement a party of snipers under Captain Lemmer did good work in preventing the Germans from destroying the water-holes.

Meanwhile, the second mounted brigade was carrying out its part of the programme, which was to seize an important section of the line running to Windhoek. For this purpose it was divided into two columns. One under Colonel Celliers cut the line between Jakalswater and Sphinx, and seized a train full of supplies; and then, having thus hampered the movement of any reinforcements from the direction of Windhoek, attacked Jakalswater itself. There, however, the German position was a very strong one, and the assault on it failed; but it served the secondary purpose of preventing the enemy from sending assistance to other parts of the field. Forty-three prisoners were taken by the Germans.

Clearing the railway system

The second division of this brigade, led by Colonel Alberts, marched against Pforte, another station on the line, where the enemy, with two big guns and two Maxims, was found strongly posted. He was soon surrounded, however, and while our men charged up to one of the big guns, our battery killed the gunners of the other. The Germans then surrendered unconditionally; two hundred and ten prisoners were made, and the spoil included the four guns and a large quantity of ammunition. The enemy lost twenty killed, three of them being officers.

For the next five or six weeks after these operations Botha was busy clearing the railway system of the enemy. Two main lines run from Swakopmund, the northern to Grootfontein, Tsumeb, and the north of the colony, and the southern to Windhoek. The main line of advance for the Union force was along the second of these; but to prevent any attack on its flank it was necessary also to hold the other. For fifty miles this was secured, and to guard it the Kimberley regiment, under Colonel Skinner, was stationed at Trekkopje, then our railhead.



GENERAL SMUTS CONGRATULATES THE IMPERIAL LIGHT HORSE ON THEIR SUCCESS IN GERMAN SOUTH-WEST AFRICA. The above photographs represent an interesting event at the close of the campaign in German South-West Africa—a review at Johannesburg of the 2nd Imperial Light Horse by General Smuts. In the top view the General is accompanied on his right by Lieut.-Colonel Davies, the C.O. of the Light Horse, and on his left by Major Hawkins, the Camp Commandant. When the lower photograph was taken General Smuts was addressing the men before they disbanded.

Digitized by Google



SOME GALLANT SOLDIER SONS OF THE EMPIRE—OFFICERS OF THE RAND LIGHT INFANTRY.

Reading from left to right. Back row: Lieutenants B. H. L. Dougherty, H. W. Kelly, D. H. Stewart, J. O. Henrey, Captain H. R. Lawrence, Lieutenant G. A. Leyds. Second row: Captain W. Wilson, Lieutenants D. A. Pirie, L. D. Durham, W. G. Preston, J. L. Shenton, G. H. Metcalfe, J. P. E. Douglas. Front row: Captains G. H. Langdale, S. M. Page, P. H. Franks, T. P. Atkins, Major W. J. Thompson, Lieutenant-Colonel J. M. Fairweather, D.S.O., Major W. A. Abbott, Captains C. G. Durham, W. Richards, A. C. Pedersen.

On April 26th some seven hundred Germans with twelve guns attacked this encampment, and a hard fight, lasting about four hours, took place. The object of the enemy was, after peppering our lines with shell and shrapnel, to get round the two ends of our trenches and enfilade them. But the plan miscarried, although the Germans got within about one hundred and fifty yards of their objective. Some armoured cars belonging to the Naval Air Service forced them into a position whence our guns and rifles could reach them easily, and they retired, leaving twenty-five killed and wounded behind them. The Union force had three officers and eight men killed and about forty wounded.

We must now return to the doings of the southern army, and first of all to those of the column commanded by Sir Duncan Mackenzie. He cleared out the Germans and took some stores from one or two places in the neighbourhood of Lüderitz Bay, and then without difficulty seized a substantial stretch of the railway line. On February 22nd his advanced guard was at Garub, a station seventy miles inland, which was occupied without opposition, and from there some scouts pushed out and fought a skirmish with the retiring Germans, who were mounted men covering a troop train. The leader of our scouts was wounded, and leaving him and one of their comrades in the hands of the enemy, our men were forced to retire.

At Garub, Mackenzie had the worst part of his march behind him. He had crossed the desert which fringes the sea coast, and was approaching the hills and the fertile land beyond. At Garub there was a plentiful supply of water, and henceforward his anxieties on this score, although not removed, were considerably lightened. While here, the British camp was attacked by a hostile aeroplane, which dropped shells and hand-grenades near our guns.

Fifteen miles beyond Garub is the important station of Aus, the principal resting-place for the caravans journeying from north to south, and in searching the mountainous country between the two places our men had a stiff task. Sand was plentiful, but food and water were less so, and the enemy had filled up the bore-holes and poisoned some of the wells. Towards the end of March loud explosions were heard from the direction of Aus, caused, doubtless, by the destruction of the railway line by the Germans, and it seemed as if they were preparing to evacuate the place. This was the more surprising because, owing to its situation among the hills, Aus could be made into a strong defensive position, and the enemy had done a good deal to fortify it.

Mines had been laid, trenches dug, and the passes through the hills fortified, but when the time came everything was abandoned without a struggle.

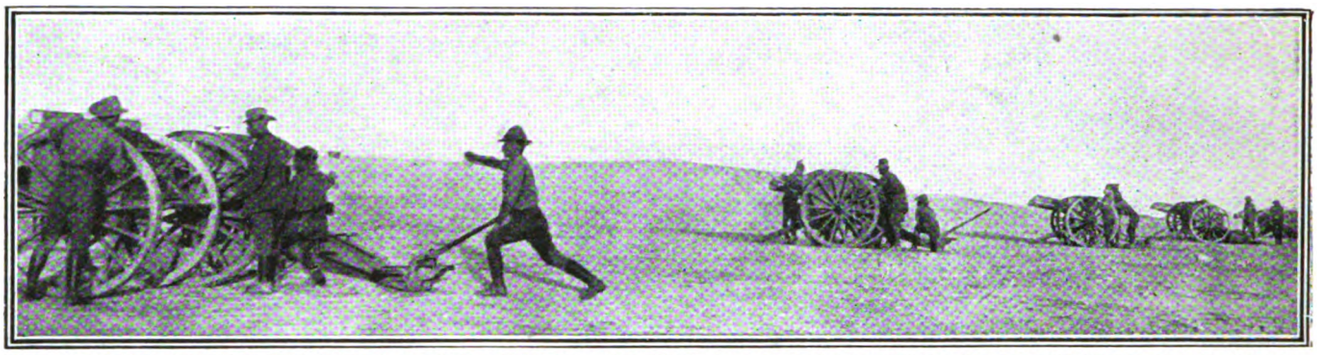
This was partly due, no doubt, to the strength and skill of the advancing force. On the night of March 30th a body of our mounted infantry marched silently out, and in the morning



THE SOLDIER-PREMIER'S "SPECIAL SALOON."

A snapshot of General Botha leaving his "special saloon" (a horse-box) on one of the trains used by him in the operations in German South-West Africa.

Digitized by Google



THE GUNS THAT SPOKE FOR UNION—ONE OF GENERAL BOTHA'S BATTERIES IN ACTION IN GERMAN SOUTH-WEST AFRICA.

was in possession of two of the important passes giving access to Aus. Once there they threatened the flank and the retreat of the Germans, and the whole position was at once vacated.

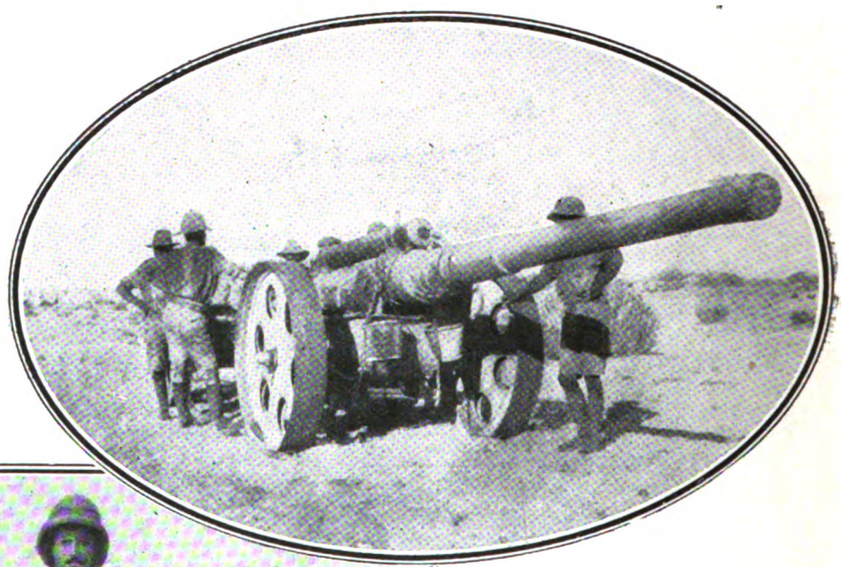
On the following day our men entered the place. Several mines were exploded, but without any serious casualties. One of the mines was composed of thirty pom-pom shells and a hundred sticks of blasting gelatine. The buildings in the town were found undamaged, but they had been stripped of everything useful, and the bridges and culverts had been destroyed. In a short time, however, these and also the railway line had been repaired, and a further move was possible.

With Col. Van de Venter's column

We must now turn to the movements of the force led by Colonel Van de Venter, the most important section of Smuts's army.

Safely across the Orange at Schuit Drift, Van de Venter and his column soon came into touch with the foe. Sweeping over a wide district in the south-east of the colony they occupied a group of stations, including Ukamas, Nabas, Jerusalem, Velloor, and Heirachabis, and before the end of March they had seized two or three German camps, containing a large quantity of supplies, horses, and live-stock. One of these was at Platbeen, about fifty miles north of Ukamas, and another was at Geitsaub. At both there were skirmishes, and at the cost of one man killed and two wounded our force made twenty-eight prisoners and killed six of the enemy. On April 30th Van de Venter reached the railway at Warmbad, its terminus, twenty-five miles from the frontier, and occupied it without opposition. From there he pushed along the line so rapidly that two days later his men entered Kanus, a station sixty-five miles to the north.

At this time Van de Venter's headquarters were at Kalkfontein, a station twenty-five miles north of Warmbad, and here on April 11th he was joined by General Smuts. The task immediately before them was that of driving the enemy from the slopes of the Karras Mountains, on



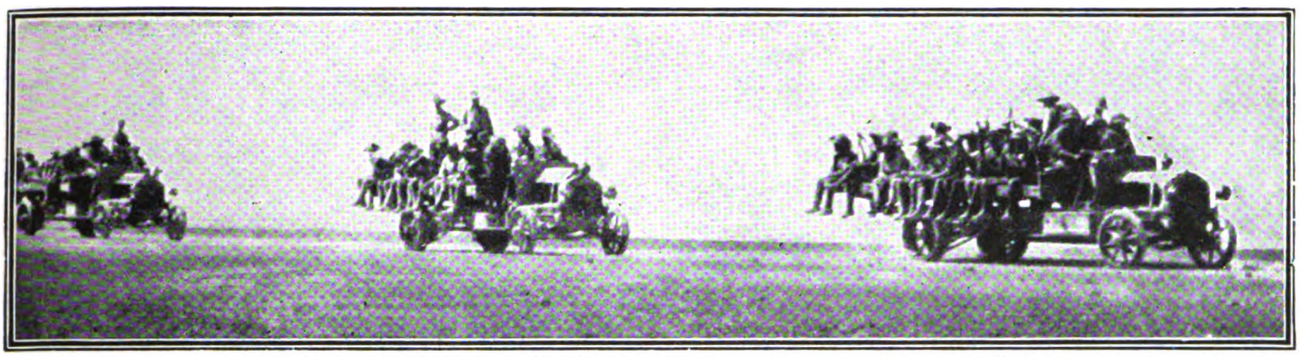
A 4·7 IN THE DESERT.
These weapons had to be most carefully covered so that the desert sand could not get into and choke the working parts.



ONE OF THE MACHINE-GUNS USED AGAINST THE GERMAN AVIATORS.
This machine-gun, used as an anti-aircraft weapon, was familiar to the Union troops as "The Skinny Liz." It did most serviceable work in checking the activities of the Teuton aviators.

which he had one or two advantageous positions. The plan adopted was to advance in three columns. Van de Venter himself marched near the railway and to the west of the mountains, while a second detachment moved to the east of them; somewhat in the rear and acting as a reserve was a third column, which took the road through the hills. The manœuvre was completely successful. Threatened on all sides, the enemy withdrew without putting up the semblance of a fight, and the region was entirely in our hands. On April 18th a mounted brigade under Colonel Villiers occupied Seeheim, the place where the line from

Digitized by Google



AFTER THE SURRENDER OF WINDHOEK—HOW THE GERMAN PRISONERS WERE CONVEYED TO THE COAST.

Warmbad joins the railway from Lüderitz Bay. According to one account, the Germans hurriedly evacuated this junction because they mistook a party of scouts for our main body. They did not even have time to destroy the bridge which here crosses the Great Fish River.

By this time Van de Venter's column was in touch with Colonel Berrange's force, which, it will be remembered, had set out from Kimberley. British Bechuanaland was crossed without hindrance, the only difficulties encountered arising from the nature of the country, and in March the enemy was first sighted near the border. At Hasuur, fifteen miles north-west of Rietfontein, on April 1st, Berrange captured an entrenched position with slight loss, and from then he fought his way steadily westward to the neighbourhood of Keetmanshoop.



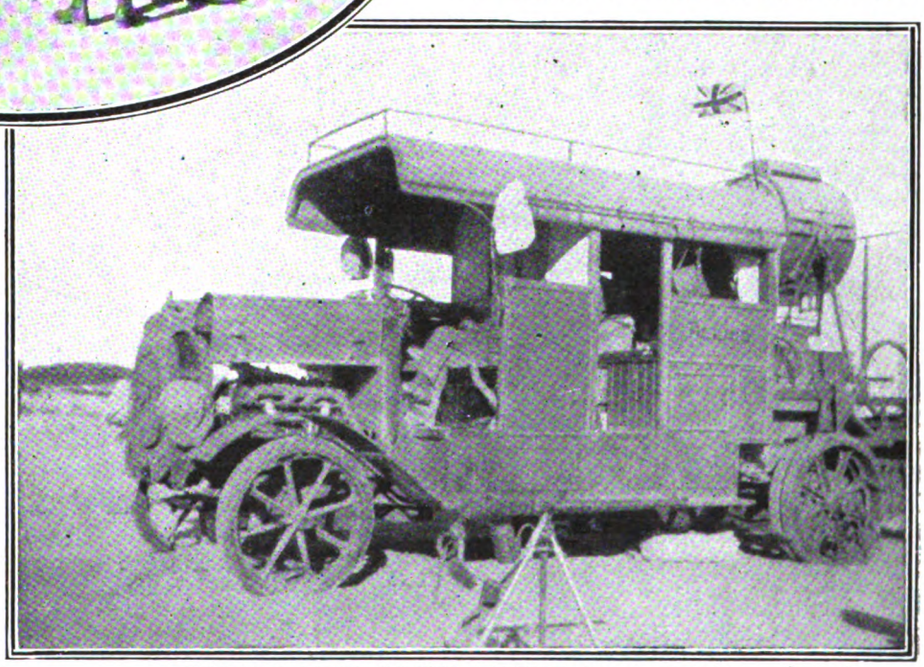
ARMOURED CARS AT WINDHOEK.
The armoured car, which proved invaluable in the pursuit of Christian de Wet, was eminently useful also in scouting and patrol work.

Keetmanshoop was now surrounded, and its occupation, either peaceably or otherwise, was only a question of days. This town, the business capital of German Namaqualand, is the eastern terminus of the railway line, and is nearly two hundred miles from the coast. On April 19th the Germans quietly vacated it, having first rendered the telegraph and telephone wires useless, and on the 20th it was occupied by our men. A day or two later General Smuts travelled along the railway from Keetmanshoop to Aus, thus showing how completely the line was in the hands of the Union forces.

Before Smuts could concentrate his whole force it was necessary for Sir Duncan Mackenzie's column, which was left at Aus, to join the others, and this was done in May. From Aus there was no need for Sir Duncan to keep to the railway line, for it was already cleared of the enemy; and so, with his mounted men, he struck out to the north-east. The towns of Bethany and Berseba—with their names redolent of the piety of their Boer founders—were occupied without hindrance, and the railway line was reached on April 24th at Aritetis, a station seventy miles north of Keetmanshoop. Once on the railway line Mackenzie began to act in conjunction with Van de Venter against the enemy retreating from Seeheim and Keetmanshoop. On the 22nd part of Van de Venter's pursuing force had come up with the Germans at Kabus, twenty miles to the north, where an indecisive engagement had taken place. The enemy, about six hundred strong, with three or four guns, withstood our attack and continued his retreat, although he left most of his wounded in our hands. The Union force, however, lost twenty-two men taken prisoners.

The fight at Kabus

Mackenzie now joined in this chase. He learned that the Germans who had



APPLIED SCIENCE IN THE AFRICAN SAND WASTES.
A motor-mounted searchlight and heliograph used in General Botha's brilliant campaign. The searchlight was fitted at the rear, and the operator's quarters were in the centre of the car.

Digitized by Google



UNDER THE SHADOW OF TABLE MOUNTAIN.
1st South African Mounted Rifles at Cape Town. The photograph was taken just before their embarkation for the front. Their rifles had cloth covers to protect them from the desert sand. The S.A.M.R. constituted South Africa's "first line of defence."



HOW GENERAL BOTHA KEPT IN TOUCH WITH THE ENEMY'S MOVEMENTS.
A wireless outfit used in General Botha's campaign, photographed with the men who worked it.

fought at Kabus were taking train at Gibeon, a station forty miles to the north of Keetmanshoop, and at once he decided upon his method of attack. His whole force having approached within two miles of Gibeon, a small party was despatched to destroy the railway to the north of that place, and one brigade, the 9th, was sent forward to engage the enemy. The 9th Brigade was unequal to the task before it, and having suffered severe loss and left seventy prisoners in the hands of the enemy, it fell back upon the main body. This skirmish took place during the night of April 27th, and on the following morning Mackenzie attacked the Germans with his whole force.

Mackenzie's success at Gibeon

The Battle of Gibeon was soon over. The enemy was driven from the field and pursued for about twenty miles, and only the rocky and difficult nature of the ground prevented the destruction of the whole force. As it was, our seventy prisoners were rescued and seven officers and two hundred men were captured, as well as both the enemy's field-guns and several Maxims. In addition, the cutting of the railway line delivered into our hands a train, a number of transport waggons, and a quantity of live-stock. The British losses were three officers and twenty men killed, and eight officers and forty-seven men wounded. Among the killed was Major J. H. Watt, of the Natal Light Horse.

The success of Mackenzie's march, first across the coastal desert, and then over the one hundred and twenty miles of arid country which lie between Bethany and Gibeon, was due very largely to the exertions of his quartermaster-general, Sir George Farrar, and it was, therefore, a great loss to the Union forces when Sir George was killed in a railway accident near Gibeon on May 18th. It was the end of a full and adventurous career. He had been sentenced to death for his share in the Jameson Raid, had fought against the Boers in the war of 1899-1902, and until the last was the controlling spirit of a great mining organisation.

It is now time to inquire again how Botha was faring in the north. After the fighting around Jakalswater on March 20th the northern army halted for a while, and it was not until May 1st that Kubas, a place thirty miles nearer Windhoek, was occupied by Colonel Brits. It was hastily evacuated by the Germans, and around it miles of entrenchments were found, and over a hundred contact mines were discovered and removed. A further advance took our men to Otyimbingue, which is only sixty miles from the capital, and a skirmish there resulted in the capture of twenty-eight enemy soldiers. On May 5th the important railway junction of Karibib was reached and occupied, whence a march of twenty miles took the army to Johann Albrechtshöhe, and a further ten to Wilhelmstal.

Windhoek's surrender by telephone

Windhoek was now almost in sight, as the van of the army under General Myburgh was rapidly approaching it, and on May 10th General Botha, who was then at Karibib, was informed by telephone that the place was prepared to surrender. With a small escort he set out at once in his motor-car, and on reaching the capital on the following day he was met by the Burgomaster, with whom the terms of capitulation were arranged. On the 12th a detachment of the Union forces under Myburgh formally entered the town, and at noon there was an interesting and historic ceremony. Escorted by a long and imposing array of mounted burghers, the soldier-Premier took up his station before the courthouse, from the steps of which a proclamation was read in English, Dutch, and German. This placed certain districts of South-West Africa under martial law, promised protection to those who obeyed its provisions, and expressed regret at the intention of the Germans to continue a hopeless struggle. The Union Jack was then hoisted, and the troops presented arms. In an address to his men Botha thanked them for their services in carrying out an enterprise "of the utmost importance to the Empire and the Union, as it means practically the complete possession of German South-West Africa."

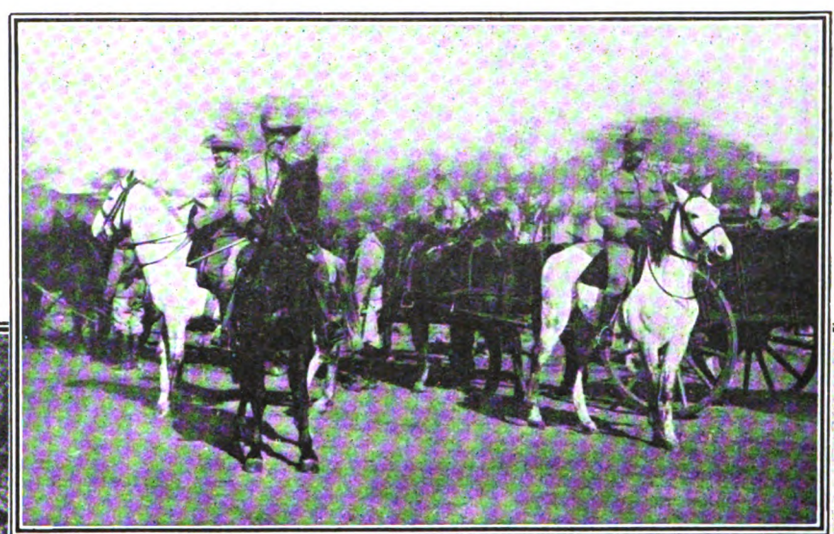
Digitized by Google

Before the arrival of the British the German troops had withdrawn to Grootfontein, which, it was stated, was now their capital. However, some 3,000 Europeans remained in Windhoek, and with them were 12,000 natives, who thus passed under British rule. The wireless station, a valuable high-power one, situated about a mile from the town, was found intact, and with its capture Germany had lost all those she possessed outside Europe. On the railway a great quantity of rolling-stock was seized, and the government of the capital and the surrounding district was entrusted to Colonel Mentz.

Endurance under natural difficulties

Something still remained to be done before the German field force was destroyed, but the major operations were over, and these had been carried out with a maximum of skill and a minimum of loss. To Botha himself the very highest praise is due, but something should be put down to the ability of his subordinates, and still more to the endurance of his men. Their chief enemy, indeed, was not the German, but the desert, waterless and sandy. Water was always scarce, often very scarce, and as an instance of this we may quote from a divisional order, which said: "It has been observed that water is being used for washing purposes. This practice must cease immediately."

The dust-storms and heat were very trying. As one soldier said: "Every day we have awful dust-storms lasting for hours, and the shade temperature always over a hundred degrees." Sometimes tents were blown to ribbons, and the sand came along at times like sleet. As a proof of the violence of these storms we are told that two hundred Cape boys were employed day and night shovelling the sand off forty miles of railway, and although they made a clear passage for the train in the morning, when it returned in the evening there was as much as four feet of sand over the rails. But this was not the worst evil caused by the sand. "A good many men," we are told, "have to be operated on to remove sand from their salivary glands under their tongues. When they eat, the saliva, trying to force its way through, causes a good deal of pain and swelling." Truly, as this correspondent





STRIKING CAMERA-PICTURE FROM GERMANY'S LOST COLONY: THE PRIDE THAT WENT BEFORE THE FALL.

Before evacuating Warmbad and the southern part of their colony the German forces in South-West Africa rounded up the natives and cleared them all up to Windhoek along with the European children. They thought that the Union troops would never get to Windhoek. The smaller view shows some officers of a German battalion preparing to leave Warmbad.

Digitized by Google



VIEW OF THE KOLMANSHOP DIAMOND MINE, GERMAN SOUTH-WEST AFRICA.
One of the richest diamond mines in the world.

says: "Fighting men is a joke to fighting Nature"—at least in South Africa.

A further hardship, which happily only happened once or twice, was due to lack of provisions. Now and again, especially in the final spurt, the troops got too far in front of the transport waggons, and after the capture of Windhoek they were for some days on half and then quarter rations.

But the difficulties attributable to Nature were increased by the action of the Germans. In filling up the bore-holes with sand the enemy was but following a Scripture precedent, for in the Bible (2 Kings iii. 19) we read how Elisha ordered the Kings of Judah and Israel to stop all the wells of water of the Moabites; but what shall we say about their action in poisoning the wells, and thus violating one of the oldest and most respected of the laws of war?

Germans poison the wells

We have already stated that near Aus Sir Duncan Mackenzie found the wells of drinking water had been poisoned, the only extenuating circumstance being that warning notices had been affixed to them. At Swakopmund, in January, the British on seizing the town discovered that six wells had been poisoned by means of arsenical cattle dip. On his arrival Botha took up the matter, and on February 23rd he wrote to Lieutenant-Colonel Francke, the German commander, drawing his attention to the fact that such an act was contrary to Article No. 23 (*a*) of The Hague Convention, and informing him that, if the practice was persisted in, he would hold the officers concerned responsible and he would be reluctantly compelled to employ such measures of reprisal as might seem advisable.

In reply, Francke defended the action of his men, who had orders "not to allow any water supplies to fall into the hands of the enemy in a form which allows such supplies to be used either by man or beast." He added that to prevent "injury to the health of the enemy," instructions had been given to mark with warning notices the wells which had been so treated. Botha answered that this reply was unsatisfactory, and repeated his former threat.



SWAKOPMUND—A GERMAN PORT NO LONGER.
Swakopmund, one of the two important ports in German South-West Africa, was occupied by the British on January 14th, 1915. Our photograph shows the Union Jack flying over the Custom-House.



IN THE HANDS OF THE ENEMY.
Men of the 1st South African Mounted Rifles, taken prisoners at Sandfontein, marching through Windhoek, with wounded in waggon at rear. They were afterwards liberated by the victorious Union forces.

However, all his difficulties were at length overcome, and these cannot be summarised better than in the words of Mr. Asquith. Speaking at the Guildhall on May 19th, a week after the capture of Windhoek, the Prime Minister said: "Their undertaking has been no slight one. A force of about 30,000 men, rather over half of whom are mounted men, with guns, horses, medical stores, mules, and transports, have been conveyed oversea five hundred and seven hundred miles, in addition to the large land force which has been operating on the German Union frontier. All supplies, every pound of provisions for the men, much of the water for their consumption, every ton of forage for horses and mules, have had to be brought from Cape Town. All the railway material for rapid construction had also to be brought from Cape Town, and all these men, horses,

Digitized by Google

guns, supplies, and materials had to be landed at two ports, Lüderitz and Walfish, at which appliances for disembarkation for such operations had not been constructed."

The campaign had been so successful that there was no need for General Smuts to keep his whole force in the field, and in May a portion of it was sent back and disbanded. In thanking these men for their services, Smuts mentioned that the country had been subdued in much shorter time than had been anticipated, and that the casualties had been comparatively few.

The business of dealing with the Germans still in arms, who had all been herded into the inhospitable north of the country, was left to General Botha's army. One column marched along the railway towards Grootfontein, while others swept the country to the south-east of it. A few days after the occupation of the capital, Colonel Mentz came up with a party of the enemy at Seeis thirty-seven miles to the east, and there, without loss to himself, he took one hundred and fifty-two prisoners, some waggons full of provisions, guns, and ammunition. About the same time General Manie Botha had a skirmish with the enemy about fifteen miles from Wilhelmstal, and a mounted brigade had one somewhat farther to the east. Meanwhile, on the railway line General Botha occupied the station of Omaruru, about eighty miles from Windhoek, where he took some prisoners, and a day or two later he was in possession of Kalkfeld, forty miles farther north. This place had been entrenched and prepared for resistance, but as a result of our flanking movements it was abandoned.

In the inhospitable north

Still the Germans declined to give battle, and Botha's mobile column swept victoriously on. On June 26th Otjiwarongo, a station on the railway, and Okandyande, a town eight miles to the south, were occupied, while wide encircling movements gave us possession of the whole of the district around Waterberg. At Okandyande two hundred and fifty interned civilians were liberated.

Fifty miles, or thereabouts, beyond Otjiwarongo the railway line forks, one branch going to Grootfontein and the other to Tsumeb. Near the junction stands Otavi, near which place are extensive deposits of copper, and as soon as the Union forces were securely planted at Okaputu and Omarasa, two intermediate stations, they made a dash for it. At 6.30 on the evening of June 30th General Manie Botha, with the 5th Brigade, left Okaputu, and at dawn on the following morning his scouts came into touch with the enemy. Later in the day a general action developed near Osib, and although the nature of the ground gave certain advantages to the defenders, and the attacking force had covered forty-two miles in sixteen hours, yet Manie Botha's skill and promptitude and his men's courage and endurance prevailed, and before nightfall Otavi was occupied. At Otavifontein—to give the town its full name—there is a good supply of water, and so arid is the neighbourhood that the possession of this practically means the possession of the surrounding country.

General Lukin's great march

From Omarasa, five miles south of Okaputu, another mounted brigade—the 6th—led by General Lukin, had set out at the same time as the 5th, and between the two came General Botha with the Headquarters Staff. Unlike Manie Botha, Lukin did not have to fight, but the excellent condition of his men was proved by this march of forty-eight miles in twenty hours without appreciable pause. The casualties among the Union forces in this operation were four killed and seven wounded. They took twenty-seven German prisoners and a machine-gun.



GENERAL BOTHA'S COLUMN AWAITING THE ORDER TO ENTER WINDHOEK.

With part of the northern army of the Union General Botha entered Windhoek, the capital of German South-West Africa, at noon on May 12th, 1915. He was met outside the town by the Burgomaster, having covered the final stage of the march by motor-car. When he entered Windhoek he was escorted by a motor-column and an impressive cavalcade of mounted burghers.

Digitized by Google



OVERSEAS CELTS WHO TOOK PART IN GENERAL BOTHA'S VICTORIOUS CAMPAIGN.

The 2nd Battalion of the Transvaal Scottish "at ease" outside Pretoria railway station before entraining for German South-West Africa. General Botha's forces included also a number of "Transvaal Irish."

A single day's rest was all that Manie Botha's men needed after their strenuous march and their running fight through a country covered with bush, and while they were taking this a regiment of mounted rifles was sent to seize the pass through the hills at Eisenberg. This having been done, the main body was soon on the move again towards Grootfontein.

This fight near Otavi was the last real stand made by the Germans. Brave as they unquestionably were, they never showed themselves unwilling, either at Kiao-Chau or elsewhere, to surrender when further resistance was useless. Supplies were failing, for Botha's generalship had deprived them of one advantage after another. They had been driven into the wildest and most inhospitable parts of the country; they were losing, one after the other, the places where food could be stored and water found; and, moreover, they were in a district where the natives—with good reason, if half the stories told are true—were fiercely hostile to them. Above all, Botha's columns were closing round them, and this they knew full well. They could die fighting, as James IV. and his spearmen did at Flodden, or they could surrender. They chose the latter alternative, and during the first days of July were making preparations for it.

Preparations for the surrender

Away to the west of the line to Tsumeb two columns were sweeping through the country. At Asis General Myburgh had left the railway, and at Chaub, sixteen miles south of Tsumeb, he had met a body of Germans. What followed can scarcely be called a fight, for with only one man killed Myburgh took eighty-six prisoners, and on July 8th marched right into Tsumeb, where five or six hundred more surrendered. He also captured some field-guns, and released a number of his comrades who were in the hands of the retreating Germans.

Moving in a still bigger arc was Colonel Brits. On June 30th he left Otyisasu, five miles west of Otjiwarongo, and passing through Otyo and Okakeua, he reached the German port of Namutoni. There he took one hundred and fifty German prisoners, seized their supplies and, like Myburgh, liberated a batch of our men. It was then officially stated that all the Union prisoners in German hands had been released.

By this time Dr. Seitz, the German governor, was in communication with General Botha about a surrender. Botha presented his terms in the form of an ultimatum, and while they were being considered his men stood to arms ready, if need be, for a final battle. This, however, was not to be. On the stroke of time the terms were accepted, and at two o'clock on the morning of July 9th, at a spot described as Kilometre 500 on the railway between Otavi and Khorab, the conditions of the capitulation were agreed to and signed by Botha, Seitz, and Col. Francke, the commander of the enemy's troops. All the Germans surrendered unconditionally. It is a tribute to civilisation that in that distant part of the world Botha was able to "ring up" Myburgh on the telephone, and to inform him of the surrender.

General Botha's ultimatum

The terms of surrender provided that the officers should be released upon parole, and that the men should be interned in the country. The two paragraphs dealing with this question may be quoted in full:

> The active troops of the said forces of the said Protectorate surrendered shall in the case of officers retain their arms and may give their parole, being allowed to live each under that parole at such places as he may select. If for any reason the Government of the Union of South Africa is unable to meet the wish of any officer as regards his choice of abode, the officer concerned will choose some place in respect of which no difficulty exists.
>
> In the case of other ranks of the active troops of the said forces of the said Protectorate, such other ranks shall be interned under proper guard in such place in the Protectorate as the Union Government may decide upon. Each non-commissioned officer and man of the other ranks last referred to shall be allowed to retain his rifle, but no ammunition. One officer shall be permitted to be interned with the other ranks of the artillery, one with the other ranks of the remainder of the active troops, and one with the other ranks of the police.

These conditions referred only to the regular troops

Digitized by Google

and to the police. Reservists were allowed, upon surrendering their arms and signing a form of parole, to return to their homes and their civil occupations. Civil officials were allowed to retain their homes, but not, of course, their positions. Government property and all warlike stores became the property of the Union of South Africa.

The work of attending to the details of the surrender was entrusted to Brigadier-General H. T. Lukin, and a revised estimate of the number of prisoners gave it as 204 officers and 3,293 of other ranks (of these rather less than half were regulars); 37 field-guns and 22 machine-guns were given up at this time. The formal surrender took place at Otavi, where the prisoners began to arrive on July 11th. Several of them were wearing a cross, not of iron, but of black cloth edged with white cord, this being apparently the nearest approach they could get to the decoration so dear to the Kaiser's heart. They stated that their provisions were almost at an end.

The campaign's victorious conclusion

Two brigades, one mounted and one infantry, remained with General Lukin to look after the prisoners, but as regards the others, arrangements were made for their return to the Union where, it is hardly necessary to say, the victorious conclusion of the campaign was hailed with great rejoicing.

The whole operations had been carried out with singularly little loss of life. The final figures are not available, but on June 14th, when the heaviest of the fighting was over, the Union Government issued some particulars about the casualties suffered by its forces. Altogether, both in the rebellion and the campaign in South-West Africa, these numbered 1,612. The dead amounted to 406, of whom 97 were killed in action by the Germans and 98 by the rebels, 58 died of wounds, and 153 from disease, accident, or misadventure; 606 were taken prisoners by the enemy, but, as we have seen, these were released by us.

The losses of the enemy can only be estimated very roughly. The rebels lost 190 killed and between 300 and 350 wounded. Of the Germans, 103 are known to have been killed and 195 wounded; but these figures are certainly well within the mark. Before the surrender, 890 Germans were prisoners in South Africa. Thus, with the 700 or 800 taken by General Myburgh, and the 3,497 officers and men who surrendered on July 9th, we have accounted for nearly 6,000 of the enemy, or rather more than half the total number who were thought to have taken the field under Colonel Francke. The estimate of 10,000 may have been excessive, but not, we think, greatly so. A good number doubtless returned to their homes at various stages of the campaign; the killed were certainly in excess of 103, and many must have died from disease and hardship.

At the cost of some 2,000 casualties — less than many a single day's loss suffered by our armies in Flanders — General Botha had captured a territory over 300,000 square miles in extent, and had brought 15,000 white folk and 100,000 natives under the rule of King George. It is an undeveloped land, but a rich one. Already it has produced diamonds and copper to the value of £7,000,000, and in it about 33,000,000 acres are used for pasturage. Its foreign trade amounted to nearly £4,000,000 a year, and under British rule this is capable of great expansion. Before the surrender the damage done to the 1,400 miles of railway had been made good, and a regular service of trains was running. Moreover, the line from Upington in Cape Colony was, in June, extended to Kalkfontein, thus linking up the Union system with the German one.

And what shall we say more? Just this, that General Botha and his men deserved the praise showered upon them by the King and his subjects all over the world. On July 13th, in moving that the thanks of the House of Commons be given to Generals Botha and Smuts and the forces under their command, Mr. Asquith said:

> I ask the House at this, the earliest opportunity, to testify to the admiration and gratitude of the whole Empire, first to the illustrious General, who is also Prime Minister of the Union, and who has rendered such inestimable service to the Empire, which he entered by adoption, and of which he has become one of the most honoured and cherished sons, and to his dauntless and much enduring troops, whether of Burgher or British birth, who fought like brethren, side by side, in the cause which is equally dear to all of us—the broadening of the bounds of human liberty.

While the chief glory of this astonishing success belongs to General Botha, the British race will not forget his great lieutenant, General Jan Christiaan Smuts, Minister of Finance before the war and Minister of Defence during it. What Stonewall Jackson was to Lee that was General Smuts to Botha. The two were a perfect combination, and they worked with an energy, decision, courage, and loyalty that placed the Empire in their permanent debt. General Smuts in his earlier life had attracted the prophetic eye of Cecil Rhodes, who foretold that he would be one of the greatest of South Africans. He fought brilliantly in the Boer War, proving himself almost as redoubtable an opponent as General Botha. He loyally accepted the settlement at the Peace of Vereeniging; and in the critical hours of 1914, when it seemed to many that the Boers were wavering, he reminded them with speeches and messages of burning eloquence that the cause at stake was the cause of their kinsfolk, since among them were thousands with Flemish blood in their veins.

South Africa's "Stonewall Jackson"

To his men General Botha himself paid a well-earned tribute. "The main feature of the last operations," said he, "has been the incessant marching by day and night over great distances, at great speed, without water." And he continued: "The marches performed by one and all deserve to rank highly as military achievements." No wonder that Lord Kitchener telegraphed: "We shall warmly welcome you and the South Africans who can come over to join us."

Lord Kitchener's hope seemed likely to be realised, for the Imperial Government accepted the offer of the Union Government to provide some batteries of heavy artillery and a contingent of men to serve in Europe. Meanwhile, whatever may be the future of South-West Africa, its speedy and economical conquest will remain as a monument to the genius of the great Boer General and the endurance and heroism of his men.



SOUTH AFRICAN MOUNTED RIFLES BEHIND BARRICADES OF STONE AND SCRUB.

Digitized by Google



FRENCH SOLDIERS IN ACTION WITH A MACHINE-GUN IN AN ANGLE OF A TRENCH AT NEUVILLE ST. VAAST.

The trench shown had been captured from the Germans; and the above vivid record of the way in which it was turned to advantage by our gallant allies is the work of one of the official French photographers.

Digitized by Google



ROYAL ENGINEERS LAYING A FIELD TELEGRAPH.

CHAPTER LXIX.

THE BATTLES OF HOOGE, ROUGES BANCS, AND FESTUBERT.

Poisoned Streams at Ypres and the German System of Atrocities—Blowing a Poison Path through our Trenches at Hooge—Magnificent Recovery of Sir Herbert Plumer's Men—Attempted Advance of our First Army at Aubers Ridge—Our Shrapnel Fire Fails to Destroy the Enemy's Entrenchments—Heroic Charge by the Kensington Territorials—The Black Watch Fails for Lack of Support—Lacking Shells, the British Army Works Forward with Bombs and Bayonets—Great Night Attack by 7th Division and 2nd Division—Check to Indian Army Corps and Magnificent Rush Forward by British Troops—Driving Two Wedges into the German Salient near Festubert—7th Division and 2nd Division Link Hands and Cut Off the Germans—Canadian Division and Highland Division Carry On the Advance—The Achievement of the Welsh Fusiliers with Captain Rockwell and Sergeant-Major Barter—How the Cameron Territorials Tricked the Enemy—Splendid Gallantry of the Scots Guards and the Queen's—The Modern Grenadier and his Terrible Skill in Trench-Clearing—Grand Charge by the Canadian Scottish—The Second Canadian Brigade and the Awful Struggle for the "Bexhill" Redoubt—Why the Battle of Festubert Came to an End.

THERE seems to be little doubt that the gas attacks on Ypres, which began on April 22nd, 1915, as already described, seriously interfered with the plans made by Sir John French for a great forward movement in the spring. The loss of fifty guns by the French division north of the town exposed our defending troops under Lieutenant-General Sir Herbert Plumer to a sweeping, overwhelming fire from the strengthened German batteries. Large bodies of troops, such as the Lahore Division, had to be moved rapidly from their position near Neuve Chapelle—from which Sir John French had originally intended to strike towards Lille—and make a night-march to the north of Ypres and there help the French, Belgians, and Canadian Divisions. All through the month of May Ypres remained a position of great weakness in our lines, and our defence of the shattered city needed such sustained and desperate efforts that the British Army was only able to play a comparatively small part in the offensive operations against the German front.

All the time Sir Douglas Haig drove in against the German lines southward, the German commander weakened the force of the British attack by a furious assault northward against Sir Herbert Plumer's position. It is thus impossible to deny that the enemy obtained an important advantage by his barbarous use of poisonous gases. For though he did not thereby win Ypres, he seriously checked any forward movement by our right wing in the direction of Lille. In the latter part of May the Germans seemed still confident that they would capture Ypres by means of their gas attacks. Every time the wind changed from a western or south-westerly direction to north or north-east the clouds of green death were sent against our lines. Sometimes the barbarians were slain by their own foul weapon. South of Pilkem some of the men of the 240th Reserve Regiment were suffocated by their own gas, through a cylinder in their trenches being blown up by a French shell. Soon afterwards a direct hit, obtained by our artillery on a German trench south of Ypres, produced an extraordinary column of thick fumes, which immediately descended on the German lines, thus showing that it was formed of something much heavier than the smoke of a high-explosive shell.



A POST OF PERIL.
General Michelet inspecting an advanced post of the French Army near Ypres.

It was in this section of the battlefield that the Germans resorted to the last but one of all possible methods of warfare of pure savagery. Some of our men were suddenly stricken by a new disease. It looked at first as though they were suffering from jaundice; but they also had the dropped wrist, which is a symptom of poisoning. Our doctors in the hospital asked

Digitized by Google

for a sample of the water from the stream coming from a position held by the Bavarians. When the water was analysed it was found to contain arsenic. Only one thing then remained for the Germans to do in order to rival fully the Aztecs of ancient Mexico and the head-hunters of the Solomon Islands. They had begun by killing our wounded and then torturing our men whom they had taken prisoners. They had afterwards spread cholera germs brought from Galicia among the Belgian troops on the Yser. Then in many of the German prison-camps in which our men were confined there had been a sudden and general outburst of deadly diseases, which looked as though German bacteriological science was being employed in so secret and subtle a manner that we should be able to find no cause for making reprisals upon German prisoners of war in our hands. The diseases in question could, in a natural way, only be conveyed by means of vermin, and having regard to our national habits of cleanliness, it was extremely unlikely that if our men were allowed to keep themselves clean they would, when at ease in German camps, willingly endure the constant irritation of insect pests.

Horrors of Teuton savagery



A BY-WAY AMID THE RUINS OF MONT ST. ELOI.
A view taken by one of the official French photographers.

The Germans also weakened our men whom they had taken prisoners by a process of slow starvation, which tended to reduce them to such a condition that the contagious diseases introduced into the German prison camps would have a quicker and more deadly effect. It was while this subtle and modernised reversion to the most savage treatment of prisoners of war was occurring that the horrible poison gas was employed by the Germans on a general scale. As we have seen, it was accompanied by the new attempt to terrorise our soldiers by letting them see their wounded hanging crucified against barn-doors. Not long after this our men also saw, from the trenches to which they had retired after an unsuccessful charge, the enemy spraying burning liquid on the wounded men we had left behind during our retirement. Compared with all these things the poisoning of a stream south of Ypres was a small affair. General Botha's men had already suffered from this barbarism, and it was only to be expected that the Germans would employ it also on the European field of war. But the poisoning of streams was very significant in that it practically exhausted the armoury of savageries which the enemy had developed. They had done everything that the most degraded creatures in human shape could do, with the sole exception that they had refrained from cannibalism. Only in this regard could the head-hunters of the South Seas and the savages of the Amazon claim any superiority over them in respect to rigorous methods of terrorising their foes.

Naturally our men were far from being terrorised. Our regular Army had fought against savages of every kind for some hundreds of years. And while sentimental members of the Radical and Irish wings in our Parliament, such as Mr. King, of North Somerset, were protesting in advance against our Army using asphyxiating gases against the Germans, our troops in the trenches refused to surrender, and preferred to die rather than fall into the clutches of fiends. "Their mistrust of us was such," wrote a German Catholic priest, "that, seeing the situation was hopeless, the English Rifle Brigade tried to commit suicide." Almost every single man of them had to be put out of action with hand-grenades, according to the priest. This statement coming from a German source, confirmed the report of our own men concerning what they saw done to their wounded. The fighting Briton does not choose death merely by reason of hearsay information. Our men had seen things with their own eyes — things the enemy had deliberately planned they should see—that was why our wounded tried to kill themselves. Yet in this same month of May a captured German soldier wrote home: "I hope the English prisoners in Germany are treated as well as I am. To-day I learned football."

As a matter of fact, we did not take many prisoners. This was due to two causes. In the first place, Germans shot their own men down when they tried to surrender in large bodies; and in the second place, most of the fighting was of a desperate hand-to-hand nature, with bayonet and grenade, in which men battled in great fury to the death. This kind of fighting suited our troops, especially as their natural courage had been exalted to a height at which they ceased to care much whether they lived or died. It was the gas attacks that changed the mood of our men, and made each of them eager to die with a large group of dead Germans around him. They were haunted by the purple-black, agonised features of their smitten comrades, and they fought as fought the Highlanders in the relieving army in the Indian Mutiny, when each man carried a relic of the dead women and men he was vowed to revenge. The fury of the British onsets appeared to have resounded through Germany, for on some prisoners were found letters from relatives and friends at home commiserating them on their sad fate in having been sent against British troops. There were, besides, clear and definite pieces of evidence of a feeling of fear among the German soldiers themselves; for in the last week in May the Germans broke our line at Ypres, broke it very badly, but lost their advantage because their absolute lack of courage prevented them from advancing through the large gap in our lines.

Fury of the British onsets

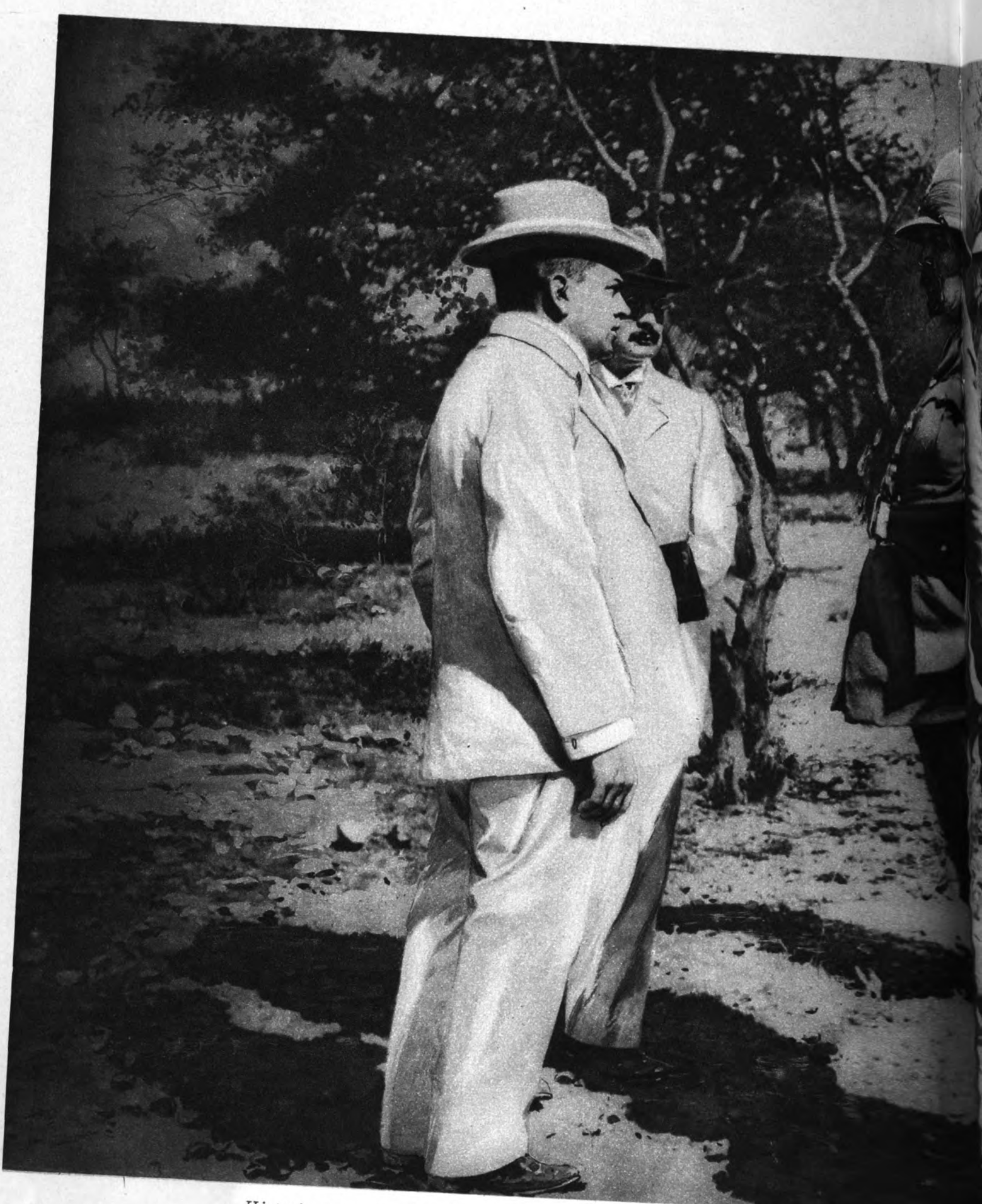
The attack began before dawn on Monday morning, May 24th. First of all a violent bombardment with gas shells was opened at 2.45 a.m. against our lines, running from Wieltje, north-east of Ypres, to Hooge, on the Menin road. Near this stretch of trenches, about two and three-

Digitized by Google



General the Right Honourable Louis Botha, P.C.

Digitized by Google



70

Historic scene outside the capital of German South-West Africa. General

Digitized by Google



Botha arranging with the Burgomaster for the surrender of the town of Windhoek.

Digitized by Google



General the Hon. Jan Christiaan Smuts, South African Minister of Defence.

Digitized by Google

quarter miles long, the Germans had placed an extraordinary number of gas-cylinders. These they opened before daybreak, and their supply of available gas was so great that it continued to pour over our lines for some hours. Then behind the green clouds came the usual infantry attack. It was launched in tremendous force under cover of a terrible artillery fire, at a time when the enemy hoped to catch most of our men asleep and choke them by the gas before they could use their respirators. As a matter of fact, many of our troops were only awakened from their dug-outs by the torture of the fumes they had inhaled, and though our lines held on the north, the gas poisoners carried our trenches at Wieltje and round Bellewaarde Lake, south of the Menin road. Meanwhile, the great German siege train, with most of the Duke of Würtemberg's artillery, maintained a hurricane fire over almost every yard of ground immediately in front of Ypres, in Ypres itself, and behind Ypres. Our front was broken, reinforcements were shut off by a barrage of shrapnel and high-explosive shell, and nearly all our men in the firing-line were suffering more or less from gas. The 2nd Royal Irish and the 9th Argyll and Sutherland were badly poisoned, and driven out of a farm, which the enemy took and fortified. All our troops of the Fifth Army Corps and the cavalry force under General de Lisle, had a bitter fight to maintain their ground. Yet the German infantry hesitated to advance; only the German machine-gun officers displayed any pluck or dash. Sir Herbert Plumer organised counter-attacks, and by noon our infantry were again established on their old line north of the Roulers railway. And by the evening our original position on the south of the Menin road was cleared of Germans, though our line there had to be drawn back somewhat. The hostile machine-gun parties kept us out of Wieltje; but, on the other hand, the entire advance in great force made by the Germans was stopped. An attack made in the night by our troops on the lost farm did not succeed, but the next day Sir Herbert Plumer's men succeeded in consolidating their positions, their line passing through Wieltje toward Hooge, where the cavalry divisions proceeded slowly to advance eastwards.

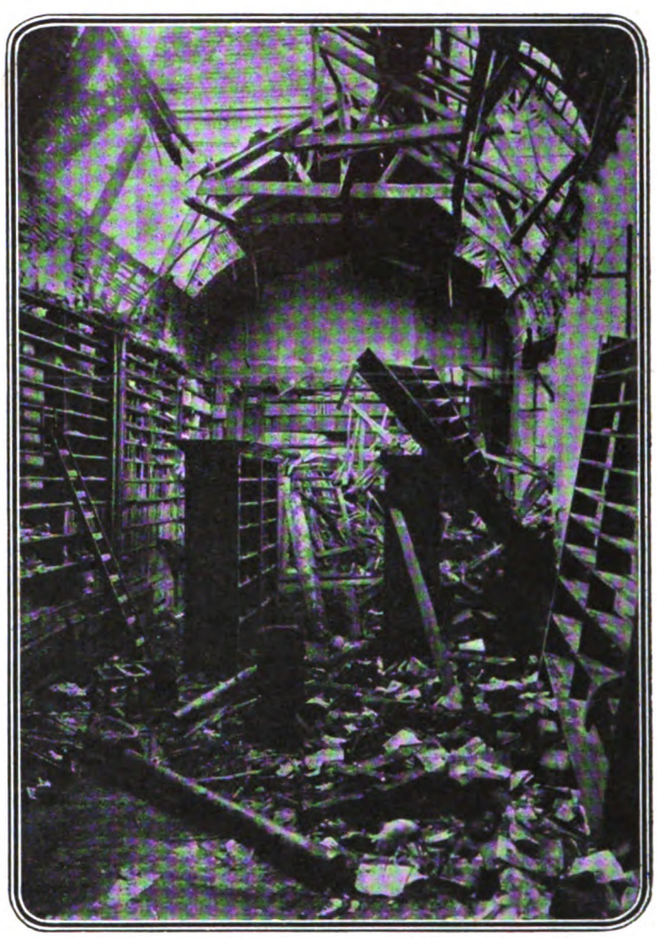
When the Germans hesitated

The work done by our Second Army round Ypres, from the middle to the end of May, was of an unparalleled kind. It cannot be fully described at the present time, as a complete description of this series of nightmare battles might reveal too much. "Tell thou never thy foe that thy foot acheth," said Hendynge, one of our very old and quite forgotten writers. But there can be no harm now in saying that the artillery with which Sir Herbert Plumer and his single army corps held Ypres in the most critical days of May was insignificant. In comparison with the German ordnance the batteries on our front were too light and too few in number, so that they were of small service.

Why the German guns were beaten

We had to hold the Germans back with bullet, bayonet, and a comparatively small number of machine-guns. The only way of escaping from German shell and German shrapnel was to close in a hand-to-hand conflict with the German infantry and get so mixed up with them that the German artillerymen had to lift their fire all along the line, and devote their attention to keeping off any possible reinforcements. The hand-to-hand conflicts were a relief to our troops, enabling them for a time to escape from the devastating German shell fire. It was largely because the German infantry did not feel that a scrap with the bayonet was a holiday from death that it did not put any drive into its attack. The result was that the German guns were beaten at Ypres because the German infantrymen could not even do the work of clearing up the fragments of our lines smashed by their gunners.

The Duke of Würtemberg must have been a very angry man at the end of May, but his anger could not have been more than a ripple of feeling when compared with the indignation of the Crown Prince of Bavaria. One of the reasons why we had scarcely any heavy guns at Ypres was that the batteries were being used round La Bassée in capturing the trenches held by the Bavarians. The German Staff was well aware of this condition of things. This was, indeed, the explanation of the continual and most furious assault on our Ypres front. The action of Sir John French was the most adventurous piece of strategy in the war. His confidence in his men had something really sublime about it. Having tested the Territorial troops during the first gas attack on our Ypres line, he apparently thought that they were fit to stand against anything. So he left them with little else than their rifles and their respirators, to hold out against the greatest mass of German artillery on the western front and against



TYPICAL EXAMPLE OF GERMAN "KULTUR."
Interior of the tower of the beautiful library at Ypres after its wanton destruction by the emissaries of Prussia's "higher civilisation."

the most complete system of German gas attacks, and removed their artillery southward for the grand offensive movement against the ridges that defended Lille.

The attack on the Lille ridges began on Sunday, May 9th, by a general advance of our First Army between La Bassée and Armentières. The fighting extended from the village of Bois Grenier to that of Festubert, the principal attack being delivered against the German position at Rouges Bancs, near Fromelles and the Aubers ridge, where we had been held up in the Battle of Neuve Chapelle. At the same time that our First Army, under Sir Douglas Haig, swung up against the low plateau in front of Lille, a great French force, under the direction of General Foch, made a fierce onslaught upon the German lines between La Bassée and Arras. It was a combined Franco-British offensive movement, undertaken partly with a view to relieving the

Digitized by Google



Copyright

The Great War

MAP OF THE BATTLE FRONT BETWEEN ARMENTIÈRES AND LA BASSÉE.

Showing the fortified horse-shoe ridge which formed so formidable a barrier to the British attack on the German entrenchments before Lille.

Digitized by Google

pressure upon Ypres, and partly with a view to reconquering Lille and its rich coal-mining regions and breaking the German front. It was also designed to help the Russian armies retreating in Galicia.

Both the British and the French artillery tried to smash in the German trenches by an overpowering bombardment. But while the French gunners were fairly successful by reason of their enormous supply of high-explosive shells, which they used for weeks at the rate of a hundred thousand shells a day, our massed guns and howitzers, employing mainly shrapnel, made no practicable breach in the enemy's fortified lines. Yet our bombardment, which started about half-past five on Sunday morning, was on a larger scale than at Neuve Chapelle. In a sudden thunderclap of sound thousands of guns massed along the front and broke out with a roar of fire. The German lines were veiled in drifting clouds and puffs of white, black, green, and yellow smoke. Then the German batteries replied, and guessing that an attack was intended and that every trench and barricade on our front was crowded with troops, the German gunners sent thousands of shells crashing along our parapets. Our men were prepared for this counter-blast, and were waiting for it in covered positions. The German infantry, on the other hand, being taken by surprise, had hurriedly to reinforce their firing-line for the coming battle. So extreme was the haste that large numbers of the opposing forces, being unable to get to the front quickly enough by their communication trenches, came into the open and advanced at the double. Then it was that shrapnel did more damage than high-explosive shell, and the Germans suffered very badly before they reached cover.

For three-quarters of an hour our guns pounded the German line, and part of the front parapet of sand-bags was crumbled up in patches. But when our guns lifted their fire and made a shrapnel curtain round the enemy's support trenches, the damage done to the enemy's barricades and wire entanglements was seen to be but slight.



THE PIPES THAT CHEER.

Scottish Rifles returning tired and worn from the trenches, but kept going by the bagpipes' cheery skirl.

For the Germans had changed their weapons of defence. Instead of ordinary barbed-wire, such as our field-guns had swept away at Neuve Chapelle, they had specially manufactured barbed cables from 1½ in. to 2 in. in diameter, which could not be severed with ordinary cutters, and which resisted shrapnel fire. To make these cable entanglements more difficult of reduction by artillery, the Germans had thrown up banks, looking like trench parapets, behind which extended the entanglement area protecting the real trench. All that our men could do when faced by an unbroken and uncuttable barbed cable defence of this kind, was to cast their overcoats upon the barbed edge, and then try to clamber over it while the German machine-guns were playing upon them.

Barbed cable entanglements

There was only a narrow space, less than two hundred yards wide, between the British and the German trenches. In many places the sand-bag barricades, built man-high on the marshy lowland soil, were close enough for the opposing troops to talk to each other. Very narrow was the long strip of No Man's Land running between the khaki-coloured sand-bags on the British side and the piebald, black-and-white sand-bags on the German side. Over both the khaki and the mottled line of breastworks roared and screamed the tempest of death, and for a while no infantryman could peer above the parapet and live. But our massed guns lifted their fire on the hostile batteries as well as on the hostile entrenched infantry; and with a cheer the troops of our 8th Division rose from their covered position, and tore in a charging line against the black-and-white breastworks.

In front of them was a horse-shoe ridge, forming the last obstacle between them and the plains which led to Lille. At Rouges Bancs the ridge sweeps away in a north-easterly direction, and by the hamlet there lies a small wood, similar to that which had proved a stumbling-block at Neuve Chapelle. But happily the wood was quietly captured by our Indian troops, the Pathans and Gurkhas, before the bombardment opened, and the way seemed clear for a great infantry advance. The 1st Gloucesters, the 2nd Sussex, the Northamptons, and the Kensington Battalion of the London Regiment were among those that led the assault. Behind the assaulting line were the Sussex Territorials, 2nd King's Royal Rifles, 1st North Lancashires, and the Liverpool Regiment Territorials. To meet our onslaught the Germans brought up great masses of men whom they had been concentrating in Lille, but in spite of these our men, in fifteen and a half hours of desperate fighting, stormed the first line of German trenches and even got on the slope of the ridge. After that, however, they could not advance farther. From their unbroken fortified lines the Germans brought to bear such an extraordinary number of machine-guns that nothing but some hundreds of thousands of high-explosive shell could have blown a clear path for our infantry.

Heroic advance by Territorials

In the famous triangle west of La Bassée, where our First Army Corps and Indian Divisions tried to advance, the German commander used an admirable stratagem. He left his first two lines empty of men and material during our bombardment, and waited in great strength for our infantry advance in his concreted and armour-plated third line.

At the same time he transformed the famous brickfield by La Bassée into a terrible machine-gun fortress, from which a sweeping deadly fire was poured on our troops. Heavy were our losses in this section when, after nearly carrying the enemy's position, our men drew back to their own trenches, the Bedfords and the High-

Digitized by Google



NEW WEAPON FOR FIRING PROJECTILES USED BY THE GERMANS IN TRENCH WARFARE IN FRANCE.

landers having especially distinguished themselves by the fury of their charge. Had reinforcements been at hand at this point at the critical moment, we might have won an important victory; as it was, things remained after the battle in about the same condition as before. Our First Army was repulsed both south round La Bassée and north below Bois Grenier. But in the centre the Kensington Territorial Battalion (the 13th London) won one of the highest honours of the war, for they were the only battalion that succeeded in doing its task that day. The moment the British artillery ceased, the Kensingtons were over their parapet, and, charging right through, they captured at the point of the bayonet the first, second, and third lines of German trenches on the front. Some of them swept directly onward up the ridge, while one company turned to the right, another company to the left, and bombed and bayoneted the Germans out of their trenches for two hundred yards or so

The Kensingtons' terrible ordeal

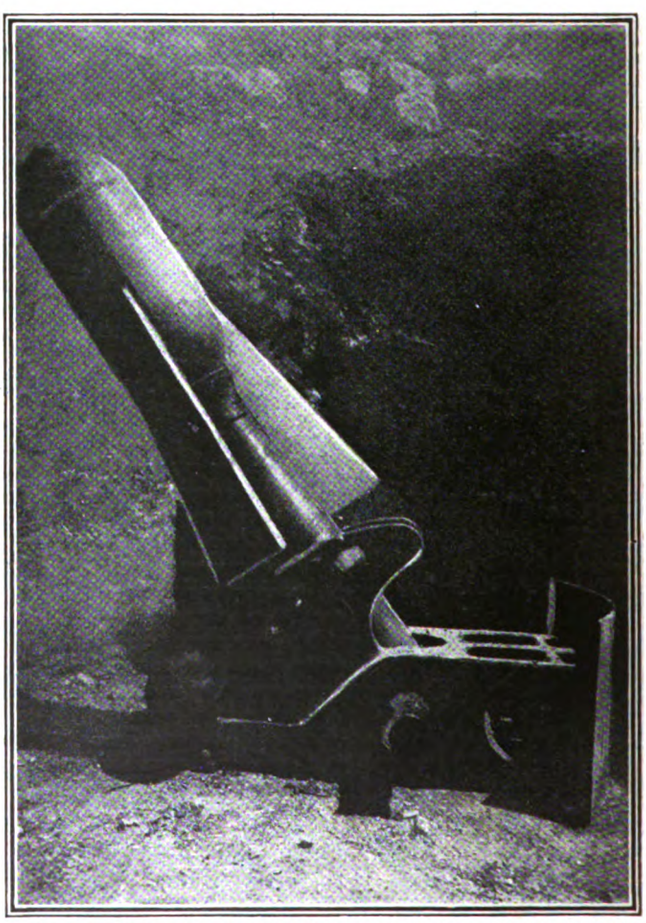
In the meantime the two regular battalions on either side of the Kensingtons should also have advanced over the German trenches and connected with the gallant Territorials. But both the regulars were held up by machine-guns and wire entanglements, and they never got through. All the Kensingtons could then do was to try to hold on to what they had gained. The German counter-attacks steadily increased in violence, yet the West Londoners went on bombing expeditions on their left wing, where they held the enemy at bay for hours, until he brought up trench mortars. All the time their right wing was floating in the air, and the Germans were trying to envelop and crush it, while their artillery massed its fire all day long against the little London wedge driven into the defences at Lille.

At a quarter-past eleven on Sunday morning the Kensingtons in the front trench were cheered by a message from their brigadier, saying that reinforcements were coming. But when the reinforcing battalion advanced it was caught by the enemy's guns. The Germans then massed in great strength against both flanks of the Kensingtons, and our men got the order to retire. Their retreat was a terrible business, for they had to fight their way through the German lines again in order to regain their own position. The afternoon and evening were hours of nightmare horror to the men fighting their way back, waist-deep in mud and foul, crawling water in the German communication trenches, cut off by an enemy they could not see, and isolated from the rest of the Fourth British Army Corps. The hottest time was the final scramble back to the British trench in the evening, across a hundred yards of bare, flat ground, swept by German machine-guns and rifle fire. It was eight o'clock on Sunday night before the last of the heroic Kensingtons reached their own parapets.

The battalion, which had won a name at Neuve Chapelle, was now reduced to a shadow. Before the remnant was withdrawn from the front to act as guards on the line of communication, General Sir Henry Rawlinson rode out to address the small band of West Londoners. He told them that though their last attack could not be supported, it had not only relieved the pressure on Ypres, but had directly helped General Foch's army to advance between La Bassée and Arras. "By your splendid attack and dogged endurance," said the commander of the Fourth British Army Corps, "you and your fallen comrades have won imperishable glory for the 13th London Battalion. It was a feat of arms surpassed by no battalion in this great war."

General Rawlinson's fine tribute

In the part of the line in which the Sussex and Northamptons tried to advance our troops never reached the German lines. They were held up from forty to eighty yards in front of the black-and-white barricade, and there mowed down by shrapnel, machine-gun, and rifle fire. Many brave things were done; our men were splendid but helpless; no one could get on or get back, and when the order to retire was given it was very difficult to carry it out. In the afternoon another attack was delivered by the Black Watch and the 1st Cameronians, some of the



CLOSE VIEW OF ONE OF THE LARGER AERIAL "TORPEDOES" USED IN THE FRENCH TRENCHES.

Digitized by Google



ABANDONED BARRICADES AT THE ENTRANCE TO A WAR-STRICKEN VILLAGE IN NORTHERN FRANCE.
Fighting of the fiercest character took place here before the enemy were driven out, leaving their hurriedly constructed stone barricades behind them.



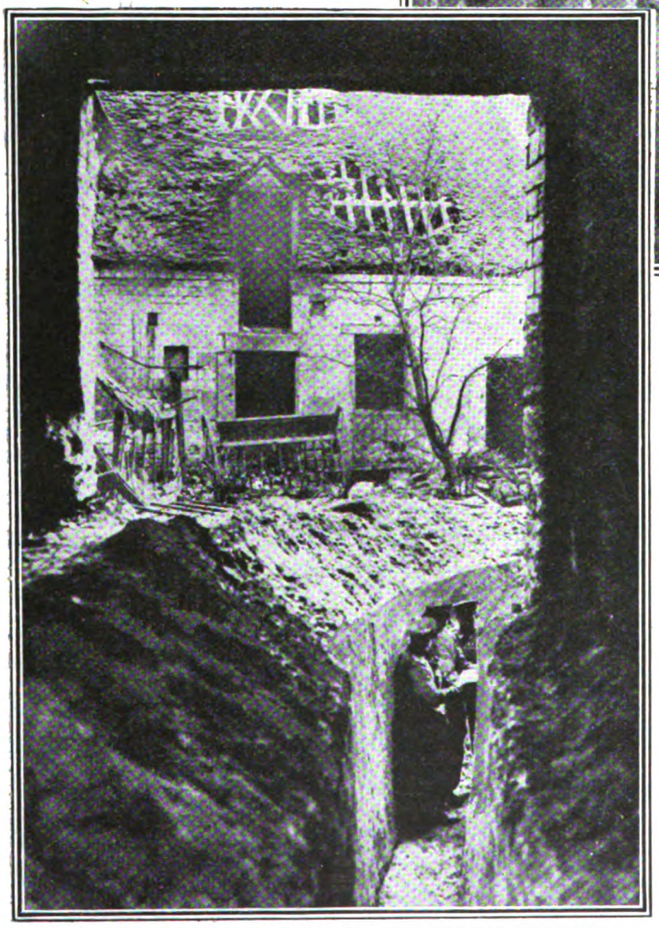
ANOTHER GERMAN BARRICADE CAPTURED BY THE FRENCH AFTER DESPERATE FIGHTING.
A vivid official photograph of a hotly-contested corner of Neuville St. Vaast.

Digitized by Google

slightly wounded men of the first British assaulting line joining in the Scottish charge after lying out under fire for twelve hours. But the gallant Scotsmen were repulsed with as heavy losses as the Sussex and Northamptons. And the few that, by a tremendous effort, got into the first German trench were killed. Men fell in clumps and clusters, the dead lying crumpled where they fell, the wounded hobbling or crawling back to shelter from the shells or bullets. Right to the foot of the German parapet the attack was pushed, but there it stayed and died. The Scotsmen carried a flag with them; it could be seen, fluttering and swaying through the clouds of smoke and dust.

Called back through enemy's fire

The plan had been for the Scotsmen to gain a footing in the first German trench, and then bomb their way along while reinforcements were sent them. But when at terrible cost they had taken a small section of the enemy's first line, they had to be called back through the enemy's



NOVEL GERMAN TRENCH IN NORTHERN FRANCE.
Trench cut through a ruined farm to facilitate the observation officer's movements in connection with gun fire-control.

deadly curtain of fire. The chief reason was that our artillery had been overpowered and could not keep down the German batteries and thus maintain a clear space where our infantry could push up against the hostile barricades. Some of our guns seem to have run right out of the high-explosive shell needed to smash the German machine-gun forts. In both the sections of the line—that held by the Kensingtons and that which was won late in the afternoon by the Black Watch—there were nests of German machine-guns, requiring only a few well-placed 6 in. high-explosive shells from our side in order to shatter them.

But there were no such shells at hand, and any infantry reinforcements had to be sent across the zone swept by a tempest of bullets from the German machine-guns. In these circumstances Sir Douglas Haig, in what must have been the saddest moment of his life, gave the order for his entire line to withdraw to its own trenches. The retire-



WITH THE HUN IN HIS HOUR OF EASE.
Somewhere in Flanders the German soldiers adapted a communication trench to the purposes of a skittle-alley.

ment was a dreadful business—one of the most pitiful scenes in the war. Our men swarmed out of the German breastworks and doubled back towards their own trenches. Some of them ran fast, some walked slowly and reluctantly, here and there carrying or supporting a wounded man; and on them all fell the scourging bullets from the victorious German line, with showers of bombs bursting in blasts of destruction. Our men were undoubtedly angry and exceedingly sore over the whole affair. As they put it, they had got their foot inside the door, but no help was sent to enable them to force it open. But it was soon known at home that the lack of high-explosive shell had been one of the principal causes of our defeat. The men who died around the ridges of Lille did not die entirely in vain, for the whole nation suddenly became aware of our disastrous shortage of lyddite shells, with the result that the Government was reconstructed on a national basis, and the most persuasive of our statesmen was appointed Minister of Munitions, and entrusted with the task of organising every available shop and factory possessing a lathe into a shell-making plant.

Our disastrous shortage of shells

Meanwhile, the position of Sir John French seemed to have become extremely difficult and perilous. For the enemy knew at last that he was lacking in high-explosive shell. The German armies at Ypres and around Lille were officially informed that the British troops could do nothing against them, and that, at Ypres in particular, the British artillery had been so weakened that the German infantry was in a position to gain anything it liked. But the British Commander-in-Chief had a subtle mind as well as a vehement and passionate will. He apparently encouraged the British war-correspondents attached to his headquarters to reveal completely the woeful position of

Digitized by Google

his ordnance. Then by night he quietly moved a large number of heavy pieces back to Ypres and drew largely on his available stock of shells, while the House of Commons was rocking in blank dismay at the public revelations concerning the position of our artillery at the front. The rearrangement of our guns, after the failure of our assault on the Lille ridges, was conducted with as extreme a secrecy as the earlier concentration of forces at Neuve Chapelle. The consequence was that when, in the last days of May, the Duke of Würtemberg's army advanced on Ypres in a mood of excessive and careless optimism it was received by such a tremendous hurricane of both high-explosive and shrapnel shells that it lost all further power of attack. New German formations had to be sent in large numbers through Belgium in order to restore to the German forces round Ypres the strength to enable their commander to contemplate the possibility of attempting another forward movement.

The rearrangement of our guns, while greatly assisting our much-tried and greatly enduring troops on the north of our line, had the very serious disadvantage of weakening our powers of attack round the Lille plateau. Yet from the point of view of General Joffre and his chief executant, General Foch, the prospect of the campaign in the west depended upon maintaining the striking force of our First Army between La Bassée and Bois Grenier. At any cost in life we had to increase at once, and go on increasing, our pressure against the left wing of the German army under the Crown Prince of Bavaria, which was covering Lille. For General Foch was trying slowly to smash his way through the German fortifications between Lille and Arras, and unless we also advanced on the north of Lille, and thus compelled Prince Rupert to keep a large number of men, guns, and shells for use against us, he would be able to counter the French attack by massing all his principal forces in a mighty defensive movement.

Rearrangement of our guns

It was one of those occasions that test the qualities both of mind and character in a commander Sir John French was not found wanting, and with his Chief of Staff, Sir William Robertson, and the commander of his First Army, Sir Douglas Haig, he invented a way out of the difficulty. His men had been unable to make progress even when the British artillery was concentrated, at some risk to Ypres, against the Aubers ridge. So as guns were for the time of little use, the British commander went back to the most primitive weapon of war—the spear—in its modern form of a long knife attached to the end of a rifle. In plain words, a bayonet attack was intended. It seemed an impossible thing, having regard to the enormous strength of the enemy's defences. But it was just because it was impossible that it was likely to succeed.

Bayonet attack near Festubert

For it possessed the grand winning element of an utter surprise. The point selected for an attack was a salient of the German lines by Festubert, which formed a bulge between Neuve Chapelle and La Bassée. Viewed from the British trenches, the German position seemed to be a stretch of bare, flat fields, dotted with ruined cottages, farm buildings, and orchards. In reality it was a network of pitfalls. Hidden in the coarse, high grass were ditches, filled with mud and slimy water, and in some places the ground was hardly more than a morass. The German batteries, placed on the high ground westward, had all the ranges marked, and by means of telescopic sights could sweep every yard of the ground. But if only our men could quickly get into the German trenches, from seventy to three hundred yards distant, the hostile batteries would for the time lose most of their advantages.

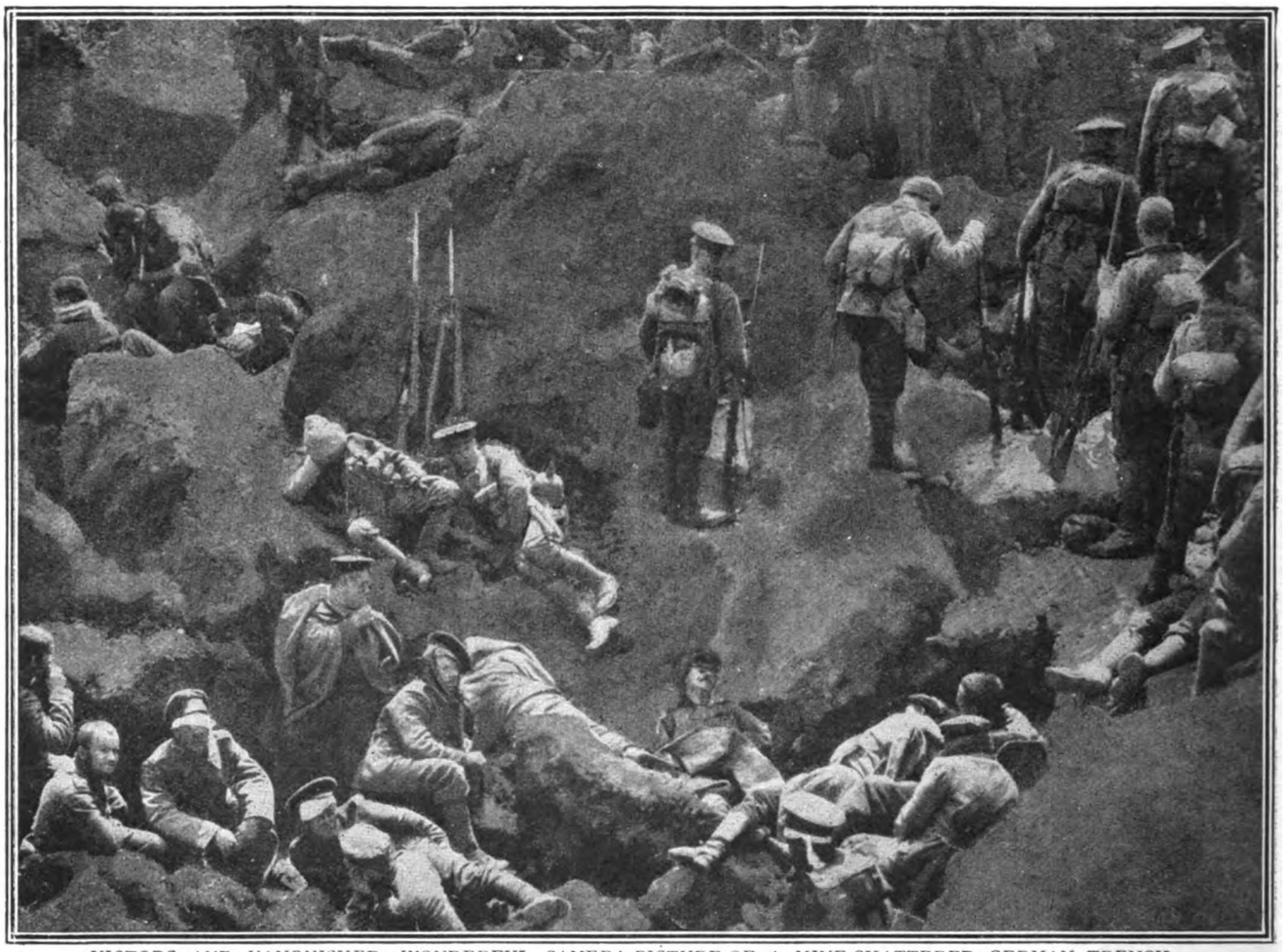
The front selected for the first attack ran from the neighbourhood of Festubert on the right to Richebourg l'Avoué on the left, and many very awkward obstacles had to be overcome before the first German trenches were reached. The attack was planned for May 12th, and the famous 7th Division was moved south to support it. The weather on the chosen day was misty and dull, interfering with our aerial observers. So the operation was postponed to May 15th, the Canadian Division being in the meantime also moved south to support the proposed



BUREAU OF THE GENERAL STAFF OF THE 11TH FRENCH DIVISION.

The French official photographers missed little of human interest in their pictorial record of the war. In the above view of one of the temporary divisional headquarters, evidently a room in a commandeered hotel, the eye is arrested by the notice on the wall on the extreme right: Défense de chanter " (Singing is prohibited).

Digitized by Google



VICTORS AND VANQUISHED—WONDERFUL CAMERA-PICTURE OF A MINE-SHATTERED GERMAN TRENCH.

Following the explosion of a carefully laid mine, which shattered the enemy trench out of all semblance of its original form, our men charged the position, which was found filled with the dead and dying foe. British soldiers, some of whom fell wounded by the side of the enemy, stood on guard while awaiting the order for a further advance.

advance of the First British Army Corps. There was no moon on the night of Saturday, May 15th, and the sky was sombre, but not pitch dark. The position in front of our lines was held by the 7th Westphalian Army Corps, which had suffered badly at Neuve Chapelle, and had filled its gaps largely with weedy and ill-grown youths, many of whom were under twenty years of age. The Westphalian had been a famous corps, but its new recruits were of a poor type and badly weakened it.

The Indian Corps began the attack, leaving their trenches at half-past eleven at night, advancing from Richebourg l'Avoué in a south-westerly direction. The enemy, however, was ready for an attack. The moment our men left the trenches the sky was lighted up with innumerable flares, shedding a clear white light over a very large area. Through this deadly radiance the German machine-guns and automatic rifles fired with terrible effect. Many of the Indians were shot as they clambered over their own parapets, and their advance was checked. Their comrades, the British troops of the 2nd Division, were more fortunate. By a magnificent rush they broke into the enemy's first line and cleared the Germans out with bayonet and hand-grenade and got into their second line in some of the most furious fighting in the war; for the British troops attacked with great bitterness as well as fierce determination. They were not only eager to avenge their asphyxiated comrades at Ypres, but they had also debts of their own to pay, as the German soldiers in this part of the front were notorious for the ghastly inhumanity with which they had been killing our wounded men. Before daybreak the 2nd Division had won a firm footing in the enemy's lines.

Enemy's first line broken

All the battalions forming our right wing, with the exception of the Territorial troops, had gone through the first Battle of Ypres in October, 1914, where they suffered grievous losses. All of them had had to be constantly renewed by drafts, and their officers were mostly fresh young men, who by reason of their lack of experience should have weakened our famous First Army Corps, which had been Sir Douglas Haig's original command. But the new subalterns proved admirable. They were keen, popular, and competent, and in the novel conditions of warfare, which every man had to learn from the beginning, the young officer with six months' service and a fair share of intelligence picked up the business almost as quickly as a veteran, while retaining the additional advantages of youth and its glorious optimism.

The rapidity with which our renewed and rejuvenated First Army Corps widened the foothold it had won on Saturday night was remarkable. The Indian troops, after their failure on the left, threw their flank back to connect with our original line. But our centre and our right bombed and bayoneted their way through the German barricades, and completely cleared out the Germans in masterly hand-to-hand fighting; and then joining hands stormed the German second line, penetrating six hundred yards through the hostile salient along a front of eight hundred yards.

Great night surprise attack

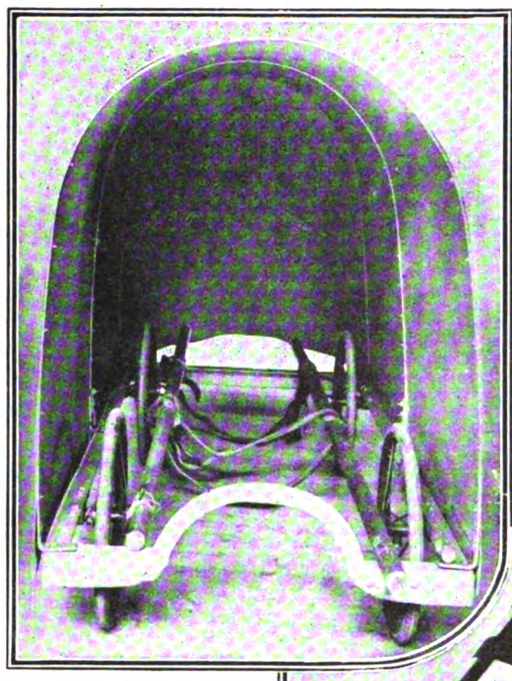
All this was only a preliminary step in our plan of operations. About three o'clock on Sunday morning, when the German commander was absorbed in the task of massing men for a counter-attack to recover his two lines of lost trenches, the glorious 7th Division went into action and broke into another side of the German wedge at Festubert. This was the great night surprise-attack with the bayonet. The German entrenchments north of Festubert

Digitized by Google

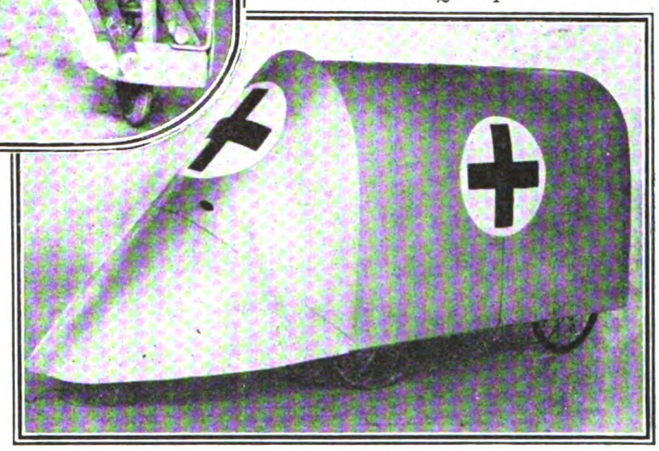
were of a most formidable character. Hundreds of thousands of high-explosive shells would have been needed to level them to the ground, and even then the bank-protected barbed cable entanglements might still have held up our troops in daylight, and enabled the German machine-guns to smite them down. But in the darkness our men, moving forward in a swift wave, twelve hundred yards long, got over the entanglements by covering them with overcoats or blankets, knocked the Germans out of the front trench with hand-grenades, leaped over the sand-bags to finish the work with the bayonet, and then clambered out on the other side. They took the second German line in the same manner, and also the third line, and then rushed one supporting point after another until they had broken twelve hundred yards behind the German front in the direction of the Rue du Marais, running towards the village of Lorgies, just at the foot of the first ridge of the Lille plateau.

Many of the German prisoners were captured as they were sitting round fires in their bomb-proof shelters. One German non-commissioned officer said that the attack by the 7th Division had only come a quarter of an hour before it was expected. As it was, our newly-won positions formed on Sunday morning, May 16th, a couple of formidable wedges driven into the German lines, with a distance of only a thousand yards between them. But small though the intervening space was, it was very strongly held and fortified. It included two lines of breastworks constructed so as to give a field of fire in both directions.

Formidable wedges in German lines



and there was a series of redoubts, consisting of strongly-fortified farm buildings, all linked together by shrapnel-proof trenches. The hostile breastworks were armed with machine-guns protected by steel shields, which could only be destroyed by high-explosive shell. Having no shells of this sort handy, our men tried to advance towards Festubert by bombing their way with hand-grenades. Another forty yards was gained in this manner, but this success was followed by a check. At half-past ten on Monday morning our troops made a determined effort to cut off the Germans in the space between our two wedges by pressing across their communications northwards from La Quinque Rue. The



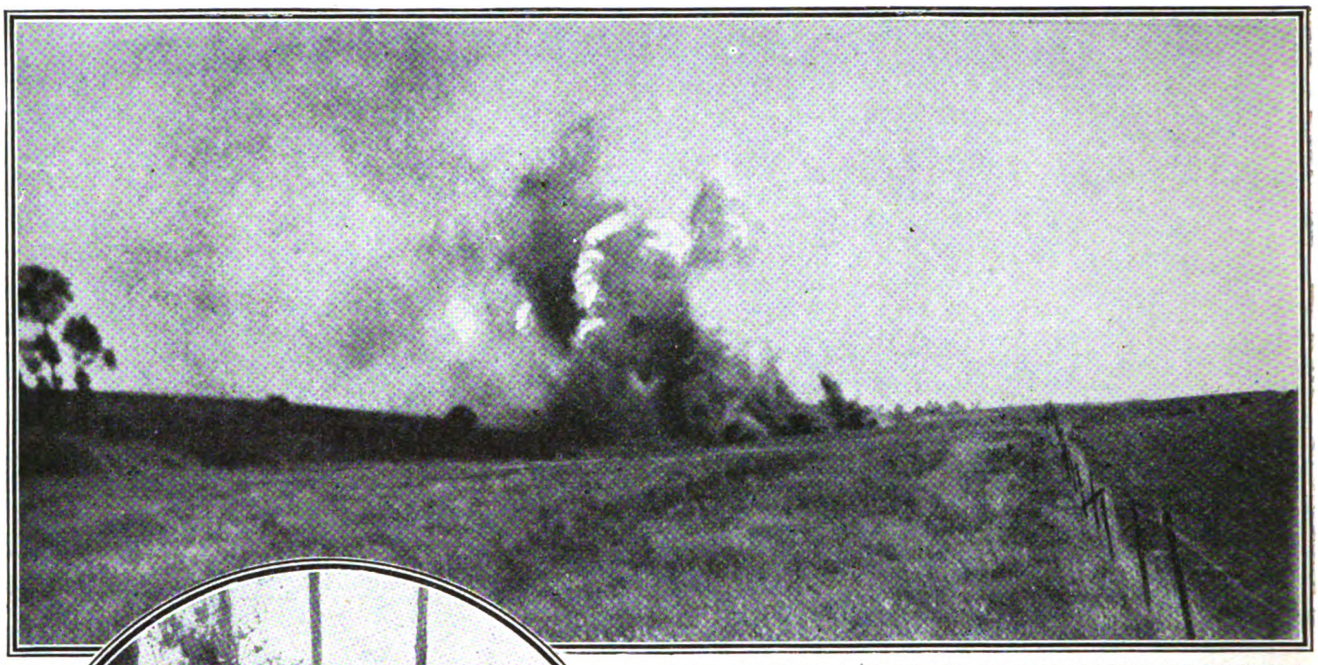
BULLET-PROOF AMBULANCE STRETCHER USED FOR RESCUE WORK IN THE TRENCHES—THE INVENTION OF COL. CANTLIE, R.A.M.C.



THE FIENDS BEHIND THE POISON FUMES—GERMAN TROOPS FIRING THROUGH THEIR GAS-CLOUDS.

Photograph taken in the German lines in Northern France, showing the Kaiser's troops, after they had liberated their poisonous gas-fumes, firing through the vapour at the men who might have been overcome by its asphyxiating power.

Digitized by Google



THE POISONERS AT WORK—GERMAN GAS-BOMBS BURSTING.



HEAVY FRENCH GUN IN THE ARGONNE FOREST.

operation could not be carried out, as by this time the Germans had been strongly reinforced, and their machine-guns, automatic rifles, and heavy batteries swept away our assaulting line.

Yet the British soldier did not lose heart. Small bombing parties continued to work along the German trenches in spite of the terrific fire, making progress at various points during Sunday afternoon, and capturing two hundred prisoners. At the same time our artillery had a fine field for shrapnel work all along the rear of the enemy's lines, where German troops were collecting to reinforce their front. For example, forty motor-'buses filled with troops, and accompanied by a large body of infantry, were seen by our airmen on the road from La Bassée to the village of Violaines, just south of Festubert. Our guns massed their fire on this large and easy target, and after heavy losses the German infantry broke and fled to cover. Our batteries also made good practice on the enemy's gun positions on the westward ridges, and when night fell on Sunday our general position was very encouraging.

The German counter-attack

In the night the German counter-attack was directed against our advanced position north of Festubert, where our troops had penetrated through the entire series of hostile entrenchments, and had built a rough barricade of sand-bags behind the German lines. We lost this end of our northern wedge, but our position there was so much exposed that the loss of it did not matter; for at daybreak on Monday morning, May 17th, Sir Douglas Haig closed in with all his force upon the half-encircled Germans. Every available gun and howitzer was brought to bear on the two lines of black-and-white breastworks and on the fortified posts and farm buildings. The Germans were already surrounded on three sides, and our artillery got a smashing cross-fire effect, similar to that which the Germans had obtained on our salient at Ypres.

Round Festubert the British infantry did not wait on their guns and then hesitate, but closed with the enemy. The 7th Division pushed on towards the Rue d'Ouvert, and the 2nd Division more slowly forced its way towards the Rue de Marais and Violaines. Our hand-grenade parties worked forward with furious skill under the cover of their artillery, and the two British wedges lengthened out and joined together before noon, cutting off all the Germans in between, closing on them with the bayonet, and taking some three hundred prisoners. The two assaulting divisions then joined hands and turned eastward, and worked all the afternoon against the machine-gun posts and network of entrenchments, and clusters of fortified buildings between La Quinque Rue and Rue de Bois. A fierce conflict raged especially round Cour de l'Avoué Farm, where the enemy had a series of very strong works. Among the German troops holding this position was a battalion of Saxons who had been hurried down from the north that morning and flung in to reinforce the battered and hard-pressed garrison.

Our engineers' perilous work

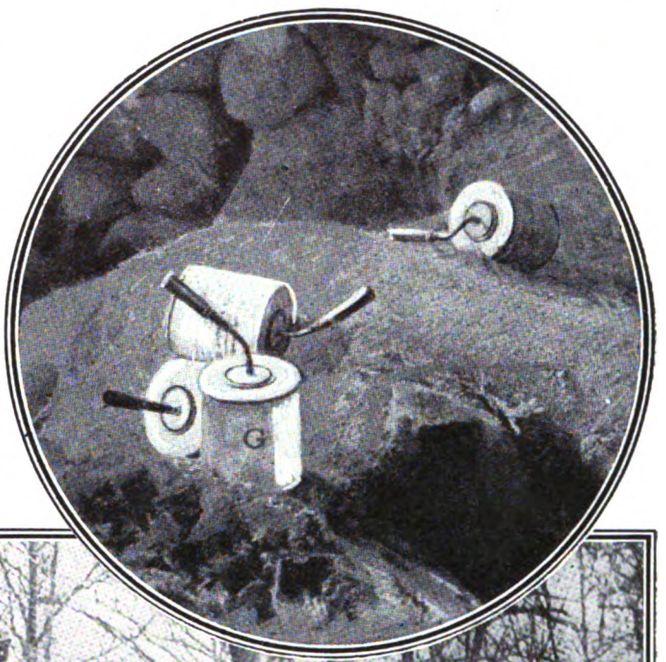
In spite of machine-guns and bullet-proof defences our troops worked around the farm, while our engineers looked after their telephonic communications with our distant batteries. This was the most important task in the whole of the operations; for, as at Neuve Chapelle, the wire was continually getting broken just when our infantry needed the guns to knock out the machine-gun posts. Our engineers had to work out in the open in the shell-swept zone of fire, patching up the wires in order to keep the telephones in working order. Splendidly did they work round the fortress-farm on Monday afternoon, with the result that at the critical moment our infantry held their hand while our massed batteries poured a smashing fire into all the farm buildings. There were then about seven hundred Saxons holding the position. They had already been badly handled by our bombing parties, and when our guns got to work from the rear, they gave up the fight and came out in a mass to surrender. But as they made no definite signal, our troops raked them with rifle fire.

Digitized by Google

The survivors, still some hundreds strong, threw down their weapons and held up their hands, and one of them waved a white rag tied to a stick. Meanwhile our guns continued firing, and before the observing gunnery officer could decide whether the offer to surrender was genuine, or whether it was another German trick for getting a good opportunity for a counter-charge, the affair was brought to a ghastly conclusion from an unexpected quarter. North of the farm was a large body of Prussian infantry; farther east were some Prussian batteries in telephonic communication with the Prussian troops. As soon as the Prussian commander saw what the Saxons were doing, he ordered his men to open rapid fire from the flank. And as they enfiladed the Saxons, the Prussian batteries eastward shelled the surrendering mass of men. Under the combined fire of German guns and German rifles the Saxon battalion was completely annihilated before it could get to shelter. In all the terrible scenes of the war there has been no stranger spectacle than these grey masses of Teutonic soldiers, standing out in the open, weaponless, with their hands raised, amid their dead and wounded, and there being butchered by their own countrymen before the amazed eyes of the British infantry.

Saxons butchered by Prussians

While these events were occurring on our northern wing on Monday, good progress was at last being made in the south along the German trenches below Festubert. The hand-grenade and the bayonet continued to prove the best weapons of the British infantryman. All our troops had, in fact, become British grenadiers, in the original meaning of that name, and in spite of the extraordinary development of the power and range of modern artillery, they went back to the ancient method of warfare—the hand-bomb. Except that their manual missile was filled with high explosive in place of the charge of gunpowder used by the old grenadiers, our successes were won in a way that Uncle Toby and Corporal Trim in "Tristram Shandy" would have appreciated and admired. The fighting south of Festubert was purely a soldiers' battle, composed of a winding string of isolated and desperate hand-to-hand combats. The German trenches were narrower than ours,





FRENCH COLONIAL TROOPS CONSTRUCTING BOMB-PROOF SHELTERS IN A FOREST CLOSE TO THE FIGHTING AREA. The smaller view is taken from a German paper. It purports to represent "Hand-grenades left behind by the British," and of a nature so dangerous that the Kaiser's troops were ordered not to touch them, but to leave them to be exploded by being shot at.

Digitized by Google

being constructed so as to give more defence against shrapnel fire. But when the garrison was attacked by storming bomb-parties, and outflanked and enfiladed, there was no room for it to escape. The only alternative was death or surrender. And by reason of the rapidity of our attacks, due to a wholesome dread of the German machine-guns, the only warning the enemy often received was a shower of grenades, instantly followed by bayonet work.

Trenches heaped with dead

In some places the trenches suddenly captured by our bombing-party were almost too horrible to enter, being heaped with bodies, some blown to pieces by our preliminary artillery bombardment, others shattered by our deadly grenades. On the extreme right of our general line of attack, the Germans were pressed back in such large numbers along their communication trenches that they presented a target to our machine-guns near the base of the German salient at Givenchy. By mid-day on Monday our First Army captured altogether two miles of the enemy's front. All during the afternoon and evening our men continued to work forward, in their close and deadly method of fighting, and by nightfall they held a continuous line along the whole of the original German firing-trenches, from the south of Festubert along La Quinque Rue, east of Richebourg l'Avoué. In many places our troops were in possession of the entire system of German entrenchments, with its three lines of shrapnel-proof breastworks and machine-gun posts. Our two attacking forces had been connected up, and the enemy only held a few supporting points and fortified posts in the rear of their original lines.

Our army was in fine fettle. Yet our men seemed to have small personal cause for joy. They were all wet through, and most of them were covered completely with slime; for in the night attacks it had been impossible to avoid falling into the deep, watery ditches that intersected the ground in all directions. There had been little time for sleep, and little opportunty for anything like a meal. Yet after fighting continuously for more than forty-eight hours, under a heavy shell fire, and against a well-entrenched enemy with magnificent weapons, our First Army was exceedingly happy.

The mood of our men

The only discontented men were the brigades which had been held in reserve, and had had nothing to do. It was said that one of these brigades, having been held back after an order to advance, found only one way of working off its feelings. Every man spent the rest of the day in sharpening his bayonet. Principally, it was the enemy's use of asphyxiating gases that produced this mood in our men, but the torpedoing of the Lusitania had also something to do with it. Then there were certain small local incidents which did not tend to fill our men with the pure milk of humanitarianism. For example, on Monday afternoon some sixty khaki-clad figures ran towards one of our trenches, one man among them saying, "Don't shoot—we are Grenadier Guards."





RED CROSS WORK UNDER FIRE—AN INTERESTING OFFICIAL FRENCH PHOTOGRAPH TAKEN IN ALSACE-LORRAINE.
In circle: A similar record of French ambulance work in another section of the five-hundred-mile French line.

Digitized by Google



A TIME-HONOURED CUSTOM OBSERVED IN FRANCE: TAKING THE COLOURS INTO ACTION.
Spirited camera-picture of French soldiers of the 206th Regiment of the Line setting out for an advanced post with their beloved symbol of liberty—the Tricolour.

When, however, an officer worked towards them the supposed Grenadiers fired at him. They were all Germans dressed in uniforms taken from our dead. Happily the officer was not hit, and his men emptied their rifles and charged with the bayonet; and though some of the Germans tried to run away, all were killed.

We expected a great counter-attack on Monday night, but the Germans had thrown so many men into the last battle that they had no fresh troops available for a night assault. Our troops consolidated the position they had won, and next morning, Tuesday, May 18th, our centre advanced against the large, three-cornered space stretching 1,200 yards north of La Quinque Rue. The cross-roads by the little hamlet of La Quinque Rue were captured, and an advance of three hundred yards was made south-eastward of the hamlet, the German hold being restricted to two fortified farms on the cross-country road near its junction with the highway running from La Bassée past Neuve Chapelle to Estaires.

This completed the work of the 7th Division and the 2nd Division in the Battle of Festubert. After a continual fight of four days and four nights, waged in fierce and bitter hand-to-hand combats, the comparatively small force of 24,000 infantrymen was reduced in number and greatly fatigued. So it was withdrawn from the line to rest on May 19th, the 7th Division, the heroes of the first Battle of Ypres, being relieved by the Canadian Division, the heroes of the second Battle of Ypres, while the 51st Highland Division relieved the 2nd Division, the victors of the Aisne. Before relating the achievements of the Canadians and Highlanders at Festubert, we must give some detailed account of the deeds of the men of the 2nd and 7th Divisions, who broke off the German salient, and prepared the way for the further advance.

The hero of Festubert was Company Sergt.-Major Frederick Barter, attached to the 1st Royal Welsh Fusiliers. This battalion, composed of North Wales miners and Birmingham men, had fought in the Battle of Ypres, coming out without an officer and with only thirty-five men. Brought up to full strength, it went into the advanced line on Saturday night, May 15th, with orders to charge the enemy's trenches as soon as our bombardment ceased. Our gun fire was very heavy, yet it did not destroy the German parapets. Still, when our guns lifted—that is to say, when they sent their fire over the trenches and on the German rear to prevent reinforcements rushing up—the wire entanglements of the enemy were wrecked.



BELGIAN HEADQUARTERS STAFF IN CONSULTATION IN THE YSER VICINITY.

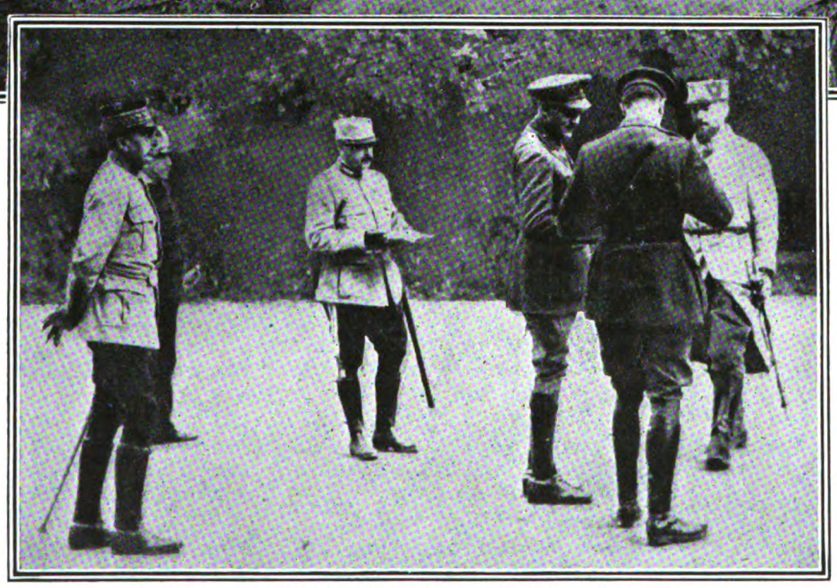
The Welsh Fusiliers had to cross a hundred and fifty yards of ground between their trenches and the enemy's position. Shells from the German howitzers began to fall thickly behind the waiting battalion, and when they put up their six-foot scaling ladders, and dropped over their parapets, with an

Digitized by Google



FRENCH "75" AGAINST GERMAN AIRCRAFT.

French official photograph, taken "somewhere in Alsace." The gun, concealed from the aerial foe, had just fired at a Taube. The officer and some of the crew are seen following through their glasses the flight of the shell.



BRITISH DECORATION FOR A FRENCH OFFICER.

An officer of the Fourth French Army Corps coming up to receive a decoration from Prince Arthur of Connaught. General de Langle Cary is on the left of the photograph.

eight-foot jump into the zone of fire, their position was terrible. From the unbroken breastwork the Germans smote them down with a machine-gun fusillade and automatic rifle fire as they leaped. Their commanding officer, Lieut.-Colonel Gabbett, fell dead, with five bullets in his body, the moment he left the trench. An instant later the second in command, Major Dixon, was shot through both legs close to his own trench. But the Welsh miners and Birmingham men, though thinning at every step, never faltered. Led by Captain Rockwell, the first line pressed on with the second line close behind it.

In the ordinary way the men could have done the hundred and fifty yards' spurt in twenty seconds or less. But instead of having a run across country, they had to get over a broad, deep ditch, about a hundred feet from their breastworks, by means of narrow bridges placed by our gallant sappers in preparation for the charge. There was naturally some bunching round the bridges, and our second line caught up the first, many men jumping into the ditch and swimming across the water. The German barricade, in spite of all difficulties, was reached in less than three minutes, and the Fusiliers rushed into two breaches made by our gun fire, and cleared the trench with the bayonet. Though enfiladed by German machine-guns, Captain Rockwell and his men then pushed onward, while the distant German howitzers concentrated on them a heavy fire of high-explosive shell. The Fusiliers had only one machine-gun remaining from those they had brought with them in their charge. Sergeant Butler, who handled the Maxim, was badly wounded, but he stuck to his work, and helped to clear the trench for nearly six hundred yards. So quickly did the Fusiliers work that they met on the way about thirty-five men of the Scots Guards who joined them, and made prisoners of a number of Polish miners from Westphalia, who were very glad that they could get out of the fighting.

Welsh Fusiliers' rapid advance

Such, indeed, was the rapidity of the Welsh Fusiliers' advance that they came under the fire of their own guns, and had to lie under cover for an hour while the British artillery bombarded the second-line trenches in which the enemy was still holding out. Then, as the shelling ceased, a German officer with two men rushed down the

Digitized by Google

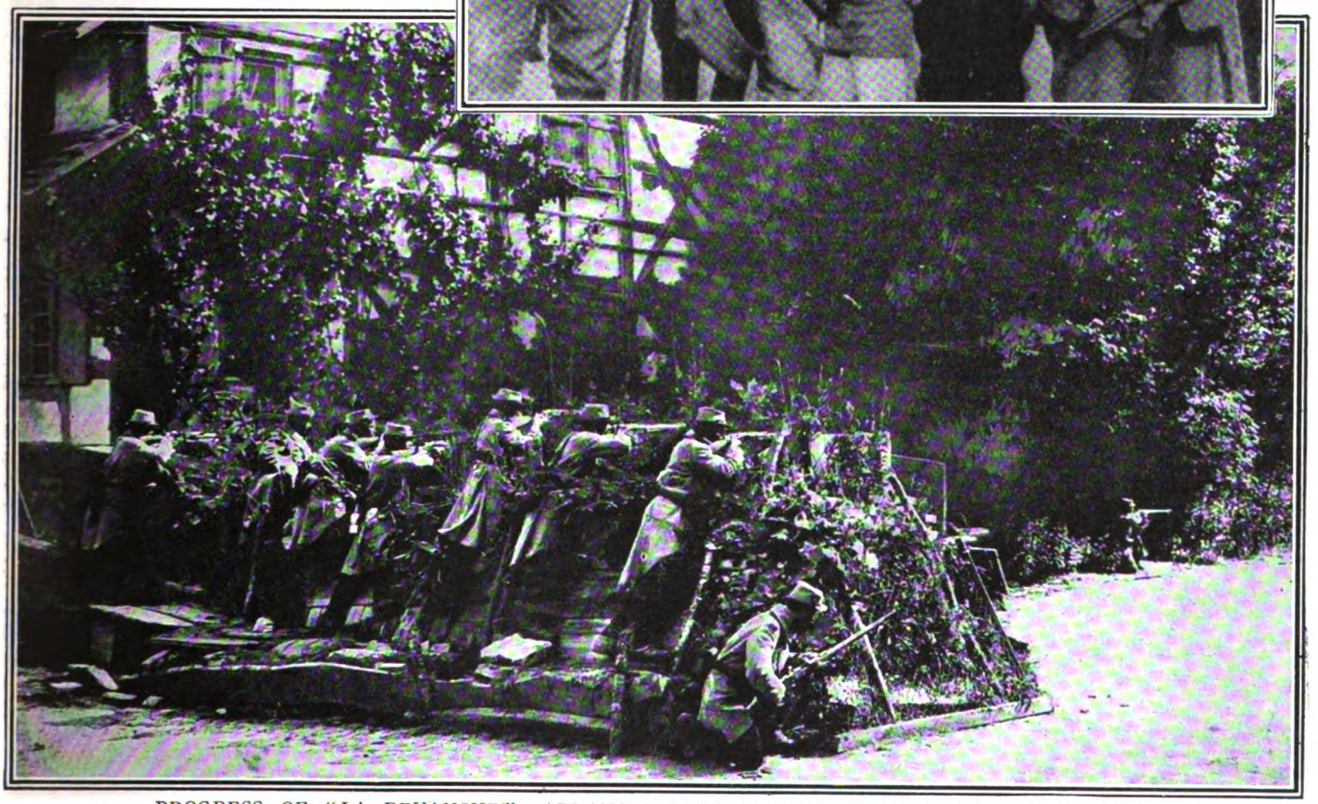
communication trench with a machine-gun. This was a handy reinforcement, for the gun came in very usefully when the three men had been killed. Six hundred yards from the captured German position was an orchard, and the Fusiliers worked towards this by bombing their way along the German communication trench. Here it was that Sergeant-Major Barter distinguished himself. He called for volunteers, and with the eight men who responded he bombed the German trench for five hundred yards, capturing on the way three German officers and a hundred and two men.

Sergeant-Major Barter's heroism

In this part of their position the Germans had laid mines at intervals of twenty yards. But the experienced sergeant-major happened to find one of the leads. He cut it and searched for more, and found ten other wires, connected with dynamite mines, all of which he rendered useless. The bombing party got to the end of the orchard, 1,200 yards from the point at which the Fusiliers had set out. By the orchard were half a dozen ruined cottages, held by the German machine-gun parties, and though there were only four bomb-throwers left, they cleared the first cottage beyond the trench, but could not storm the second building, thirty yards away on the other side of the road. It was packed with German infantry in addition to several machine-gun sections. There were now only about fifty of our men left. They established a post in the first cottage, and dug a ditch running at an angle from the long German communication trench, in order to stop the terrible enfilading fire which the men in the cottages were pouring on them. All through Sunday, Captain Rockwell and his gallant little band, forming the end of the larger wedge which we had driven into the German salient, held on to the first cottage in the communication trench by the orchard. In the course of the day Captain Rockwell sent seven orderlies back with messages for reinforcements, but only one of them got through. The German artillery maintained a curtain of fire between the position won by the Fusiliers and the British lines, and hostile machine-guns swept all the open country across which the advance had been made.

Many deeds of kindly valour were done by the ambulance men and other attendants on the wounded. Lance-Corporal Welsh, a man of great strength, began the work of rescue as soon as our attack opened. Seven men, including Major Dixon, were carried by him through the heavy fire. All the stretcher-bearers of the battalion worked for twenty-four hours without rest, and among the surgeons, Lieutenant Kelsey Fry, R.A.M.C., was remarkable for his heroism.





PROGRESS OF "LA REVANCHE": ADVANCED FRENCH POST IN "THE LOST PROVINCES."

At the eastern extremity of their long battle-front our allies made slow but steady progress over the borders of Alsace-Lorraine. The above official photograph shows one of their outposts on the alert behind a barricade disguised by foliage and flowers. In the smaller view are some of our own men as they appeared just after the awful fighting in the vicinity of Festubert.

Digitized by Google

After carrying Lieutenant Gladstone out of action on his back, he worked for hours between the trenches, dressing the wounded, until he was struck by shrapnel. Meanwhile Captain Rockwell and his handful of men withdrew from the cottage and orchard on Sunday night, and then held on to the German communication trench for two days, until the weakened battalion was relieved by fresh troops. The relieving force then pushed back into the orchard and stormed the other cottages, and prolonged their position so that the two British wedges met and cut off all the German troops on the western side.

Gallantry of the Warwicks

Two companies of the Warwicks went through the Welsh Fusiliers and gained a position that was choked with German dead and wounded. All the Warwicks were Birmingham men, and they won great glory for their famous city. The battalion stood a heavy bombardment with high-explosive shell for seventy-two hours. What saved them was the marshy state of the ground after a tempest of rain

The German shells sank too deep into the mud to do much damage, and many of them failed to explode.



THE THRILLING MOMENT BEFORE THE CHARGE.
Striking photograph of a French trench taken as its occupants were leaving it for a bayonet charge on the enemy's position, which had just been shelled.

Those that went off made little ponds round the dug-outs of the Warwicks, and as the explosions were cushioned by the soft and sodden fenland, the shell-blasts were less deadly than usual. A shell-blast is the sudden expansion of air produced by the exploding gas of the shell. It is more deadly than the fragments of steel that fly around when the high-explosive is detonated. Lieut.-Colonel A. Brook, commanding the 8th Territorial Battalion of the Royal Scots, was killed by a shell-blast while sitting in a German bomb-proof shelter which had been captured by his men.

The Scottish Territorials were on the left of the attacking line, and through shelled in a dreadful manner they held on to the position they had won, and gave not an inch of ground before the German attack. Another first-rate Scottish Territorial regiment was the 4th Camerons. Formed at Inverness, it was composed of the flower of Highland country life—deer-stalkers and shepherds, men of Skye and the Outer Islands, tall and sinewy, rugged Gaels, most of them speaking their ancient tongue. They advanced on Monday evening, May 17th, with orders to take five hundred yards of the German breastworks, at the end of which were ruined houses, which the Germans had converted into machine-gun posts. The ground over which the Highlanders had to advance looked level and easy: but it was cut up by deep and broad dykes, into which the water from the Lille ridges drained. The Camerons surged forward with the old Highland ardour, and when they reached the ditches certain fine athletes made a long jump and got across dry-footed. Others were delayed by having to swim the water. The jumpers went straight for the German trench, and their front line suffered heavily. But the next line came up in time to kill all the Germans remaining in the trench, most of the enemy having fled when the leaping "kilties" drew near.

The detachment found the fortified houses too strongly held, and sent a message to headquarters for machine-guns and bombs. Meanwhile the Germans counter-attacked with trench mortars and hand-grenades on both flanks, and the front of the Territorials was squeezed until their position became untenable. In fact, their capture was apparently inevitable; for they could not leave the protection of the trench, as the open ground in their rear was swept with such a torrent of fire that it was death to venture in it. Only two deer-stalkers with an officer managed to crawl away in the darkness of Monday night and report the situation to headquarters. But the Highland shepherd is a man of much ingenuity. He found a way out of the death-trap. The German trench was covered with flooring, and on pulling up the boards one of the Camerons discovered that some deep ditches traversed their position. The detachment jumped into the water and mud, and floundered back to safety; but Lieut.-Colonel Fraser was killed while covering their retreat. He held the trench until all his men got away, and was then struck by a bullet when about to make his dive into the secret escape dyke.

The most heroic of all the Scottish regiments were the Scots Guards, under Sir Frederick Fitz-Wygram. They had shared with the West Kents the honour of having never lost a trench; but when they charged towards the orchard, which the Welsh Fusiliers were attacking, one of their companies pushed ahead with such speed that it was cut off in the position it won.

It was thought on Sunday night that the Scots Guards had surrendered; but two days afterwards the progress of the British advance brought them to the spot where the Scotsmen had been enveloped. There were eighty of them with two officers, all lying dead on the field of honour. Around them was a ring of dead Germans numbering nearly two hundred. The Scots Guards still held the great honour of never having lost a trench. To the men who saw it there was no sadness in this high scene of Scottish valour. It was a sublime and inspiring thing. The troops took fire from it, and went into the fight steeled to any deed of desperation. As already mentioned, a party of the Scots Guards fell in with the Welsh Fusiliers in the enemy's firing-line and enabled the North Wales miners and Birmingham men to stab and bomb their way to the orchard.

A scene of Scottish valour

The men of London, who filled the ranks of the West Surreys—the Queen's—also displayed a fine gallantry. In bombarding the German position in front of them our guns had not cut the wire entanglements The consequence was that the two leading companies of the Queen's were held up by the obstruction and shattered by machine-gun fire and heavy howitzer shells. B and C Companies

Digitized by Google



French engineers preparing a mine destined to work death and destruction in the enemy's trenches a short distance away.



Picturesque view of a strongly organised French trench over the Alsace border-line. While most of the men were on the qui vive and their officer was dictating to an orderly, two soldiers were calmly angling in the adjacent stream with a view to securing some variety in the regulation diet.

CONTRASTING ASPECTS OF LIFE IN THE FRENCH TRENCHES.

Digitized by Google

dropped down, and sent back word to our guns to open fire again on the German parapets, and when the position had been further shelled for fifteen minutes the remnant of the battalion charged once more and captured the German firing-line and communication trench, making an advance of a thousand yards. One man of the Queen's, Private Harvey, was badly wounded in his right arm in the attack on the communication trenches; but when volunteers were called for to form a bombing party he came forward.

"Luckily I'm left-handed," he said, "so my right arm won't trouble me." He joined in the hand-grenade attack upon the



LOOKING LIKE MEMBERS OF THE VEHMGERICHT.
French soldiers wearing the special masks provided by the military authorities as protection against the German poisonous gases.



TYPE OF SMALL GRENADE.
The French soldier in this photograph is holding a small German grenade. Though insignificant in appearance, this weapon, which was fired from a rifle, was composed of quite a number of parts and filled with explosive of a most destructive character.

fortified houses at the end of the orchard, and threw his bombs as coolly and as skilfully as any of his comrades. But his bandaged arm, bound in a sling formed from part of his shirt, made him a conspicuous target for the German snipers in the farm buildings, and he was shot dead. Another remarkable private of the Queen's was Williamson. The adjutant of the South Staffordshires saw him bringing wounded men across the open ground, swept by the enemy's machine-guns. The man looked quite fagged out, and as he staggered under his human burden the adjutant told him to get under cover and rest for awhile. "No, sir, my place is in the firing-line," said Private Williamson, "and I must get back." And across the zone of death he went into the position captured by his battalion. It was a shallow affair this German communication trench—not much more than a line of hurdles without a solid breastwork of sand-bags, and only high enough to make a target for the German batteries. On Sunday evening the Queen's had to fall back to the first line of German trenches, which had been reversed and made into a new British line. They held out for three days, never losing touch with their brigade headquarters, and maintaining a position from which the next British attack was launched across the hostile salient.

Fine work by the Liverpools

The King's Liverpool Regiment, which took up the attack on Monday on the other side of the salient, carried out a fine piece of work. The troops worked their way with the bayonet towards the farm of Cour d'Avoué, and, under Lieutenants Hutchinson and Fulton, one of their bomb parties went up a German communication trench, capturing on the way more prisoners than they could easily manage—some two hundred in all. Another two hundred they drove into the open field, indirectly bringing about the dreadful scene already depicted, in which the Prussians turned their rifles and guns on the Saxon garrison of the farm.

Our bomb-throwers were the chief authors of the victory of Festubert. The hand-bomb or grenade which they used was one of the novelties of modern warfare. It was designed to clear the labyrinth of galleries and underground refuges in which the Germans sheltered when their position was being gained. Much more than simple bravery was required of the bomb-thrower. He needed all the skill and quick sense of judging distances of a cricketer, who is both a good cover-point and a good long-stop. He had to hit the wicket from any distance, and hit it quickly, and there can be little doubt that practice in fielding on the cricket-pitch helped to make our soldiers superb and deadly grenadiers of the modern sort. The general opinion after the Battle of Festubert was that the Germans had become more afraid of our hand-grenades than they had of our bayonets. In the attack made by the Liverpool bombing party the Germans actually shrieked with terror

Digitized by Google

as they fled along the trench. An entire company surrendered to a single khaki figure standing with uplifted hand with one grenade in it.

The Germans seemed to have had so lively an imagination that it undermined their nerves. Each man felt the bomb exploding on his face; whereas, in fact, it would only have put a few of them out of action, even if they had been caught in a bunch. Our men carried five or six grenades each, so that when the fighting was fierce one of the party had frequently to go back to get a fresh supply of bombs. These he had usually to bring across the zone of fire, and the less he thought about what would happen if his bombs were exploded while he was carrying them, the less wear and tear there was on his nerves. As a matter of fact, the stolid temper of the British character was a chief source of our fighting strength. Even the new troops soon ceased to forecast in imagination the effect of a howitzer shell on their persons. There were so many messengers of death continually flying around that the message lost all the edge and vehemence it would have possessed in the ordinary ways of civilian life. Our men fell back on the stock of instinct they had inherited from their forefathers, and became as stolid and as iron-nerved as Wellington's troops, while showing a finer quality of nature.

Our iron-nerved bomb-throwers

In the second phase of the Battle of Festubert Lieut.-General Alderson played a chief part. This officer had first distinguished himself as colonel of the West Kents, and had then been appointed commander of the Canadian Division, by the handling of which he saved Ypres in the first gas attack. When his Division withdrew from the battle-front it was exhausted but not shattered, despite its terrible and heroic labours; and, brought up to strength by reinforcements from the Canadian base in England, it moved south, and again entered the firing-line on May 17th. Lieut.-General Alderson was then promoted to the well-merited position of an Army Corps commander, being given temporarily, in addition to the Canadian Division, the command of the 51st Highland Division and the artillery of the 2nd and 7th Divisions.

Lieut.-General Alderson's promotion

To the Canadians fell the task of continuing the progress made by the 7th Division by attacking an orchard near La Quinque Rue. This was done by two companies of the Canadian Scottish under Lieut.-Colonel Leckie and two companies of the 14th Royal Montreal Regiment under Lieut.-Colonel Meighan. In their first night attack, on May 19th, only the flanking company of the Canadian Scottish fought its way to its allotted position. The other company failed to maintain the right direction in the nocturnal advance over unknown ground. In the charge some five hundred yards had been gained, and the Colonial troops dug themselves in, under very heavy shell fire, and connected with the Wiltshire Regiment on their right and the Coldstream Guards on their left.

The advance had been checked mainly because there had been no opportunity of reconnoitring the ground. But a reconnaissance was made on May 20th by patrols under Major Leckie, brother of the commanding officer



ALMOST BUT NOT QUITE BRITISH—BELGIAN SOLDIERS IN THEIR NEW KHAKI UNIFORMS.

Digitized by Google



ONE OF THE FIELD-KITCHENS PRESENTED BY THE CITY OF MANCHESTER FOR USE BY THE BELGIAN ARMY.

of the Canadian Scottish, and after a couple of very brilliant skirmishes it was discovered that the orchard was defended by a very large force of Germans, and that its capture would be a difficult task. Nevertheless, it was resolved to carry out the attack by daylight, the ground being so full of obstacles that the men had, at any cost, to be able to see their way.

In the afternoon our artillery opened up a searching, smashing fire on the tract of fruit trees, the bombardment increasing in intensity until the moment came for the wave of infantry to roll forward. The two Canadian companies dropped out of their trenches and charged forward with gallant steadiness, while the enemy directed a torrent of machine-gun and rifle fire and shrapnel upon them. The ordeal culminated just at the edge of the orchard, for there the charging Canadians found themselves faced with a deep, broad ditch, full of water, on the other side of which was a wire entanglement. In the men jumped, neck-deep, and made for a gap in the wire which had previously been discovered by the reconnoitring party. There were not many Germans in the orchard, and three platoons of Canadians cleared out the hostile machine-gun parties which had been left to defend the firing-line.

Adroit Canadian tactics

In accordance with their usual custom the Germans had withdrawn to their support trench when our artillery fire grew hot, and they intended to let their machine-gun parties hold up our advancing infantry in the thick of the trees, while they launched a flank counter-attack along an abandoned trench running in a south-westerly direction. But this scheme was completely frustrated by an unexpected movement on the part of the Canadians. They only sent a small force into the orchard to clear it, while one company occupied the trench in which the flank attack was to be expected. There they beat off the enemy, while the three platoons in a magnificent rush fought double the number of Germans out of the orchard.

Having consolidated their new position the enterprising Colonial troops executed a very neat variation in modern tactics. The Canadian artillery, by arrangement, opened a heavy fire on the German front, while the Canadian infantry rigged up their trench ladders and fixed bayonets, with rather more than the usual bustle preliminary to another advance. The Germans fled from their two front lines of breastworks to escape the shells, and then, as our guns lifted and began to sweep their third line, they crowded back into their firing trenches, partly to avoid the changing direction of the bombardment, but mainly to repulse the expected attack of the Canadian infantry. As soon as it was seen that the front line of breastworks was crowded with Germans, the guns shortened range, and, working at the highest possible speed, swept with the intense blast of their fire the packed first line of the enemy. The Canadian infantry, meanwhile, was resting under cover; not a man had moved. The official German wireless the next day announced that a desperate attack by British troops had been repulsed with fearful losses, but the truth came out in a voice, with a German-American accent, that cried the next evening to the Canadians: "Say, Sam Slick, no more dirty tricks to-night!"

Storming the "Bexhill" redoubt

While the 3rd Brigade was carrying out the operations in the Quinque Rue orchard, their comrades of the 2nd Brigade were held up a mile to the south by a German redoubt to which the name of "Bexhill" was given. Here the losses of the Canadians were very heavy. First the 10th Canadian Battalion was checked in its attempted advance, by reason of the nature of the ground and the ineffectiveness of our artillery fire. Our shrapnel shell had had no effect upon the thick wire entanglements. So our guns again kept on firing until night fell, and then, lighted by the enemy's flares and star-shells, the survivors of the gallant 10th Canadian Battalion, with the hand-grenade company of the 1st Canadian Brigade, tried once more to storm the "Bexhill" redoubt. Two companies of the 10th Battalion took part in the night attack. The



IN A WELL-PROTECTED CORNER OF THE FRENCH FIRING-LINE.

Digitized by Google

company on the left of the advancing line met with fearful opposition, being practically annihilated by the enemy's machine-guns.

But the right wing, although also raked by the fire from the redoubt, reached the enemy's trench-line, running south from the fortified position, and bombed the Germans out of the position for four hundred paces, and then erected a barricade to hold what it had won. But at daybreak on May 22nd the hostile howitzer batteries on the western ridges furiously bombarded the captured trench. All day long the great high-explosive shells pitched in and around the captured breastwork and smashed it to the ground. The troops in the southern end of the trench suffered heavy losses. The Canadians would not lose what they had won, being inspired by the words that General Alderson had spoken to them when he took over the command of their division. He had said that he came from a regiment, the West Kent, whose boast it was that they had never lost a trench, and the shattered and desperate Canadian troops at "Bexhill" redoubt were determined that they also would not let go. So they built another barricade out of the black-and-white sand-bags scattered by the German shells, and held on to what remained of the trench.

Heavy losses of Canadians

Then in the night the position was taken over by a detachment of British troops, and a detachment of the 1st Canadian Brigade, King Edward's Horse, and Strathcona's Horse, after several German infantry attacks had been beaten back. At daybreak on May 24th two companies of the 5th Battalion and a company of the British Columbia Regiment stormed ahead, with the German machine-guns playing on them; and in two stubborn charges, in which all the troops displayed a majestic courage, the "Bexhill" redoubt was at last captured at eleven minutes to six on the evening of May 24th. The Canadian artillery then surrounded the captured fortress with a shrapnel curtain, while the victorious 5th Battalion, under Major Edgar, dug itself in. It had cost the Brigade fifty-five officers and nine hundred and eighty men to make this important advance with which the Battle of Festubert concluded. On the day that the Canadians captured "Bexhill," the 2nd London Territorials did a fine piece of work in winning more of the enemy's trenches and making good the ground gained to the east and north.



INTERESTING PHOTOGRAPH OF A GERMAN HILL TRENCH.
The view illustrates how a trench crosses a hill. The trench shown was protected half-way by a high and massive traverse.



FRENCH OFFICERS WATCHING THE ENEMY THROUGH A PERISCOPE.
Special interest attaches to the screened loopholes. So expert became the Germans in snap-shooting through the firing apertures along the French trenches that our allies made cloth screens for the loopholes, which were withdrawn only when signs of an advance on the part of the enemy were noted through the periscope.

By this time the enemy had been driven from a strongly-entrenched and fortified position along a front of four miles, for an average depth of six hundred yards. The Germans had suffered very heavy losses, the smallest items of their loss being the ten machine-guns and seven hundred and eighty-five prisoners captured by us. As we have seen, much of the fighting consisted of very fierce hand-to-hand conflicts with bayonet and hand grenades, and the losing side, after each British advance, sacrificed men by the thousand in vain counter-attacks.

Sacrificial counter-attacks

In spite of our comparative lack of high-explosive shell, the damage done by our artillery and by the French guns lent us by General D'Urbal, commanding the Tenth French Army, was very considerable. The hostile infantry was caught in masses as it bunched for an attack or as it fell back on its third lines. On the other hand, our losses in all the operations between Bois Grenier and La Bassée, from May 9th to May 25th, were also very heavy. The German positions along the ridges were too strong to be carried by our army with its existing equipment.

Quite as serious as our lack of millions of lyddite shells was our comparative deficiency in machine-guns. The German machine-gun, built on the same model as our Maxim, had proved to be one of the chief surprises of the war. The German Staff had displayed something like genius in its organisation of machine-gun fire. Only our

Digitized by Google

Admiralty, in its best creative periods, was worthy to compare with the Great German Staff in completely thinking out the possibilities of a new weapon, applying it to new tactics, and adjusting all the other forces of wa to harmonise with it. The German machine-guns helped their own infantry as field batteries would do, breaking a path for them, especially in the case of a counter-attack, covering their retreat or temporary withdrawal, and reinforcing their fire-power, if there was nothing else to do.

The French and British armies, on the other hand, confused the fire-power of machine-guns with the fire-power of the rifles of the infantry. They allowed at the start two machine-guns to every battalion, while the Germans, with an actual average of ten machine-guns to a battalion, could on occasion mass seventy machine-guns to help the manœuvres of a single battalion.

It was largely due to the way in which the Germans handled their machine-guns as a distinct arm that they won the great and almost decisive victory of Charleroi in August, 1914. It was commonly thought at that time that the enormous number of these weapons was the source of the German superiority in fire-power. Apparently it was only discovered gradually that there was a new system of tactics underlying the enemy's use of his mechanical streams of bullets; and at the end of the Battle of Festubert it was plainly evident that the new German machine-gun tactics constituted the most important of all instruments in the German system of defences. Under it our offensive movement had completely broken down. In spite of the progress made by our First Army in the fenland round La Bassée, the main German entrenchments on the Lille ridges, beyond the marshy ground, remained impregnable. Except for the fact that we had detained large forces all around our front, from Ypres to La Bassée, our terribly costly operations throughout the spring campaign had completely failed of effect. The amount of ground we had won near Festubert was more than outbalanced by the ground we lost in front of Ypres. The German machine-gun had defeated us, mainly because we lacked the lyddite shell which was required in enormous quantities to shatter every hostile machine-gun redoubt. The Germans employed machine-guns to cover every retirement, being quite unconcerned about their loss so long as they carried out the operation. But we could not afford a prodigal expenditure of human life when the enemy was chiefly risking only a small part of his gigantic machinery of war. So the Battle of Festubert came to an end simply because the British commander decided that the price he was asked to pay for each hundred yards of progress was too heavy.

Victory by machine-guns

At the same time there was another important consideration that went to the making of Sir John French's decision. Originally the combined Franco-British advance between Armentières and Arras was planned with a view to helping the Russian Army. We have seen that twenty-four battalions of the Prussian Guard, with some other units, were removed from the western front to the eastern field of war to form the spear-head of Mackensen's Phalanx in Galicia. All through the month of May, 1915, this Phalanx drove against the southern Russian army, and continually threatened to divide and envelop the Russian forces. The German Staff then had something like three-quarters of a million recruits who were nearing the completion of their training. Had most of these new forces been thrown into the Galician and Polish battlefields, they would have added very greatly to the dangers menacing the armies of our eastern ally. It was therefore a matter of vital urgency for France and Britain to prevent as many new German troops as possible from reinforcing the attacks against the retreating Russian front. At the same time as the Russians had failed to firmly hold the Austro-German forces, the long-designed Franco-British offensive movement in the west lost its immediate importance. In fact, it became for the time almost impossible, owing to the sudden, unexpected, and general weakening of the Russian advance into Hungary. The entrance of Italy into the war had also produced a revolution in the strategy of General Joffre. The Italian Commander-in-Chief, General Cadorna, proposed a slow, cautious, and steady pressure against all the German and Austrian lines in the west and south. In his view there should be no marked, vehement, and decisive forward movement until the enemy was firmly held on all sides, and especially until the Russians sufficiently recovered to resume their pressure along the thousand miles of eastern front. Owing, it is said, largely to the sound and comprehensive ideas of the Italian Staff, this closely co-ordinated system of movements by all the confederate nations attacking the two Central Germanic Empires was adopted by the Quadruple League, and studied in detail by the connected Staffs of France, Italy, Britain, and Russia. It was further proposed that a kind of consulting and connecting Central Staff of French, Italian, British, and Russian officers should be formed with the object of harmonising all movements from east, west, and south against the Austro-German armies. In the meantime the British Expeditionary Force in France and Flanders resumed a defensive attitude, having done at least a very fair share of the work of attracting large new German forces against its lines, and thus helping its distant comrades in Russia to recover their power of initiative.

A revolution in strategy



RED CROSS DOCTORS WHO HAD TO WORK LYING DOWN.

Two Belgian Red Cross doctors, having crawled out of their trench to succour a wounded soldier under fire, were compelled to render first-aid lying down. They then fastened a rope round their patient, and by this means drew him back to safety.

Digitized by Google



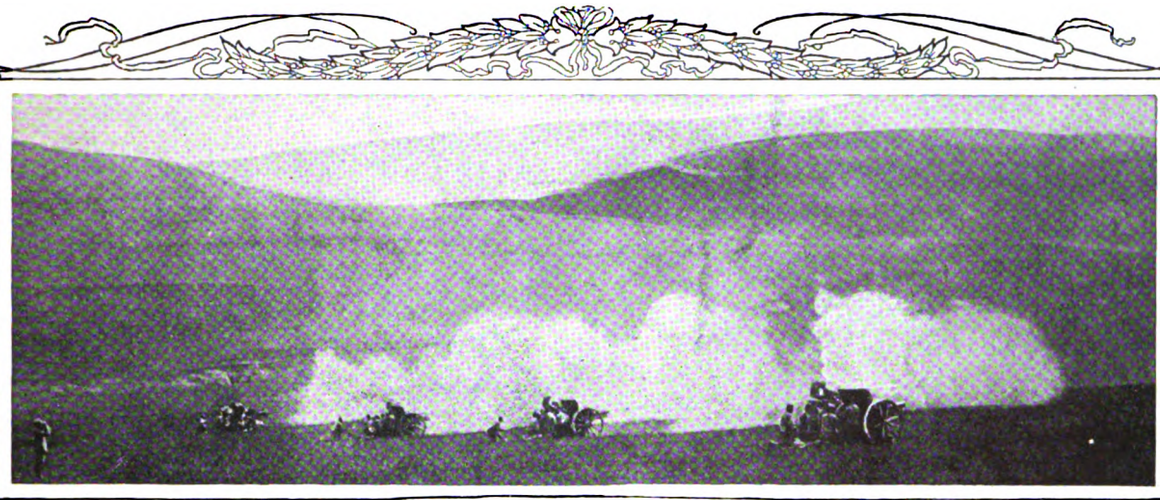


Flight
Sub-Lieut.
R.A.J.
WARNEFORD
V.C.

Presented with "THE GREAT WAR" PART 57.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



ITALIAN ARTILLERY IN ACTION

CHAPTER LXX.

ON AUSTRO-ITALIAN FRONTIER.

ITALY'S ENTRY INTO THE WAR.

By Charles Tower, Special Correspondent in Italy.

The Political and Ethnological Reasons for Italian Intervention—Austrian Breaches of the Triple Alliance—The German Hand in the Austrian Glove—Italy Regarded by Germany and Austria as a Negligible Quantity—How Germany Set to Work to Remedy a Diplomatic Blunder—A Tense and Enthralling Drama of Intrigue with the World for Audience—Prince von Bülow's Mission to Rome—The Erzberger Plot—Giolitti: A Latter-Day Marius—Salandra the Sphinx—Baron Sonnino, Salandra's "Chief of Staff"—War the Only Salt to Detach the Financial Leeches of Germany—How Italy's Early Neutrality Helped the Allies—Plot and Counterplot and the Rival Demonstrations of the Neutralists and Interventionists—Italian Denunciation of the Triple Alliance—The Vespers of War—The Answer of the Women of Italy to the Germans who Maligned Them—The Call to Arms and the Opening Phases of the Campaign in the Trentino and Towards Trieste.

ON Monday, May 24th, 1915, as midnight finished striking, Italian mountain-troops, the famous Alpini, moved out in little companies to cross the Austrian frontiers. Italy had joined the Allies.

The history of the intervention of Italy in the Great War was to outward appearance one of dramatic surprises; actually, it is a record of infinitely careful preparation by statesmen who never wavered from their determination, and who struck not when "all was over except the shouting," but when all things were ready.

Apart from the growing popular exasperation against the German methods of warfare, which culminated with the murder of the Lusitania passengers, there were two principal reasons, political and geographical, which had from the outset determined the two Italian statesmen—Signor Salandra, the Premier, and Baron Sonnino, the Foreign Minister—to take the course which they held to be dictated alike by humanity and interest. The geographical consideration may be readily understood by anyone who will study a large-scale map of the Italian frontiers as they existed before the war.

Whatever other changes the gradual unification of Italy, during the first seventy years of the 19th century, may have produced, it did not deprive Austria of the possession of the Trentino, or Lower Tyrol, and of the country on both sides of the Isonzo valley with the peninsula of Istria. The latter, which like the Trentino was inhabited principally by Italians, contains the important harbours of Pola and Trieste. The latter was an almost exclusively Italian town. A third harbour, Fiume, in Croatia, is also Italian by history and race. The frontiers imposed upon Italy had not only left in Austrian possession these large tracts of country inhabited chiefly by a population Italian both in birth and sentiment (the "Irredenti," or unredeemed Italians), they had also rendered the task of defending Northern Italy against possible Austrian aggression extremely difficult.



SIGNOR SALANDRA.
President of the Council and Minister of the Interior in Italy.

To understand this it is necessary once more to consult a good map. The Trentino, it will be seen, runs down like a wedge into Italy. Its frontiers were formed by a series of mountain chains cut only by narrow and difficult passes, except where the two lines of railway run to Trent, along the Val Lagarina just east of Lake Garda, and through the Val Sugana farther east. The Austrian frontier formed a mountain wall, with a series of high points or peaks to serve as watch-towers.

Farther east, in the country above Venice, the Austrian frontier was formed by the line

Digitized by Google



HEAVY BUT MOBILE GUNS USED BY THE ITALIANS AGAINST THE AUSTRIANS.
Something in the nature of "the biter bit" was the case of Austria when Italy entered the Great War. Austria found not only that the Italians were provided with heavy pieces of ordnance, but that these great weapons were adapted for use in the precipitous mountain passes which form the boundaries of the two countries.

of the Carnic Alps, another rocky wall very abrupt on the Italian side, but much more accessible towards Austria. Here, too, there were at intervals high mountain watch-towers, which afterwards became the scene of long struggles. One of the most famous was the Freikofel.

The eastern frontier of Italy towards Klagenfurt, Lubiana, and Trieste was formed by the Julian Alps, except at the delta of the Isonzo valley, where the country was fairly open as far as the ridge of hills commanding the towns of Gorizia, Gradisca, and Monfalcone.

Speaking generally, then, the geographical frontiers of Italy had been so fixed that while her own concentration of troops could be overlooked from the Austrian watch-towers, and any attempt by her to attack Austria must apparently break at once against the impenetrable mountain wall, Austrian troops, on the contrary, could be assembled and concentrated for attack by any chosen route secure from interference or observation behind the mountain ramparts. In addition, the Austrian possession of the Trentino compelled Italy to defend the long outer circuit of that province with all the advantages on the Austrian side.

Italy's primary military desire was to remedy this intolerable handicap, just as her primary ethnological desire was to reunite with the mother country the intensely patriotic Italians living in the Trentino and in Istria.

There was, however, a second consideration which virtually compelled Italian intervention.

Under the terms of the Triple Alliance which bound Italy to Austria and Germany, it had been agreed that in the event of Austria obtaining specific advantages by alteration of the division of territories amongst the Balkan States, Italy should receive corresponding compensation. It was further laid down that Austria should not undertake any action calculated to make such alteration without consulting Italy as her partner in the Alliance. Once already, before the Great War, Italy had not received the compensation to which she considered herself entitled. When Austria permanently annexed the two nominally Turkish provinces of Herzegovina and Bosnia, Italy considered that an alteration such as was indicated in the terms of the Triple Alliance had taken place. But compensation was not given, on the ground that though these two provinces were nominally under Turkish suzerainty, they had in fact been administered by Austria, and thus the alteration was only one in name and not in fact. At the time, Italy was not in a position to make any effective protest, because the other European Powers were either unwilling or unable to make this aggressive Austrian action a *casus belli*.

But a much graver breach of the terms of her alliance with Italy was perpetrated by Austria in July, 1914. When Austria delivered to Serbia the ultimatum which meant war—a war whose results, if localised, could only have meant the disappearance of Serbia as a free and sovereign State from the map of Europe—she did not take the trouble to acquaint her ally Italy with her intentions. This, however, she was bound to do under the terms of the alliance.

Austria's breach of faith

It is fairly evident that both Austria and Germany regarded Italy then as a negligible quantity. They knew that her arsenals and her treasury were depleted, and that the credits voted by Parliament had not sufficed to replenish them—had, indeed, hardly more than paid off the balance due for military requisites during Italy's African campaign.

The Italian statesmen were quite alive to this factor.

Digitized by Google



King Victor Emmanuel III. of Italy.

Digitized by Google



Trained mountaineers as well as soldiers—Italy's famous Alpine troops forcing a frontier pass in the Carnic Alps.

Digitized by Google



On the way to Monte Nero: The Italians, by great daring, placed guns in position on the mountain (seen on the left).

Digitized by Google



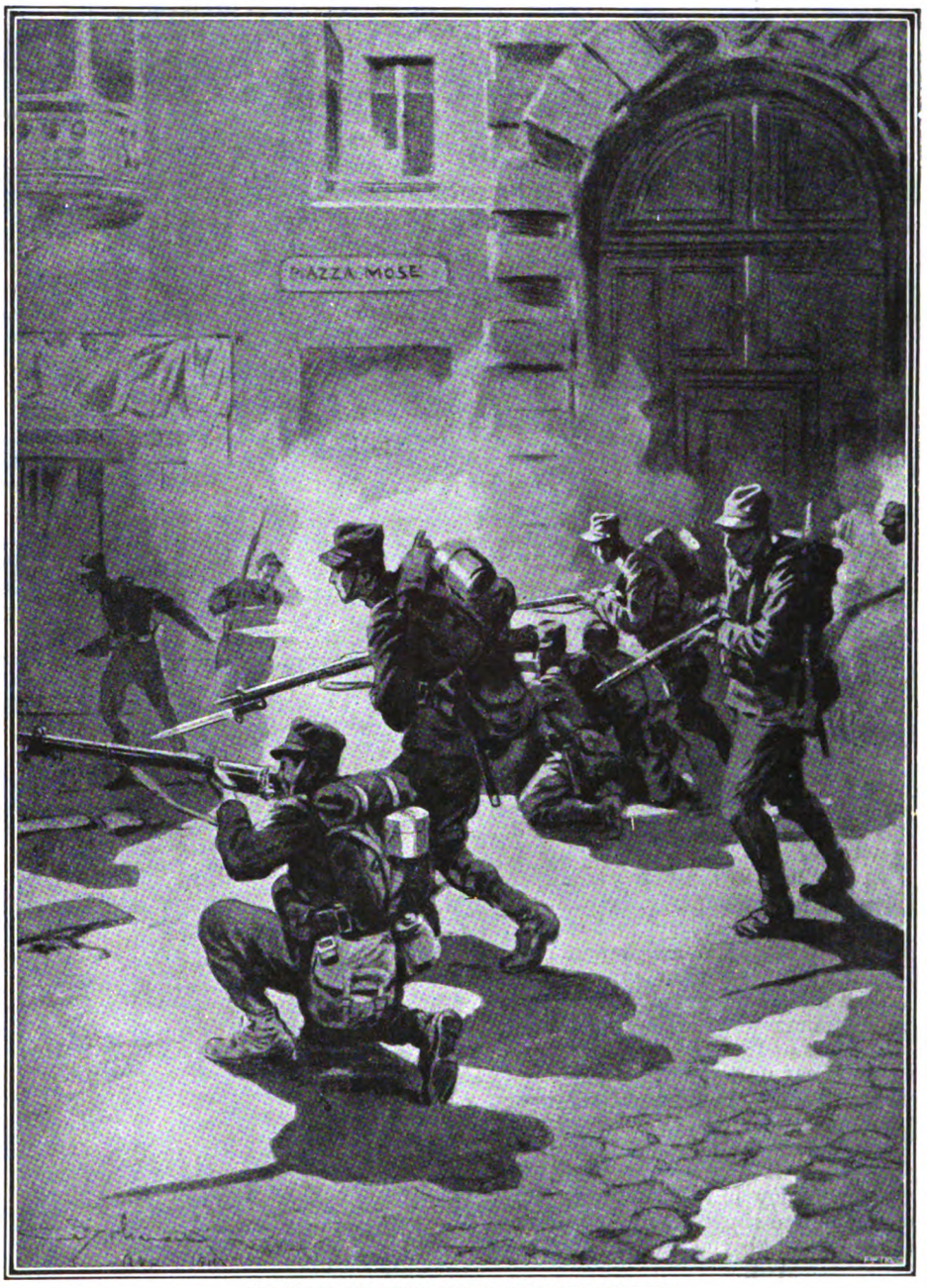
General Count Luigi Cadorna, Italian Commander-in-Chief.

Digitized by Google

Those who saw clearest knew that the Austrian and German Governments would never have dared to treat Italy so if she had been in a military and financial position to make good her claims to consideration at once. The contemptuous insult rankled, but the Italian statesmen possessed their souls in patience until they were ready to avenge the insult with the sword.

It may be admitted that the German Government soon perceived that a diplomatic blunder had been committed. The establishment of the Salandra-Sonnino Cabinet in place of the Germanophil Giolitti "tyranny," as it was called, opened the eyes of the German Foreign Office to the fact that Italy was not disposed to leave herself any longer without the armour necessary to make her voice heard. As they had done in other neutral countries, so in Italy, German and Austrian agents began to stir up difficulties for the Salandra Cabinet, to mobilise all the forces which for one reason or another were opposed to any Italian intervention in the war. There began a long campaign of intrigue in Italy, supported with lavish bribery by German agents, and only ended when, all things being at last ready, the Salandra Cabinet was able to demand of the country and the King a free hand to take such action as Italian interests required.

Perhaps in no country affected by the war was the drama of intrigue, the one great human drama of the combat of honesty of purpose and cleanness of hands against corruption and lies, played with such a wonderful setting and, it may be added, to so rapt an audience. It was drama, tense and enthralling, and as drama the history of it should be related. It was a theme such as a Shakespeare might have prayed for. Up to the end the audience, which was the whole civilised world, except perhaps a few diplomats, was kept in suspense by Salandra the Sphinx. It will be simplest, perhaps, to try to enumerate the principal *dramatis personæ*, and then to describe the setting.



ITALIAN TROOPS OVER THE FRONTIER.

An Italian artist's impression of an incident in the occupation of Ala, in the Adige Valley, Trentino, on May 27th, 1915. To the people of the Peninsula, Lower Tyrol (Trentino) and Trieste were as Alsace and Lorraine to the French, territories that belonged by ancient right to the mother country.

Salandra the Sphinx

The head of the Italian Government was Signor Salandra, a man of whose personal characteristics so little was known that even his friends believed him mainly a party politician. He became Premier, as most people had supposed, as a stop-gap when the great Italian dictator, Signor Giolitti, laid down the reins of power he had held so long. Salandra's was a Conservative Government. As such it could not actually command a majority, but, on condition of its becoming a war government, it received the support in the country of the "Radical-Interventionists," that is, of that large section of liberal opinion which believed that Italy was bound by all her traditions as well as by all the dictates of humanity and prudence to aid in crushing the German tyranny. Thus it came about that the two most important newspapers in Italy, the Conservative "Corriere della Sera" and the Radical "Secolo," were united in support of a Conservative Government.

It will be clear to readers who remember the creation of the National Cabinet in Britain that Signor Salandra's Cabinet had become also a National Italian Cabinet. But there were difficulties, and the chief of these difficulties was the man who was called the Italian dictator, Signor Giolitti. It is necessary for an understanding of this final war of Italian unification that one should understand something of the position and character of the latter-day Marius. His position had for years been unique. At once the ablest politician in Italy, and one of the most skilful wire-pullers, he had for years dictated Italian policy, just as he had filled Italian posts, prefectures, governorships, and commands with devoted adherents. His "capital

Digitized by Google



THE DUKE OF THE ABRUZZI.
In command of the Italian Navy.

city," so to speak, was Turin, where, in reality all the wires controlling his puppets were centred. His party organisation was wonderfully complete, and even after physical weariness had compelled him to drop for a time the reins of power, the Italian Parliament still contained a majority of his supporters.

It is perhaps doubtful whether Signor Giolitti had any international policy which could give a clear lead in the circumstances which prevailed in Europe after August, 1914. He was not, as has sometimes been assumed, an enemy of Great Britain; on the contrary, he was, in many ways, an ardent admirer of this country. His ideal for Italy was a naval agreement with Britain as the strongest sea Power, and at the same time a close military attachment to Germany as the most important land force. His fault lay in a failure to see that he could not thus keep a foot in each camp; he was not prepared to take and keep a line when at last the great division became inevitable.

Where Signor Giolitti failed

In addition it must be admitted that, like others of his party, he was obsessed by an insane jealousy and suspicion of France, a suspicion which had previously led Italy to suffer a grave neglect of Italian military preparations in the east, while piling up protective armament westwards. It is perhaps also true that Giolitti was not by nature a fighter. The colonial campaign which Italy undertook under his dictatorship in 1911-12, the Turkish war for the conquest of Tripoli, was not well prepared. On the part of Giolitti it may have been half-hearted, a concession to supposed popular sentiment, or an appeal to the "expansionist" vote, rather than the deliberate outcome of statesmanlike decision.

It was asserted that he dared not take the people into his confidence either as to the real cost of that war or as to the depletion of Italian resources afterwards. He refused to accept the responsibility of asking the large credits required for repairing the breaches in Italian armaments, and it is quite conceivable that he intended Salandra to act simply as a *premier-fainéant* who should bear the responsibility of replenishing the arsenals and then, when Giolitti gave the word, should retire again into obscurity.

Unfortunately for his plans, Signor Salandra and his brilliant coadjutor Baron Sonnino—the latter, by the way, has English blood in his veins—refused to allow themselves to be treated as men of straw. Having accepted responsibility for Italian fortunes in this gravest hour of European history, they determined to choose the line they deemed best, and to stick to it. As we shall see later, when Giolitti tried to resume his old position as dictator, he found that the reins of power had slipped for ever from his grasp. There had arisen a king in Egypt to whom Giovanni Giolitti was unknown.



VICE-ADMIRAL LEONE VIALE.
Italian Minister of Marine.



GABRIELE D'ANNUNZIO.
Italian poet, and official chronicler of the war.

The story of Italian intervention contains a number of other Italian names now famous; but it may well be that great influence was exercised by some whose names are hardly mentioned now in connection with the dramatic events of 1915. All over Italy, and especially in Lombardy, men who saw clearly what the end must be were at work to teach, explain, and warn. Senator Albertini, of the family controlling the "Corriere Della Sera," may have exercised in Lombardy far more influence than is suspected. The Socialist deputy, Leonida Bissolati; the brilliant historian, Guglielmo Ferrero, of Turin; Eugenio Chieva, the Milanese deputy, should each have a place among the *dramatis personæ;* and there are many others.

Italy's new Cabinet at work

As we have seen, Signor Salandra's Cabinet set to work at once to restore the breaches in Italy's defensive armaments. The host of German spies very soon reported to the German War Office that the Italian preparations appeared to be of a thoroughly practical character, and their reports were presently backed by communications from Germany's diplomatic representatives at the Italian Court and at the Vatican. The *premier-fainéant* turned out to be a man of singular taciturnity, while his chief of staff, Baron Sonnino, began to display a painful interest in diplomatic conversations. Germany discovered to her surprise that her despised onlooker had some cards, and was minded to take a hand in the game. We say Germany because almost up to the end it does not appear that the Austrian Government, under its octogenarian monarch, succeeded in ridding itself of its blinkers. Or if, indeed, there were Austrian statesmen who realised the

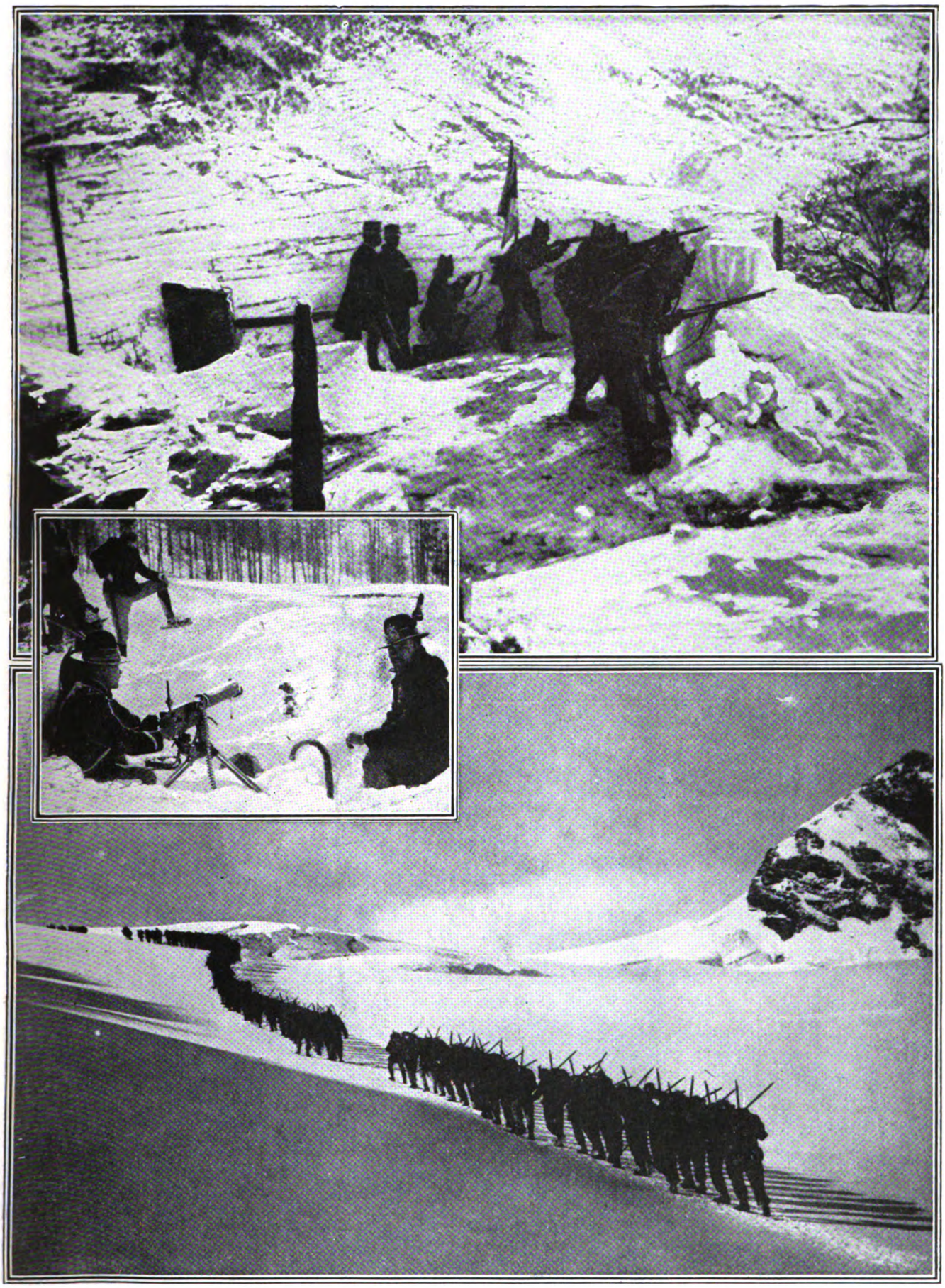


GENERAL VITTORIA ZUPELLI.
Italian Minister of War.



THE DUC D'AOSTA.
Cousin of King Victor Emmanuel III.

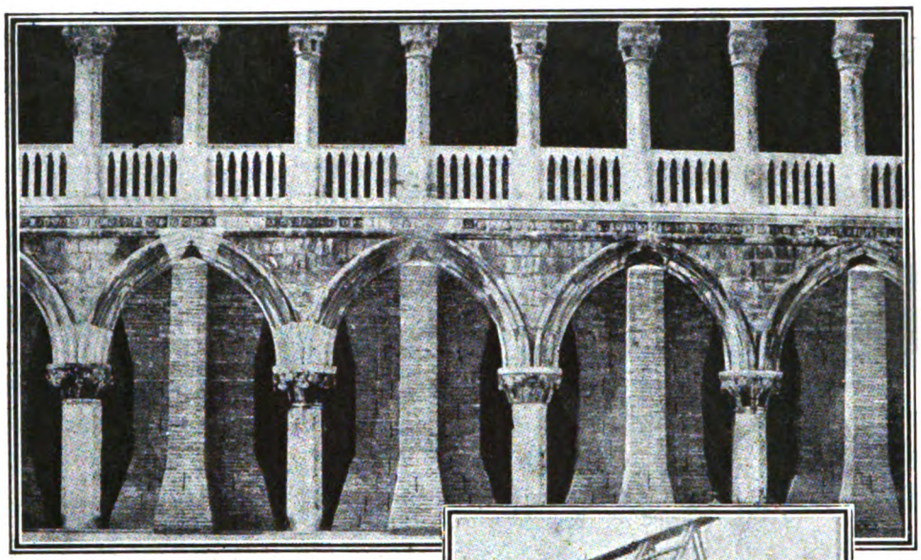
Digitized by Google



ITALY'S SOLDIER-MOUNTAINEERS—THE FAMOUS ALPINI—IN THEIR ELEMENT.

The top view shows a detachment of the Alpini entrenched behind barricades of snow in the Julian Alps. As is the case with their fellow Latins, the French, they take their colours into action. In the lower photograph we have a vivid camera-record of these rugged warriors on the march through one of the mountain passes on the Austro-Italian frontier. Inset : Machine-gun section of the Alpini in action.

Digitized by Google



HOW VENICE GUARDED HER ART TREASURES.

The Doges' Palace, with its magnificent arches strengthened by solid pillars of brickwork against the effects of explosives.

danger, it would seem that the traditional jealousy of Italy which had always inspired the House of Hapsburg rendered void any effort to agree with the enemy while they were in the way with him.

It will be remembered that Austria had omitted to consult Italy before presenting her German-made ultimatum to Serbia. In consequence there could be no doubt that Italy was at least relieved of all responsibilities under the Triple Alliance, and almost immediately she declared her neutrality.

Indignation in Berlin

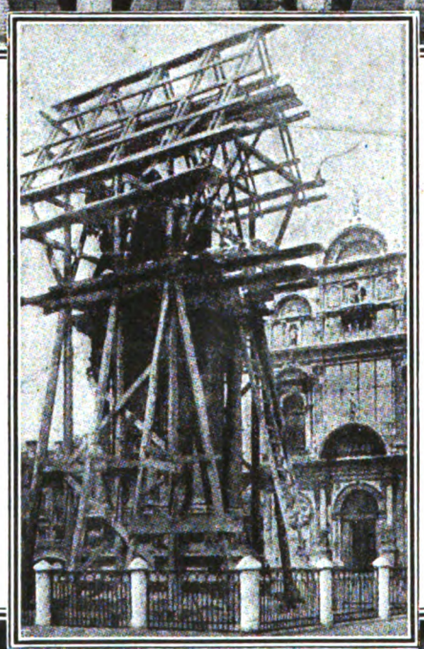
There was considerable indignation in Berlin where, a few days earlier, demonstrators before the Italian Embassy had acclaimed the Italian ally, and subsequently there was ill-treatment, official and unofficial, of Italian workmen employed on railway construction and in mines in Western Germany. Actually, however, the Italian declaration of neutrality had already done the Allies one invaluable service—it had released for the struggle against the invading Germans a considerable number of French troops which must otherwise have been retained on the Italian frontier.

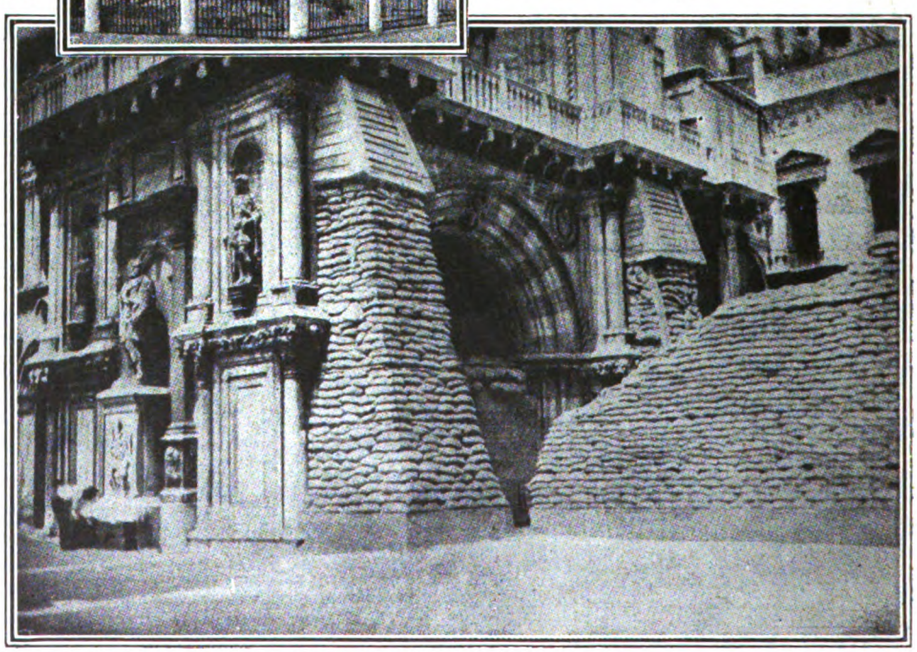
"I will never forgive you," the Kaiser is said to have telegraphed to the King of Italy, and although the message is doubtless apocryphal, it probably expresses well enough the common feeling in Germany. But from refusal to aid the Germanic Powers to active intervention against them was a long step. While, as we have seen, the Salandra Cabinet was steadily completing the Italian armour, unostentatiously calling up various classes of the reserves (many men being called by letters delivered by hand instead of through the post), piling up ammunition, and preparing down to the last detail the equipment necessary for the difficult mountain warfare, German agents were busy all over the country in mobilising every kind of assistance against the Interventionists, as the war party was called.

One of the earliest steps taken by Germany was to purchase a number of newspapers all over the country. Some of the principal Neutralist papers, such as the "Stampa" ("Press") of Turin, which was Giolitti's organ, were not indeed in the pay of the German agents, but others undoubtedly were. The methods of the German newspaper agents may be illustrated by an incident which occurred in Milan.

German newspaper intrigue

One of the editors of a certain Berlin newspaper agency, which at one time was inspired by the German Foreign Office, arrived in Milan in the autumn with his wife, and proceeded to call upon the proprietors of some of the smaller Lombardy papers with a view to discovering how far they could be utilised for German purposes. He finally discovered an unimportant publication in dire financial straits, and after some beating about the bush, announced that he was empowered to offer a handsome subsidy if the paper would adopt a prominently Neutralist and pro-German attitude.

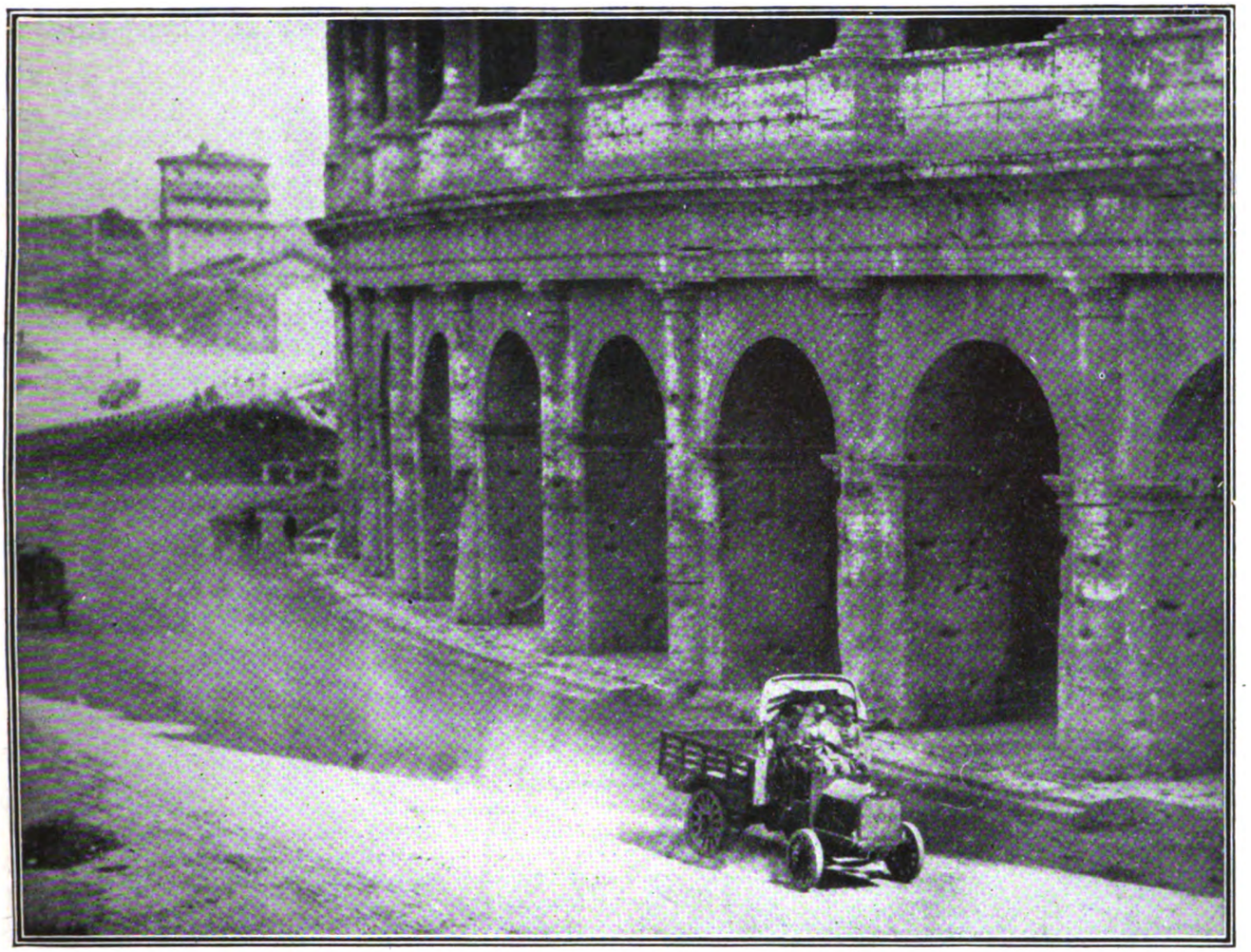




SAND-BAGGED AGAINST BOMBS.

Court and steps of the Palace of the Doges, Venice, protected by sand-bags against the Austro-German Huns. The smaller photograph shows the work of protecting the statue of Bartolommeo Colleoni, a captain of the Venetian Republic (1475), pronounced by Ruskin the finest equestrian statue in the world.

Digitized by Google



THE OLD ROME AND THE NEW: MODERN MOTOR-TRANSPORT WAGGON PASSING THE ANCIENT COLOSSEUM.
A symbolical camera-picture, taken when Italy took her place in the Great War, by a photographer with a gift of imagination and a sense of historic contrast.

The proprietor considered the proposition for a little while and finally said: "Well, we will promise in return for your subsidy to print articles favourable to Germany, but once a week you must let us have a smack at Austria!"

In Rome, Naples, Turin, and other large cities German agents began to attempt a similar campaign of corruption; but their most effective work was a great deal more insidious. Just as was done in America, and probably even in England, German agents set to work to stir up opposition to a war policy among the labouring classes, not neglecting the women. Their arguments, founded always upon individual self-interest, were sufficiently specious. Italy, they argued, could obtain, as the reward of abstention from fighting, any territorial compensations she might fairly consider her due. Even within the limits of her neutrality she could do good business with the belligerents. She could "capture trade," refill her treasuries, and, in fact, fulfil generally the purposes of her existence. But if she went to war she must inevitably sacrifice a number of lives, she must incur a burden of debt which would express itself to the labouring man in the form of new and lasting taxation; she would demand military service of numbers of men hitherto exempt; business would be at a standstill, and since ultimately Germany would in any case win, the position of Italy after the war would indeed be terrible.

Secret campaign in the cities

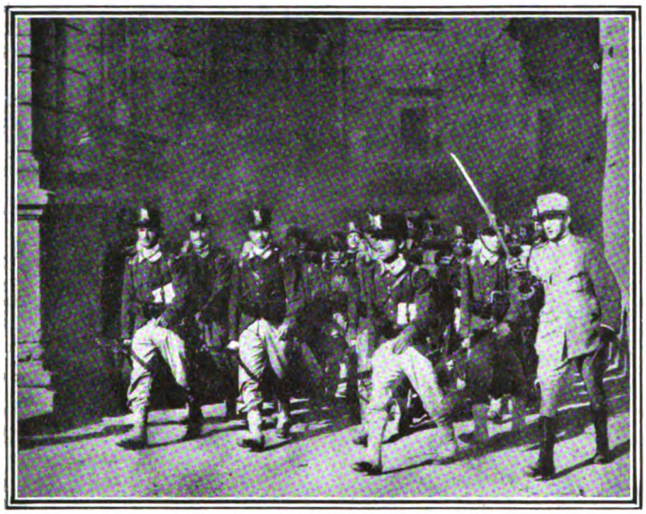
To the Socialist leaders the German agents offered an even more telling argument. "Now," they argued, "you have got a powerful organisation capable even of seizing the reins of power in a capitalistic city like Milan. You have your men well in hand and, since after the war labour will have a predominant voice, if you maintain your organisation now you will be able afterwards practically to dictate your terms. But if Italy goes to war, your position will collapse like a house of cards. Military authority in war time swamps all civil power and privilege. Your organisation can never be so influential or so absolute as that entrusted to the military 'tyranny,' and furthermore the seeds of individual liberty, the rebellion against oppressive class legislation and capitalistic domination, will be killed. Your adherents will be imbued with the military spirit—those of them that are left alive—and your own influence over them will have vanished for many a long year."

For the women they had yet another line of argument. "Remember Tripoli," they said. "Remember the killed, the maimed, the sick. See what is happening elsewhere, and consider that this is no African campaign. The Austrian armies will invade Italy. Venice will be destroyed; Milan wrecked by Zeppelins. And when all is done, even if you win, who is to earn bread for you and your children when your sons and husbands lie rotting among the Alpine snows? If war were necessary, you, as Italian women, could not complain. But war is not only not necessary, in your case it would be a gross breach of faith as well as a colossal folly."

Hoisting the disaster bogey

There was yet another class of the Italian community to whom the German agents were able to make a very special appeal—namely, the rich merchants of Lombardy. For many years Italian banks and commercial houses had been more and more infested with Germans. Germany had sent her most skilful bankers, her most enterprising

Digitized by Google



YOUNG ITALY RESPONDING TO THE CALL TO ARMS.
Mobilisation of Italian infantry.

commercial agents to show the Italians how to do brilliant business. They were welcomed for their methods, and presently obtained such a hold that it was no longer possible for Italy to rid herself of them without the wrench of war. They were as leeches, but unlike leeches they never dropped off from satiety. War was the only salt that could detach them. When the hour foreseen of German business statesmanship arrived this great force of German influence was brought to bear upon Italian merchant feeling. Their prosperity, they were warned, would be shaken. Their Germanised banks would fail, and bankruptcy would rear its ugly head even in Lombardy, the parent of the banking system of the world. There is no doubt that the long struggle of the Neutralists was greatly aided up to the very last by the doubts and fears instilled by the German agents into the Italian merchant class.

But the whole German campaign did not reach its maximum tension until the arrival in Rome of the German Imperial Agent-General, Prince von Bülow, concerning whom and his activities it is necessary to speak at some length. Before he became German Foreign Secretary, and then Chancellor of the German Empire, Prince von Bülow (then only "Count") had been German Ambassador in Rome. He had married a Sicilian lady, the daughter of Donna Minghetti, and after his fall from power had been accustomed to spend a considerable portion of each year in Rome and on his wife's Sicilian estates. He possessed a suave personality, and was a bland, somewhat indolent courtier, but an excellent host with charming manners and a certain smooth bonhomie which, while it delighted the Italians, was not always understood by the gruff Prussians of the Bismarckian school. He very rarely employed bluster, and was perhaps fonder of genial bluff. Yet he was certainly more successful as a diplomat than the Chancellor, Von Bethmann-Hollweg, who succeeded him. And when it finally became clear that some accomplished wire-puller must be sent to Rome to direct the German intrigues in Italy, the choice naturally fell upon Donna Laura Minghetti's popular son-in-law. "At last," said

Prince von Bulow's mission





ANOTHER MOBILISATION SCENE IN AN ITALIAN TOWN.
Inset in circle is a stirring photograph of Italian cavalry on the move. The horsemanship of the Italian cavalry is superb.

Digitized by Google



ITALIAN FIELD ARTILLERY AT THE GALLOP.
The gun team is seen advancing over rough ground to a new position. Early reports from the Italian front gave glowing accounts of the work of the Italian artillery.

some of the Berlin papers, when Prince von Bülow took train for Rome, "we have *one* diplomat in the service."

Very soon after his arrival Prince von Bülow made his house the centre for all the Neutralist intrigues in and out of Parliament. Supper-parties, dinners, luncheons succeeded each other. The doors were constantly open to admit one or other of the Giolittan senators or deputies. Among the most prominent of them was Cirmeni, the "Rome correspondent" of the "Stampa," who was the most prominent of the Neutralist Press men, and certainly the best Press agent Prince von Bülow possessed. The German campaign throughout Italy was now pressed, not only with energy, but with a huge expenditure of money in all directions, and simultaneously Prince von Bülow himself began to open overtures with Baron Sonnino in order to discover what territorial concessions the existing Italian Government considered necessary. In the meantime, of course, schemes were evolved for a restoration of the Giolitti tyranny if the Salandra Cabinet proved unmanageable.

Austria as German puppet

It is easy to understand that, even though Prince von Bülow was in reality the Agent-General for the Central Empires, certain diplomatic limitations had to be retained. Italy had no open cause of quarrel with her ally Germany, except in so far as she was bound to disapprove of the more brutal features of the German invasion of Belgium and Northern France. She was not negotiating with Germany for any concessions, nor was it nominally Germany which had evaded, to say the least of it, the terms of the Triple Alliance. Yet the Italian Government was not in the least in the dark as to the true authorship of the Serbian ultimatum or of the European War; nor could it disguise from itself the fact that circumstances being as they were, Germany could and did, to a certain extent, dictate Austrian policy during the war. As the event proved, the obedience of Austria to German dictates could, however, be strained beyond its limit. It followed, nevertheless, that while Prince von Bülow was not charged with any mandate to make concessions on behalf of Austria, and thus had no more than the character of an intermediary, he was actually the person with whom the Italian Government had to negotiate.

At the same time it was not long before his other less

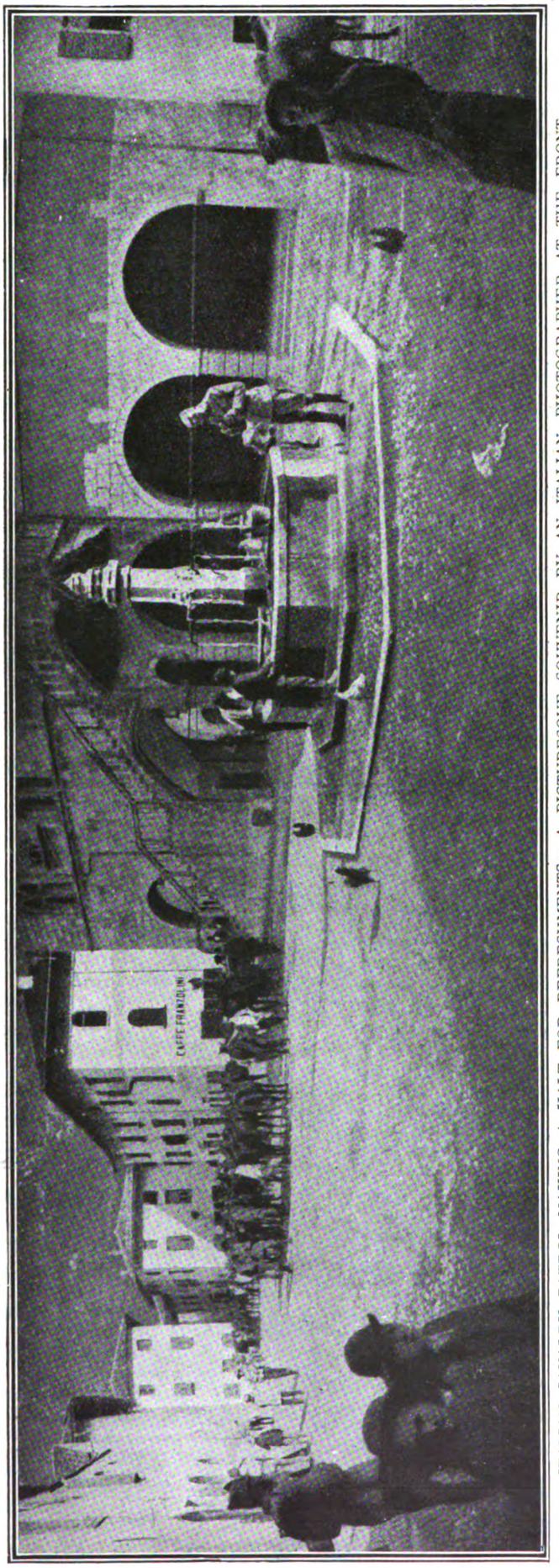


KING VICTOR EMMANUEL'S CAVALRY CROSSING A RIVER ON INFLATED BAGS.



THE PASSAGE OF THE ISONZO RIVER.
There was heavy fighting for possession of the heights commanding the banks of the Isonzo in the early stages of the Italian advance towards Trieste.

Digitized by Google



ITALIAN CAVALRY PATROL MAKING A HALT FOR REFRESHMENTS: A PICTURESQUE SOUVENIR BY AN ITALIAN PHOTOGRAPHER AT THE FRONT.

official activities became manifest. The German Embassy became the rendezvous at all hours for the Neutralist journalists of the Cirmeni type, for the senators and other worthies who perceived that the star of their patron Giolitti was threatened with eclipse, and—by the back door—for the host of "agents," naturalised and unnaturalised, which infested the cities of Italy.

Under the ægis of the prince the Neutralist campaign began to take the form of demonstrations in the principal towns. Counter-demonstrations were, of course, organised by the Interventionists, and finally the two parties began here and there to clash. Knives and revolvers, sticks and stones came into play, until finally, for the preservation of order, the authorities were obliged now and again to call upon the troops. Some scenes illustrative of this stage in the drama will be described presently. But it is necessary first to sketch the course of plot and counterplot up to the last weeks which preceded the Italian appeal to the sword.

Plot and counterplot

The primary object of the Italian Government was, of course, to gain time until the military preparations were completed. The objects of Prince von Bülow were two: First, if possible, to make the Italian Government define the terms, territorial and otherwise, which it considered the minimum acceptable; and secondly, by dribbling out concessions, bit by bit, to convey the impression that every reasonable demand was being granted, and that Italy could gain, without firing a shot, at least as much as she could hope to gain by successful war. If the prince could force the Italian Government to show its hand early, his agents and abettors, Cirmeni and others, could appeal publicly against a Government which, while pretending to act solely in the best interest of Italy, really showed itself determined to fight in any case by making impossible demands. In fact this accusation was actually brought against Salandra and Sonnino at the last, but it was countered in the splendid speech wherein the Premier showed that the concessions offered were little more than visionary.

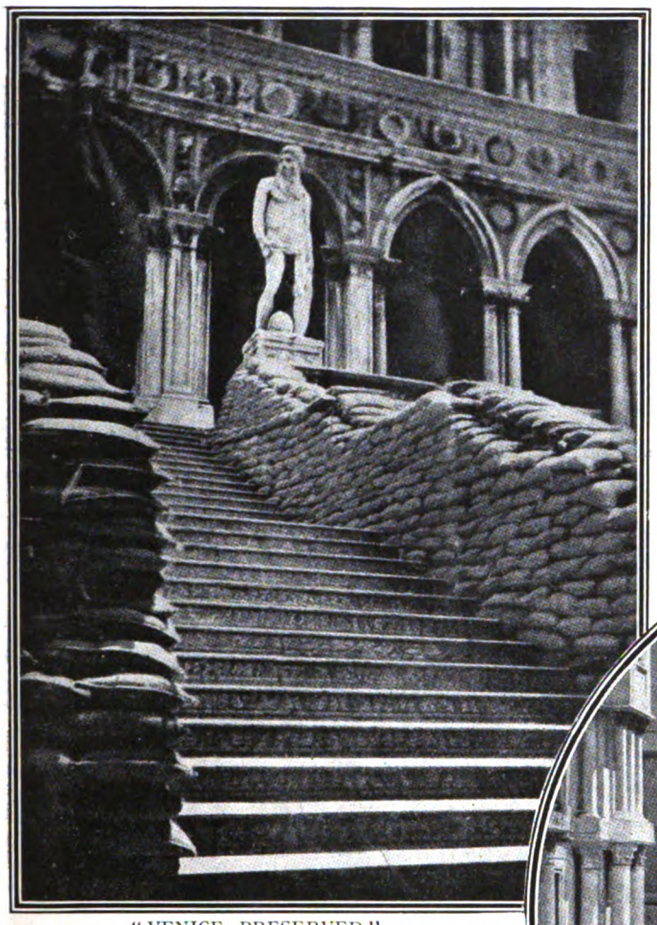
The Giolittans also were cunningly preparing for a coup. They knew, of course, that with infinite patience the Salandra Cabinet was making good the deficiencies in arms and ammunition which the Giolitti Cabinet had left. Their idea was to effect a coup d'état at the last moment, to take over the situation carefully prepared by the Salandra Cabinet, and assume subsequently the credit for any victory, diplomatic or in the field, which Salandra's preparations enabled Italy to achieve.

Meanwhile the Garibaldians—that is the remnant of those who had fought for Italian freedom with the national hero in 1865 and those who formed their adherents now—were conducting a vigorous campaign throughout Italy for the freedom of the Italian districts still under Austrian rule. They also were preparing a theatrical coup when the time was ripe. And, lastly, there was a strong but much less obvious movement in Northern Italy which had for its object the democratisation of public control, the prevention of another Giolitti tyranny, the diminution particularly of Jesuit influence, and the introduction of democratic institutions such as they saw in England. This party realised very early that an eventual triumph of Germany must mean a victory for oligarchic government and the defeat at any rate for a long time of really free institutions. They were prepared to go to any length to prevent the Prussianising of Italy as a result of the war. Their main objective was to combat Germany through a war with Austria.

Garibaldians' new fight for freedom

For many weeks Baron Sonnino held his hand. He refused to be drawn by Prince von Bülow, and continued to insist that since Austria had by her actions broken the terms of the Triple Alliance it was for her to state what reparation she was prepared to make. Prince von

Digitized by Google



"VENICE PRESERVED."
A further view of the methods adopted by the Venetians to protect the Palace of the Doges from enemy explosives.

Bülow's suave diplomacy was not able to get round this obstacle, and while secretly encouraging the Giolittans he was obliged openly to press upon his Government the necessity for Austrian concessions. Meantime the Neutralist Press at his inspiration continued to report far-reaching Austrian offers and to urge that with a little good-will every point which Italy could legitimately demand might readily be obtained.

It may suffice to enumerate some of the points on which the Italian requirements and the unwilling Austrian concessions most obviously collided.

Austria desired that the cession of the Trentino and rectification of the frontier at other points should be conceded after the war as a reward for Italian neutrality. Italy demanded that all territorial concessions should come into force at once as reparation for the Austrian breach of agreement. Italy demanded that the Italian districts of Istria should be surrendered absolutely; Austria offered only to make Trieste a "free city" under Austrian suzerainty. Italy demanded not only that concessions should be immediate, but also that Germany, as the obviously predominant partner, should give guarantees for the effective maintenance of the concessions after the war.

Italy demands guarantees

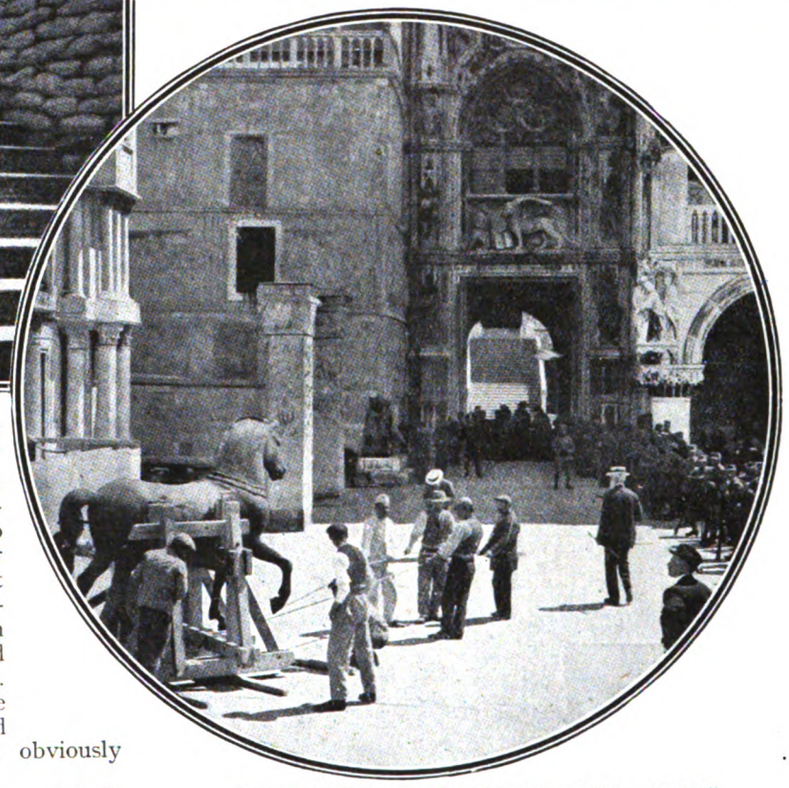
There is no doubt that even those concessions which Austria did eventually bring herself to make were extracted from her very unwillingly and under German pressure. There is also no doubt that after the war, if it had turned out successfully, Austria would have begun an intrigue at once for the restoration of the old frontiers.

One is reluctant at this stage to write of one feature of the intrigue carried on by Germany in Rome—namely, the so-called "Vatican Plot." Yet it cannot be omitted altogether, and may therefore be touched upon lightly as follows:

Among the coadjutors of Prince von Bülow in Rome was a certain Herr Erzberger, the leader in the German Reichstag of the powerful Catholic Centre party, next to the Socialists the most numerous and on the whole the most influential of the bourgeois parties. He was sent to Rome to encourage the resistance of the Roman Catholic Church to an Italian war with Austria. There was a clear political reason for this resistance. Austria was the last remaining Great Power (since Spain could no longer claim the title) where the Roman Catholic clergy and the Roman Church possessed a dominant voice in the affairs of State. The influence of the Pontificate was supported in turn by Austria which, since the disestablishment of the Church in France, had become the "eldest daughter."

The Erzberger conspiracy

So far as Germany was concerned the Church of Rome was most influential in the south and west, and here also were the strongholds of the political Centre party whose fortunes were bound up with Catholic influence. It was neither unnatural nor unintelligible that Roman Catholic Germany and Austria should endeavour to range on their side the influence of Italian Catholics and also through the Pontificate to appeal to Catholics in neutral countries.



DISMOUNTING "THE HORSES OF ST. MARK."
These famous pieces of bronze, whose movements had already become historic, were once again taken from their position on the basilica of St. Mark, at Venice, and deposited in a place of greater safety.

What additions the Austrian and German delegates to the Vatican may have promised to the international power and prestige of the Papacy it is perhaps unnecessary to inquire. The grave factor in the situation was that Herr Erzberger personally and through his emissaries endeavoured to set on foot a secret agitation against the war—that is against the King's advisers—through the medium of the Roman Catholic clergy.

It is clear that traps were laid for the Pontiff himself. He was induced to grant an audience to a German-American journalist who subsequently used the conversation for the

Digitized by Google



Copyright.

MAP OF THE KINGDOM OF ITALY, INCLUDING SICILY AND SARDINIA

Specially drawn to illustrate the national ideals Italy hoped to realise by joining the Allies. Beyond the boundary line of the north and on the Eastern shore of the Adriatic will be seen the Trentino, Istria, and Dalmatia, territory mainly inhabited by Italians but under Austrian dominion, which it was Italy's fervent desire to embody in Greater Italy.

purpose of affecting the sympathies of Roman Catholics in the United States and in other neutral countries.

The Austrian clergy in the frontier districts endeavoured to stir up racial antagonism between Slavs and Italians, and they were not innocent, after the outbreak of war, of devices for delaying the Italian advance, for which the recognised punishment on discovery is a blank wall and a file of riflemen. The misuse of the tenets of religion for the support of treacherous intrigue is always an unpleasant subject to discuss, and it is perhaps unnecessary for our present purposes to follow it further.

We may now turn to a description of some of the dramatic incidents which preceded the Italian declaration of war.

On a Saturday, almost any Saturday, in April a Milanese citizen, returning by road from Pavia in the south, or from Varese at the foot of the Alps in the north, might have passed here and there along the road a company of men or youths in civilian clothes marching with head up, chest out, and with an unmistakably military swing. If he had inquired who these were he would have learned that they were just men doing some voluntary training in case—well in case they should be needed. Sometimes, when they got away from town or village out among the long rows of mulberry trees they broke into song—the hymn of Garibaldi, the Mameli hymn, or the song, "Trieste of my heart." These "training walks" were at once a preparation and an advertisement, and the Socialists inspired by the German intriguers took pronounced objection to them. They in turn organised certain bands of youths and workmen, armed them with stones and cudgels, and proceeded to waylay the companies from behind ditches or garden-palings. Once or twice the attack was sufficiently unexpected to break up the companies and scatter them, while their assailants jeered; but presently the companies themselves took to carrying stout cudgels, and then the assailants became the assailed and were put to flight. These were the first collisions, and they took place as a rule far enough from the city to prevent their being reported in detail.

Coming nearer to the city by the royal road which leads from Monza through the suburb of Greco to the Venice Gate the Milanese citizen would find the usually busy thoroughfare deserted, the tram service suspended, and most of the shops with their iron shutters down. There was a "general strike" proclaimed by the Socialists, either as a protest against some injury to a workman or on "general principles." But the quiet of the Monza road gave way, when the traveller had passed the city gate, to the turmoil of a mob thronging past the cathedral to the Piazza del Duomo, the great square in front of the cathedral, which was the scene of most of the mass meetings during the weeks preceding the war.

Mass meetings in Milan

Here, if it was a "Neutralist Saturday," large crowds would be gathered round some Neutralist orator, and hence would start one of the processions which towards evening paraded the city demonstrating against one or other of the Interventionist papers, and sometimes cheering outside the German Consulate. The Neutralist processions were never very big, but they were well organised, and amongst the leaders were almost always some of those "hyphenated" Italians who had abandoned their German citizenship but not their German sympathies.

A day later the Piazza del Duomo would be filled by a much bigger crowd carrying the red, white, and green

Digitized by Google



WITH THE 81st ITALIAN REGIMENT, ONE OF THE FIRST TO CROSS THE ISONZO.



TYPICAL ITALIAN INFANTRY, FAMOUS FOR THEIR STAYING POWER, IN ACTION. IN CENTRE: AN ITALIAN LIGHT FIELD-GUN.

Digitized by Google

Italian flag entwined with the colours of Trieste or with the symbol of Garibaldi's "honourable red shirt." From the Piazza the Interventionist procession would pass singing down every one of the main arteries of the city, and it was during one of these processions that the most serious disturbance took place.

At first the Neutralists and Interventionists held their meetings on the same day, and collisions were not infrequent. But after a time the Carabinieri (armed police) were instructed to end these simultaneous demonstrations, and they began to clear off ruthlessly whichever party was manifestly merely trying to break up the other's assembly.

After a few weeks, accordingly, the assemblies took place on succeeding days; but as the support of the Interventionists increased and the Neutralists obviously lost ground, they resorted to other tactics. Little gangs would wait in side streets until the Interventionists began to disperse, and would then attack small parties, tearing the Trieste or Garibaldi favours from men's coats or ladies' dresses, and sometimes handling their victims very roughly as well. Finally, on Thursday evening, May 13th, matters reached a climax. A big procession of Interventionists had been arranged for four o'clock in the afternoon. Towards evening a part of the procession left the Piazza del Duomo and moved down the Corso towards the Venice Gate. As they passed the gateway, and began to bear to the left past the public gardens, a gang of Neutralists, who had concealed themselves among some artificial rockwork, opened fire upon the leading files with revolvers. The second shot hit a young doctor in the face, passing out through his cheek; but most of the shots went high, and those who were injured were mostly hurt in the sudden swerve of the leading files of the procession and the rush to get back to the gate.

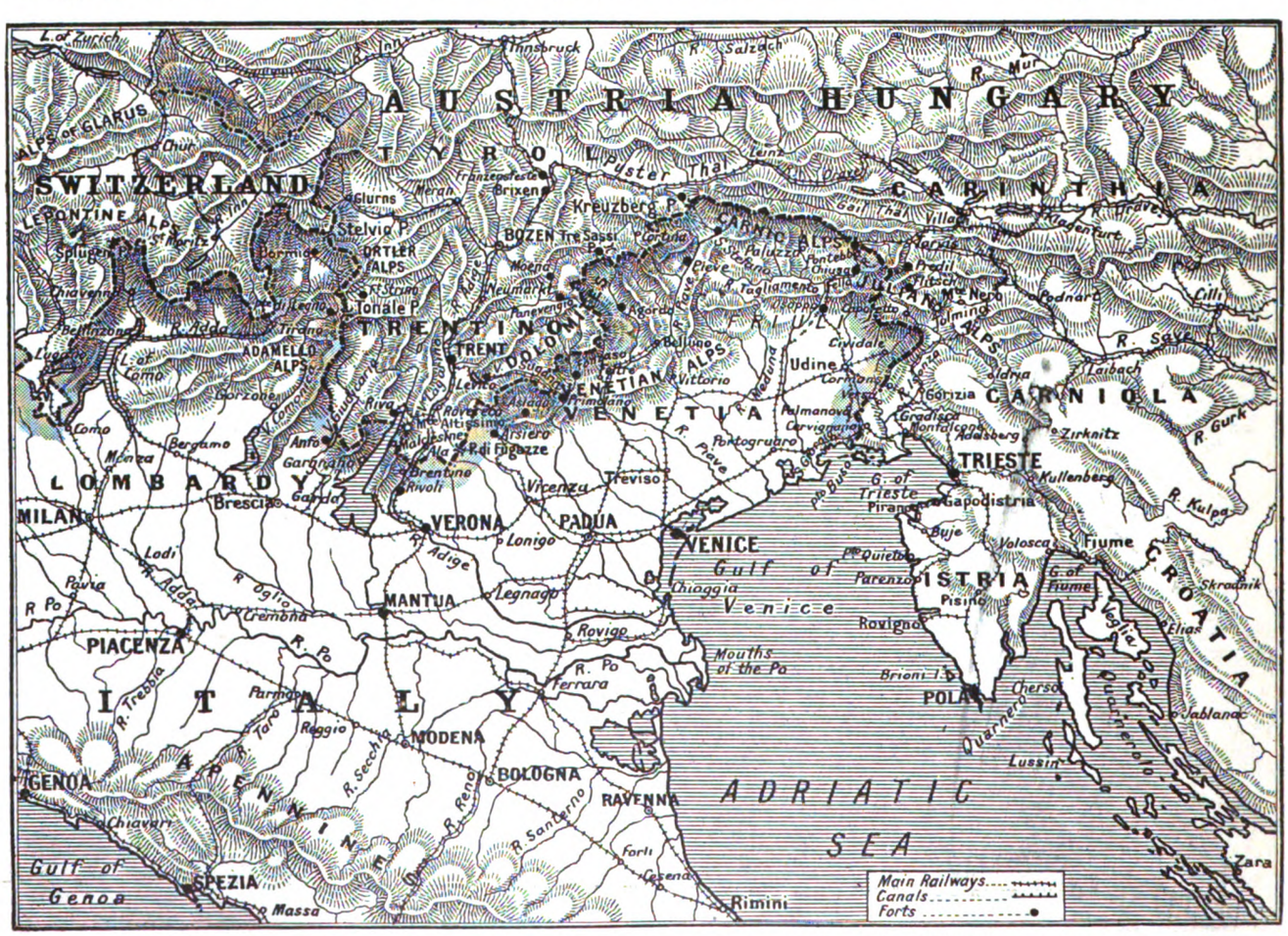
Matters reach a climax

At three o'clock next morning a formal council of war was held by the organisers of the Interventionist demonstrations. After a good deal of angry discussion it was decided that another even more imposing demonstration should be held on the following day, and there was a significant hint that the "Germans" should not this time find them without means of defence.

A hint to the "Germans"

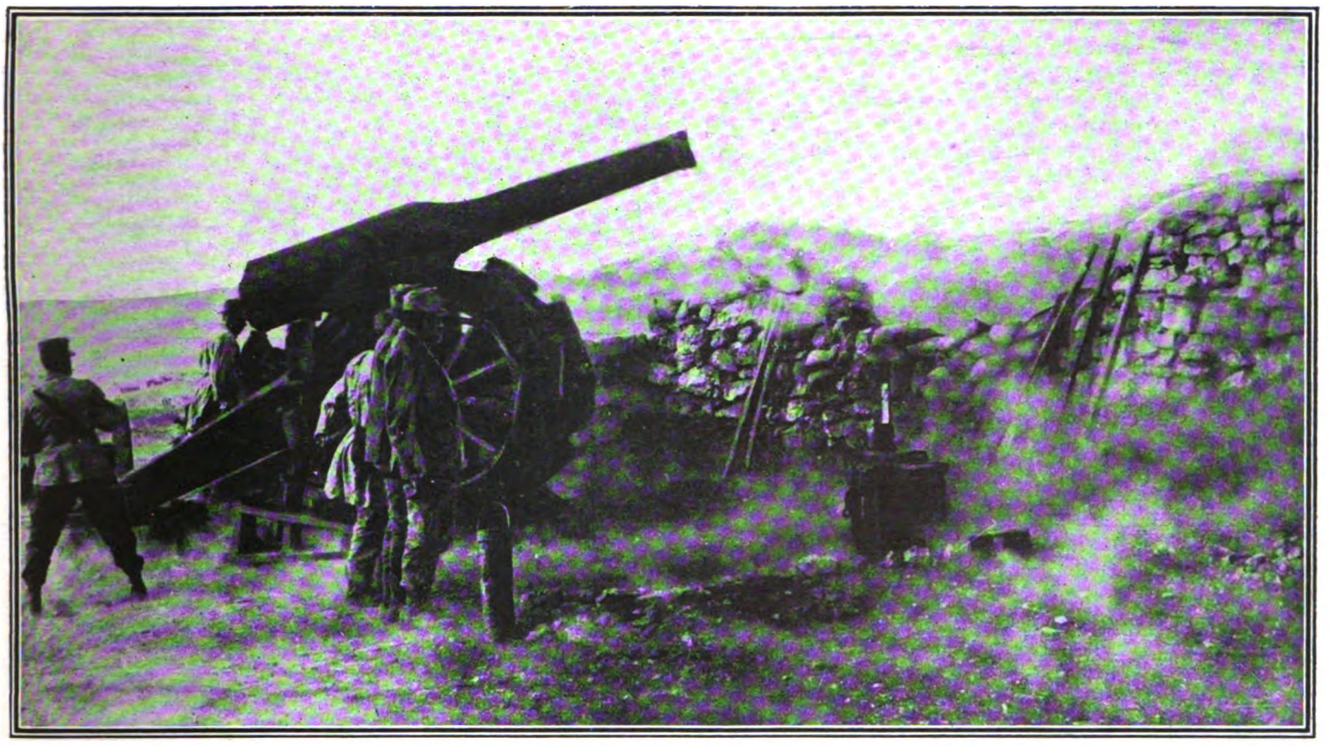
There can be little doubt that the fight at the Porta Venezia would have led to grave scenes in the streets of Milan if the political situation had not suddenly taken a turn which held even the most enthusiastic demonstrator in suspense.

Naturally there was no doubt felt that while a small proportion of the Neutralist leaders were genuinely convinced that Italy ought not to go to war, the violent Neutralist demonstrations, on the contrary, were both inspired and assisted by German intriguers, whose main desire was to make it appear that feeling against the war was so strong that something resembling civil war must result if the Government finally rejected the Austrian proposals. This manœuvre had two consequences. In the first place, the Interventionist leaders determined to make it clear that no Government could look for any real support even in quelling disorders which did not take account of the strong war sentiment in Northern Italy; and in the second place the consciousness of German intrigues began to express itself in anti-German demonstrations, which after the war took a regrettable turn.



MAP OF THE ITALO-AUSTRIAN WAR AREA, INDICATING BOUNDARIES, THE PRINCIPAL MOUNTAIN PASSES, FORTS, AND COMMUNICATIONS.

Digitized by Google



ITALY'S RESPONSE TO AUSTRIA'S BREACH OF FAITH.
One of the big guns adapted by Italian artillerists for use in mountain warfare in action against the Austrian foe. In size and shape this enormous weapon is similar to the French 155 mm. cannon.

Even before the war Germans in Milan received a severe warning of the temper of the mob. The Siemens-Schuckert works, the great Berlin factory of electrical and other machinery, had a Milan branch occupying large premises on the Viale Venezia, a street running along the lines of the vanished city walls. The walls themselves are replaced by a high embankment, planted with an avenue of trees enclosing the fine public gardens. A small crowd of demonstrators, marching along the Viale Venezia, had assembled outside the Siemens-Schuckert establishment, and was denouncing the numerous atrocities committed by the Germans in Belgium and elsewhere. Some young German employees, left in charge of the establishment, apparently believed that an attack on the place and on themselves was immediately contemplated. Opening a window near the roof, they produced revolvers and began to fire on the mob. It is possible that they were only employing blank cartridge, but the mob was infuriated by the foolish action of the Germans, and very soon an attack (which had certainly not been originally contemplated) was made on the establishment. Crowbars were fetched from some neighbouring works, and in a few minutes the iron shutters on the ground floor were forced open. Then the huge doors gave way under repeated assaults by men wielding a wooden ram, and the foremost of the crowd forced their way into the house. It would undoubtedly have gone hard with the Germans in the place had not some Carabinieri come up just at this moment. They cleared off the crowd, and entering the establishment succeeded in removing the Germans to safe quarters. But the temper of the crowd from that time became much less gentle, and when the final crisis came it would have taken very little to provoke serious bloodshed.

In the meantime the "Garibaldi" movement had produced a crisis to which we must now turn our attention. Early in the war the Garibaldians had set on foot a movement to recognise in some practical way the aid given by France to Italy during her own War of Independence. This movement ultimately resulted in the enrolment in France of a special corps of Garibaldi volunteers who fought with the French troops in Alsace. The corps suffered severely in one of the German assaults, and one of the members of the Garibaldi family fell at the head of the volunteers. The news of this engagement had a wide-spread effect in Italy, and undoubtedly helped largely to popularise a movement for celebrating in some special form the fifty-fifth anniversary of the sailing of the one thousand Garibaldian volunteers for Marsala in 1860. This anniversary fell on May 5th, and it was decided to celebrate it by holding a great meeting on the scene of Garibaldi's embarkation with his thousand volunteers just below Genoa, at the Quarto dei Mille. A memorial statue was prepared, and was to be unveiled on the scene of the embarkation, while a great patriotic demonstration was to be addressed by Gabriele D'Annunzio, the Italian poet and playwright, who had come to be recognised as the spokesman of the Irredentist and Interventionist movement. There is no doubt that as the arrangements for the great



KING VICTOR EMMANUEL AT THE FRONT.
On the entry of Italy into the war her King immediately put himself at the head of his troops in the field.

Digitized by Google

demonstration took shape, the leaders of the movement believed that it might carry the Italian Government "off its feet," and that it would provide King and Cabinet with a fitting opportunity for declaring their policy. Both the Premier, Signor Salandra, and the Foreign Secretary, Baron Sonnino, announced their intention of being present, and finally it was announced that the King himself would witness the unveiling of the statue. An immense concourse of people from all parts of Italy was expected, and the State railways made arrangements for running a number of special trains to Genoa. The day was awaited with intense anxiety.

Garibaldian celebration cancelled

Everybody took it for granted that now at last Italy would declare herself, and it seemed that there could be no question on which side her decision would fall. But two days before the ceremony the whole official programme was suddenly cancelled. It was announced from Rome in the morning that the Premier would not attend the meeting. Then a second communiqué declared that, owing to the gravity of the international situation, Baron Sonnino would not leave Rome, and that none of the Cabinet would absent themselves from the capital. Finally, towards noon, it was further officially announced that the King would not be present. At first it was supposed that the German and Austrian Ambassadors had declared that they would be obliged to regard the presence of the King and Ministers at the ceremony as indicating an end of the negotiations, and that this notification had compelled the Ministry to decide what steps they would take in view of this unwarrantable interference. Later it was rumoured that Gabriele D'Annunzio had declined to make certain modifications in his projected speech, and that the King, if he listened to them, could hardly preserve the ordinary diplomatic formulas preceding the outbreak of war. Actually, no doubt, two things combined to determine King and Ministers upon the course they adopted. The Austrian negotiations had reached a point at which the Italian Government could not do other than announce that the Triple Alliance was no longer binding. We have already seen that the terms of the alliance had been broken by Austria. At the beginning of May Italy finally made it clear that the concessions she demanded were no longer to be regarded as consideration for a maintenance of the alliance, but as the alternative to Italy's joining the Allies. The Triple Alliance was denounced by Italy on May 4th—that is, the day before the Garibaldian ceremony.

The Triple Alliance denounced

Three factors had thus combined to prepare Italian public opinion for intervention. There was the desire to "realise national aspirations"—there is no better expression for the Irredentist and Garibaldian movement—and there was the growing sense of the hopelessness of any decent civilised life after the war unless Germany were crushed—a factor which Germany certainly underestimated—and, finally, there was the increasing exasperation as the plots of German and "Germanising" agents in Italy became clearer. The appalling stories of brutality to Italians within Austria's borders helped to fan the flame of Irredentist zeal, the sinking of the Lusitania and the use of poisonous gases broke the back of pro-German opposition even amongst the Germanised merchant class,



ITALIAN LEADERS AT THE FRONT.
Generals Di Mayo and Besozzi inspecting an aviation camp.



GENERAL CONRAD VON HOETZENDORF.
Chief of the Austro-Hungarian Headquarters Staff.



GRANDSONS OF GARIBALDI IN THE NEW FIGHT FOR FREEDOM.
Left to right: Ezio (seated), Beppino, Menotti, Sante, Ricciotti. They were enrolled in the 51st Infantry Regiment, known as the Alpini Brigade.

Digitized by Google

and the attempts at wholesale bribery of Press and public officials brought public feeling to boiling-point.

After May 4th there was not really any question as to what the Salandra Cabinet would and must do. There was only a question whether it itself could carry its measures into effect without an appeal to the country. In the "great twenty days" Germany played her last card—Giolitti.

She had already succeeded in persuading a small section of Italian Colonial troops in Tripoli to revolt, but the story of the rebellion and the casualty list failed of their expected result. They merely stiffened Italian feeling, particularly since the "Agenzia della Stampa" was able to state on May 6th that the Government had proof of German complicity in the outbreak. The "Secolo" of Milan expressed the general feeling when it wrote on May 6th: "If Austria or Turkey *or any other country* has relied upon our reputation for impressionability and has believed that a military check in Africa might be sufficient to weaken our purpose, that calculation is undoubtedly erroneous. Where others have sought means of demoralising us they may chance to find the spark which will light the conflagration they have feared and we have awaited."

Germany's last card

There is, perhaps, little doubt now that Salandra's Ministry would have precipitated events in the first week in May had not the Russian retirement begun in the north, and had not the Italian Minister for War become cognisant of a shortage of munitions on the part of the Allies. It must always be remembered to Italy's credit that instead of "flying to the succour of the victors," she came to the aid of the Allies when their star seemed for the time to pale. It may be (and the records of the Italian General Staff will no doubt show it later) that some revision of plans was necessitated by the situation.

Baron Sonnino's demands

On May 11th one of the Italian deputies, Signor Canefa, specified in a Genoese paper the demands—in addition to immediate territorial concessions—which Baron Sonnino had presented to Austria and Germany. They were the immediate evacuation of Belgium and guarantees for the respecting of the integrity of Serbian territory.

On May 10th German and Austrian Consulates throughout Italy began to advise their nationals to quit Italy, and an hour or two after the issue of the warnings by express letter the Consulates were besieged by people asking for passports. The exodus which began then continued for about ten days, when the majority of Germans and Austrians who could get away had taken refuge in Switzerland.



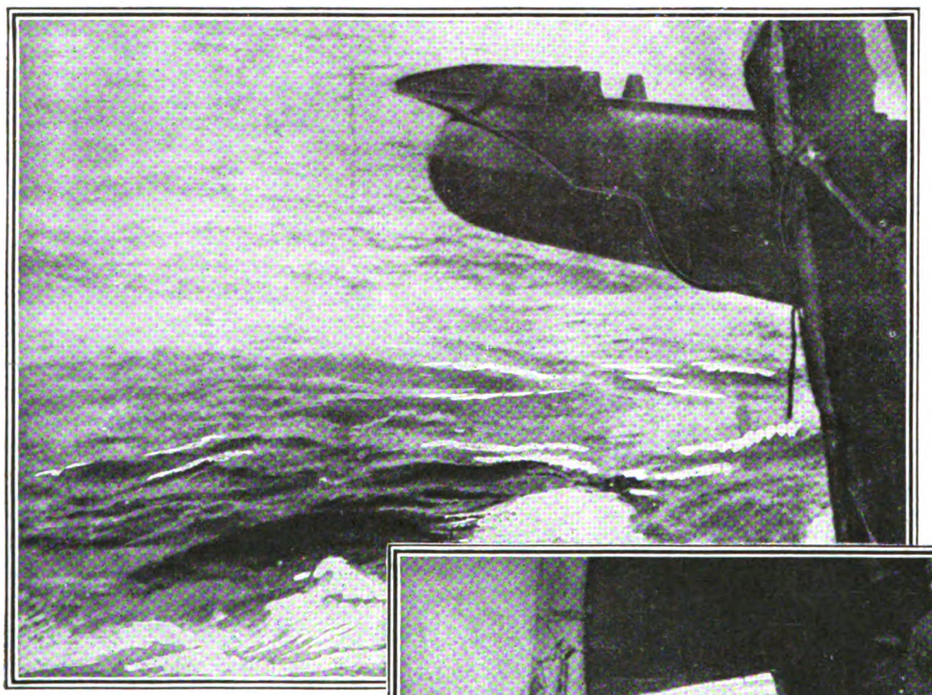
THE ANTI-GERMAN DEMONSTRATIONS IN MILAN.

Demonstrations in the principal cities assumed serious proportions in the weeks immediately preceding Italy's entry into the war, and the Carabinieri were frequently called out to quell disorder, especially in Milan. The above photograph shows the destruction by fire of enemy property in front of the Palazzo Settentrionale, at Milan, by a populace enraged by the treatment of their countrymen in Austria and Germany.

Digitized by Google

From the 11th to the 14th the Interventionist demonstrations reached their maximum of violence. One or two German shops, some Austrian cafés, and so forth, were broken open and the contents destroyed in Milan, Venice, and elsewhere.

May 11th saw demonstrations throughout the country no longer of a "Garibaldian" character, but of violent indignation at the sinking of the Lusitania, and the Union Jack began to appear combined in one flag with the French, Russian, and Italian colours. On the evening of the 14th occurred the treacherous attack with revolvers upon the Interventionists issuing from the Porta Venezia,



WITH THE ITALIAN NAVY.
Italian destroyer discharging a torpedo.

and on the same day Giolitti, who had gone to Rome to take the measure of the situation, struck his last blow.

Gathering all the weight of his authority, all the influence of his years of dictatorship in and out of Parliament, he forced his supporters to a declaration that they would not support the Salandra Government in its existing form. This meant that when Signor Salandra should ask the House of Parliament (Chamber of Deputies) for a ratification of the measures already taken, and for the various votes necessary to give the Government a free hand for the prosecution of the war, he would meet, if Giolitti could make good his threats, an adverse majority.

It is doubtful, to say the least of it, whether Giolitti at this stage believed that war could be avoided. It is possible, as has already been suggested, that he would have preferred to fight the last "Italian War of Unity" himself; it is certain that when matters came to the point he found his power in the country shattered, his reputation, owing to the intrigues of Prince von Bülow, soiled, and his authority so blunted that he dared not take up again the reins of Government. Even after Signor Salandra and Baron Sonnino had expounded to him the situation as it had developed, he professed himself dissatisfied and refused to advise the King to continue to support the Salandra Ministry. Signor Salandra had no alternative. On May 14th he and his whole Ministry resigned.

Constitutionally the King was bound to attempt a compromise. Giolitti himself would not, or, as is more probable, dared not attempt to form a Ministry. Alternatives were tried without success, and meantime Italy, north and south, came nigh to civil war. Grim and determined men met in midnight conclaves to decide upon their course of action, and they decided that proof must be given at once that the country was in no mood to tolerate the intrigues of the German agents.

The colours of Trieste and the Trentino, even the banner of the House of Savoy, disappeared from men's caps. Printing presses worked all through the night of the 14th and the day of the 15th to turn out millions of little white cards bearing the inscription, "Death to Giolitti!" and huge red-white-and-green posters bearing the yet more significant warning "War or Republic!" In Rome a furious mob stormed the Parliament house and threw up barricades in the streets; and in Milan, Turin, and Genoa men prepared for fighting in the streets.



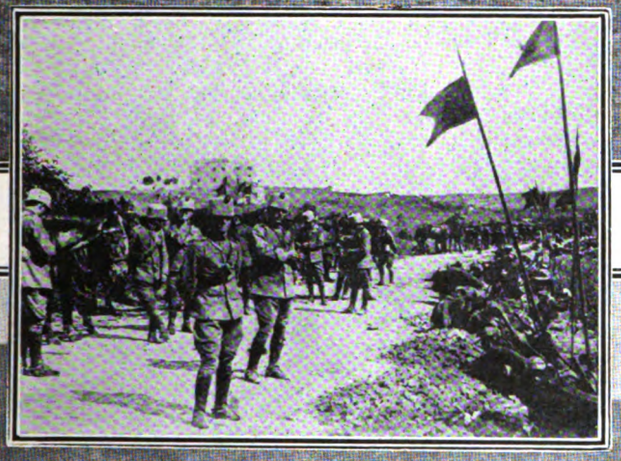
ABOARD AN ITALIAN DESTROYER.
A torpedo crew at work.

Let us go once more to the Piazza del Duomo, in Milan. It is afternoon. The sun is already low in the west, and the beautiful old brickwork of the Palace of Merchants is a red blaze of splendour. An immense crowd packs every corner of the square. Men are aloft on ladders along the colonnade of the Galleria; they have climbed on to the electric-light standards; they pack the windows and roofs of the four-storied houses and shops round the square, and still they are fighting their way in from the side streets.

Digitized by Google



FIRING THROUGH THE MIST ON THE MOUNTAIN SIDE.
Italian infantry in action on the northern frontier.





THE CAPTURE OF MONTE NERO.
Italian troops advancing to the assault. The smaller view shows an Italian artillery column taking a brief rest near the battle-front.

Digitized by Google

In the middle a great papier-mâché figure of Giolitti is lifted aloft on a pole, and angry men begin to harangue the crowd.

Now the doors of the cathedral are opened, and the congregation gathered to listen to Benediction swarm out from the cool, dim aisles into the roar and fury of the square. Suddenly the crowd begins to sway westwards. From both sides of the cathedral rows of grey-coated figures preceding the cocked hats of the Carabinieri (armed now with rifles) move in steady line towards the centre of the square; and, as they move, the crowd is pushed, shouting and struggling, towards the western approaches. Steadily the pressure is increased. The square is emptying, and as the last of the worshippers leave the cathedral the grey line of troops reaches the western side of the Piazza. But the work the crowd was appointed to do is done. Upon every pillar of the Colonnade, upon the tramway standards, upon the hoarding by the side of the cathedral, from the windows of the houses, and round the base of the statue of Victor Emmanuel II. flame out the placards, "O Guerra o Republica!" "War or Republic! Choose!"

And before night the message of Lombardy is flashed to Rome.

It is impossible in short space to hope to give any impression of the fury of the crowds which throughout Italy demanded the return of the Salandra Ministry. But there is no doubt that any alternative statesman who might have attempted in other circumstances to try to form a Cabinet must have recognised the warning that his first task would be to quell a civil war. And very wisely one and all refused to face a situation which called now for the one Ministry that the people would tolerate.

The peril of civil war

. . . . . .

Once more, and for the last time, we stand by the tomb of San Carlo in front of the high altar in the cathedral. For the last time the sun strikes through the wonderful "jewel-window" and throws coloured lights upon the





PICTURESQUE VIEW OF BERSAGLIERI CYCLISTS ON THE MARCH.
Inset is a striking camera portrait of an officer of Bersaglieri.

Digitized by Google



INVENTOR OF WIRELESS TELEGRAPHY AS SUB-LIEUTENANT.
Commendatore Marconi, who entered the Italian Army as a Sub-Lieutenant of Engineers, leaving his commander's headquarters after having taken the oath.

pavement. The voice of the beloved Cardinal, Archbishop Ferrara, delivers the message of the Gospel of humility from the great marble pulpit. There is a movement at the back of the cathedral, a stir of men moving excitedly towards the door, and presently, even as the Cardinal leaves the pulpit, someone whispers in men's ears "Salandra is recalled!"

Out once more into the blazing sunshine of the Piazza—out amongst the crowd sweeping again from every street into the great square, while from a thousand throats rises the long, sibilant cry, "Salandra—Sonnino!"

A white sheet, wet from the "Secolo" presses, is thrust into our hands. It contains three words—

"SALANDRA IS RECALLED!"

Once more the loud cry "Salandra—Sonnino!" is raised, and swiftly as it assembled the crowd begins to disperse.

From the distance a silver trumpet calls. It is the call to arms!

The call to arms

Any account of the entry of Italy into the war would be misleading which did not take account of the part played therein by the women of Italy. The record must not merely include the great work undertaken by ladies in connection with the volunteer nursing institutions, or in the preparation of bandages, or even in the care of the many refugees from Trieste and Trentino. These things have their parallels in every other country involved in the war, though Italy managed to invest them in some cases with a curiously characteristic charm. When war was declared one might pass down a dull street towards the Porta Venezia and looking through a "restored" Renaissance gateway catch sight of a garden scene which might have rejoiced Boccaccio. Under the wide-spreading trees of an ancient walled garden, or about the fountain of a pillared cortile, would be seen a pretty woman with the glorious Venetian colouring, surrounded by her friends, and sometimes her servants, sitting engaged upon some handiwork. And one or the other would be telling a story. But the handiwork would be the making of masks against gas-poisoning, and the stories would be of the departure of friends and relatives for the front. Elsewhere, within the red-brick walls of a convent close, the nuns would be at work while one of them read from the life of Pius IX. or perhaps the story of Pius X. and the Curé of Ars.

And every group was a picture. But these things are accidents of stage-setting and southern colouring. It is accident, for instance, that the Great War will be connected for ever in some memories with the sound of a guitar at midnight following a day of riot; in others, with the song of a Neapolitan boatman; and in others with a sudden swirl of printed news-sheets broadcasted over the packed seats of the great arena.

Attitude of Italian women

But the attitude of Italian women to this war was not accident. German spies in high quarters had urged that the women would rebel; that they would throw themselves in front of the troop-trains, as legend says they did once before. The reality proved how little these Germans knew of the "woman-country beloved of earth's male lands."

"Have ye not heard . . ." what the Queen-Mother replied to the violent message from Berlin? The Kaiser had telegraphed to Queen Margherita begging her to use her influence with her son, King Victor, in favour of Italian neutrality. She replied, "The House of Savoy reign one at a time."



FROM SILENCED AUSTRIAN HOWITZERS.
The pieces of exploded Austrian shell shown above, weighing just a hundredweight, were picked up by Italians somewhere along the frontier after a battery of Austrian howitzers had been silenced.

Digitized by Google

When the women—mothers, sisters, and wives—marched with their men through the streets to the station, men rarely or never heard the exhortation, "Take care of yourself"; it was always "Get yourself honour." In the women of Italy there was something of the Roman yet.

There is recorded the letter of a Venetian marchioness to her friend in Milan, all of whose sons had gone to the war. It begins and ends with the old Roman appeal to strength of heart and mind as well as of sinew. "Sia Forte!—Vale. Be strong. Think of your sons with love . . . but also with courage. You must be strong. It matters nothing if you suffer. Sia Forte."

It was the answer of the women of Italy to the Germans who maligned them.

As twelve finished striking on the night of May 24th little companies of the Alpini, Italy's famous mountaineers, set out from San Giorgio and Palmanova and Cividale on the eastern frontier; from Paluzza and San Stefano and Pieve in the north; from Agordo, Feltre, and Asiago; from Brentino and Malcesine towards and on Lake Garda; from Gargnano on the western shore of the lake, and from other points all along the mountain frontier up to the Stelvio Pass. They moved silently in single file; for silence is of the essence of Alpine fighting—silence and surprise.

After an hour or two of march they would be halted above a rocky spur where a deep trench was driven right and left. Then an officer would address them. "You can see for yourselves," he said, "what were our frontiers. You go forward to make new ones." There was an attempt at a cheer, suppressed instantly by the N.C.O.s, and then began the long, steep climb in Indian file, up narrow mountain-tracks with an overhanging rock on one side and a drop to a torrent on the other, through patches of snow knee-deep and hardly crisped by the night frost, or under the sudden violence of a terrific storm of sleet and rain which broke along the Trentino frontiers before dawn. So they climbed steadily, but even as dawn broke they hurled themselves forward upon a shelter-trench excavated in the autumn of 1914 upon the rocky plateau. It was empty. Some cooking utensils lay about, and in one place (on the Monte Altissimo) a mess of pottage was still warm in a pot over the ashes of a fire behind a spur of rock.

Austria's mountain shield

As the sun rose, lighting up the snow-peaks, the first Austrian guns from the rock-fortresses beyond crashed out their deadly salute!

At the beginning we saw that the Austro-Italian frontiers had been fixed so that they provided Austria with a convenient mountain shield for her assembly of troops and with mountain outposts whence her sentries might observe Italian movements of concentration below. Whether because the Italian declaration of war found her unprepared, or because—as is more probable—her first line of mountain defences was never intended to be more than an advanced guard, Austria practically did not defend certain of the heights which she had fortified in the autumn. Monte Altissimo, between Lake Garda and Ala in the railway valley (Val Lagarina) leading to Rovereto, was captured without a blow being struck. Similarly the troops in the east met with little real resistance until they reached the Isonzo, and, as we have seen, the conquest of the outlying Austrian positions was necessary in order to clear the Italian flanks. The Italians were able to reach Cervignano, Verso, and Cormons on the roads towards the great circuit of Austrian fortifications—Gorizia, Gradisca, Monfalcone—which are really the advanced works of Trieste, with very little fighting except against armed police and treacherous franc-tireurs.

Watch-towers taken by assault

Similarly, towards the Trentino, they occupied Cortina d'Ampezzo and Ala, and places on the main roads into the Trentino between these two without very severe fighting. And again, while the Austrians held their winter fortifications on the Stelvio and Tonale Passes in the west they abandoned their first line between the Val Giudicaria and Lake Garda.

It is probable—though this has not been clearly demonstrated—that even beyond the Isonzo valley the Austrians had not expected to do more than delay the Italian advance upon the fortified system called collectively Tolmino, and after the Italian troops had descended to the river at Caporetto orders were given for an immediate advance upon Tolmino.

But on the night of May 25th a terrific storm burst throughout the Alpine region. The weather broke up completely, and for nearly a week (May 25th to 31st) progress was almost impossible. This delay enabled the Austrians to bring up fresh supplies of men and guns and provisions, and resulted in Tolmino holding out for two months longer than either side had expected.

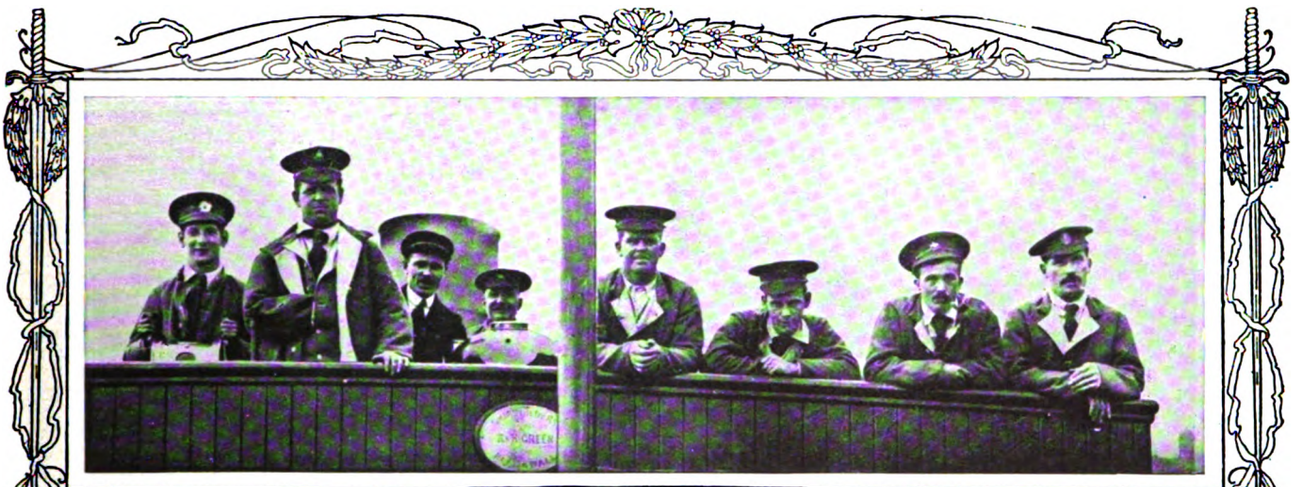
Between the Trentino and the Isonzo front runs, as was already explained at the outset, the mountain wall of the Carnic Alps. Here the Austrians held their first line, and it was only after stiff fighting—though, from the nature of the ground, with small bodies of men—that the Italians were able to take some of the Austrian watch-towers by assault, and some, as in the case of the Freikofel, by surprise.

In general, it may be said that it was not until the beginning of June that the Italians really began their long struggle to breach the second and strongest line of Austria's mountain ramparts and fortified strongholds.



IN THE ISONZO REGION: BRINGING UP RELIEF SECTIONS FROM THE BASE.

Digitized by Google



WOUNDED SOLDIERS ENJOYING A TRIP DOWN THE THAMES.

CHAPTER LXXI.

THE MARVELLOUS WORK OF THE RED CROSS.

How the Nation was Confronted by a Medical Problem of Appalling and almost Overwhelming Magnitude—"The Best Army Medical Service in the World" and its Thousands of Self-sacrificing Voluntary Workers at Home and in the Overseas Dominions—Rise and Equipment of the Hospital City—The Fleets of Motor-Ambulances and the New Hospital Trains—Organisation of the Casualty Clearing Houses, Hospitals, and Convalescent Homes—Tracing the Wounded and Missing—Work of the British Red Cross Society and the Order of St. John of Jerusalem—Noble Women and Brave Men—Heroic Services in the Field—Splendid Story of the Munro Ambulance at Dixmude—British Aid to Serbia.

THE work of the Red Cross in war is threefold—to prevent disease, to treat the wounded, and to heal the sick.

Twenty years ago the one business of the doctors with a fighting army was to treat the wounded. It was long before it was realised that for every soldier killed by shell or bullet three or four were incapacitated by preventable illness. Even as recently as the Boer War typhoid, not bullets, was the real scourge of our Army.

War creates disease. This has been shown in every big war in the history of the world; it was shown in the Great War. Old diseases, supposed to have been almost swept out of existence, revived. Spotted fever, a complaint mainly found among young soldiers, appeared in the autumn of 1914 in various parts of England. Filth diseases arose in various Continental countries, diseases directly caused by the sheer inability of the soldiers to change their clothing for long periods at a time or to keep themselves clean. Typhus swept over Serbia, claiming its victims wholesale. Tetanus (lock-jaw) complicated the early surgical work at the front to a serious degree, and necessitated widespread special precautions against it. It was supposed to be due to infection from the highly cultivated Belgian soil. In the winter months frost-bite, previously almost unknown to British doctors, attacked numbers of men in the trenches. Then the presence of large armies over a very narrow area of ground for nearly a year at a time brought its own menace. Many scores of thousands of bodies of the victims of war lay in the fields and trenches and in the choked canals of Flanders and Northern France. It was not always possible even to bury them. Decaying bodies mean contagion and give rise to epidemics.

Add to this the new problems of surgery, caused by the complicated and often poisoned wounds from bombs and from high-explosive shells. The tortures of the poisoned victims of German asphyxiating gas lent a horror hitherto unknown to war. Our Army doctors had to care not only for the great armies at the front, but for over two million new troops at home. Our medical and surgical resources, taxed as never before for our own needs, were further largely drawn upon for the relief of some of our Allies, more particularly for Belgium and Serbia. Obviously the medical problem suddenly created by the Great War was one of appalling and almost overwhelming magnitude.



Elliott & Fry.

SURGEON-GENERAL SIR ARTHUR SLOGGETT.
Of the admirable work of Sir Arthur Sloggett and all branches of the medical services in the field under his direction Sir John French repeatedly expressed his warm appreciation.

The British Army Medical Service was at the outset, for its size, among the finest and most efficient known. One of the greatest medical authorities of our time, Sir Frederick Treves, made opportunity in the early days of 1915 to bear his testimony to the magnificent way in which it did its work. "It is, I believe," he said, "the best Army Medical Service in the world. When the story comes to be told, it will be found that its work is not merely admirable, it is marvellous."

But the British Army Medical Service was maintained on the basis of having to deal with a few thousand wounded men. Careful preparations had been made for expansion in time of war, but

Digitized by Google

no one anticipated hostilities with hundreds of thousands of sick and wounded requiring treatment within a few months. The service was ill-equipped with ambulances. Doctors had suddenly to be drawn from every part. Trained workers, nurses, and ambulance men had to be found by the ten thousand; hospitals had to be constructed to hold vast armies of patients; hospital cities had to be planned; great fleets of cars were required to convey the wounded from the front; and a vast supply of material had to be quickly produced, from iodine for the antiseptic treatment of wounds to artificial limbs, in quantities undreamt of before.

The necessary work was accomplished by the co-operation of all possible forces. The chief of these—the responsible directing organisation—was the Army Medical Department. This department sought and welcomed the assistance of the numerous volunteer organisations, most of them under the direction of the British Red Cross Society and the Order of St. John of Jerusalem in England. Vast stations for the wounded sprang up as though by magic. During the rapid movements in the early days of the war when, it seemed for a time, that the German army would take possession of the whole of Northern France, our medical base had to be moved from place to place. Then Boulogne, the great pleasure city on the Strait of Dover, was made the British Continental base, and Etaples close by was transformed into a hospital city, planned to receive 50,000 wounded.

Vast stations for wounded

The Order of St. John provided in a few months 13,500 experienced ambulance and hospital workers. The Empire was scoured for fully-trained nurses, and in addition to these, hosts of women assistants were enrolled in Voluntary Aid Detachments. These V.A.D.'s, as they were known, were most of them accustomed, before the war began, to lives of leisure, ease, and plenty. They threw themselves into their unpaid mission with an enthusiasm and good-will that were the admiration of all who saw them. They became the assistants of the trained nurses, and counted nothing menial or unworthy in their work—from scrubbing floors to helping to dress hideous wounds. Without their aid the task of the nurses would have been almost impossible.



A WONDERFUL RUSSIAN MILITARY TRAIN.
Scene in the operating theatre on one of the Russian military trains. This train, in addition to being equipped for rendering every form of medical aid to wounded soldiers, had also bathing accommodation for the troops in the field.



BELGIAN PRIEST CONDUCTING EXHAUSTED SOLDIERS TO AN AMBULANCE.
A striking incident during the terrible fighting around Ypres.

Motor-ambulance cars were especially needed to carry the sick from the front to the hospital bases. In a few months over one thousand motor-ambulances were at work. Numerous hospital trains, some of them fitted with every convenience that could aid the lot of the wounded—from an operating theatre to an X-ray installation—were put on the rails in France. Hospital ships, painted a dazzling white and marked with immense red crosses to protect them from attack by enemy submarines or destroyers, moved across the waters, floating palaces for the sick.

Floating palaces for the sick

The work of a general in war is not to see after the wounded, but to defeat the enemy. If any great commander were to pause in his operations in order that the wounded might have better attention, or were to hold the advance of the supply of ammunition for guns at the front to make a way clear for the passage of the wounded to the base, he would be regarded as unfit for his command. War is a hard business. The wounded soldier is, from the point of view of the fighting commander, an encumbrance to be taken away as quickly as possible. This may sound harsh and unfeeling. But a little reflection will show that it is the only course possible. Hence it was that, when the British armies were fighting in Flanders, the first requirement in the medical treatment of the men was to get them away from the front immediately, and to leave the front clear for the real operations of war. Fortunately, the elaborate system of railways, the nearness of the fighting-line to the sea coast, and the growing supply of motor-cars made this possible to a very unusual degree.

Digitized by Google

When the First Expeditionary Force came in active contact with the Germans around Mons no one anticipated the terrible slaughter that occurred, the rapid retreats, and the armies of wounded demanding immediate attention. There was then no adequate force of motor-ambulances at the front. Had there been, large numbers of our wounded who fell into the hands of the enemy would have been saved.

Very much had been done to improve our medical service since the days of the Boer War. The progress, particularly in personnel, was enormous; but the tragic events of the great retreat revealed for the first time the full magnitude of the medical problem before the nation, and then the more elaborate equipments that we know to-day were quickly brought into being.

Medical organisation at work

Let us see how the medical organisation worked. Start at the beginning, with the soldier in the field. Every soldier carried with him a simple first-aid equipment for hastily bandaging any wounds.

In the heat of the battle the wounded had often enough to wait for some time where they fell. On some occasions wounded British and Germans fell in the same trench, and the men who an hour or two before had been seeking one another's lives, now, as they lay broken and bleeding, sought to afford one another aid.

An interesting picture of such a scene was given by a young French cavalry officer as he lay dying in a trench. He had strength enough before he passed away to write a message to his wife describing the end:

There are two other men lying near me, and I do not think there is much hope for them, either. One is an officer of a Scottish regiment, and the other a private in the Uhlans. They were struck down after me, and when I came to myself I found them bending over me, rendering first-aid. The Britisher was pouring water down my throat from his flask, while the German was endeavouring to stanch my wound with an antiseptic preparation served out to their troops by the medical corps. The Highlander had one of his legs shattered, and the German had several pieces of shrapnel buried in his side.

In spite of their own sufferings, they were trying to help me; and when I was fully conscious again the German gave us a morphia injection, and took one himself. His medical corps had also provided him with the injection and the needle, together with printed instructions for their use. After the injection, feeling wonderfully at ease, we spoke of the lives we had lived before the war. We all spoke English, and we talked of the women we had left at home. Both the German and the Britisher had been married only a year. . . . I wondered—and I suppose the others did—why we had fought each other at all.

French officer's dying words

I looked at the Highlander, who was falling to sleep exhausted, and in spite of his drawn face and mud-stained uniform, he looked the embodiment of freedom. Then I thought of the Tricolour of France and all that France had done for liberty. Then I watched the German, who had ceased





AGONY FOR WHICH THERE MIGHT BE SOME AMELIORATION BUT SELDOM A CURE.

Two pathetic camera-records of Russian soldiers tortured by German poison gas. The larger view is of a Russian field hospital just after the sufferers had been brought in from the trenches. In the smaller photograph Russian nurses are seen offering soothing drinks to the victims of Germany's diabolic form of warfare.

Digitized by Google

to speak. He had taken a prayer-book from his knapsack, and was trying to read a service for soldiers wounded in battle. And . . . while I watched him I realised what we were fighting for. . . . He was dying in vain, while the Britisher and myself, by our deaths, would probably contribute something toward the cause of civilisation and peace.

Often enough the wounded at the front were helped as they lay by doctors who advanced under fire and treated on the spot those who could not be moved. Many a doctor lost his life in this way, and many a doctor earned undying glory. There are few more splendid records than those of the eager young medicos who put regulations on one side and went where danger was greatest. They were unarmed, for the British Red Cross worker must not carry weapons. They knew that if the Germans came up suddenly and caught them their lot at the

Doctors earn undying glory



OUR WAR MINISTER CHATTING TO AN INDIAN HERO.
Lord Kitchener is seen conversing with Subadar Mir Dast, of the 55th Coke's Rifles, who won the V.C. in Flanders. With the War Secretary is Colonel J. N. Macleod, commandant of the hospital for wounded Indian soldiers at Brighton.

best would be long imprisonment, and at the worst might be torturing death. The Germans largely ignored the regulations of the Geneva Convention, providing for the protection of doctors and Red Cross workers. Doctors left behind in retirements were often enough treated as ordinary prisoners of war, and sent to Germany for long periods of confinement before they were exchanged. Hospitals floating the Red Cross were on innumerable occasions subjected to the heaviest fire. Doctors were shot and stabbed on the field when on their work of mercy. There is too much evidence that often this was not accidentally but purposely done, possibly to wreak individual spite against the hated English. Cases were reported at different times where Germans used the Red Cross as protection when bringing concealed weapons—machine-guns and the like—to the front.

Among the known cases of doctors who won the Victoria Cross a few may be mentioned. Captain H. S. Ranken was attending to the wounded on the battlefield at Hautvesnes on September 19th and September 20th, 1914, when he was severely wounded himself, his thigh and leg being shattered. He hastily attended to his wounds, trying to stem the flow of blood, and then turned again to the others struck down around him, treating them until he could do no more. Then, and not till then, he let himself be carried to the rear. The delay and the efforts he had made after receiving his wounds proved fatal. He died shortly afterwards.

Lieutenant A. M. Leake earned the Victoria Cross in 1902 in the South African War. Early in the Great War he was given the further extraordinary honour of a clasp for bravery. In the fighting around Zonnebeke while exposed to constant fire he rescued a large number of wounded who were lying close to the enemy's trenches. Lieutenant Leake's exploit aroused widespread interest. Men recalled his previous doings. He earned his Victoria Cross while tending the wounded under heavy fire from forty Boers at one hundred yards' range at Vlakfontein. He was then shot three times, but refused water to relieve his own thirst until six or eight wounded comrades had some.

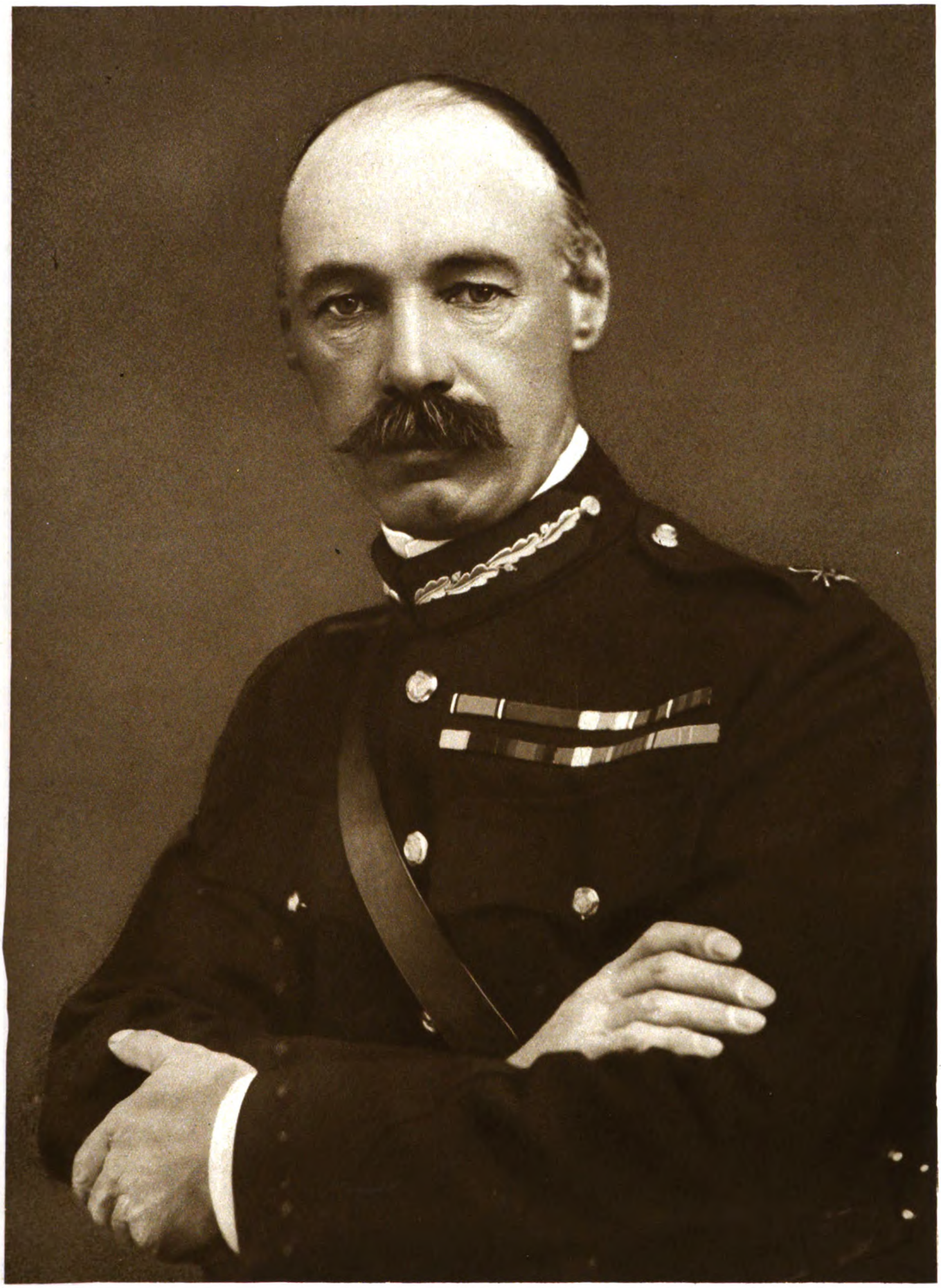
Another V.C. hero was Captain F. A. C. Scrimger, of Montreal, one of the Canadian Contingent. Captain Scrimger was in charge of an advanced dressing station outside Ypres on April 22nd, the day when the Germans made their great attack and employed asphyxiating gas for the first time. The dressing station was some old farm buildings. Suddenly these became the target for the German artillery. Shell after shell came crashing around. Captain Scrimger carefully directed the removal of the wounded. One officer was lying severely wounded in a stable. The doctor picked him up and carried him under fire as far as possible. At last it was impossible to go farther, so Captain Scrimger remained by him, exposed to the full fury of the battle, until help could be obtained. Then the captain turned to other cases, and during the anxious days when the Canadians by their grand and stubborn stand held back the Germans north-east of Ypres, he made himself prominent even in that army of heroes by his day and night devotion to his duty among the wounded at the front.

Sometimes the wounded man lay waiting on the field until he recovered consciousness, and then rolled or stumbled or dragged himself to the rear, or until he found someone to help him along. Often enough he was picked up by the ambulance workers, or by one of the army chaplains, men whose heroism won universal admiration. These ambulance men and padres exposed themselves freely. It was their business to carry the wounded back to the regimental aid station, where the waiting doctor gave quick first-aid treatment. This post was possibly in a barn or in a dug-out, and was usually exposed to the enemy's fire. The Red Cross, unfortunately, was in many cases worse than no protection; German gunners, time after time, seemed to seek it out as a target for their shells.

Heroic ambulance men

There was no time at the first-aid post, particularly when a big fight was on, to give more than the most necessary immediate treatment, quick bandaging, and the administration of a restorative, or possibly an opiate. Then the patient was sent on as soon as possible, by motor-ambulance or in any way possible, to the nearest dressing station. The motor-ambulance men in the front line of the armies had a task as dangerous and as exacting as the most adventurous heart could desire. Time after time, more particularly in the early days, it was their lot to clear the wounded out of villages during retreats, when the enemy's advancing guards were almost on them. Many of them showed a daring scarcely possible to exaggerate in taking their cars into the front fighting-lines.

Digitized by Google



Lieut.-General Sir Henry S. Rawlinson, K.C.B., commanding the Fourth Army Corps.

Digitized by Google



German trenches on Braunkopf Hill, Alsace, bombarded by the French



The Braunkopf, stormed and taken by the French, June 20th, 1915.

Digitized by Google



German trenches on the Braunkopf under fire just before the assault.



Victorious French gunners firing German machine-gun from a captured trench.

Digitized by Google



With a British battery at the front: The tense moment when an order arrives by field telephone from the observation officer.

Digitized by Google

It was their business first to get the wounded down to the nearest dressing station, and often when the task seemed impossible they accomplished it.

The cold official records of the military decorations bestowed for distinguished conduct tell of many deeds of heroism among the doctors and men of the Royal Army Medical Department. One of the first was Private T. Giles, who was given the Distinguished Conduct Medal for his action on October 26th, 1914, when time after time he carried the wounded over fire-swept ground from the collecting station to the ambulance-waggon.

A few days afterwards Captain James Steward Dunne won a Companionship of the Distinguished Service Order for his gallantry at Messines. He established a dressing station just behind the trenches, and went repeatedly into the trenches to attend to wounded men who could not be moved. Captain Patrick Sampson earned the same decoration for his frequent and conspicuous gallantry while on medical work.

On November 12th two privates in the medical service were given the Distinguished Conduct Medal. One of these, Private N. Freshwater, won it by gallantry in leading a party of stretcher-bearers in daylight under heavy rifle fire over a quarter of a mile to bring back wounded. The other, Private J. Kendrick, was in charge of a small house near the front, with two wounded British soldiers and five very badly wounded Germans under his charge. It was impossible to remove them. Heavy fighting was proceeding all round. The man stood by his charges. He gave all his own rations and his water to the wounded men, and then he went out into the open, in the heart of the fighting, and reached the nearest outpost, under fire, endeavouring to procure some more water for them.

Sergeant A. E. Joseph received the medal for his work around Veldhoek. He went out in the woods night after night where the fighting was heaviest and gathered up the wounded who had fallen there.

The list of December 17th, 1914, contained the names of five members of the medical service who had won the medal by their gallantry in tending the wounded under circumstances of exceptional danger. One of these, Private A. Burns, remained in an evacuated dressing station tending dangerously wounded men under continuous fire for forty-eight hours. The position was subsequently recaptured and the men were saved.

On January 18th, 1915, nine men attached to the medical service were decorated. Of these, Sergeant F. Woodward was in a room at Kemmel attending to the wounded when a shell burst and he was stunned by the concussion. When he recovered consciousness he resumed the care of his patients. Private W. J. Matthews collected the wounded under heavy shell fire until he himself was severely wounded.

Gallant deeds under fire

In February Captain F. M. Loughnan won the Military Cross for assisting to rescue the wounded while exposed to heavy shell fire. In the following month Lieutenant Eric C. Lang was decorated for his bravery in rushing forward in full view of the enemy, picking up an officer whom he had seen fall badly wounded and bringing him in.

Dr. Campbell Greenlees, temporary lieutenant, was made a Companion of the Distinguished Service Order for his services in attending to the wounded under very heavy fire at Neuve Chapelle. He had twice previously, before this, been brought to notice for similar acts of gallantry. Another doctor, Lieutenant J. G. Priestly, gained the Military Cross at Neuve Chapelle for his continual attendance on the wounded with great gallantry, while he himself was badly wounded.

In a shelled dressing-station

In the list for March 29th the name of Lieutenant T. W. Clarke was given for the Military Cross. He was at Neuve Eglise on March 5th, with the 14th Field Ambulance dressing station, when the station was destroyed by shell fire. One officer and five men were killed, and nineteen wounded. Lieutenant Clarke was among the wounded, having been struck by the first shell, but he continued to attend on the others until he collapsed.

At Neuve Chapelle in March Lieutenant A. C. Hincks earned the Military Cross for his conspicuous gallantry and devotion in collecting wounded while under fire.



WITH THE R.A.M.C. IN THE NEAR EAST.
Stretcher-party carrying wounded from the firing-line in Gallipoli.

One act of Lieutenant Hincks stood out specially. On the night of March 13th and 14th, while he was attending to a wounded man, a shell struck the ambulance-waggon, killing the man and rendering Lieutenant Hincks unconscious. On recovering he at once proceeded to collect the wounded under fire and continued to do so throughout the night.

Dr. J. M. Gillespie, a temporary lieutenant in the Army Medical Corps, won the Military Cross at Ypres on May 24th and 25th by dressing the wounded in the open under fire. On the night of May 25th he heard that there were some British wounded close to the German trenches near Bellegarde Farm. He crept up and searched for them right under the German lines. He had as his colleague Temporary-Lieutenant J. H. McNicholl, who saved the lives of many men by attending to them under heavy rifle and shell fire, and who went with Dr. Gillespie in the perilous journey in the woods. "He has shown the greatest courage in attending to the wounded in action," said the official report.

A writer in "The Times" gave a picture of the work of danger of the men of the convoys when sent to collect the wounded from the first-aid posts:

Digitized by Google



"GIVE UNTO THY SERVANTS THAT PEACE WHICH THE WORLD CANNOT GIVE."

Wounded soldiers from Gallipoli and their nurses attending a church service in No. 2 General Hospital, Cairo.



WAITING FOR THE HOSPITAL TRAIN.

Mrs. Goodchild, who worked voluntarily as chauffeur, with her own motor-ambulance in Cairo.



OUTSIDE THE RAILWAY STATION AT CAIRO.

Wounded British and Colonial soldiers, after reaching Cairo from the Dardanelles, completed their painful journey to the hospitals in Red Cross motor-cars.

In this convoy work there is a considerable element of danger, particularly when, as sometimes happens in great pressure, the ambulances are sent to collect the wounded at the first-aid posts.

Yet it is the ambition of every man serving at the base to go out with a convoy, and the men who have had the good fortune to go have shown admirable pluck under trying conditions.

Once the first-aid post was an old cottage just behind the trenches. Shells and bullets were falling all around it, and to reach it the convoy has to rush a very dangerous piece of open ground. Under the shelter of the cottage walls they were able to load up the ambulances in comparative safety. As an ambulance left this shelter a shell burst in front of it, but a moment later the car emerged unharmed from a cloud of smoke and dust.

Clearing the field hospitals

The clearing of the field hospitals is scarcely less dangerous. The convoy is often working along a road which is daily under fire, and the hospitals have to be frequently evacuated while the shells are falling perilously near. . . . The sections have at times to work at night where no lights are allowed, and great care and skill are required to avoid serious accidents. It is much to the credit of the drivers that very few casualties have occurred, although occasionally cars have had to be pulled out of ditches or shell holes under fire. At the present moment a section of one of the convoys is stationed in a town which is being continually bombarded, both by shell and aeroplane bomb. The men are billeted in a house without a single window, and only a few days ago a shell fell in the yard of the house and made a hole big enough to bury a horse in. In another town, quite recently, a bomb was dropped in the midst of three ambulances which had been drawn up outside the convoy headquarters. Fortunately the drivers had entered the building to obtain new brassards, but the cars were brought into Boulogne riddled with shrapnel bullets.

At the dressing station the men received more thorough treatment than was possible at the advanced post. The patient had his wound dressed and stitched, and was injected with anti-tetanic serum to prevent lock-jaw, the most dreaded plague of the wounded in the early days. Then he was moved still farther back, where he was given food and drink; and then he was passed on by motor-ambulance to the casualty clearing station.

This station was often enough at a rail-head, or in an old railway station waiting-room. There were Army Nursing Sisters here as well as doctors. The nurses had sought in vain the privilege of going nearer the front. To stand at one of these stations for a few hours, as the writer of this chapter has done, and to see the wounded brought in during the progress of a heavy fight, in almost

Digitized by Google



THE MERRY HEART THAT "GOES ALL THE DAY."
A happy camera impression of a ward at Lunar Park Hospital, Cairo. In spite of their pain our men displayed the traditional British "grit."

constant procession, was to witness one of the saddest sights of war. The men had their wounds bound up, and possibly had been operated upon already. Many of them were under the influence of morphia, or so worn out by the shock or fatigue of their wounds that they could scarcely open their eyes. In the height of a great engagement some of the busiest of these stations handled as many as a thousand men a day.

The casualty clearing station was supposed to be nothing but a clearing-house from which the patients were rapidly transferred by hospital train or by motor-ambulance to the base or to England. A certain proportion of the cases, however, were always so badly wounded that it was impossible to send them farther, so they had to rest for a time here. The others went on, some to Boulogne, some to Etaples, and many straight on to England. All were most carefully watched by doctors and nurses in the train and in the boats all the way. Frequently a man wounded in Belgium on the morning of one day would on the afternoon of the following day be landed from a hospital ship at Dover, and from there would be carefully conveyed by special train to one or other of the establishments waiting to receive him all over the country.

Marvels of organisation

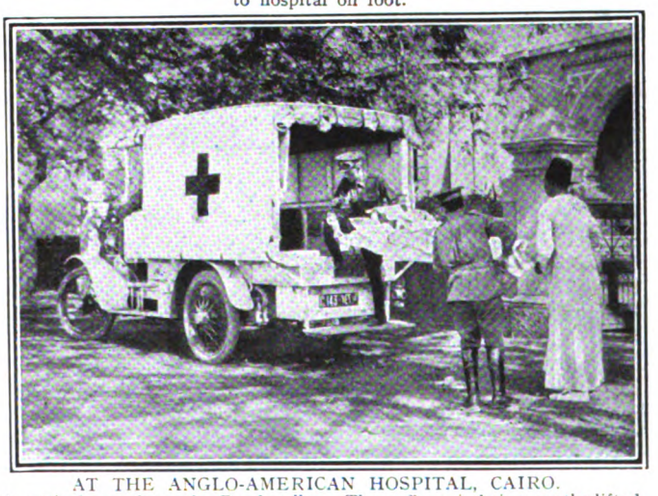
Sometimes even this record was beaten. There was one case of a Highlander, wounded during an attack at the front in the early hours of the morning, who was treated on the spot, hurried to the casualty clearing station hospital, taken down to the base, put on board ship, washed, dressed, reclothed in hospital kit, made comfortable, given a good meal, landed in England early in the afternoon, and put to bed in an English hospital, smiling and happy despite his wound, twelve hours after he was struck by the fragment of shell in the trenches.

The work of distributing the wounded in England was centralised and arranged with the utmost exactitude. It demanded and received the greatest care, so that no possible accommodation was allowed to go to waste, and no excess of patients was allowed to be sent to any one point.

In the summer of 1915 the most adequate idea of the scope and character of the Red Cross work could perhaps be best obtained at Boulogne. Most English people who



ANOTHER VIEW OUTSIDE CAIRO RAILWAY STATION.
Some of our men from the Gallipoli cockpit were able to finish their journey to hospital on foot.



AT THE ANGLO-AMERICAN HOSPITAL, CAIRO.
A critical case from the Dardanelles. The sufferer is being gently lifted from an ambulance at the gates of the Anglo-American Hospital, Cairo, which was reserved for wounded officers.

Digitized by Google



IN A HOSPITAL KITCHEN.
The above photograph was taken in one of the hospitals in France while dinner was being prepared for the patients.



WOMEN CHAUFFEURS ON RED CROSS SERVICE.
"Les chauffeuses" proved careful as well as expert motorists in France, and released many men for active service in the trenches.

have travelled on the Continent know Boulogne as it was, with its gay Casino on the sea front, its numerous hotels given up in summer time to pleasure seekers, its picturesque fisher folk, and its delightful surroundings. Boulogne strove with Ostend and Scheveningen in the old days for the right to be regarded as the premier pleasure resort of the north. In the early weeks of the war it seemed as though Boulogne would fall into German hands. When, however, the advancing Franco-British armies reoccupied the line of Flanders to the sea, Boulogne quickly developed as a hospital centre. In the great days of October and November, 1914, when the culminating German attack in the direction of Calais was made and failed, Boulogne was for the moment almost overwhelmed with the numbers of wounded poured into it. Tens of thousands fell along the front. Hospital trains, as full as they could be, and motor-ambulances packed with wounded, brought their burdens here, three and four thousand men a day.

Boulogne Casino as a hospital

Then it was that the medical and Red Cross authorities showed their skill in organisation. The big Casino was taken over, and the halls that had rung with the cries of the croupiers and of the players of petits chevaux now were filled with long lines of beds for the wounded. Hotels, one of them scarce completed and not yet open for visitors, were also taken over. In addition to those in Boulogne itself, numerous other establishments were opened at Wimereux, Tréport, Le Touquet, Abbéville, and other surrounding resorts. One monster warehouse close to the railway was cleared, partitioned, and in an incredibly short time was in complete working order and full of patients. Armies of nurses and doctors came over—Territorial nurses, Dominion nurses, Red Cross nurses, and nurses attached to private organisations. All day long ambulances rushed through the streets. The most prominent ships in the harbour were the big, white-painted Red Cross steamers for the wounded.

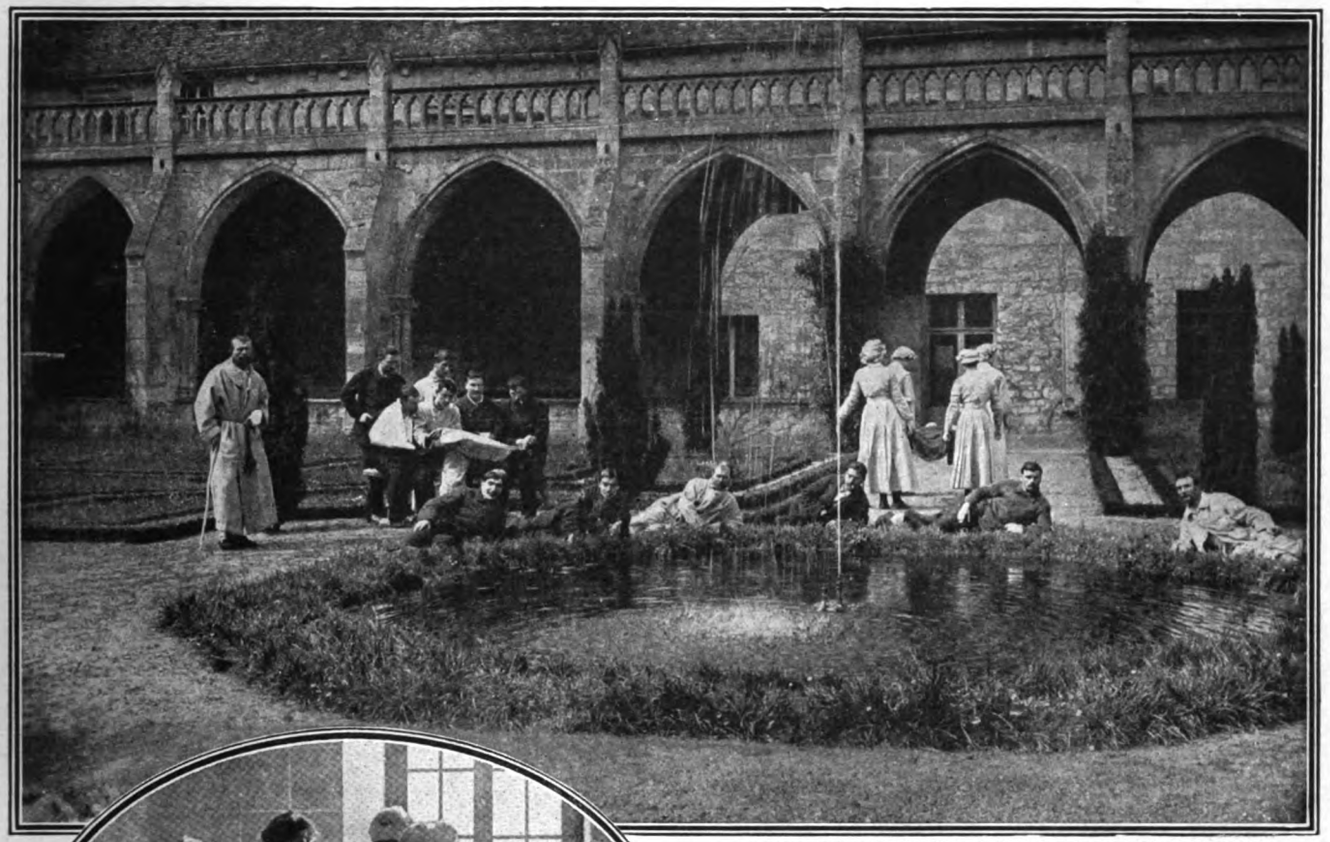
Some of the greatest and most famous surgeons and physicians in England abandoned their practices and settled in the district, under Government orders, going as consultants and as chief operating surgeons from hospital to hospital. Research departments were opened, under the direction of word-famous pathologists, in order that the immense material available might not go to waste.

Our duty in days to come

The real tragedy of the place could perhaps best be felt by the visitor to the great Casino hospital. The vast chambers there held line after line of beds, as close together as they could well be placed. The lofty halls, the gaily painted walls, and the air of luxury, ease, and reckless enjoyment which still clung oddly about the place, seemed strangely out of keeping with the work going on. From the great broad windows the patients gazed out on to the sea, with the shores of England little more than an hour's journey away. The visitor could not fail to be impressed by the signs of good, kindly management everywhere. At the Casino, as in almost every hospital great or small where our wounded went, doctors and nurses did everything that kindness, sympathy, and admiration could devise to make them comfortable, to keep them happy, and make them well. Those who lost their dear ones in the Army hospitals during the war at least have the consolation of knowing that in their last days they had the best their country could give them. Red tape, officialism, and formalism were as largely as possible swept on one side.

Here were lads and men, drawn from every part, companions in common suffering. The lad from Sutherlandshire, never, alas! to raise his head from his pillow again, summoned a sudden smile as the visitor talked to him, not of battlefields, but of his old home on the Highland hills. The young London clerk, three months ago keeping office hours in Lombard Street, gazed ruefully at his bandaged

Digitized by Google



OLD-WORLD FRENCH ABBEY AS ARMY HOSPITAL.

The above beautiful camera-picture was taken in the grand courtyard of the Abbaye de Royaumont, Oise, where many of the wounded were nursed back to health and strength.



SIR JOHN FRENCH'S SISTER AS HOSPITAL NURSE.

Mrs. Harley (sister of the British Commander-in-Chief in France) conversing with wounded French soldiers in the garden of the Abbaye de Royaumont, which was converted into a military hospital under the personal charge of Mrs. Harley and a number of society ladies who gave their services voluntarily. Inset is a view of an operating theatre which suggests a striking contrast to the surgical methods of an older time.

Digitized by Google



ROYALTY AND THE RED CROSS.
Queen Elena arriving at Florence on a Rome Red Cross "special" to inspect the hospitals for Italian wounded.

arm, and wondered if the doctors were merely trying to comfort him when they told him he would soon be all right again. From the corner, where the screens were drawn around a bed, came sounds of groaning. "The poor fellow is quite unconscious," the doctor murmured. "We have done all we can. It will soon be all over." Here were many who would soon be well—for the great majority of the wounded recover. Some would recover only to go into the world maimed for life. Standing in that great ward, the moans of the dying seemed to mingle with echoes of the old cries of the croupiers that had so often sounded there: "Faites vos jeux, messieurs!—faites vos jeux!" For some here, at least, the game had been played.

It would have been well if all Englishmen and Englishwomen remaining at home could have seen wards such as these. They would then have been enabled to realise, as perhaps never before, the solemn duty of our nation in the years to come to care for those men who gave their best for their country, their health, their limbs, and their full power of providing for themselves.

In times of peace comparatively little is heard of the great voluntary organisations whose business it is to keep the machinery always going for dealing with the wounded when war breaks out. Best known of these is the Red Cross Society, taking its name from the familiar symbol—the reversal of the colours of the Swiss national flag—denoting everywhere throughout the Christian world work for the sick and wounded.

Up to 1905 two organisations, covering to some extent the same field, were in this country—the National Aid Society and the Red Cross Council. The first was founded by Lord Wantage, himself a gallant and famous soldier, who had won his Victoria Cross in the Crimean War, and who knew, from life in the field, the sufferings of the wounded and sick in a campaign, and the need to help them.

Vital need of voluntary aid

Lord Wantage's idea has been the note of the Red Cross work since. It was well expressed in Lady Wantage's "Memoir" of her husband:

> What he (Lord Wantage) saw and experienced during that campaign (the Crimean War) impressed itself deeply on his mind; he realised that, however well organised an Army Medical Service may be, it never has been, and never will be, able to cope adequately with the sudden emergencies of war on a large scale, and he held that voluntary organisations, unimpeded by official restrictions, are alone capable of giving auxiliary relief and of providing extra comforts and luxuries with the requisite promptitude and rapidity. He felt, moreover, that the British people would always insist on taking a personal share in alleviating the sufferings of their soldiers, and that some recognised and authorised channel through which public generosity could flow was a matter of paramount importance.

The National Aid Society did magnificent work in the twenty-five years of its life, raising and spending half a million of money. In 1898 the Central British Red Cross Council was formed by the authorities representing the War Office, the Admiralty, and various voluntary bodies. Experience in the Boer War showed that the dual organisation was capable of great improvement, and in 1905, on the direct suggestion of Queen Alexandra and of the late King Edward, the two were joined together as the British Red Cross Society, a body wholly voluntary, and in times of peace wholly independent of the War Office and the Admiralty.

This organisation was formally reorganised by our own Government under the Geneva Convention as being responsible for this work. One part of its activities in times of peace was to organise Voluntary Aid Detachments, to train men as stretcher-bearers and as male nurses, and to instruct women in first-aid and in the elements of nursing. It also drew up schemes for dealing with contingencies that might arise. For example, it elaborated a plan, in conjunction with the Territorial organisations, for medical services in case of the invasion of this country.

A famous foundation

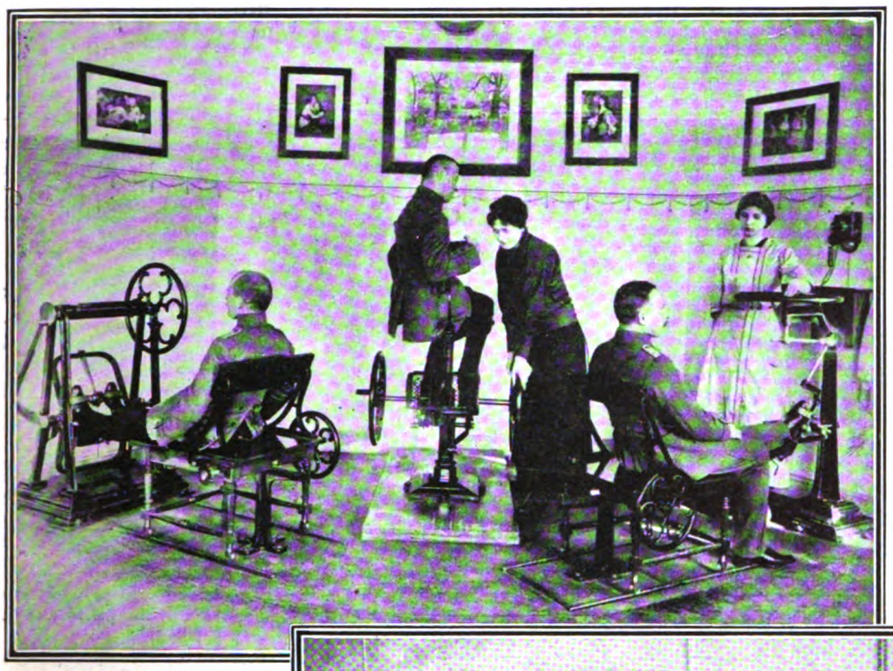
Working independently of the Red Cross Society was another body, the Order of St. John of Jerusalem, more generally known as the St. John's Ambulance Brigade. This order claims descent from a famous foundation which arose in the earliest days of the twelfth century, with the object of giving shelter and assistance to pilgrims to the Holy Land, who were at that time suffering under the heel of the Turk.

Its task to-day is very different. From its home at St. John's Gate, in Clerkenwell, it organised ambulance brigades which are a familiar feature in most parts of England. It had, in the days before the war, some 30,000 members who had secured their certificates in first-aid, who worked under discipline, and many of whom had been given a certain amount of training each year in War Office

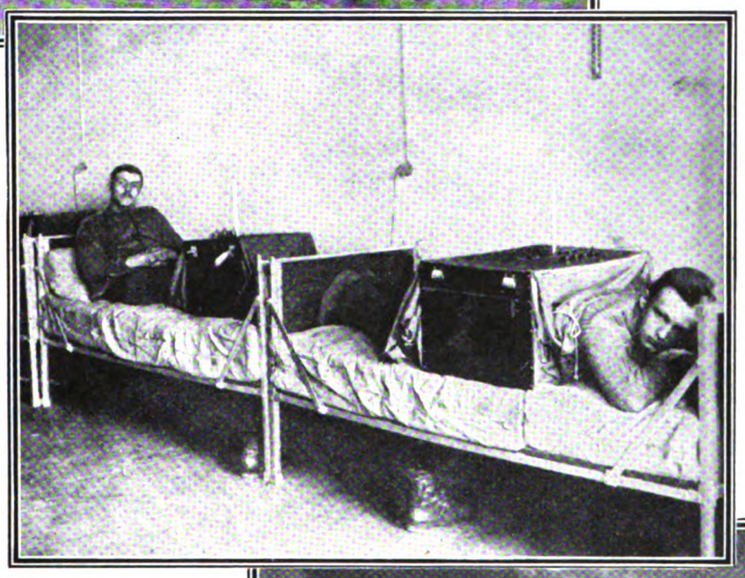


ITALIAN HEIR-APPARENT HELPING THE RED CROSS CAUSE.
The Prince of Piedmont, the only son of the King of Italy, selling postcards in the Quirinal at Rome for the benefit of the Italian Red Cross. He is seen attended by a guard of Boy Scouts.

Digitized by Google



German officers under special electrical treatment.



Strange electrical apparatus in use in a German military hospital.

and Admiralty hospitals on the understanding that they should offer themselves should war break out.

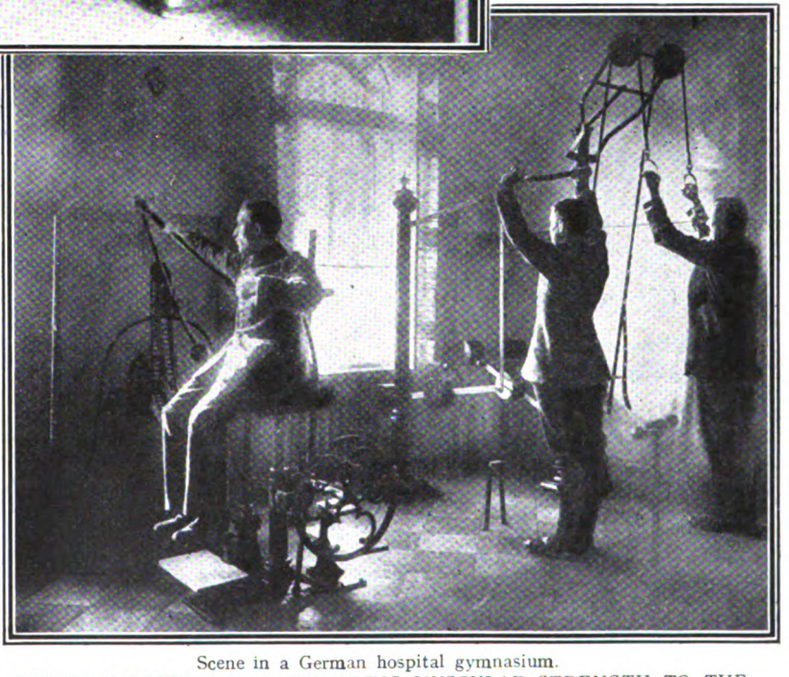
At the start of the war the authorities appealed to the St. John's Ambulance Brigade for volunteers. There was an immediate response. The Ambulance volunteers enabled the members of the Royal Army Medical Corps to be released from home work and to go out with the Expeditionary Force. In addition, some six hundred and fifty St. John's Ambulance men were mobilised and sent out with the force. The services of these St. John's Ambulance workers and of other voluntary workers secured by the Order of St. John were of unquestioned value.

It became evident at the beginning of the war that these voluntary bodies would have to expand their activities to a degree undreamed of before, and would further have to raise money on a previously unknown scale. A joint War Committee was formed of the British Red Cross and the Order of St. John, and the task of raising the money was undertaken, at the request of Lord Rothschild, the President of the Joint Committee, by "The Times."

A magnificent donation of £20,000 from Mr. William Waldorf Astor practically started the fund. Public organisations at home and in the Dominions helped liberally, and all manner of schemes for raising the funds were devised. Thus there was a great sale at Christie's, lasting many days, of works of art and of curios. People of every rank, from the King to the humble private citizen, picked out some of the choicest of their treasures and sent them for the sale.

The King sent a superb wheel-lock sporting rifle, dated 1646. The Queen gave a handsome tortoise-shell fan with eagles' feathers and set with her monogram in diamonds. One peer sent a genuine Strad. A famous millionaire sent a splendid Elizabethan tiger-ware jug. One giver sent the seal of Mary Queen of Scots, another a Highland pistol once used by Prince Charlie. Still another gave five pages of Dickens's original manuscript of the "Pickwick Papers." There were great pictures, rare autographs, splendid prints—in all, a veritable museum. A very large sum was realised. By the latter part of February "The Times" was able to announce that the amount subscribed had passed a million pounds, and by midsummer the total had exceeded a million and a half, a larger sum, it is believed, than was ever raised in public charitable subscription before. The nearest approach to it was the Mansion House Transvaal War Fund, which reached a final total of £1,131,860.

As a result of "The Times" undertaking the collection of the necessary money, the leaders of the Red Cross movement were set free to give their whole attention to the essential work of providing for those stricken in the war. In too many cases the leaders of great charities are mainly absorbed, of



Scene in a German hospital gymnasium.

PRUSSIAN DEVICES FOR RESTORING MUSCULAR STRENGTH TO THE WOUNDED BY MEANS OF ELECTRICITY.

Digitized by Google

necessity, in raising money to do their work, rather than in the work itself. This was avoided here.

The first great task that fell to the Red Cross was the sudden improvisation of a fleet of motor-transports. Old horse-ambulances were still being used. Their slowness, jolting, and inadequacy were responsible for much needless suffering among the wounded. If it were possible, wounded men were taken down from the front in the motor-waggons which had brought up stores. These motor-waggons were almost springless, accentuating every jolt in the road, particularly on the pavé roads of Northern France. They were trying enough for hardy and able-bodied men to travel in, but hideous for the wounded.

Money was asked for motor-ambulances. Within three weeks funds were raised to purchase over five hundred.



BRITISH GIFT TO THE FRENCH ARMY.

Mr. Walter Gibbons, chairman of the ambulance committee of the Automobile Association, presented to President Poincaré and the French Army Council thirty-one fully equipped motor-ambulances. Our photo shows the French President inspecting the cars at the Invalides, in Paris. Sir Francis Bertie, British Ambassador, is in the foreground and Mr. Gibbons just behind.

Motor manufacturers went to work day and night, and by the end of January, 1915, over a thousand motor-ambulances and other motor-vehicles were at work. An army of trained drivers had been enlisted to handle them, and over 100,000 patients had been carried in them.

Then the societies established a number of hospitals of their own. In France six were opened immediately around Boulogne, and three in or near Calais. The voluntary hospitals offered by British donors to the French and Belgian Governments were inspected and supervised.

Red Cross hospitals in England

The Red Cross established several hospitals in England itself. The largest of these was the King George's Hospital in Stamford Street, London.

This great establishment, the new building of H.M. Stationery Office nearing completion, was taken over by the Red Cross, and its extensive floor space, covering nine acres, was turned into a vast home for the wounded, at a cost of £100,000. It provided 1,650 beds. Its roof-garden, covering an acre and a quarter, soon became a prominent landmark in London. Next to King George's Hospital came another vast Red Cross hospital at Netley.

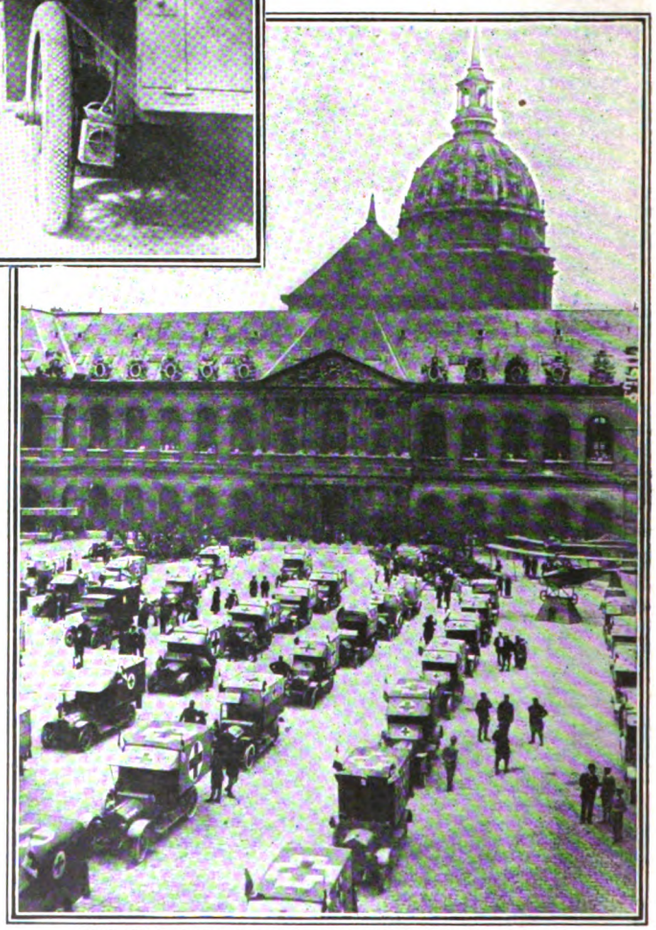
The British Red Cross had 2,300 Voluntary Aid Detachments, with a membership exceeding 67,000. With the aid of these some six hundred auxiliary hospitals were equipped, and rest stations were formed for attending to the wounded on the way to hospital. Convalescent homes were established. One department of the Red Cross which constituted a romance—often enough, alas! a very painful romance—was for tracing the wounded and missing. Its agents travelled throughout the battle-stricken regions of Northern France, searching everywhere for news which could relieve the anxiety of those at home.

Tracing wounded and missing

Another great department of the Red Cross work was the provision of supplies for the hospitals at the front. Immense stores were wanted that could not possibly be had from the Government, from X-ray outfits to tooth-brushes. The societies provided them. Garments and comforts for the wounded were sent out by the hundred thousand, not only to our own armies on the Continent, but to wounded in almost every centre of the war.

It may be asked why it is necessary for voluntary societies to do work such as this. The care of the wounded soldier is the business of the Government. Why not leave it to it? The question was answered by Sir Frederick Treves in a speech which is well worth quoting here:

The answer to the question is a very easy one. There is no Army Medical Service in the world that can be maintained in times of peace on a war standard. It would be ridiculous to have, let us say, five hundred



OUTSIDE THE HOTEL DES INVALIDES, PARIS.

British motor-ambulances, referred to above, lined up outside the Hotel des Invalides for the presidential inspection. It is worth recalling that the famous building shown in this picture was founded by Louis XIV. as an asylum for old soldiers, and placed on a sound footing by Napoleon, whose ornate tomb is under the dome of the Church of St. Louis, on the southern side of the hotel.

Digitized by Google



WOUNDED SOLDIERS IN BLENHEIM'S PLEASANT SHADE.
The famous Duke of Marlborough's historic seat near Woodstock was placed at the disposal of the Red Cross authorities for the benefit of the wounded. The pleasure gardens are some twelve miles in circumference.

well-trained Army doctors in regular pay where only five are required for service in times of peace. It would be preposterous to lay in an enormous store of perishable material when a war might not take place for twenty or thirty years. It is a problem that every country has had to face.

When war breaks out, and this war came upon us so suddenly, the Army Medical Service has need for immediate help. It must appeal to the civil population and to the civil medical profession. There is no other means of obtaining the immediate need that the Service requires.

For example, the moment war broke the demand came upon us for doctors; send ten doctors, send twenty, send fifty, and they went off in batches as fast as we could supply them. The War Office at the same time was enrolling civilian surgeons. But please remember that the War Office methods must be slow—they must be slow if they are to be efficient. You cannot take in a host of men without going through the elaborate system that the War Office insists upon—inquiry and knowledge of character, qualifications, state of health, past experience, the terms of a commission, and matters of that sort, all of which occupy time.

With regard to civilian surgeons and physicians, the British Red Cross Society is in close touch with them, and we can and did send out as many as twenty surgeons at a few hours' notice.

Wonders of Red Cross methods

The same thing also applies to stores. I need not say that in a great business like the Army Medical Service there must be a certain series of forms to be gone through in order to draw stores—order, economy, and efficiency demand such formalities. We can supply stores without any formalities. Those who wonder what the Red Cross Society has done should see our store at Boulogne. It is an astounding sight. It is packed up to the ceiling with medical stores and the endless articles required for the sick and wounded, ready at any moment, day and night. There is always a staff there, always a motor-lorry outside, and the moment the order comes it can be executed on the spot.

I give you what is the most trivial example that I can think of. When the cold weather set in there was a sudden demand for hot-water bottles for men in stretchers and in the trains coming down to the hospital at the base. As a matter of business to get these hot-water bottles through the War Office would take time—examining samples and prices, entering into contracts, and other processes must take time.

Sir Alfred Keogh got that telegram at, let us say, nine o'clock; it came to us about ten o'clock, before twelve those hot-water bottles were on the way to France. It is a curious illustration of Red Cross methods how we came to have some two hundred hot-water bottles in our possession. In the month of September a lady had the forethought to see that—hot



FISHING IN THE LAKE AT BLENHEIM PARK.
Some of the convalescent soldier-guests of the Duke of Marlborough found health-giving recreation in the practice of the Waltonian art from the banks of the lake at Blenheim.

as the weather was then—hot-water bottles would be needed in the winter, and that the best time to beg them was when it was hot and when people would say: "Don't, for Heaven's sake, talk of hot-water bottles now!" She ultimately accumulated in this way two hundred hot-water bottles, and they were sent to France immediately the demand arose.

I dare say you know the French soldier has a little ampoule of iodine in a glass, which you can break with the fingers and rub the iodine over a wound. Well, our men had not got this item in first-aid, but a gentleman came into my office and said, "Is there anything you want?" I said, "Yes, we want iodine ampoules." He gave me £1,000. I was able to order 133,000 ampoules, which were sent out as soon as they could be completed.

Non-essentials that matter

The War Office provides what is essential. Now, from the point of view of a sick man himself, it is the non-essentials that matter. What is essential is a bare, whitewashed room like a monk's cell, one bed, one chair, and one table. In sickness it is the non-essentials that add so much to a man's comfort. Let us quote some of the most trivial: A bright bed-cover—an important item, because of all things made by the hands of man there is nothing that expresses a deeper sense of melancholy than the brown Army blanket—soft pillows, bed-rests, things to write with, people to write, books to read, and then that great collection of really good things known by the name of medical comforts. Their value I cannot express. Then in the matter of clothing think how—to a sick man—a nice soft night-shirt compares with the night-shirt that bears the stamp, and, I must add, the metallic crease of the Army Service Corps laundry. It is the small matter which often makes all the difference

Digitized by Google



A PLUCKY FIRST-AID WORKER.

Miss Hutchinson, head chauffeur of the First Aid Nursing Yeomanry, with her motor-kitchen. She did excellent work at Ypres. The plucky little lady, who had given up her respirator to a Canadian, suffered slightly from the German poison gas.

between the comfort of a sick man and his merely enduring his trouble.

The British Red Cross did not stand alone. Allied organisations from the Dominions did their share splendidly. The Australasian societies liberally subscribed to the British funds, and looked well after their own men. The Australasians opened a hospital at Wimereux, staffed and maintained by Australasians, and their contingent was accompanied by an ample and adequate medical and nursing organisation, which aroused great admiration.

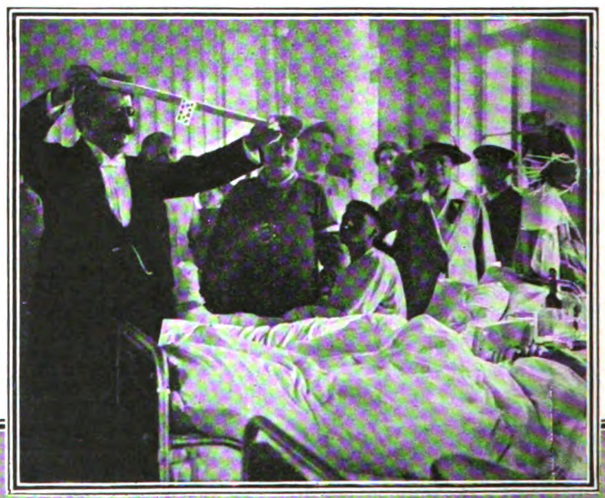
In Canada the work of the Red Cross was taken up at the very beginning with immense enthusiasm. When the Canadian Contingent arrived in England, the ships that bore the troops carried, not merely a full medical and nursing staff, but every kind of medical comfort likely to be required.

Overseas Red Cross work

About the same time as the contingent reached Plymouth, Colonel Hodgetts, the Chief Commissioner of the Canadian Red Cross, arrived in London and established himself in an office in Cockspur Street. This office became a centre through which a constant stream of gifts poured into the United Kingdom and into France. Large donations of money were given by the Canadians to the British Red Cross. Many motor-ambulances were purchased. Comforts of all kinds, foodstuffs and supplies, were gathered and distributed with the most lavish hand. These gifts were by no means confined to the Canadian troops. In addition to the large gifts of money, a number of motor-ambulances were presented to the British Red Cross. A coach was provided for a hospital train which Princess Christian was procuring, and a Canadian Ward was built in a hospital which the St. John Ambulance Society was constructing at the front. The Canadian Red Cross came to England to help us, and it did so. It did great and much-needed work. In addition to the establishment at Le Touquet, the Canadian Red Cross made itself responsible for the construction, maintenance and administration of a great hospital at Cliveden, Mr. and Mrs. Waldorf Astor's well known Thames-side estate. Mr. Astor offered the Canadians the use of Taplow Lodge, Cliveden, and the grounds around it, and undertook sweeping structural alterations and additions to make the place suitable.

The great hospital at Cliveden

Early in 1915 the Duchess of Connaught's Canadian Red Cross Hospital, as the new establishment was called, was opened with one hundred and eight beds. It was complete in every detail. The main building was a transformed tennis-court, which made as cheerful looking hospital as could be devised. Its white walls, and its roof of green painted glass, its floors covered with green linoleum, and its abundant flowers, combined to produce a very pleasant effect. The lofty roof and the fresh country air largely robbed the place of the familiar hospital atmosphere of iodoform and antiseptics. The operating theatre was one that the finest London hospitals might well have

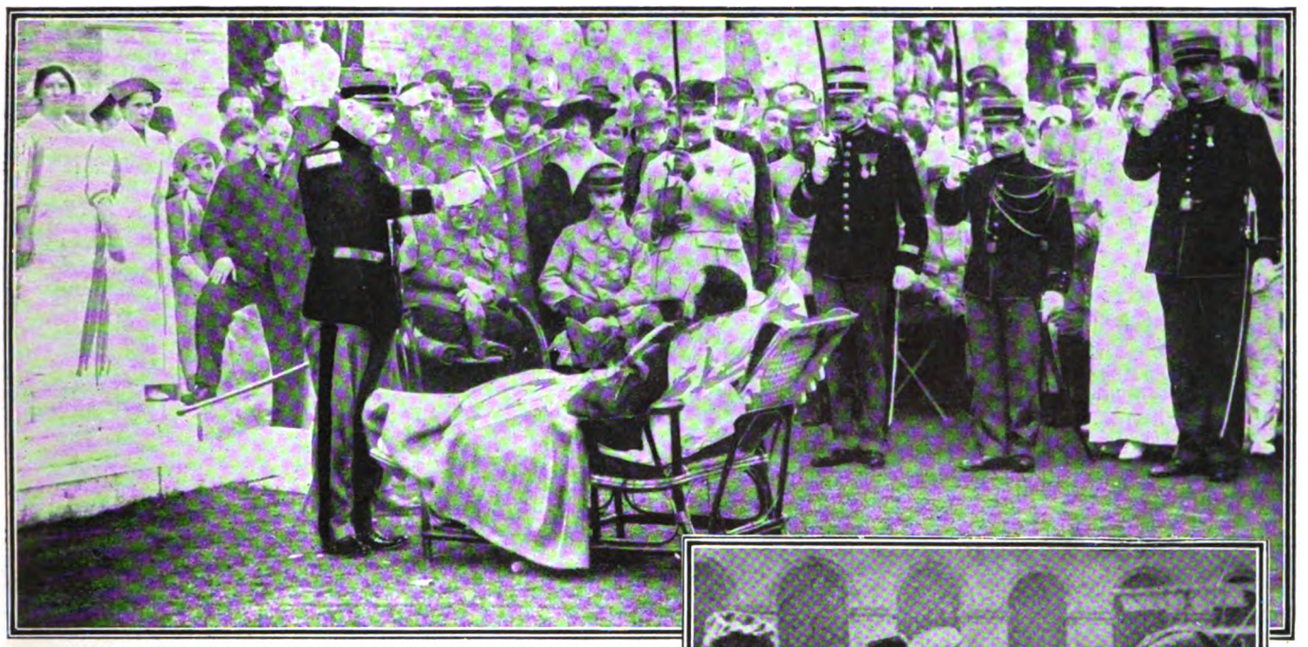




INDUCING THE WOUNDED TO FORGET THEIR PAIN.

The above photograph was taken in the hospital at Moscow, founded by M. Shaliapine, the famous Russian operatic singer, for the benefit of the wounded in the Great War, and shows the great artist in the act of entertaining his appreciative and grateful guests. Inset is a view of the interior of a German hospital where a conjurer was amusing the wounded by tricks with cards.

Digitized by Google



IMPRESSIVE INCIDENT IN A FRENCH HOSPITAL.
A wounded officer being decorated for bravery in the field. As the honour was bestowed, his comrades in uniform drew their swords and gave the military salute.

envied, on account of its size, light, and perfect aseptic conditions. The accommodation was surprisingly excellent when it was remembered that it was created in a short time, out of what had been an adjunct to a big country house.

Cliveden hospital was placed under the charge of Colonel C. R. Gorrell, an Ottawa physician. Colonel Gorrell proved himself a born organiser, one who recognised that successful hospital administration is largely a matter of attention to detail. The place showed at every turn the results of his minutely careful administration.

Cliveden hospital, although nominally Canadian, and although wholly staffed by Canadian doctors and Canadian nurses and orderlies, received Canadian or British wounded indifferently. Thus, in the first batch of men to arrive there were ninety-nine soldiers of British regiments to one Canadian. When it became evident that more hospital accommodation would be necessary, large wards were built in the grounds of Cliveden, holding a further five hundred patients. The second Canadian hospital was established at Beachborough Park, at Shorncliffe, the home of Sir Arthur and Lady Markham, by the Canadian War Contingents Association.

Splendid gift to Canadians

This association was formed by the Canadian community in England to attend to the comfort of the Dominion troops in Europe. It did a great deal of good work in many directions, and among other things it established and maintained a hospital of its own. The south-east portion of Kent was chosen as the most suitable site, the nearest possible point to the front. Then some members of the Committee searched around for a house. They cast envious eyes on Beachborough Park, the home of Sir Arthur and Lady Markham near Shorncliffe, a fine country house, with beautiful gardens and lawns, and with sloping hills guarding it from the cold winds.

Sir Arthur and Lady Markham, hearing of their search, promptly offered their house as a gift. They had already tendered it to the War Office as a military hospital, but the War Office authorities were doubtful if they would require it. Lady Markham had already taken very prominent work in the medical side of the war, serving in Belgium in the early days, and organising different funds at home. She not only gave the house to the Canadians but gave her personal services. She remained at Beachborough Park—when it became the Canadian Queen's Military Hospital—as working head of its domestic, as apart from its purely medical and surgical side. Sir William Osler, the Regius Professor of Medicine at Oxford, and Mr. Donald Armour, the eminent surgeon of Harley Street, both of them Canadians, became respectively Physician-in-Chief and Surgeon-in-Chief.



THE KISS OF HONOUR.
The above photograph was taken in the Court of Honour of the Hotel des Invalides on the occasion of a presentation of medals to wounded heroes by General Cousin. One of the recipients of the Military Medal had to be carried in a bath-chair. Having pinned the coveted decoration on his breast the General saluted him, after French custom, with a kiss.

Beachborough Park opened in October, 1914, with close on fifty beds. Its first consignment of patients was over fifty Belgians fresh from the front, with wounds that had received little or nothing beyond first-aid. Some of the men had lain four or five days in the field before being brought in. The staff toiled over them for thirty-six hours, two nights and a day, without rest. When the Canadian troops reached the front, Beachborough Park became, as it continued from then on, a reflection of the great battles in which the Dominion troops took part. The establishment was so successful that after a few months it was determined to enlarge it, and wards were built in the grounds, enlarging the accommodation

Belgians at Beachborough Park

Digitized by Google

to about one hundred and fifty patients. It would be impossible to detail all the places that were opened in England for the accommodation of the wounded. The Royal Army Medical Department took over numerous old buildings, schools, factories and the like, and in addition built temporary hospitals in parks and gardens on a wholesale scale. It absorbed race-tracks and transformed lunatic asylums; voluntary hospitals all over the country opened their doors to the wounded, the London Hospital alone placing three hundred beds at the disposal of the authorities. A number of private houses and nursing homes, particularly in London, were turned into special hospitals for doctors. Among the best known of these were the hospital at 27, Grosvenor Square, and Queen Alexandra's Hospital for officers at Highgate. Special sections of the community provided hospitals The American community established and maintained a fine hospital at Paignton, Devon, in one of the most beautiful country houses of Southern England.



A STREET SCENE IN BELGRADE.
Stretcher-bearers and ambulance workers carrying a wounded soldier through the streets of the Serbian capital.

Special hospitals were established for the Indian troops, the most famous of these being the Lady Hardinge Hospital in Brockenhurst Park. A number of famous houses were turned into hospitals, notably Highbury, Mr. Chamberlain's old home outside Birmingham, and the library buildings of Blenheim Palace.

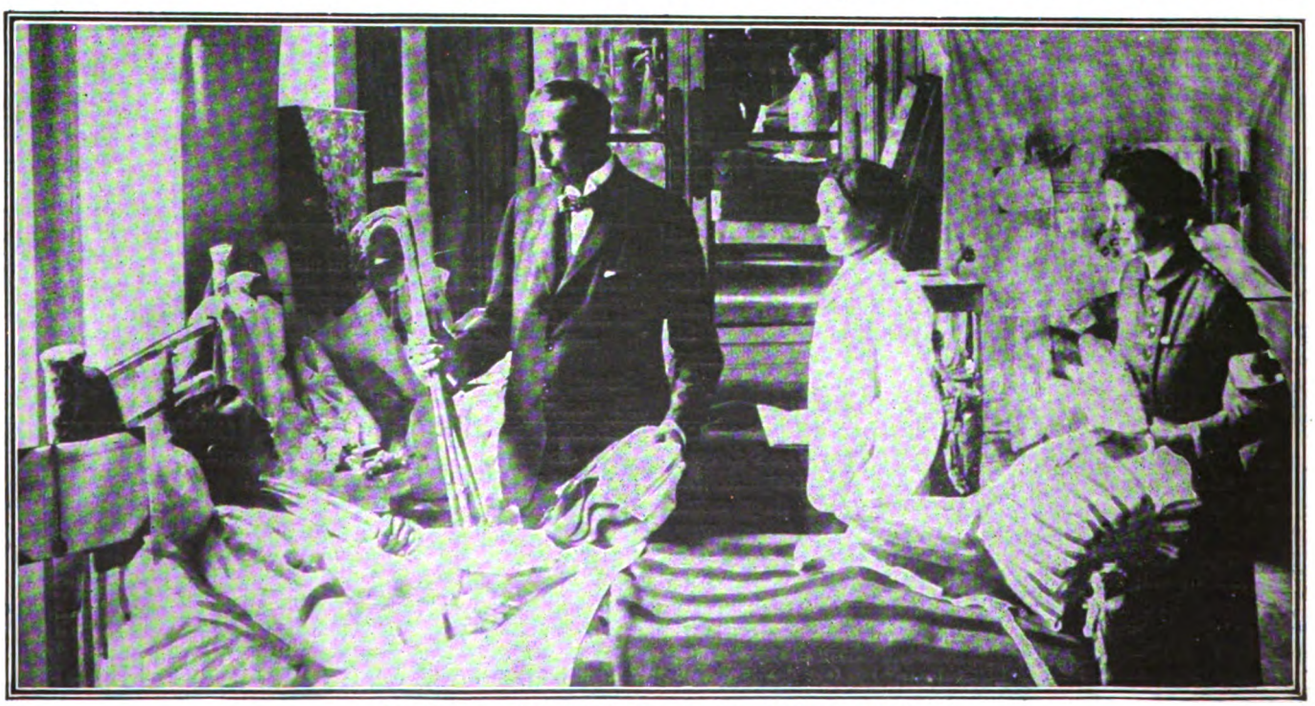
Famous houses as hospitals

In numbers of suburbs and country places local committees took over and adapted mission-halls and schoolrooms, running them largely with the co-operation of local voluntary workers, under doctors and trained nurses. Some of the Army medical authorities were understood to look on these smaller hospitals with only partial favour. They believed that the greatest economy was obtained by massing numbers of wounded together in large special buildings. Doubtless this was in some ways true; but the voluntary hospitals in the suburbs of London and in the country gave an atmosphere of friendship and sympathy very hard to maintain in monster institutions.

Escaping the hospital atmosphere

The advantage of treating men in small groups is that they escape the hospital atmosphere. The scattering of the men helped to bring the war home, as it could be brought home in no other way, to the people of Britain. In many of the smaller establishments regulations about visitors, for example, which had to be strictly interpreted in large establishments could be read more leniently. People of all classes were allowed to go and see the soldiers when they were well enough to be seen, even if they were not friends or relatives. Many people learned from the wounded among them the real import and seriousness of the war, and had their patriotism and determination stimulated and strengthened.

There was another advantage. Returned soldiers, broken in body, found good friends able to help them in days to come. The old dislike and suspicion of the soldier, which undoubtedly existed among certain classes of British people in the days before the war, was utterly broken down.



GIFTS TO THE WOUNDED FROM QUEEN MARY.
A special envoy from Queen Mary presenting garments and walking-sticks to British soldiers in Claridge's Hospital, Paris.

Digitized by Google



THE EAST REPAYING HER DEBT TO WESTERN MEDICAL SCIENCE: STRIKING PHOTOGRAPH OF A WARD IN THE HOSPITAL OF THE JAPANESE RED CROSS MISSION IN PARIS.

The Japanese Red Cross Mission did some wonderful work in the care of the wounded, and its capable staff was most highly spoken of by all the patients.

Wounded Thomas Atkins became, as he ought to be, the hero to his own people, who now had opportunity to show their appreciation of him. A great wave of goodwill to the wounded soldiers swept over the country. People whose interests had rarely before extended outside their own family circle opened their homes to them. They would ask them to tea, take rows of seats in the theatres for them, lend their motor-cars or take them in their cars for drives, and tend to their personal comfort.

The claims of the Belgian people made a special appeal to the British nation, and numerous parties of surgeons and nurses went out more or less independently to help the wounded during the early fighting. The best known of these was Dr. Hector Munro, and his experiences may be taken as a notable example of others.

Dr. Munro, at the beginning of the war, abandoned for a time his practice in London and volunteered for service in Belgium. His first experiences showed him the great need of motor-ambulances for the Belgian Army, and returning to London on September 22nd, 1914, he issued an appeal which was to have widespread results.

He stated that he proposed to raise a small ambulance corps, with two surgeons, a staff of twenty helpers, and four cars. "I have just returned from Belgium, where I visited Ostend, Bruges, Ghent, and Antwerp, to inquire as to the need for Red Cross work there. The difficulty is to get the wounded from ten to thirty miles around Ghent into the town. There are admirable hospitals round Ghent. One large hotel has been converted by the Belgian Red Cross into Hôpital Militaire No. 2, and is splendidly manned with surgeons, doctors, and nurses. But it is impossible to get the wounded in there quickly enough. There are about 2,000 Uhlans wandering in the district, and there are occasional small skirmishes, ending in one or two men being killed and a dozen or so wounded. The wounded crawl away into cottages, or lie about in the open fields, where they remain unattended. Last Sunday there were 3,000 wounded to take into the town of Antwerp."

His party was quickly organised. Miss May Sinclair, the well-known novelist, acted as his secretary. Lady Dorothie Feilding, daughter of Lord Denbigh, acted as his chief of staff, and a group of men and women volunteers were enlisted. Unlike most doctors, Dr. Munro did not seek for professional nurses, but enlisted the aid of a number of eager women who had received some training in first-aid and were keen to serve.

The ambulance corps was first stationed at Ghent, and after a few days of waiting it quickly found itself in the thick of service. It soon won a high reputation for the daring of its members in penetrating into the firing-line, bringing their light cars up as near to the front as possible, and rescuing men from where danger was greatest. Their conduct during the great battle of the sea-coast in October, 1914, attracted wide notice.

The Belgian Army was at this point holding the line from Nieuport to the sea, and found itself called upon to meet the tremendous attack of an overwhelming German force. The Germans centred their attack upon Dixmude, paving the way by a terrific artillery fire. Time after time they came on to the attack. Time after time the Belgians drove them back. But the fire of the heavy German guns wrought great havoc, and the houses in the town were soon packed with many wounded. Then it became evident that Dixmude could not be much longer held. The Belgian medical authorities declared that it was no use trying to get the wounded away, as cars could not pass through the inferno of fire and hope to return. Dr. Munro and a small group of assistants, including Lady Dorothie Feilding, Miss Chisholm—a girl of eighteen—and a son of the Belgian Prime Minister, determined to make the attempt. They had two motor-ambulances and four light cars. The two ambulances were driven by British chauffeurs, who were going under fire for the first time. The party made straight for the heart of Dixmude.



CONVALESCENTS IN KIMONOS.

Convalescent patients at the Japanese Hospital in Paris wore kimonos which were made by the nurses in their spare time.

The venture seemed madness. Mr. Ashmead-Bartlett, the war correspondent, who made one of the party, described the scene:

There was not an inch that was not being swept by shells. There was not a house, as far as I could see, which had escaped destruction. The whole scene was so terrible, so exciting,

Digitized by Google



PRINCESS HENRY OF PLESS AS A GERMAN NURSE.

Princess Henry of Pless with wounded Germans at a hospital near Berlin. The daughter of Colonel and Mrs. Cornwallis-West, and sister-in-law to the Duke of Westminster, her husband Prince Henry was a Lieut.-Colonel à la suite of Prussian cavalry, and formerly secretary to the German Embassy in London. The princess took a deep interest in Red Cross work.

and passed in such a dream that it has left only a series of pictures in my mind.

Suddenly, behind a low row of houses, we came across a mass of French gathered together for shelter, very excited, but well under the control of their officers. There was a cart, in which they were piling ammunition-boxes. I remember the officer calling: "Pas si vite, pas si vite!" Then someone ran up and said: "Il-y-a les blesses la-bas!" Dr. Munro took the first motor and rushed down a side street to get them. He told me afterwards that he had not gone a hundred yards when there was a deafening crash and a whole chimney fell ten yards away, blocking his passage and forcing him to return. However, he found three other wounded in a house, and piled them in the car, whereupon the chauffeur rushed out of Dixmude and never stopped for four miles. Meanwhile we were left with the two unwieldly motor-ambulances. An officer of Marines explained to De Broqueville that there were many wounded in the Town Hall. To get there we had to turn the cars round. There is nothing more unpleasant than having to turn cars under such circumstances. However, the two chauffeurs never turned a hair, although one of them afterwards confided to me he was scared to death. Every time a shell came crashing amongst the roofs we thought our end had come. So did the Marines, who crowded closer together, as men always do under such circumstances. It was only a short way to the Town Hall, which occupies one side of an open square, which was an inferno in itself. The shells were bursting all over it, and, in addition, it seemed to catch every stray bullet fired by the Germans at the trenches, only a short distance away. The Hotel de Ville was a sad sight. The top part had been completely riddled with shells, and smashed to bits; just behind it was what looked to me like a very fine old church, blazing furiously and threatening every minute to set fire to the Town Hall. On the top of the steps of the Hotel de Ville lay a dead Marine, who had been struck by a bullet just as he was apparently running in there for cover. A French surgeon greeted us on the steps, and told De Broqueville he must get his wounded out of the cellar otherwise they would most likely be burnt to death. He was quite calm, and directed our party where to go. Inside the Town Hall was a scene of horror and chaos. It was piled with loaves of bread, bicycles, and dead soldiers. I had never seen so many bicycles I suppose some cyclist troop had left them here on their way to the trenches. We rushed down to the cellars and dragged up the wounded, who were all lying-down cases, and had to be placed on stretchers, which seemed, under the circumstances, to take an endless time. All the while the shells were crashing overhead and the bullets whistling through the square.*

* "The Daily Telegraph," October, 1914.

English heroines at Dixmude

As Mr. Ashmead-Bartlett well said: "The splendid courage shown by the English ladies is one of the wonders of this war of wonders. It makes one proud to know one belongs to the same race. But those who go and play a man's part on the battle-field share the glory of those who work all night and all day attending to the wounded under conditions which allow of a minimum of repose and comfort. All are heroines of that type which only emergency brings forth."

The story of the work of the Munro Ambulance at Dixmude attracted widespread attention, and much public support, and by December the volunteer corps had thirteen cars. It was engaged all along the line of the Belgian retreat. Eventually it settled down at Furnes, making its headquarters there, and its work extending along the line of thirty miles from Nieuport to Ypres. One of the members of the corps was wounded in the leg at Nieuport, and received the Legion of Honour. Another was poisoned from the fumes of a shell that burst near to him, and was ill for some weeks.

Soup-kitchens were established for feeding starving and exhausted men, and warm woollen underclothes and gloves were supplied for Belgian troops in the trenches. Mr. Ramsay Macdonald, M.P., worked for a time with the party.

Mrs. Knocker, Mrs. Gleason, and Miss Chisholm—three members of the party—established themselves at Pervyse



ARCHDUCHESS ZITA CHATTING WITH AUSTRIAN WOUNDED.

The Archduchess Zita, wife of the heir to the Austrian throne, is seen visiting wounded Austrian soldiers on the roof-garden of one of the hospitals in Vienna. She was accompanied by the Archduke Karl-Stephen, and the archducal party was shown round the hospital by Dr. Spitzy, the chief medical officer.

Digitized by Google



CROSS AND CRESCENT: TURKISH PRISONERS HAVING THEIR WOUNDS DRESSED BY THEIR BRITISH CAPTORS AFTER A BATTLE IN GALLIPOLI.

This place was right on the line of the German fire. It had been fiercely cannonaded for some time, and most of the village was completely wrecked. The ladies worked in the cellar of a house, where they collected the wounded and sick for first-aid. After some time, yielding to the urgent representations of the Belgian authorities, they left their cellar and moved towards the centre of the village. Ten minutes after they had moved a shell came crashing on to the house in which they had lived unharmed for two months. Mrs. Knocker was a skilled motor-driver, and the story is told that, before going to Belgium, she drove to London and offered her services as a despatch-rider to the War Office. This was promptly declined, on the ground that women motor-cyclists were unsuitable. On her way back to her home at Salisbury, Mrs. Knocker came across three male motor-cyclists carrying Government despatches, who were standing by their broken-down machines, unable to repair them or to get on. Mrs. Knocker executed the repairs and started them off.

King Albert conferred the Order of Leopold upon Lady Dorothie Feilding, Miss Marie Chisholm, Mrs. Knocker, and Mrs. Gleason, an American lady, for their work.

Early in the war it became evident that the French Army medical authorities would be greatly aided by some outside help. In France, where almost every able-bodied man was called to the front, it was not possible to draw to the same extent on volunteers from the country itself, as could be done here. Consequently, volunteers were obtained from England and America, and a number of ambulance units got to work. One of the most notable of these was the Anglo-American Volunteer Motor-Ambulance Corps, organised by Mr. Richard Norton and placed under the command of Colonel Barry. It was formally attached to one of the northern divisions of the French Army, and it did services which, in the opinion of the French authorities themselves, it would be difficult to overestimate.

American helpers in France

The majority of the workers in this convoy were well-to-do young Americans, who could drive, and who in some cases provided their own cars. They largely maintained themselves. This volunteer corps was representative of the great American philanthropic activity in aiding the sick, feeding the hungry, and checking disease all along the different fronts.

Nowhere was the need of Red Cross work greater than in Serbia. This country, poor and devastated by previous wars, found itself, when it had driven the Austrian armies out of its borders, in a most pitiable state. There were thousands of sick and thousands of wounded waiting attention. Great numbers of Austrian prisoners had been taken, an epidemic of typhus started among them, and among the refugees, and spread over the country with amazing virulence.

Serbia's pitiable plight

There were no Serbian trained nurses, although a certain number of Serbian ladies had begun to learn the elements of training, and there were few doctors left. Famine threatened the country. The ha'penny roll in some parts fetched a shilling. British doctors who had come to the country to help did their utmost. They were swallowed up in the magnitude of the task before them.

The sick died all over the country, in many cases with none to attend them. Wounded men, carried for days on bullock-waggons from the front—journeys every moment of which must have been exquisite agony—found no doctors to attend to them when they arrived at their stations. The country seemed to reach the very depth of possible misery.

When the cry of Serbia went out to the world, expeditions were quickly organised in Britain. The Serbian Relief Fund made renewed efforts, and was able to initiate and support many activities. Hospital parties were formed. Mrs. St. Clair Stobart, who had already done great work in Belgium and in Northern France, took a large party of doctors and trained nurses to Krajeuvitch. American doctors and philanthropists helped also.

The Red Cross parties that arrived at the front paid heavy toll among their members in deaths from typhus and typhoid as the price of their aid. But the typhus was stamped out and the worst was overcome.

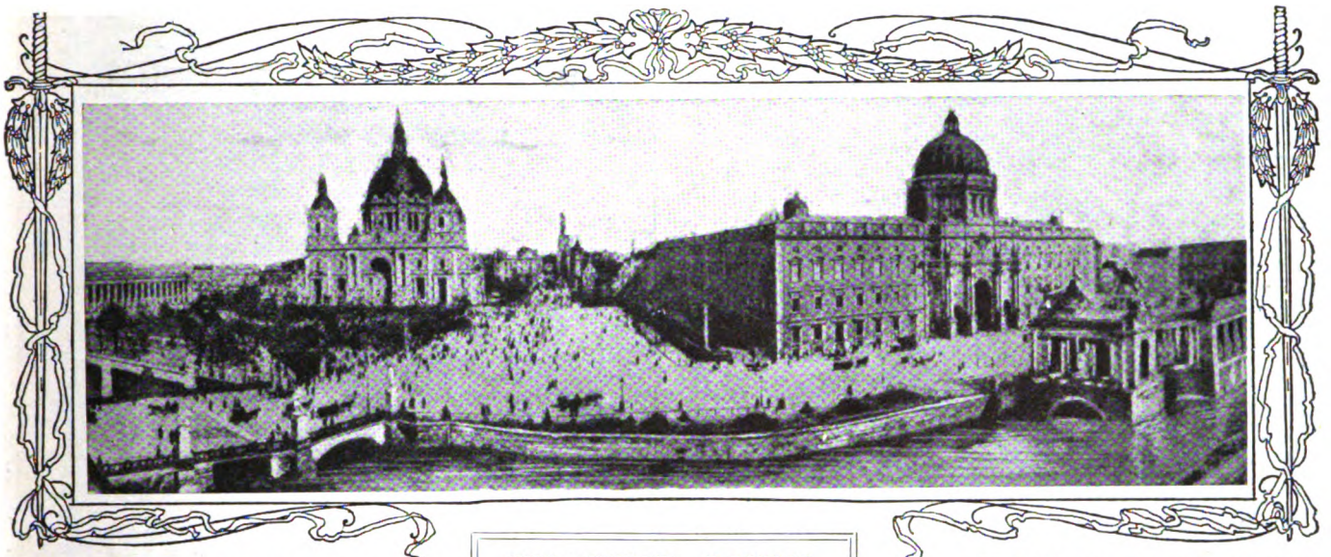
Digitized by Google



A POIGNANT PICTURE FROM THE FRONT—FRENCH SOLDIERS RENDERING THE LAST HONOURS TO THE FALLEN BRAVE.

In the above deeply moving war tableau, retained for us by the camera from its original scene in the immense plain of the Woevre, a priest is shown blessing the graves of the gallant men who had recently fallen in defence of their beloved country. As the unarmed troops in the foreground were about to place their humble floral tributes on the newly-turned earth, a regiment marching in the rear on its way to the front line presented arms in honour of the dead, whose fate they went forward to face unshrinkingly and with undaunted courage.

Digitized by Google



THE NEW CATHEDRAL AND THE ROYAL PALACE, BERLIN.

CHAPTER LXXII.

GERMANY DURING THE FIRST YEAR OF THE WAR.

By Frederic William Wile, late Berlin Correspondent of "The Daily Mail," author of "The Men Around the Kaiser," etc.

Revelation of Germany's "Potato-bread Spirit"—The Factors which Enabled the Teutonic Empire to Prove Herself Self-contained and Self-supporting During the First Year of the Great War—Examples of the "Furor Teutonicus"—How the German Government Manufactured "Public Opinion" by Means of a Bridled Press—A Campaign of Lies and a Deluded People—The Formal Systematisation of all Germany's Non-Military Assets—The Socialist Danger—Frantic Finance—The Food Supply and the Doctrine of National Thrift—"I am Proud to Thirst and Hunger for the Fatherland"—"Germany Expects Every Acre to do its Duty"—The Raw Materials for Industry—How Women Helped in the War—General Survey of the Position in July, 1915.

TO the world at large, unacquainted through personal knowledge with the mania and genius of the Teuton for organisation, Germany in war time proved to be no inconsiderable revelation. When we have spoken of the enemy's "preparedness," most of us meant his military preparations. Few took into account what Mr. Lloyd George so aptly called "the German potato-bread spirit"—the readiness and ability of the nation at large to adapt itself to war conditions in the most infinitesimal department of its life.

The name is legion of persons in England who confidently expected such economic dislocations in Germany at the outbreak of war, to be followed by early "collapse," that internal domoralisation would prove as valuable a force in bringing the Kaiser to his knees as the allied legions storming at his frontiers. Those who conjured up such a vision had miscalculated. That the Germans proved to be practically self-contained and self-supporting in respect of every vital resource of war—during the first year of Armageddon, at any rate—



KAISERIN AS PHOTOGRAPHER.

The Kaiser and Field-Marshal von Hindenburg photographed by the Kaiserin. The War Lord as seen in this picture bore manifest signs of the strain of war. The proceeds of the sale of the photograph in Germany were devoted to the service of the German Red Cross.

stands out as a fact no less remarkable or significant than their military successes.

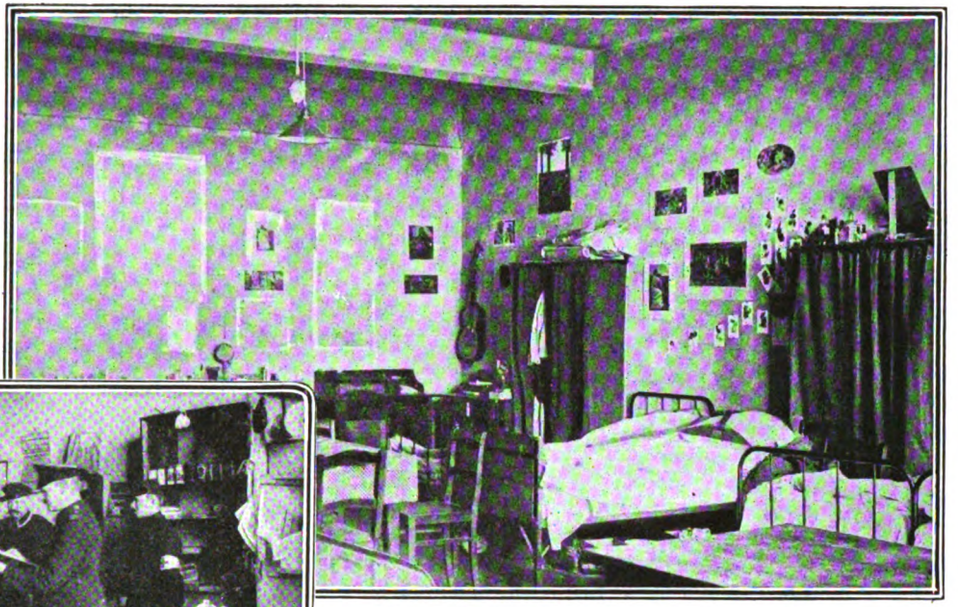
The Germans demonstrated that wars are carried on under modern conditions by those "behind the front" as well as by the heroes who bare their breasts to the foe in the firing-line; that business methods are as essential to victory as military science. "Silver bullets" and bread-tickets are not things over which the war historian is accustomed to wax eloquent, but hard-beset Germany showed that they are as essential to the successful conduct of mighty campaigns as machine-guns and high explosives.

In husbanding and administering the sinews of war which are not strictly military in character, impartial observers must reluctantly admit that much-derided German organisation achieved triumphs unapproached by anything which took place in Great Britain. German mobilisation and administration of internal resources for war-making—such as credit, food supply, and raw materials—will, without question, remain a model of its kind for all time. Certain features of it, modified to suit British temperament and conditions, were adopted in this

Digitized by Google



Mess-room in the officers' quarters of the prisoners-of-war camp at Friedberg, Germany.

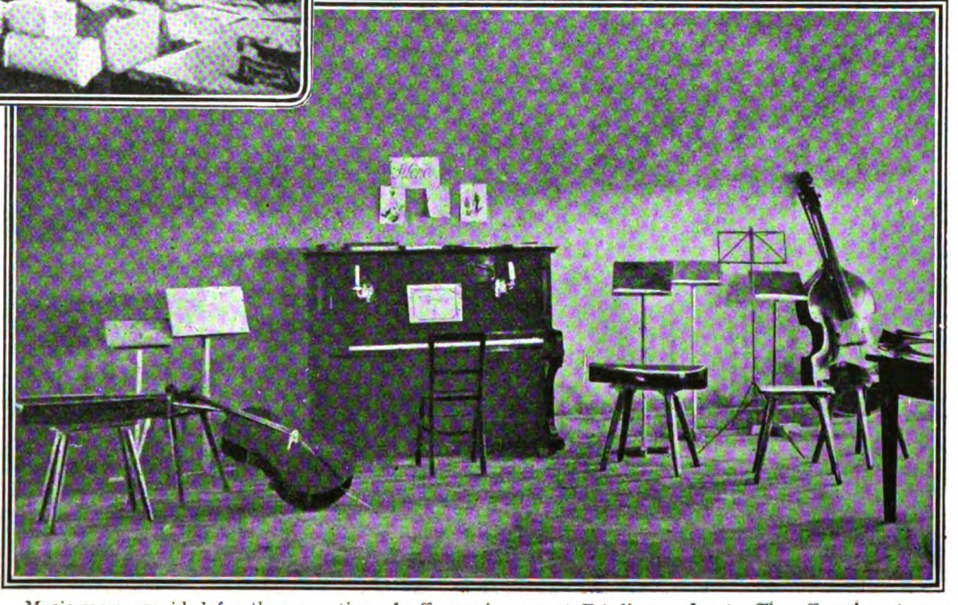


Room set apart at Friedberg camp for the accommodation of six officer-prisoners.





Room of a senior prisoner Staff officer at Friedberg, simply but sufficiently furnished.



Music-room provided for the recreation of officer-prisoners at Friedberg. Inset: The officers' canteen.

HOW OFFICER-PRISONERS FARED AT FRIEDBERG: AS SEEN THROUGH A GERMAN CAMERA.

Digitized by Google

country. It will not be surprising if others are borrowed as time goes on. Britons were not competing with the Hun in the field of inhumane warfare—though that might have had its uses—but they need not have been ashamed of following closely the developments of the system which enabled Germany, after a year of hideously exhausting world-war, to present at its end almost as invulnerable a front as she did at the beginning.

Why Germany remained strong

Germany remained strong and formidable primarily because the whole nation went at war. It was clear that she would not be broken till the spirit of all her 70,000,000 men, women, and children was smashed.

Lest the impression be created that the writer believes that Germany's success in keeping the wolf from the door at the start denoted her capacity to do so perpetually, let it be said at once that no notion could be more fatuous. Signs of the approach of collapse existed in plenty. The financial situation became particularly foreboding. No amount of scientific organisation could obliterate or banish obvious indications. It was both foolish and idle to predict when that prostration, the shadow of which could be dimly seen, would be felt. The only safe prophecy was that the break-up was likely to be gradual rather than precipitate, though the final stages might be rapid. Enough occurred, in any circumstances, to cause the Allies to dismiss from their minds any encouragement they might once have derived from the hope of a Germany either divided against herself or unable to conduct war behind an almost hermetical blockade by both land and sea.

Such considerations were the monopoly of hide-the-truth and sham-victory patriots. Face-the-facts men and women would have none of them. They belonged to the "Russian steam-roller" aggregation of yearnings unfulfilled. After the Allies had blasted their way to the German frontiers, and killed off twice the 2,000,000 odd fighting men already put out of action, the time would have come to visualise "Germany's collapse" as a thing of imminent probability. At the time of writing, it was little more substantial than a cheering mirage. Victory had to be built on more solid foundations.

The great masses of the German people, who were no more initiated into the secrets of their diabolical war party than were the peoples of foreign countries, were as effectually stunned by the suddenness and wantonness of the war as those against whom the "Furor Teutonicus" was about to be launched. Certainly, as I recall July in Berlin in 1914, I think back upon a Germany filled with uncertainty and anxiety as to what the thunder-clouds in Eastern Europe, which gathered after the assassination of the Austrian Archduke at Serajevo, might precipitate.

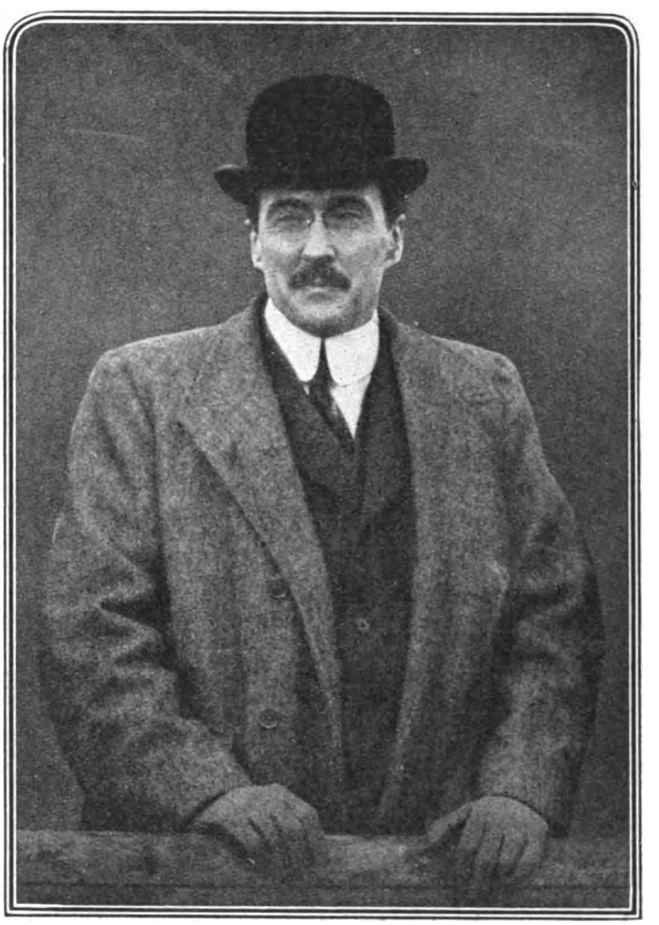
Germany was so universally immersed in her peaceful pursuits and midsummer pleasures that the man in the street, at least, scouted war as something almost too absurd for serious contemplation. Germany was happy, prosperous, he soliloquised. "The world knew her strength; who would dare attack her?" he asked himself.

We know now that the pacific Germany of July became the war-thirsty, England-hating Germany of August; that a war party which a few weeks before numbered an infinitesimal, but noisy and all-dominating, minority of perhaps 1,000,000 Germans, soon developed into a war party which engulfed the Fatherland from the Baltic to the Vosges. But it was a deluded Germany, a cruelly-deceived and befooled Germany, which had now come to be. It was made mad for war by a lying presentation of facts and hypnotised into misconceptions which even time has not swept away. Out of them grew the barbaric hate of England, which was not only the most amazing aspect of the war's commencement, but has remained its most portentous phenomenon.

Befooled but mad for war

Myself a victim of Prussian war-lust gone mad, within half an hour of the declaration of hostilities between Britain and Germany on the night of August 4th—when I was dragged from my lodgings by three sabre-brandishing policemen on a grotesque charge of espionage—I had no idea that the simultaneous assault on the British Embassy building was anything more than a passing manifestation of fury. I had long been a believer in "the phlegmatic German." I knew that his country was the home of the most shocking crimes in modern history; that the murder instinct was almost a cult. But I did not hold the nation capable of mass-hatred, blind, unreasoning and ferocious, even against the England whom it had always envied and feared.

The war, however, was not many weeks old when Germany adopted a new National Anthem—the "Hymn of Hate" against England. It was the ballad of vengeance



HIS EXCELLENCY JAMES WATSON GERARD.
United States Ambassador at Berlin.

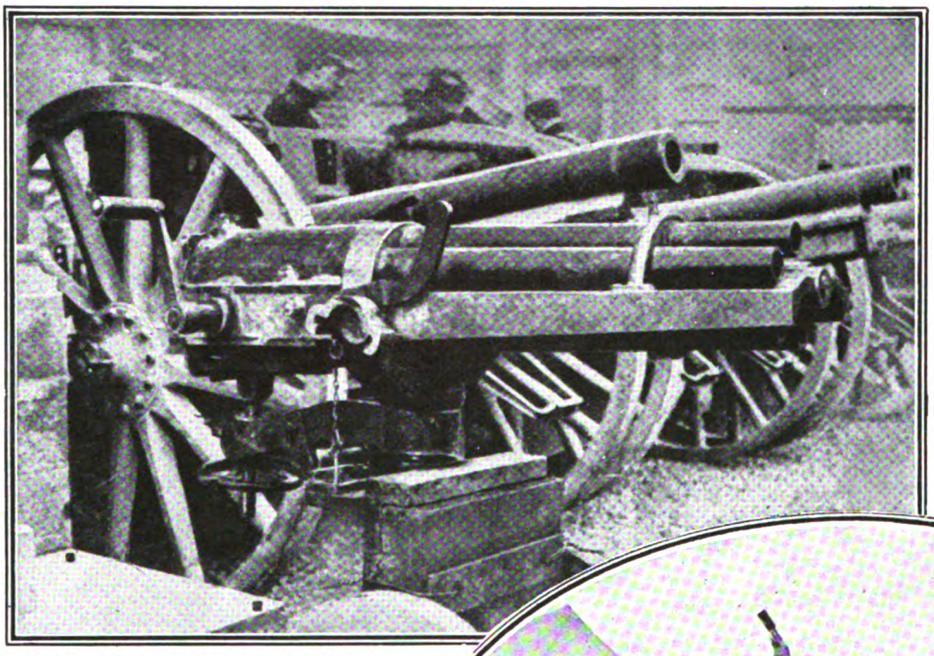
and malice which the descendants of Goethe and Wagner presently elevated to the level of Holy Writ.

This mediæval chant of malevolence unalloyed was the composition of a minor German poet named Ernst Lissauer. A private in the ranks of the Prussian Army, it gave him both national and international fame, and it was not long before the Iron Cross was bestowed upon him for his classic enrichment of Culture's literature. The English translation, a very vivid piece of verse, is stronger, if possible, than the German original. It is the work of an American woman, Barbara Henderson, who contributed it to the columns of the "New York Times." It was my privilege to make the first publication of the poem in England in "The Daily Mail." It was given in pages 307-308 of the second volume of THE GREAT WAR.

Lissauer's vitriolic ballad spread throughout the length and breadth of the German land like wildfire. No mendacious leading article in the newspapers, though

Digitized by Google

there had been no lack of effort in that direction, had so satisfactorily interpreted German popular hatred of England. It was sung and recited, day and night, in hundreds of cafés, cabarets, music-halls, and theatres, and was even introduced as a feature of the entertainment at private social functions. Delivered before huge audiences in the glittering all-night coffee-houses or beer-halls of Berlin, Hamburg, and Munich, the "Hassgesang gegen England" aroused demoniacal outbursts of mingled fury and enthusiasm. People clenched their fists, shook them aggressively in space, hissed, stamped,



NEW GERMAN MAN-KILLING DEVICE.

Examples of the "revolver-cannon" captured from the Germans by the French. The barrels were rotated by means of a handle as seen on the near gun, to the left of the photograph.

and applauded when the singer or recitationist would rasp out, with all the scorn and ferocity of which human expression is capable the final "England!" with which each stanza closes.

For many weeks "Deutschland, Deutschland über Alles," the battle-hymn of the Fatherland, sank to the level of a second-rate ditty. The "Hassgesang" was the only sentiment deemed thoroughly symbolic of German love of country.

While Lissauer's hate hymn was at the zenith of its glory, some genius whose name, unfortunately, will be lost to posterity,

"Gott strafe England!"

invented "Gott strafe England!" (God punish England!) as the most patriotic form of greeting which one German could exchange with another. Friends meeting in the suburban trains or trams on their way to business no longer exclaimed "Guten Morgen!" They shook hands solemnly and sighed: "Gott strafe England!" When they parted at night, it was not "Guten Abend!" but "Gott strafe England!" Then they began stamping it—with a rubber stamp which was sold by the thousand for that purpose—on their letters to correspondents at home and abroad.

Postcards by the million blossomed forth, with the national motto, "Gott strafe England!" Scarf-pins for men made their appearance in the windows of cheap-jewellery shops, inscribed "Gott strafe England!" The legend was reproduced in a score of different designs on cuff-links, brooches, and even wedding-rings, while hardly a schoolchild was without a badge or button emblazoned with the Fatherland's new prayer. Handkerchiefs were embroidered with it, pocket-knives had it enamelled on their handles, and many a packet to some loved one in the trenches went forth with a pair of black-white-red (the Imperial colours) braces imprinted: "Gott strafe England!" On a medal, which decorated thousands of German breasts, was engraved: "Give us this day our daily bread; England would take it from us; God punish her!" Crown Prince Rupprecht of Bavaria placed the Royal approval on the sentiment in the notorious battle-order to his army, to "annihilate the British arch-foe in front of us" at any and all cost.

Prince Rupprecht's notorious order

Germany's hate of England was due, of course, to the complete frustration of her plans for a short, sharp, and decisive war by the intervention of the British Army and Navy. The masses furthermore were led to believe that the whole war was "instigated" by England for the purpose of crushing the dangerous and despised German commercial rival. Wholesome respect for the British Fleet had always existed in the Teutonic breast, even in Von Tirpitz's, but there was never anything but withering scorn for the "contemptible little British Army." When it was realised, as it was before the war was six weeks' old, that Britannia had thrown into the balance of Armageddon both by land and sea a weight so ponderous as to imply for Germany the whole difference between victory and defeat, the Fatherland's long pent-up animosity to England burst forth in a rage which was to know no quenching. The



"SHOOTING STARS."

German officer making a demonstration with a special pistol used for firing luminous balls.

Digitized by Google

country's fury had an earlier cause than the realisation of German impotence against an alliance which included Great Britain. There was fury with the German Imperial Government for deceiving the nation into a belief that Britain either could not or would not take part in a Continental war.

Government newspaper organs throughout the month of July, when Germany was crouching for the attack so stealthily that no responsible statesman or journal in Britain could be made to seriously believe in the imminence of her assault, had been magnifying

Germany's attempted "bargain"

the danger of "civil war" in Ireland and "grave domestic strife" in England due to Suffragette activities. Prince Lichnowsky, German Ambassador in London, was reporting to the Berlin Foreign Office—truly enough—that there was a vigorous anti-war party in Mr. Asquith's Cabinet. When the fateful August 4th came, up to which hour the German people had been kept in profound ignorance of their Government's base attempt to bargain for Britain's non-participation, their disappointment was both natural and violent.

It was to such emotions at first, at any rate, that they gave vent—hatred of "the treacherous cousin." Some day even the Germans will know the truth, and many of them, no doubt, will be ashamed of the satanic depths to which they sank during the war in the exuberance of their Anglophobism.

Their early malevolence spent, Germans pulled themselves together for war pure and simple. The mobilisation of the Kaiser's long-prepared and perfectly-equipped military machine had proceeded with that faultlessness which two generations of making ready insured. Belgium was invaded—resisting, it was true, but crumbling steadily before cruelly superior force. Her resistance disarranged and delayed the German General Staff's carefully-laid plans—how fatally, impending events on the Marne were soon to prove—but the 60,000,000 or 62,000,000 million Germans who were not already in uniform had work to do no less vital to the success of the campaign than the fighting men.

The story of how civilian Germany was mobilised and organised for war is the story of the Fatherland's life and times during the first year of the war. It lacks the glamour and the glory of the battlefield, but the field-marshals of German finance, shipping, commerce, science, trade, industry and agriculture will claim, when the history of the Kaiser's great adventure is written, a place no less immortal than his Hindenburgs and Mackensens.



THE WAGES OF THE WOUNDED.
Wounded German soldiers drawing their paper money at the army pay-office in Berlin.



THE POLYGLOT PRUSSIAN.
At numerous foreign language schools in Berlin taken over by the Government thousands of German soldiers received instruction. Our photograph shows a typical military class studying Russian.

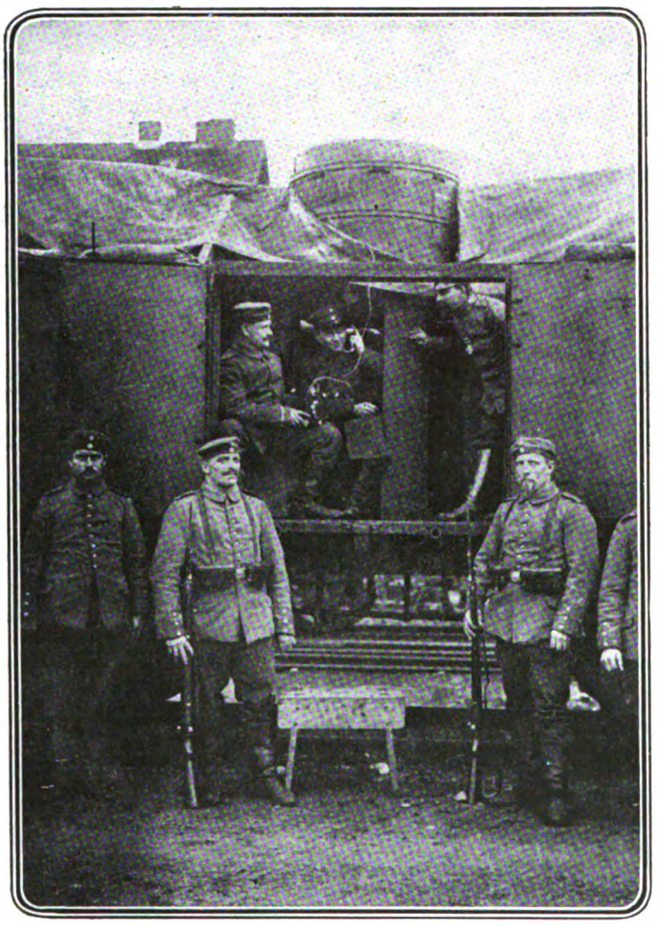
The Hun legions had no sooner violated Belgian territory and invaded France than the organisation of the purely civilian and domestic departments of the German war scheme was begun. Indeed, it was begun, in the sense of having been broadly thought out, long before William II.'s thunderbolts were actually launched. In one or two important respects—finance, for instance—"mobilisation" had preceded the war itself by many months; for one of the most brazen advance preparations of Germany for this war, completed for all the world to see, which it did not measure in its full dread meaning, was the "finance mobilisation" of the German Imperial Bank. Another preparation for Armageddon, so blatant and palpable as to make men wonder now how any sane politician anywhere in the world could have been taken unawares by Germany's war when it did come, was the 1913 Army Bill. This provided for strengthening the military establishment at a cost of £50,000,000, raising the "peace footing" of the Army to 900,000 officers and men, and

Forging the Teuton thunderbolts

Digitized by Google

increasing the permanent "war chest" from £6,000,000 to £18,000,000. The German Government proclaimed that all these measures were "steps to insure the preservation of peace." One's mind might fairly have reeled, in presence of them, at what Germany would call steps of preparation for war.

The formal mobilisation of all her non-military assets did not set in, however, till after the Kaiser's troops were pounding at Liège and plunging toward the Marne. No asset, material or moral, was left out of account. All were doomed to "organisation." For the purpose of dealing with them in detail, it will be well to tabulate



THE INGENUITY OF THE HUN.
Railway truck converted into a running telephone exchange. The picture was taken in Russian Poland.

them, more or less in the chronological sequence in which each subject was dealt with:

1. Public opinion.
2. The Socialist danger.
3. Finance.
4. Food supply and thrift.
5. Raw materials for industry.

"Public opinion" in Germany

Life in Germany during the first year of the war revolved, broadly speaking, round the efforts of the Government to regulate these cardinal things. That Germany in the second year of war was still a terrible foe in being was due to the extraordinary success with which Government and people had co-operated in the task which had been officially described as the nation's noblest and gravest duty—to "hold out."

In the Anglo-Saxon or French sense, there is no such thing as "public opinion" in Germany. The Germans are a ruled, not a ruling race. Dr. Theodore Barth, a distinguished German Liberal politician, used to describe "representative Government" in his country—exemplified by the Reichstag "debating society" and the so-called Prussian "Parliament"—as "a lie." Practically voiceless in peace, it was a moral certainty that German public opinion on the eve of a Government-willed war and during war would be completely mute.

Certainly, during ten days, between July 25th and August 4th, 1914, when Germany and Britain were parleying over questions which meant peace or war in Europe, or at least Anglo-German peace or war, the Kaiser's people were kept utterly in the dark. Not until three o'clock on the afternoon of August 4th, when the German Chancellor confessed in the Reichstag that, because "necessity knows no law," German troops were at that moment already violating Belgian territory, had the Fatherland even the remotest inkling of the tremendous forces which German aggression had set in irrevocable motion. German public opinion, as far as it was reflected by its Press, had thus been effectually muzzled and gagged in the earliest hours of the war. The deception of the country continued from that moment. It was to grow, indeed, in respect of thoroughness and ruthlessness as the war proceeded. At first there was only suppression of unpalatable facts, both political and military. The White Paper issued by the German Government on August 3rd confined itself to that insidious form of untruth which consists of omission. Under military and police censorship the newspapers were also required to commit falsehood by omission. Then positive untruth followed—wholesale, continuous, and under direct Government control and "inspiration."

Fanning the flames of hate

Thus were the first flames of German hatred fanned with stories of wells in Alsace-Lorraine poisoned by French military surgeons. Thus was the populace stirred into murderous fury by fantastic stories of "swarms of spies," with consequent attacks—in nearly every case without a glimmer of reason—on hapless British, French, and Russian subjects still "guests" on German soil. Thus was frenzied patriotism engendered on the eve of the declaration of war by tales about the "unlawful invasion" of Germany by French aeroplanes and the "treacherous crossing of our eastern frontier by Russian patrols." This at the behest of a Government which had kept its people and the world in sublime ignorance of its own criminal stroke against Belgium!

Public opinion in Germany was not misled and muzzled in simple consequence of the necessities of a war censorship. People in Britain have themselves had experience of the censorship, and from the glass-house they have inhabited during the war are in no position to throw stones at the German enemy. But in respect of systematic, organised feeding of the country with lies about conditions at home and abroad, nothing, happily, occurred in Britain during the first year of the war to compare, even feebly, with the mendacity of which the befooled German people were the victims.

On occasions innumerable the British censorship was ludicrously stupid. It treated this nation of grown-ups like babes in arms. It compelled the country, for the most part, to wage war in the dark, but it did not make of deception a positive virtue, or deliberately stuff untruth, day in and day out, down the Empire's throat.

The German General Staff expected to win the war without mobilising the Fatherland's liars. It planned as we know, to capture Paris in "a few weeks," to turn about and crush Russia before the Tsar's armies were in battle motion, and then to deal with Britain. Liège and other events having supervened, explanations became urgently necessary if that priceless asset, public confidence, was not to be forfeited, so the liar brigades were called up for active service. They took the field gleefully in mass formations. Presently every printing-press in the Fatherland proceeded to belch forth what turned out to be an inexhaustible supply of malevolent and prevaricatory ammunition. The abrupt stoppage of the onrush to Paris

Digitized by Google



British prisoners at work under guard recovering waste land for agricultural purposes.



At the provision waggon. Distribution of food to British prisoners of war in Germany.





The first stage. A convoy of British soldiers taken captive by Germans during the fighting in Flanders. In circle: Industrial spade-work.

CAMERA-PICTURES OF THE EVERYDAY LIFE OF BRITISH PRISONERS OF WAR IN GERMANY.

Digitized by Google

was "explained." The Crown Prince and Von Kluck had executed nothing but a tactical and strategic "withdrawal" from the lines they had once occupied almost within sight of the coveted prize. Cholera, too (so the German troops were told) was raging in Paris, and German commanders could not reconcile their "duty" to their men with pushing forward the self-checked, "irresistible advance." Operations in Belgium "were taking a normal course." The General Staff's plans had experienced "local disarrangement," but the main objective was being achieved "entirely on the projected lines."

The liar legion now turned its attention to the atrocities with which the German army in Belgium was horrifying the civilised world. To begin with (averred the legion) there had been "no atrocities." They were the figments of Belgium's disordered imagination and the inventions of Germany's enemies. A University of Berlin professor disposed of the atrocities question to the complete satisfaction of all Germans by "diagnosing" them in his laboratory of psychology in Unter den Linden as "mass hypnotism," induced in the Belgian national mind by the natural and inevitable terrors of invasion. The Belgian men, women, and children who had supplied gruesome details of "atrocities" had been "hypnotised" into liars. The only "atrocities" which had really occurred were those inflicted by the cruel and brutal Belgians themselves upon Germany's heroic soldiery, at whom, in the guise of guerrilla warrior-defenders of their territory and liberty, the invaded populace had had the effrontery to "snipe."



GERMAN SOLDIERS BEING INOCULATED AGAINST THE CHOLERA SCOURGE.
The successful use of inoculation against infectious disease was one of the many remarkable scientific phenomena of the Great War. Probably the mortality due to cholera among the Austrian troops made the Germans specially active in taking all possible precautionary measures against this terrible scourge.

The Kaiser and "poor Belgium"

It was the Belgians, not the Kaiser's culture-bearing hordes, who hacked off hands, ears, and feet, gouged out eyes, burnt, pillaged, and raped. If German soldiers had resorted to excesses, they had only "retaliated," and done so "with a heavy heart." Civilian Belgians had suffered only "self-inflicted" indignities and hardships (explained the erudite Berlin professor of psychology). They had no right, morally or legally, to deny the invader the hospitality of their country. The destruction of Louvain and Aerschot was an act of poetic retribution, not vandalism. And the Kaiser's heart "bled for poor Belgium."

This, and more, Germany was told, and this Germany implicitly, blindly believed. The result was the production of a state of national callousness in the country, which will remain for ever a blot on the German name. It engendered a stereotyped condition of mind toward "frightfulness," as a legitimate method of warfare, that was destined to make the average German look upon submarine murder (like the Lusitania massacre) and asphyxiating gas not only with utter indifference, but as weapons put in the Fatherland's hand by Providence itself for the overthrow of Germany's unholy foes.

Lies about the Grand Fleet

Lies of every conceivable sort about Germany's enemies henceforth became the Government's favourite means of regulating public opinion about the war. England became the special target of the German Official Press Bureau's campaign. The truth about every solitary incident associated with the British name was systematically distorted. The British Fleet's first important naval loss—the sinking of the Aboukir, Cressy, and Hogue by submarine U9—was described as having "set every knee in Britain quaking." London was depicted as "panic-stricken," and Sir John Jellicoe's armada was said to be "skulking in craven fear in impregnably-fortified harbours," while the officers and men aboard them were trembling neurotics.

That was to prove the keynote of German comment on the British Navy throughout the war. As submarine warfare grew and was eventually succeeded by acknowledged piracy, lies about the Grand Fleet increased in magnitude and ingenuity. Sublimely oblivious of the fact that Von Tirpitz's "High Sea Fleet" had degenerated, thanks to wholesome respect for Jellicoe, into a "High Canal Fleet," the Press of Germany was instructed to delude the people into believing that the Kaiser's ships had effectually "bottled up" Britain's Navy. The Germans were only waiting outside Britain's mined waters for "a chance" to smash the cowardly foe. The Germans continued to believe this myth, because they were not permitted to know the truth.

Sir John French's army was now making its presence increasingly felt. That "contemptible little" force had not been captured on the Marne; not only that, but it was proving an ineradicable thorn in the German side in Flanders during the German's frenzied attacks round Ypres and the Yser Canal in the October fighting. The Official German Lie Bureau thereupon gave the cue for misleading the country about the British Army. It was an aggregation of "incompetent mercenaries," who had been given long legs, as the comic Press proceeded to illustrate, merely for the purpose of "running away" from German heroes. German troops disliked meeting British troops, because the latter were "cowards" and did not test the real mettle of the Kaiser's soldiers. The British were waging the war as a "sport." They did not take it seriously like the Germans. They were not a "worthy antagonist." They surrendered on the slightest provocation. These particular lies were destined to be short-lived. As more and more Germans came in contact with the "island mercenaries," cold steel and deadly aim from British rifles enforced a respect which increased by leaps and bounds as the war went on. After a while

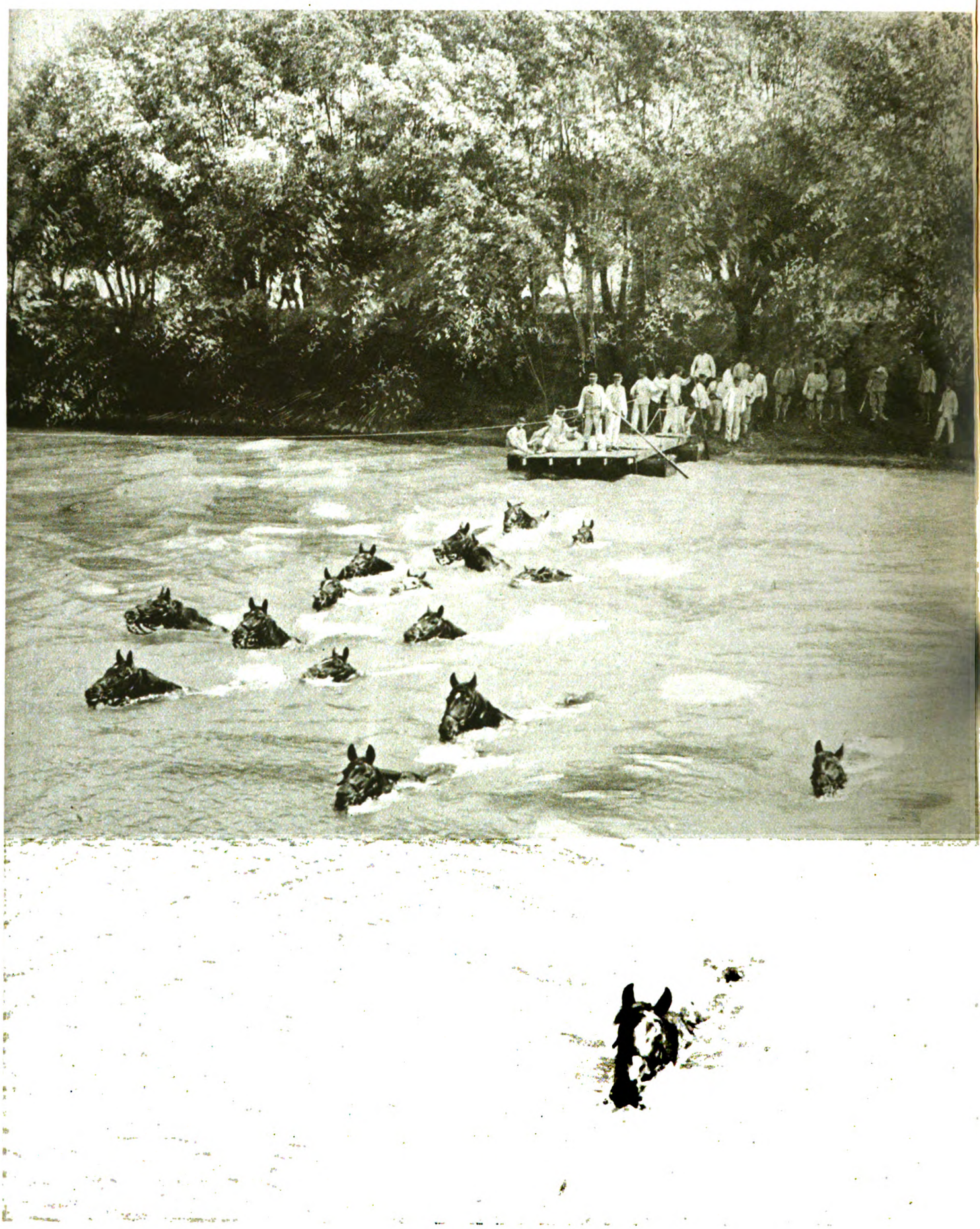
Digitized by Google



Reproduced by the courtesy of Lady Ian Hamilton. *From a painting by John S. Sargent, R.A.*

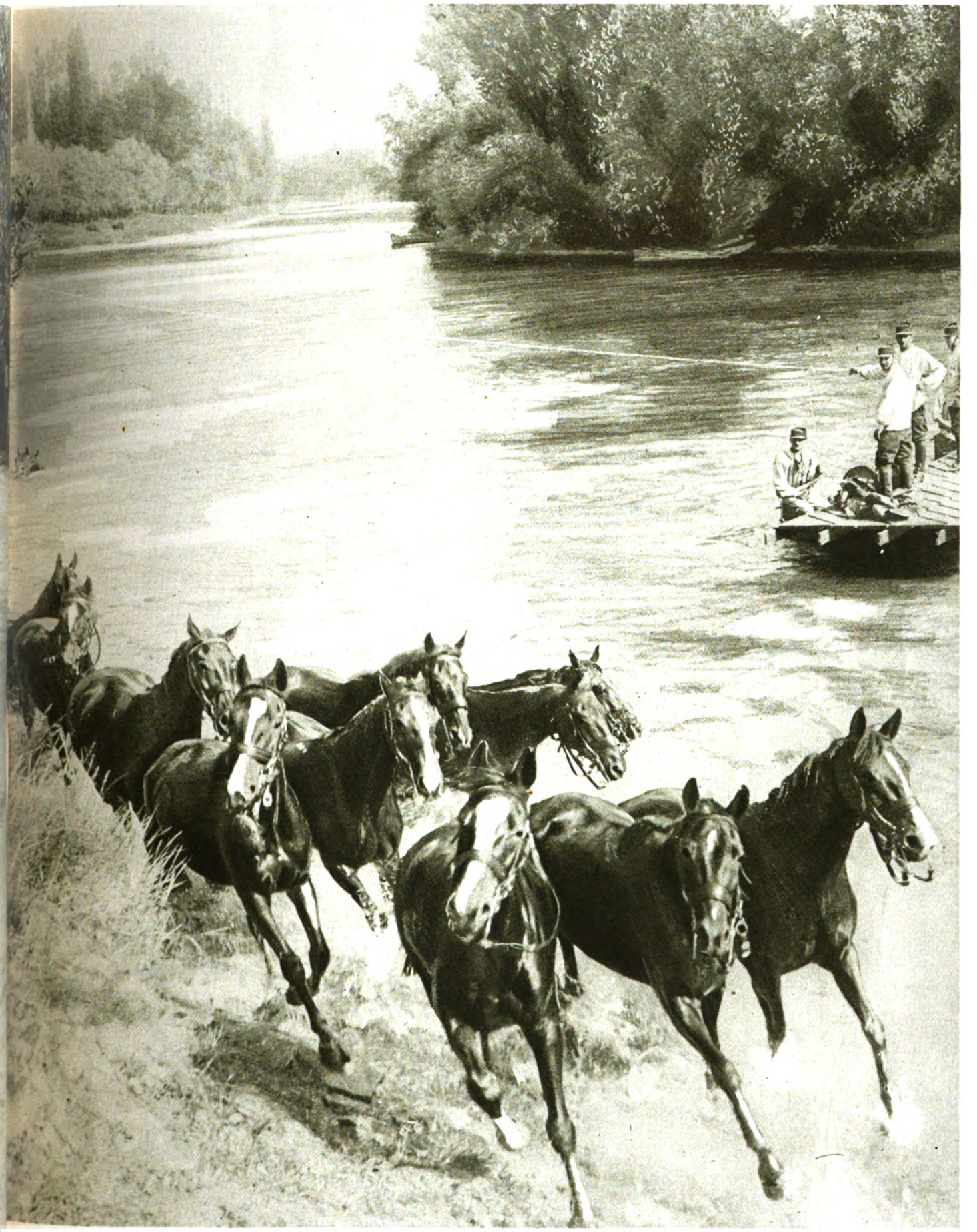
General Sir Ian Hamilton, commanding the Expeditionary Forces in the Dardanelles.

Digitized by Google



French engineers convoying war horses across a river in Northern France——

Digitized by Google



—The handsome creatures, having enjoyed their dip, gallop along the opposite bank.

Digitized by Google



A sporting chance: British soldiers "making a dash for it" across an opening in a long sand-bagged communication trench in France.

Digitized by Google

nobody in Germany considered Sir John French's "little army" contemptible.

Lies about British recruiting followed the tarradiddles about British cowardice in the field. Although Germans knew perfectly well that heroic and extraordinary measures to raise an army were unavoidable in a democratic, non-military nation, they proceeded, for their own purposes, to distort and exaggerate the measures to which Lord Kitchener resorted. They pictured England as sordid, indifferent, unpatriotic, and decadent; predicted ignominious failure for the recruiting scheme; told absurd falsehoods about "the heavy cash inducements" necessary to coax Britons to come to their country's defence; described Ireland as in a state of open revolt against recruiting propaganda, and said Germany need give herself no anxiety over "the imaginary millions" which Kitchener would never raise except "on paper."

Fables about the conditions in British oversea Dominions were also widely diffused. India was "on the verge of revolution"; Egypt was in a condition of "internal unrest which would tie up a huge British army in that region" for the duration of the war; South Africa would follow the gallant lead of De Wet and throw off the conqueror's yoke; Australia, Canada, and New Zealand, preoccupied in material self-development, had only indifferent interest in the Motherland's fate. The "handful" of "amateur soldiers" they might eventually send to Europe would only be so many more easy victims for the invincible German military Juggernaut. England had already organised "a menagerie of all the wild races of the earth" against cultured Germany. A few thousand Indians, "Australian kangaroos," New Zealand bushmen, South African rangers, and Canadian plainsmen, more, or less, need cause Germans no concern.

Lies about British economic conditions also became merrily common in Germany. London ceased, very early in the war, to be "the metropolis of the financial universe." The sovereign of England had been compelled to yield pride of place to the German mark as the world's chief medium of exchange. British industry, no matter who won the war, was lamed for ever. The 1915 War Loan, following its "failed" predecessor of 1914, had only been "pulled through" by offering the public "unprecedentedly attractive" terms. Mr. McKenna's scheme was "beneath the dignity of a Finance Minister." It was characterised by methods "with which we are familiar only in the case of bankrupt companies which it is desired to reorganise or liquidate." Mr. Lloyd George's plans to organise the industrial forces of Britain were belittled as "Utopian and doomed to fiasco." On such predigested baby-food were the German people brought up after August 4th, 1914.

Spoon-feeding the German people

The Government-controlled Press policy in Germany throughout had one great, general, definite purpose: To explain away the failure to end the war by the scheduled time and to buoy up national hope with the idea that "victory," though deferred, was "certain." Every pretext which could conceivably serve this end was gleefully seized upon. Germans were made to think that the "truth" was visible only in their own Press, that everything published in enemy countries was false. Some day the scales will fall from eyes which suffered from the grossest case of official astigmatism in all history.

At the last general elections in Germany the Social Democratic party polled 4,250,000 votes, which was far and away the largest number recorded by any political organisation in the Fatherland's history. It represented about one-third of the entire voting strength of the Empire, and resulted in the election to the Imperial Parliament (Reichstag) of 111 deputies out of a Chamber of 397 members. Although the German governmental system withheld from Parliament any real power except the ability to block votes for supply—and whenever that happened the Kaiser-created "Government" dissolved Parliament and repeated the process until a pliable assembly was secured—the world in general, doubtless, expected that the Social Democrats would, when the emergency arose, act as a strong deterrent to war. They were the one avowing party of peace and pacifism in Germany. They had repeatedly opposed army and navy legislation, and were persistent and consistent antagonists of militarism and all its works. Their one promise to the Government and the nation to shoulder arms was conditional upon a war of defence pure and simple. Herr Bebel, the adored autocrat of German Socialism, publicly declared more than once that if the Fatherland's territory were ever invaded by the foe, he and all his comrades would unhesitatingly do their duty as Germans and patriots. What they would do in the case of a war of aggression, deliberately provoked by Germany, they also left in no doubt. They made it plainly understood that patriotism of that sort had no claim on their loyalty, and that a general strike, paralysing Militarism's power to make war, would almost certainly be declared.

Attitude of the Social Democrats

Having sedulously induced the country to believe that the storm-clouds which followed Serajevo were about to break in upon an innocent and pacific Germany, it was manifest that the German Government would delude the powerful Social Democratic party by similarly specious



WHERE THE GERMANS BURROWED UNDER THE SWISS FRONTIER.

A stoutly-constructed German trench which, according to the Germans themselves, was carried underground into Swiss territory. The flag bearing the Geneva Cross and the formidable wire entanglements marked the Swiss frontier. The trench terminated in a subterranean burrow, and this, for storage or mining or other reason, extended for more than one hundred yards beyond and beneath the neutral border-line.

Digitized by Google



PRINCE HENRY OF PRUSSIA LEAVING FOR THE FRONT.

Prince Henry, of "mailed fist" memory, had a tremendous send-off when he motored through the German capital on his way to the front. He is seen driving his car, while his chauffeur had charge of a favourite dog.



GERMANY'S ARMED AMBULANCE MEN.

Squad of German Red Cross men leaving Berlin. The rifles they carried offered a somewhat startling if typical contrast to the brassards on their arms. Berliners bestowed on them flowers and other farewell gifts.

persuasion. On August 1st, 2nd, 3rd, 1914, the Imperial Chancellor was absorbed in delicate negotiations with the leaders of the various Reichstag parties anticipatory of the famous war-session of the House on August 4th. It was of the utmost political importance for Germany's purposes that a picture of unalloyed harmony should be presented to the world. The Socialist leaders demanded, in accordance with their party tenets, evidence that the hostilities for which the Government required £265,000,000 of emergency war credits and £75,000,000 of loans authorised were of a "defensive" character.

Reichstag's famous war-session

The "proofs" were furnished. The "sword had been forced into the Emperor's hand" by Russia and France. Germany found herself in "a state of necessity which knows no law." The Fatherland was in imminent "peril." Invasion was at its door—all its doors. Socialism wilted. The parliamentary group, in solemn council assembled, voted by practically unanimous ballot to rally round the flag with the rest of the nation. Herr Haase, Bebel's nominal successor, stood up in his place in the House on the fateful afternoon of August 4th and, amid platitudinous and apologetic protestations of Social Democracy's "constitutional abhorrence" of war, militarism, and aggression, pledged his party's 111 votes to the measures for which the Kaiser's Government needed parliamentary sanction. Ten minutes later Haase's cohorts were on their feet cheering with the rest of a war-mad Reichstag the Chancellor's sentiment, shrieked in tones of defiant passion, that a united Germany, "Ja das ganze Volk" (yea, the entire people), was now in the field. Dr. Frank, a brilliant young Baden lawyer, widely looked upon as the future Socialist chieftain, enlisted as a volunteer in the Army, and fell in the earliest weeks of the war.

"United Germany" in the field

Throughout the autumn and winter of 1914 German Social Democrats remained nominally loyal to the war. The "Vorwärts" and other party organs gave intermittent indications of shamefacedness at the completeness with which the "Red" doctrinaires had in one brief afternoon belied half a century of principles, but nothing savouring of real recantation was apparent. The military censorship, which had an iron grip of the Press, watched Socialist journals with special vigilance; but apart from minor transgressions like veiled hints at "food price usury," brutality to soldiers in the trenches, and suggestions that eventual terms of peace ought not to include annexation of conquered territory, Socialist papers were well behaved. They were confiscated and suppressed on, perhaps, half a dozen occasions, but for altogether innocuous offences like

Digitized by Google

those just mentioned. Of a return to first principles in respect of war as an abhorrent and unrighteous thing, German Social Democracy gave no sign. Meantime, millions of Socialist artisans were in the field, and tens of thousands of them bleeding for the Kaiser.

A rift in the lute

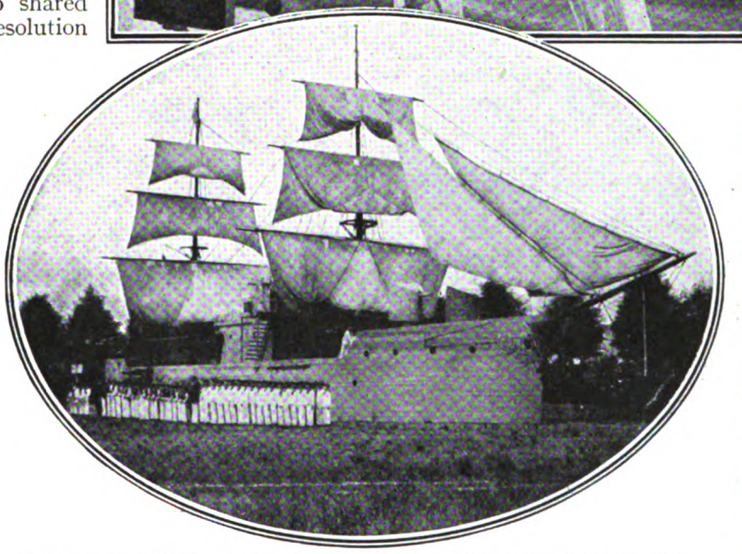
In the spring of 1915 the first semblance of a rift in the lute manifested itself. The same Herr Haase, who had proclaimed his party's support of the initial war credits in August, 1914, proclaimed himself a bitter opponent of further credits. Of the same opinion were two other Socialist leaders, Herr Bernstein and Herr Kautsky. It came to light that roundly 25 per cent. of their fellow-members of the parliamentary group shared their views; that the resolution to vote the third war credit of £500,000,000 on March 20th was only approved by a vote of 77 to 23; that a proposal to vote £250,000,000 instead of £500,000,000 was defeated by only 64 to 34. A schism, unmistakable though not of direct and immediate moment, was evidently at hand.

In a speech at Frankfort-on-the-Main, on April 28th, Herr Haase made statements which indicated plainly that the Social Democratic party, or a large section of it, now realised it had been shamefully duped by the German Government, and even cheated in respect of certain promises made in return for the party's war-credit support. "We desire no general strike," said Haase. "Everyone should do his duty as a citizen, but that does not impose the obligation to vote unlimited war credits. That would be equivalent to declaring the bankruptcy of all the principles for which we have hitherto stood."

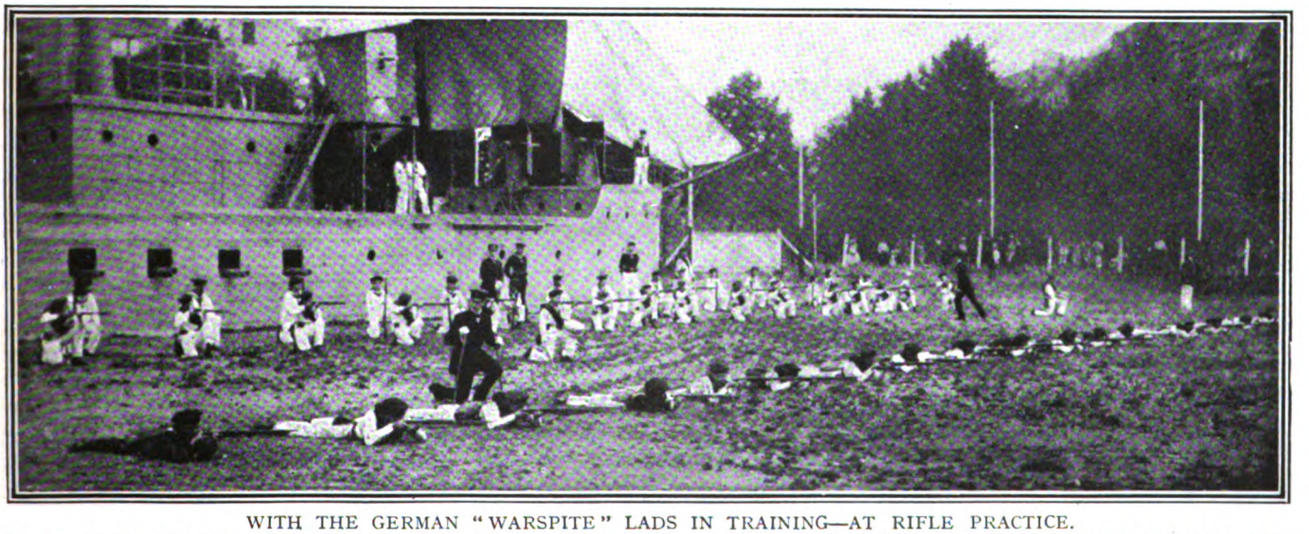
On June 19th Herren Haase, Bernstein, and Kautsky published in the Leipzig party paper a manifesto entitled, "The Need of the Hour," fulminating against further support of war credits by the Socialist



GUNNERY EXERCISE.



GERMAN TRAINING "SHIP" SET UP IN THE MIDDLE OF A FIELD.



WITH THE GERMAN "WARSPITE" LADS IN TRAINING—AT RIFLE PRACTICE.

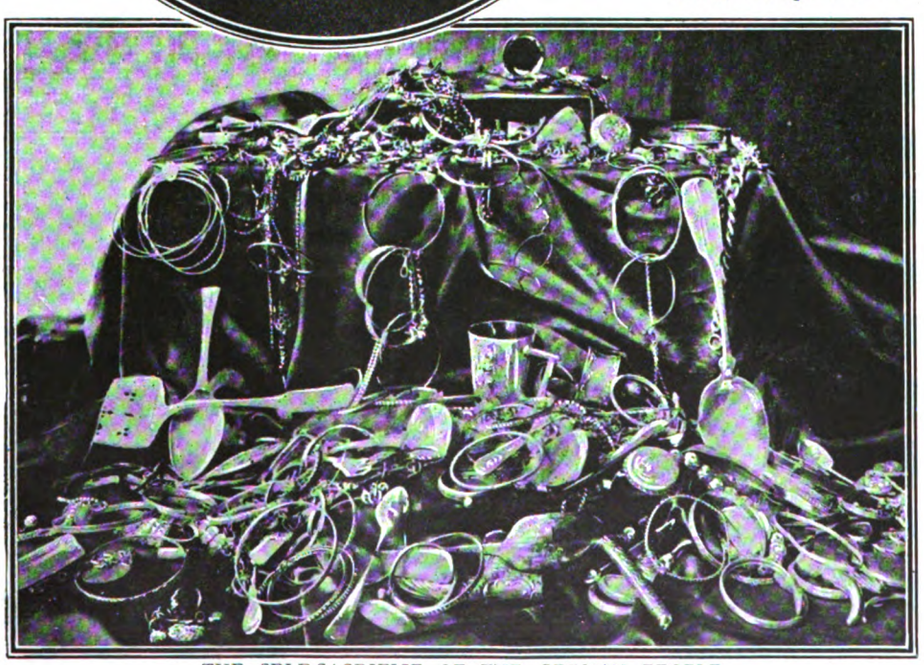
In view of the difficulties presented by the British Fleet, the training of Germany's future sailors was carried out on land, somewhere in the vicinity of Kiel or Cuxhaven, where a fully-rigged "ship" was set up in an open field. Restricted as the lads were in their preparation for a sailor's life, their elders under the command of Von Tirpitz had scarcely more favourable opportunities for service, owing to the same cause.

Digitized by Google





IRON RINGS FOR GOLD.
German civilians giving up gold rings to a Government official. In exchange they received iron rings inscribed: "For our country."



THE SELF-SACRIFICE OF THE GERMAN PEOPLE.
Gold and silver plate and jewellery given to the German Government, exhibited so that art dealers might buy them for gold. A typical incident at one of the receiving bureaux is represented in the circular view.

organisation on the ground that the original war credits supported previously were for "a defensive war," while the King of Bavaria had just blurted out that the war was a war of conquest. Other Socialists, like the ultra-Radical Liebknecht, went further and shrieked, amid pandemonium in the Prussian Diet, that "the masses demand peace." Haase, Bernstein, Kautsky, Liebknecht, Braun, and party comrades who shared their views obviously constituted a German stop-the-war group. But in reality they meant, for the time at least, no more than Mr. Ramsay Macdonald, M.P., or the British Stop-the-War Committee meant in this country.

A few days after the Haase-Bernstein-Kautsky manifesto and the peace demonstration in the Prussian Diet, the "Vorwärts" was suppressed by the military authorities for "treasonable" peace clamour and denunciation of the Royalties who were talking out of school and unblushingly acknowledging that Germany's "defensive war" was a war of aggression.

All these episodes meant, without doubt, that Socialist sentiment towards the war was in a state of ferment: that it was no longer in that condition of blind unanimity which evoked the Imperial Chancellor's enthusiasm in August, 1914. But the Allies would have been guilty of absurd self-deception if they had concluded that German Socialism had already become an effective aid in the problem of crushing the common enemy. It was still securely under the boot-heel of the military dictatorship enthroned in Berlin.

Mobilisation of German finance

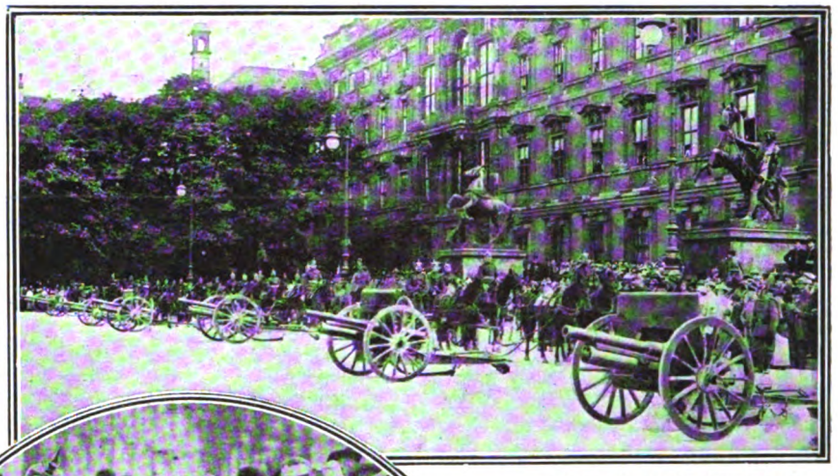
One of the conspicuous preparations of Germany for war, which Europe resolutely declined to measure at its real magnitude, was the policy of the German Imperial Bank, inaugurated as early as the spring of 1913, which was officially described as "Finance Mobilisation." The Government institution proclaimed the urgent necessity of making the Fatherland impregnable against the sudden emergency of war—language made familiar by Admiral von Tirpitz and the Minister for War when they periodically asked the Reichstag for fresh battleships and battalions—by accumulating well in advance a huge gold reserve. At that time—June 1st, 1913—the Reichsbank held, roundly, £55,000,000 of gold. The authorities proceeded forthwith to augment it to unprecedented proportions. Germany's favourable trade balance enabled her to import profitably gold from abroad, and by dint of such measures and the inculcation of "gold-saving habits" at home, the Imperial Bank found itself in possession, in August, 1914, of a "record" reserve of £65,000,000. During the war gold was "called up" by resorting to unheard-of and even grotesque practices—such as

Digitized by Google

granting half-holidays to schools which collected a certain minimum of gold money, for which the bank would exchange paper or silver. Newspapers organised gold-collecting bureaux, and daily preached the necessity of paying gold into the Reichsbank as a prime defensive necessity of the realm. Gold disappeared, before the war was a week old, as if by magic, and nothing but paper, nickel, and silver money was in circulation in Germany. Notes for even as low a denomination as one mark (1s.) and two marks (2s.) were issued. To hoard a gold coin came to be a treasonable misdemeanour, and the patriot who would pay in even a single 10-mark (10s.) piece and accept paper or silver in return, was entitled to consider that he was "doing his bit" for the war. By July 1st, 1915, the Reichsbank claimed to be in possession of a gold reserve of nearly £120,000,000—nearly double the amount in hand when the war began.

"A prime defensive necessity"

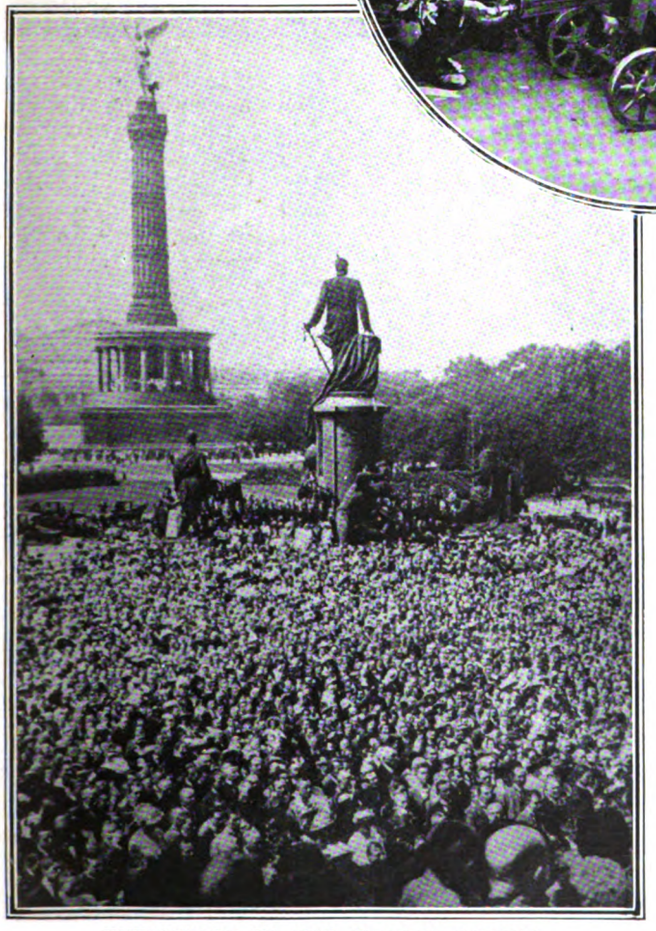
As the gold reserve rose,



RUSSIAN GUNS IN BERLIN.
These pieces of captured Russian ordnance were displayed outside the Royal Palace at Berlin with the object of convincing the populace of the all-conquering powers of the German arms.



IN A BERLIN STREET.
German soldiers examining a quick-firing gun captured on the Russian front.



ENTHUSIASM IN THE GERMAN CAPITAL.
To promote public confidence in Germany special parades were organised of guns captured from the Allies. The above photograph is of a crowd which congregated in one of the principal thoroughfares of the German capital to witness one of these processions.

Germany's system of frenzied war finance set in. A German banker friend, a privy councillor, admitted in private that "we have had our engraved blocks for the stamping of paper currency ready for years. All we shall have to do is to reel it off the presses in the desired quantities." That is exactly what Germany did for a year. The country was full of money, paper money, engraved promises to pay—some time.

Outside Germany, and doubtless inside it as well, it was quite impossible to guess even approximately at the sum total of German fiat money in circulation. One may only be certain that it was incalculably in excess of the £120,000,000 gold reserve supposedly on hand in the Imperial Bank for its redemption. The German Government finance system, as was publicly admitted by the leading commercial organ, "Frankfurter Zeitung," rested not on any tangible security, but on confidence. The German Government told the people that their vanquished foes would pay the piper; that gold indemnities of dazzling magnitude were to be brought back to Berlin by the victorious armies which had subjugated London, Paris, and Petrograd, and that if Germans would only content themselves meantime with the Government's paper pledges, these would be redeemed in due course, at the rate of 100 pfennigs to the mark (or at their full nominal value).

Dreams of dazzling magnitude

The German Government at the outset financed the war by loan, and evidently intended to continue the process, as the Chancellor of the Exchequer in Berlin, Dr. Helfferich, announced, as long as might be necessary. German war loans were 5½ per cent. issues, and aggregated to July, 1915, £725,000,000. Already Germany was saddled with an annual interest charge of £39,875,000. There were intimations from Berlin of another war loan of £400,000,000, with additional interest burdens of £22,000,000. It was only the Socialist newspapers which had the temerity to conjure up for the country's contemplation the financial nightmare that would oppress the Fatherland in perpetuity if the

Digitized by Google



DINNER-TIME AT SPANDAU.
German soldiers drawing their rations.



GIFTS FOR DEPARTING TROOPERS.
Red Cross nurse distributing gifts to men of the German Landsturm before they left for the front.

fortunes of war, "after all," ran against it. The German Government made much of the ease with which the nation had thus far met all war-loan demands. There were boastful tales of vast over-subscriptions, and flamboyant proclamations of the country's abilities to meet any fresh demands that might be imposed upon it in the days yet to come. The German savings-banks, thanks to the cultivated virtue of national thrift, contained in July, 1914, upwards of £1,000,000,000 of deposits, while the German national wealth was estimated in 1913 at between £18,800,000,000 and £19,850,000,000, and to be increasing annually by from £550,000,000 to £600,000,000. It was pointed out that the effective blockade of Germany by land and sea had resulted in so complete a stoppage of imports that she was "saving" by compulsion the £500,000,000 or £600,000,000 which she had been accustomed to spend abroad every year for imported goods. Germany, of course, was by the same token prevented from prosecuting her rich export trade, worth, according to the statistics for 1913, £495,600,000 a year; but she had an enormous home market to depend upon, and swollen domestic orders compensated to no inconsiderable degree the loss of her foreign trade.

Germany's lost foreign trade

The measures hitherto discussed concern merely the financing of the war itself. For the financing of the hardly less vital requirements of German internal commerce and trade, prompt and far-reaching arrangements were made. With that unfailing adherence to specialisation characteristic of the Teuton, he laid down the principle early in the war that each branch of economic life should look after and regulate its own particular necessities. Thus the farmers, with the help of their great national Agriculturists' League, which was at once both a political party and a co-operative association, were early in the field with a "War Credit" Bank. Partially subsidised by State funds, this bank extended cash credits at low interest and on easy terms to needy farmers and landowners, and vastly facilitated the production of the great crop Germany gathered in the summer of 1915. The two great industrial combines of the country—the Manufacturers' Union and the Central Association of German Industry—also formed war credit banks for the benefit of their members. For the accommodation of the general public throughout the country the Berlin War Credit Bank was organised, the capital being furnished by the great banks and leading business corporations, while the Imperial Bank placed at its disposal a continuing discount credit of £10,000,000. The War Credit Bank's dividend could not, by the articles of agreement, exceed 4 per cent., and surplus profits were to be bestowed upon the dependents of fallen soldiers.

One of the real limits of Germany's endurance was the risk of collapse in her finance and credit system as herein outlined. Up to the middle of July, 1915, all had gone well. But her bankers knew that the system was fictitious and unstable, and contained the seeds of self-destruction. If Germany were to win, all would be well. If she lost, she would be confronted by the most utter ruin and bankruptcy in the history of nations. She was playing for great stakes, for with the result of the war her entire economic existence was wrapped up. The recklessness with which her soldiers were sacrificed is the measure of Germany's extremities.

Playing for great stakes

In hardly any other direction did German organisation in war time accomplish such successful results as in respect of the food supply and national thrift. That after a year of war the enemy was still removed from danger of collapse by starvation was due to his prompt, thoroughgoing and efficient measures for conserv ng breadstuffs, meat, and fodder, and drilling the country, frugal by inherited tradition, in the arts and necessities of war economy. In the early days of the war grave anxiety prevailed as to bread supply. In Berlin, in August, 1914, there were panic-stricken purchases of flour and other

Digitized by Google

cereals by citizens lest the stoppage of supplies from abroad and the enormous requirements of the Army should bring famine upon the civilian population.

Germany was reaping when war broke out a somewhat more than average harvest, but serious doubts were entertained as to whether the yield, in the extraordinary conditions of war, would tide the country over until the next crop. Prices rose from week to week, and uneasiness became so acute with the dawn of 1915 that on January 25th the Imperial Government instituted a practical State monopoly in breadstuffs by commandeering the remaining grain supply, in order to put a peremptory stop to "bread usury" on the part of speculating farmers and millers. The monopoly was enforced by means of two separate agencies—a semi-official "War Grain Company," which was clothed with arbitrary, confiscatory, price-regulating, and policing powers over grain stores, and by the establishment of bread rations, whereby the public could obtain bread only on exhibition of "bread cards." The daily allowance per person was at first fixed at 225 grammes (nearly 8 ounces). Later on the allotment was decreased to 200 grammes (about 6¾ ounces). Local communities were furnished with breadstuffs by the War Grain Company on the population basis, and charged with the duty of distributing it to the people, so-and-so much per capita, children receiving less than adults. Discretion was given to the authorities to increase the ration in accordance with peculiarly local requirements. Miners in Silesia, for example, were allotted, owing to the exacting nature of their occupation, a heavier bread allowance than a clerk or merchant in the same district.

The bread-card system

The bread-card system was relentlessly enforced. People eating in cafés or restaurants or elsewhere outside the domestic establishment were served with bread only on presentation of cards. Exceptions were made only in the case of strangers; but if these remained in a place for any length of time they, too, had to provide themselves with bread-cards like regular residents. The "help yourself" bread-basket, an old-time feature of German restaurant life, disappeared. Bakers, of course, played an important rôle in the ration system. They received an allotment of flour corresponding to their sales for a given week, their supplies for the succeeding week being reckoned on that basis.

Mapped out at the inception with typical Teuton thoroughness, the breadstuffs situation was so taken in hand that the Imperial authorities were shortly able to announce with confidence that, by practising Spartan economy and adhering strictly to the ration regulations, Germany's supplies would easily last over "the critical months" between the spring and autumn of 1915. The 200-gramme daily ration was based on a census of breadstuffs stocks taken in March. A later census, in May, having determined that the surplus at the end of the harvest year would amount to nearly 700,000 tons, or about half as much again as had been expected, it was decided that local authorities might, in special cases, increase the 200-gramme ration to 220 grammes.

Mr. Lloyd George's epigram

Besides taking over the breadstuffs supply and regulating distribution of bread on the ration system, the German authorities resorted to drastic action to prevent reckless use of the diminishing supply of wheaten flour. Arbitrary laws were passed requiring bakers and householders to mix a large, fixed percentage of rye with wheaten flour; excesses were made a misdemeanour punishable by fine and imprisonment. The most rigid provision was a decree requiring bread and rolls, and even pastry, to be baked from a mixture of rye and wheaten flour and potato meal.

It was the country's prompt and loyal adaptation of its habits to "potato flour" and "potato bread" that caused Mr. Lloyd George to coin his celebrated epigram that "England had more to fear from Germany's 'potato-



THE RAID ON THE GERMAN KITCHENS FOR MUNITIONS OF WAR.

Quite early in the war there was a shortage of copper in Germany, and all spare articles of this metal in domestic use were requisitioned by the Government. The above picture shows children bringing in old cooking vessels, chandeliers, etc., to one of the collecting depots in Berlin.

Digitized by Google

bread spirit' than from Hindenburg's strategy." It was not easy for the people with the biggest appetite in the world to accustom themselves to potato-bread and potato-rolls with the morning, noon, and afternoon coffee, which took the place of the tea of the English. But "War Bread" ("Kriegsbrot," or "K-brot," as it came to be called) soon became popular. The Kaiser and the Crown Prince caused it to be known that "War Bread" was being served exclusively at their messes at the front, and the baker who sold or the citizen who ate the old-time wheaten loaf or pastry was looked upon as a traitor.

Meantime the State took the question of the potato and meat supply vigorously in hand. Germans are tremendous potato eaters, and the available stores were vanishing at even a faster rate than breadstuffs, owing to



LEARNING TO WRITE WITH THEIR LEFT HANDS.

An example of Teuton thoroughness. As Germany's maimed soldiers became convalescent, schools were opened at which they received instruction from lady teachers in the art of writing with the left hand.

the necessity of using potatoes as fodder for pigs, Russian fodder imports being no longer available. Shortly after the War Grain Company was formed, an Imperial Potato Distribution Bureau was organised in Berlin, and went to work on the basis of a national census of stocks on hand. Prices were arbitrarily fixed, confiscations legalised, and retail dealers instructed to peddle out their supplies on a fixed per capita scale. It was eventually determined that there were more potatoes on hand than at first calculated, and, while State control of them was not relinquished, regulations for distribution and prices were gradually relaxed. But prompt State intervention served the purpose of guaranteeing that the German potato supply, as in the case of breadstuffs, would last until the 1915 harvest.

German potato supply assured

Germany was much worse off for meat than for breadstuffs or potatoes. Economists as late as June, 1915, were predicting that only a miracle could stave off disastrous conditions in respect of this commodity. Government action, taken as far back as January, compelling local communities of more than 5,000 inhabitants to purchase and store preserved and smoked meats to the extent of 15s. per head of the population, had apparently not made the meat situation secure. No fresh meat was reaching the market. That already slaughtered had been pickled, and was being doled out on some more or less rigid ration system to butchers and consumers under municipal control. The supply was far below the demand, and prices were correspondingly high.

Ten food commandments

Realising that no organisation of food supply, however scientific, could be effective without popular co-operation, the German Government was sleepless in its inculcation of thrift among the people. The German is frugal by nature and habit. He is intensely patriotic besides, so that appeals to abjure extravagance and live exclusively the simple life did not fall on deaf ears. Early in the war the Burgomaster of the famous Westphalian industrial city of Dortmund gave expression to the national spirit when, at the end of a "thrift meeting" in the Town Hall, he suggested that every true German should adopt the motto: "I am proud to thirst and hunger for the Fatherland."

The following "ten food commandments" epitomise the "potato-bread spirit" which enabled Germany to "hold out." They were displayed, in varying forms, in many public places—in railway carriages, in stations, in shops, restaurants, and even kitchens of private houses:



THE CARE OF THE CHILDREN.

How the children of Berlin were looked after while their parents were away at the front. An American who returned from Germany in August, 1915, stated that "nearly every woman in Berlin was a widow and every child an orphan."

GERMANY IS STANDING AGAINST A WORLD OF ENEMIES WHO WOULD DESTROY HER.

I.—They will not succeed in defeating our glorious troops, but they wish to starve us out like a besieged fortress. They will also fail in that because we have enough breadstuffs in the country to nourish our population until the next harvest, but nothing must be wasted.

II.—Breadstuffs must not be used as fodder.

III.—Therefore, be economical with bread in order that the hopes of our foes may be confounded.

IV.—Respect the daily bread, then thou wilt have it always may the war last ever so long.

Digitized by Google



HIGH-EXPLOSIVE SHELLS: THE DECIDING FACTOR IN THE FIRST YEAR OF THE WAR.
Germany's supply of high-explosive shells appeared to be inexhaustible. The above photograph shows how they were transported from factory to base in wicker baskets.

V.—Teach these maxims also to thy children.

VI.—Do not despise even a single piece of bread because it is no longer fresh.

VII.—Do not cut off a slice more than thou needest to eat. Think always of our soldiers in the field who, often in some far-off, exposed position, would rejoice to have the bread which thou wastest.

VIII.—Eat war bread. It is recognisable by the letter K. It satisfies and nourishes as thoroughly as any other kind. If all eat it, we do not need to be anxious as to whether we shall always have bread.

IX.—Whoever first peels potatoes before cooking them wastes much. Therefore, cook potatoes with the jackets on. Thou savest thereby.

X.—Leavings of potatoes, meat, vegetables, etc., which thou canst not use, throw not away, but collect them as fodder for cattle. Such leavings will gladly be called for by the farmers.

The British Board of Trade stated that the most marked rises in food in Berlin in May, 1915, compared with the month previous, were in the prices of veal, mutton, pork, beef, bacon, and lentils. There were slight falls in the prices of potatoes, rye bread, and rye flour. These changes brought the general level of food prices in Berlin in May to about 65 per cent. above those for July, 1914, and about 69 per cent. above those of May, 1914. The general increase in British retail food prices from the beginning of the war to a parallel date may be estimated at 35 per cent. for the cities and at 30 per cent. for small towns and villages.

Food prices in Germany and England

No sketch of Germany's war-time food regulations, of course, would be complete without reference to the extraordinary preparations undertaken for a record-breaking 1915 harvest. Long-continuing drought in the months of May and June probably caused a considerably smaller yield than was at first counted upon, but the harvest in any event cannot but have been an extremely large one, thanks to the super-intensive methods of cultivation resorted to. Land in comparatively arid Germany is always exploited to a degree unusual in more fruitful territory, but in 1915 fields never planted before in their existence were ploughed and sown. Even town-lots were utilised for agricultural purposes.

The decree went forth from Imperial headquarters that in war "Germany expected every acre to do its duty." The whole Empire, therefore, was converted into a vast field, and had not drought supervened, it is probable that the crop would have provided a surplus for exportation. At any rate, the unprecedented measures adopted in respect of planting yielded crops which promised to tide the Germans over still another autumn, winter, and spring of war. The whines that rigorous British naval policy threatened civilian Germany with "starvation" were political cries pure and simple, designed to deceive, and to extort the sympathy of neutral countries. The Fatherland at no time during the war had ever really been menaced by the spectre of starvation. It had not only the broad acres of uninvaded Germany and Austria-Hungary to draw upon, but fertile conquered territory in France, Belgium, and Russia, and the problem of agricultural labour was solved by the

"Every acre to do its duty"



WAR BREAD FOR GERMAN SAILORS.
Voluntary helpers at a Berlin depot packing bread for the Navy into bags specially designed to keep the contents fresh for many days.

Digitized by Google



RETURNING WHENCE THEY CAME.
Germans who had been taken prisoners on the battlefields of Flanders marching through London to the railway-station, for transference back to the Fatherland in exchange for our men who were arriving back from the prison camps in Germany.

presence on German soil of 1,750,000 prisoners of war. War, like all business in Germany, was carried on by experts. It was therefore strictly in accordance with preconceived realisation of what war means that its purely business side was promptly linked up with the military and naval establishments. Not many days had gone by after August, 1914, when a "War Raw Materials Division" was added to the Ministry of War, and in charge of it the Government placed one of the keenest young business men in the country, Dr. Walther Rathenau, son of the founder and head of the famous Allgemeine Electricitäts Gesellschaft (General Electrical Company). It was Rathenau's primary task to conserve all existing supplies of raw materials essential to the prosecution of war—copper, cotton, brass, steel, iron, coal, petroleum, etc.—and arrange for their replenishment on the largest scale possible.

Conserving supplies of raw materials

As to munitions, German industry in Krupp's vast establishment was already "organised" on a prodigious scale, but the Government immediately began impressing into munition-manufacturing service countless establishments which, customarily dependent on export trade, were now free to turn their plants into arms, armament, and ammunition works, and to produce exclusively the multifarious impedimenta of war.

The great German chemical industry, also dependent to a large extent on foreign markets,



EN ROUTE TO THE FATHERLAND.
Another view of German prisoners leaving England for their own country. One of the men belonged to the sunken Mainz.



WHAT EAST LONDON SAW OF THE HUN.
The exchange of war prisoners gave Londoners in the vicinity of Stratford railway-station, where our German prisoners were entrained on their way back to the Fatherland, an opportunity of studying types of the men who at the bidding of the Kaiser carried fire and sword through peaceful Belgian cities and the once pleasant land of Northern France.

at once became a powerful adjunct of the German war-establishment. The asphyxiating gas with which the Kaiser's armies tried to suffocate their way to Calais was one of the diabolical achievements of German chemists in war time; but their talents were turned, no doubt, to more legitimate tasks as well—such as the discovery of a process for extracting nitrate from the air when imported nitrate was no longer obtainable.

Petroleum supplies, cut short by stoppage of traffic with the United States, gave the Germans less concern when their armies had reconquered the Galician oilfields than earlier in the war.

Digitized by Google

Rubber, of which enormous quantities were used in this motor war, was notoriously short in Germany. One of the first war measures taken was the commandeering of all the rubber in private possession for the uses of the Army motor-transport department.

With the closing of Italy as a source of supply, copper no longer reached Germany from outside sources, but in addition to vast accumulated stocks in the country and valuable stores found in the captured industrial districts of France, Russia, and Belgium, there was the incalculable quantity "buried" in every great manufacturing community like Germany and which, in a pinch, could be utilised for war purposes. There was the copper already used for telephone, telegraph, and cable purposes, roofs, buildings, bells, and a host of other objects.





HOME AGAIN FROM GERMAN PRISON CAMPS.
The Germans made numbers of our Royal Army Medical Corps prisoners. After great delay these were released, and at the same time an exchange of disabled prisoners of war was agreed to. Above and in circle are photographs taken at St. Pancras as the returned Red Cross men were driving away from the railway-station at the end of their long journey home.

Cotton was the raw-stuff causing Germany the greatest anxiety. In ordinary times she imported £20,000,000 worth per annum from the United States. As the British Government declined to declare cotton contraband of war, Germany contrived by means of importation direct and through adjacent neutral countries to secure immense quantities, even during the existence of the British blockade. As Sir William Ramsay repeatedly pointed out, cotton was indispensably necessary for the continued production of German explosives, and it seemed incomprehensible, in the circumstances, why the British Government hesitated to take action which would annihilate beyond all shadow of possibility the enemy's power to replenish her cotton reserves. The action of the German military authorities in restricting the use of cotton for purely commercial purposes was sufficiently eloquent. Such supplies of raw cotton as were still on hand were obviously to be devoted henceforth exclusively to the production of ammunition. In pursuance of its policy of associating practical business men with the conduct of the war, the German Government appointed a "War Cotton Committee," headed by the president of a leading cotton spinners' federation. It was the duty of the Committee to ameliorate as far as possible the dislocation

A "War Cotton Committee"



THE KINDLY DUTCH AND OUR RETURNING PRISONERS.
A young Dutch lady distributing gifts to returning British prisoners of war just before they went on board ship for the cross-Channel passage to England.

Digitized by Google

in the textile trades which the Army's cotton requirements necessitated.

The war organisation of German industry made heavy drafts on the services of women. It was estimated that 500,000 of them were at work in situations hitherto held by men who were serving with the colours. Women played a particularly important rôle in the munitions industry. In all branches of industrial life they took men's places with eminent satisfaction to all concerned. On the tramway lines, as conductors, women were at work almost from the hour of mobilisation. Probably in no trade or calling of any kind were they any longer unfamiliar figures.

Soldiers, after all is said and done, win war. At any rate the number of men a nation can continue to put in the field represents along with the money question the real limit of her endurance. It is difficult to calculate how many fighting men Germany had under arms after a year of war. Six or seven millions would probably not be an overestimate. Her losses in killed, wounded, and missing were hideously heavy—not less than 3,000,000 up to July 15th, 1915.



GERMANY FROM WITHIN.
Senior schoolboys, who had been formed into a corps of "Boy Recruits," arriving at Döberitz for a course of training.

Germany after a year of war

The German armies now in being (said a writer in "The Times" of July 5th, 1915) consist of the trained manhood of the country between the ages of twenty and thirty-nine, of some portions of the trained men between the ages of thirty-nine and forty-five, of an uncertain number of men of military age untrained before the war, and of a very large number (anything between 1,000,000 and 2,000,000) of volunteers—men over or under military age, and men of military age who enlisted, although they had not been called upon. The country still contains very large reserves of able-bodied men of fighting age. Many of the available sources of supply have not been tapped at all, and no question has yet arisen of raising the age for compulsory service above forty-five, as was done in Austria-Hungary early in 1915.

An asset of moral worth purely, but of enormous importance, was the universal confidence that Germany was waging a winning fight. What thoughts inspired the German man in the street when he contemplated the military and naval situation at the end of the first year of Armageddon? He knew, first of all, that his own country and that of his Teutonic ally Austria-Hungary were practically cleared of the invader; that Germanic hosts held practically all of Belgium, including the capital and Antwerp; that the combined military strength of Great Britain and France had not been able to dislodge Germany from either Belgium or 15,000 square miles of occupied French territory; that Russian Poland, or the bulk of it, had been conquered by the legions of the two Kaisers, and that important sections of the Russian Baltic provinces were in German hands; that the German military establishment, barring heavy losses in personnel which could easily be made up by waiting levies, was practically intact and as strongly-equipped, generally speaking, as when war began; that the German battle fleet was still a fleet in being, and relatively stronger in gun-power and fighting effectiveness than it was in August, 1914; that German submarine warfare had made the danger of a surprise or sudden offensive against the Kaiser's fleet or coasts by Britain's superior Navy almost a matter of impossibility, so long as the German Armada refused to give battle in the open; that many hundreds of thousands of tons of both British war-craft and merchant shipping had been sent to the bottom by German torpedoes and mines; that, thanks to German organisation, leadership, and equipment, even the Turks were able to offer desperate resistance to the allied forces of Britain and France, and impose on the British Army heavier losses in a four months' campaign than Britain suffered during the entire Boer War.

A spirit of confidence

These are iron facts, which Germans pondered over and from which they derived comfort and sustained confidence. They knew that their merchant marine had been obliterated from the oceans; they knew that Hamburg and Bremen were as cities of the dead; they knew that their oversea prides—German South-West Africa and Kiao-Chau—were in the enemy's hands; that the most of their colonial empire had ceased to exist as German territory. At the same time they realised what perhaps they wished they had realised years before, that Germany isolated in Central Europe was very potent as a purely self-contained nation, and they believed that time was fighting at least as effectually for them as for their foes. They were convinced they could not be dislodged from the military positions they occupied. They believed the war had already been won by them, and that while future events might bring about changes here or there, the objectives already achieved would remain firmly in the Kaiser's hands. There was work ahead for the Allies, for Britain in particular, if the Germans were to be wakened from their complacent dreams.



A MEMORABLE INCIDENT IN 1914.
Removing the Imperial Insignia from the doorway of the German Embassy in London after the declaration of war.

Digitized by Google



GENERAL JOFFRE ADDRESSING THE TROOPS IN ALSACE.

CHAPTER LXXIII.

THE STRATEGY OF GENERAL JOFFRE AND THE WAR OF ATTRITION ALONG THE FRENCH FRONT.

The Superbly Inventive French Mind Works Out a Grand Design—General Pau's Organising Tour through Eastern Europe and Italy—Germany and Austria Find the Weak Link and General von Falkenhayn Succeeds in Postponing the General Offensive Movement of the Western Allies—Defection of Rumania—Weakness of the Southern Russian Armies—Italy's Noble Conduct—Result of General Joffre's Strategy—Testing the Enemy's Line in the West—Renewal of the French Invasion of their Lost Provinces—Heroism of the Chasseurs Alpins in the Snow-covered Forested Heights of the Vosges—Hartmannsweilerkopf—Advance along the Fecht to Metzeral—Mining and Counter-mining—Preparing the Way for the Great Advance through Lorraine—The German Wedge from Metz—French Mastery of the Woevre—Les Eparges—Army of Toul Pierces the Forest of Apremont—Aerial Torpedoes—French Tactics at Ailly Wood—The Man behind the German Crown Prince—Why the Gateway of St. Mihiel was Allowed to Remain Open.

WE have now arrived at a point at which we can connect all the incidents and events of the spring campaign which have been related in the chapters dealing with the movements of the Russian and British armies. It will be recollected that there was a general expectation of a very important offensive movement by the Allies, and that this movement was expected to occur in May, 1915. All the operations of British, French, and Belgian troops, from February to April, were undertaken with a view to preparing the way for the destruction of the German armies occupying Belgium and Northern France. This destruction did not take place at the arranged date, and no real attempt indeed was made to destroy the enemy. For this reason the history of the events along the French lines, about to be related, is likely to make a disconcerting impression, because it details a chain of circumstances which promised to lead to a magnificent conclusion, but ended apparently in nothing.

It is, therefore, only fair to the reader to explain in advance on what hopes the grand success of the spring campaign had been founded, and on what grounds the decisive forward movement was postponed. After the Battles of Champagne and Neuve Chapelle and the Russian victories in the Carpathian Mountains in February, 1915, the French Staff decided that Germany and Austria might be defeated well within a year if only all the operations of the attacking nations were closely and punctually co-ordinated. With this view General Pau, the right-hand man of General Joffre, set out from France on a tour through Eastern Europe, through Russia and the Balkans to Italy. Naturally, a man of his ability could not be spared from the French Staff at the most critical period of the history of France merely in order to undertake political and diplomatic work. The fact was that he left his country, charged with a military task even more important than that which his chief, General Joffre, was performing. His work was to organise a general European campaign against the Germanic Empires, to harmonise the military efforts of Britain, France, and Belgium with those of Russia and Serbia, and then work into the general



GENERAL PAU.

One of the most distinguished soldiers in the French Army, he was entrusted in the early part of 1915 with an important mission to Eastern Europe and Italy to arrange a great general offensive in the West. He lost his right hand at Wörth in 1870.

Digitized by Google

plan of attack the expected movements of the armies of Italy and Rumania.

At this time the southern Russian army was attempting to force its way down the southern slopes of the Carpathian Mountains and thus to reach the wheat-plain of Hungary. In the western theatre of war both the French troops and the British troops had dented the enemy's lines and manifested a marked superiority in fighting power. The common, unenlightened opinion was that the Franco-British troops had only to make one great effort in order to break the hostile front at the point selected by General Joffre. It is possible that this could have been effected at the time by the sacrifice of some hundred thousand men. But the French Commander-in-Chief and his Staff do not seem to have desired to push the enemy back to the shorter line. They intended to accomplish a larger result than this, and possibly to destroy most of the German forces occupying Belgium and Northern France. This was the reason why General Pau made his tour through Eastern Europe and Italy.

He had a grand design. On a given day in May some seven nations were to throw every available man and gun against Germany and Austria-Hungary—the Russians on the east, the Rumanians on the south-east, the Serbians on the eastern south, the Italians on the western south, and the French, British, and Belgians on the western front. With Russia advancing down the Carpathians, Rumania striking across the Bukovina to Transylvania, Serbia invading Southern Hungary and Bosnia, and linking with the uprush of the Italians along the Alps and towards Trieste and Fiume, the fate of Austria-Hungary seemed in prospect to be very disastrous. And as all the attacks were timed to occur on the same day as the Franco-British offensive was launched against the German lines at three or more places between Switzerland and the North Sea, the general pressure of all the co-ordinated attacks would, it was estimated, be tremendous. There would be no further opportunity for Germany to reinforce one front at the expense of another. She would have at once to throw all her reserves of troops into an increasing succession of danger-points, until the enormous, general, and unintermittent strain along

A masterpiece of the French mind





GENERAL JOFFRE AT THE FRONT—SURVEYING TRENCHES THAT HAD BEEN CAPTURED FROM THE ENEMY.
Inset is an interesting photograph of General Maud'huy taken in July, 1915, during the visit of Generals Joffre, Maud'huy, and Foch to the reconquered territory in Alsace.

Digitized by Google



AMONG "THE BLUE ALSATIAN MOUNTAINS."
A fine camera-picture of a review by General Joffre in Alsace. Standing behind the General were a number of officers and Red Cross workers who had been decorated for bravery.

a front of something like two thousand miles became impossible to resist, and breakage after breakage took place, ending in a general disaster all along the line.

Such was the scheme of operations, marked by a stern logic and economic employment of great forces surpassing the efforts of Carnot and his great disciple Napoleon. It was a masterpiece of the French mind in the greatest hour of the French nation—a greater hour than even that of Valmy, when the explosion of force in the young French Republic first shook all the thrones of Europe. France had learned much since Valmy, and since Wattignies, Marengo, and Austerlitz. She had first invented the new method of warfare by a nation in arms, and had taught almost every man in Europe to become a soldier, and to wage national wars instead of dynastic or cabinet wars. Of all the pupils of France, Prussia had learned the lesson best, and had so improved upon it as to defeat her instructor by the armed power of an entire nation, when France in 1870 had forgotten her own teaching and had fallen back upon a professional army.

An old lesson recalled

Recalled to the terrible lessons of her own revolutionary wars, France had, under her third republican system of government, recovered by a sort of instinct of race the genius she had possessed and developed under the Committee of Public Safety. Her national army was at a deadlock in its long wrestle with the national army of the more populous empire. Her immediate ally, Great Britain, was still unready to accept the national system of warfare, mainly because the British people had escaped by their insular position from the dreadful lesson in war that Napoleon had wished to teach them. Britain was still in the intermediate stage between a professional and a national army, and, like revolutionary France and the Northern States of America in the early period of their struggles for life, was trying to muddle through by means of a voluntary levy in mass. The British people had, moreover, muddled the business of arming their new volunteer forces, and after nine months of war could not throw much more than half a million men into the chief battlefield, where the great decision alone could be obtained.



GENERAL JOFFRE ADDRESSING THE MAYORS OF ALSATIAN TOWNSHIPS REOCCUPIED BY THE FRENCH.



"AFTER FORTY-FOUR YEARS OF SORROWFUL WAITING."
One of the first messages written by General Joffre after the outbreak of the Great War was addressed to the "Children of Alsace." When he visited the reconquered territory in July, 1915, he met with an enthusiastic reception. Our photograph forms a notable souvenir of the welcome that was accorded him.

Digitized by Google



M. MILLERAND, FRENCH MINISTER OF WAR, AND GENERAL BALFOURIER, ONE OF THE ARMY CORPS COMMANDERS, AT CARENCY.

The French War Minister, accompanied by M. Albert Thomas, Minister of Munitions, visited Arras and Carency in the summer of 1915. They were received by General d'Urbal, commander of the Arras army, and spent some time with the sectional commanders.

It was in these circumstances that the superbly inventive French mind worked out, in a new manner, the solution to the problem which Napoleon had set Europe a hundred years before. Under Napoleon the novel French weapon of a national army, intended only for defence, had been transformed into an aggressive instrument of universal dominion. Europe, after many disasters, had countered this extraordinary form of attack by a very rough-and-ready and loose-jointed system of Continental warfare. The nation in arms was overthrown at last by a continent in arms, but the achievement was scarcely more scientific in execution than the massing of tribal hordes for the common purpose of defending their individual existences.

Germany finds the weak link

The intention of General Pau and his fellow-workers on the French Staff was to organise and co-ordinate the new Continental counter-attack against the national armies of the Germanic Empires. No loosely-jointed attacks by modern armed hordes would prevail against the remarkably well-organised methods of the masterly German Staff.

German military science was unquestionable, and it could only be completely answered by a display of military science of the same quality, but on a larger scale and with a wider scope. Happily the Italian Commander-in-Chief, General Cadorna, and his Staff were, as we have already seen in a previous chapter, also anxious that all the movements of the allied armies should be closely and punctually harmonised into a Continental system of strategy in order to increase to the uttermost the advantages possessed by the seven combined nations. By the middle of April the main outline of the general offensive movement had been settled, and most of the important details worked out by the various Staffs in consultation with General Pau and other connecting Staff officers. But Germany and Austria-Hungary were well aware of what was intended, and by finding the weak link in the Russian advance into Hungary and striking at it, by that remarkable concentration of force known as the Grand Phalanx, General von Falkenhayn succeeded in postponing for at least a considerable period the great general offensive which General Pau had arranged.

The first immediate effect of the swift, terrible German counter-stroke was the defection of Rumania. The powerful land-owning classes of Rumania took a businesslike view of the situation, and decided that, with the Russian army in full retreat from Galicia, and still in danger of overwhelming disaster, it would be extremely unwise to carry out their part of the general plan. The Bul-

Rumanian and Bulgarian defection

garian Government also, which had at first been inclined to fall in more or less with the scheme of the seven friendly nations, turned once more towards Vienna and Berlin and, without straining its position of neutrality, favoured the Germanic cause and listened to proposals from Turkey for a rearrangement of territory.

In Italy also the well-planned intrigues of Prince Bülow and the Austrian Ambassador seemed at first to have produced an extraordinary change of views in the mind of Signor Giolitti, and this man, who was practically dictator in the modern Parliamentary system of Italy, completely lost all the courage he had displayed when he revealed, some months previously, that the Germanic Empires had resolved upon a European war in 1913.

Under the far-reaching influence of Signor Giolitti there was for a time as distinct a movement of hesitation in Italy as there was in Rumania. Only a quite unexpected and overwhelming resurgence of popular



ONE OF THE GUNS THAT SPOKE FOR "LA REVANCHE."

Photograph of a concealed "75," taken by the French photographic service somewhere in Alsace when the Tricolour was once again floating over part of the old French province.

Digitized by Google



THINKING OF "HOME, SWEET HOME."
British soldiers, after months spent at the front, packing up their kits at St. Omer railway-station, preparatory to entraining for England on leave.



WITH THE BRITISH TROOPS IN THE NORTH OF FRANCE—ROYAL ENGINEERS HAULING AMMUNITION WAGGONS OVER ROUGH GROUND.
In circle: Stacking barbed-wire for use against the Huns.

Digitized by Google



THE DEADLY POWER OF MODERN ORDNANCE: GERMAN TRENCH SHATTERED BEYOND RECOGNITION BY A TORNADO OF BRITISH SHELLS.

The track of the trench as it was originally may be indicated roughly if a semicircular line is drawn downwards from the butt of one of the rifles to that of the other. On the left of this remarkable camera-record of the havoc of modern war may be seen the entrance to a dug-out, while on the right is a German buried under the debris. The German positions are shown in the distance.

Digitized by Google

feeling in Italy swept away the parliamentary power of Signor Giolitti and brought the country heroically into the terrible struggle at a time when the prospects of the Allies were extremely unfavourable.

But noble as was the conduct of the Italian nation, it did not alter the general strategical position. The weakness of the southern Russian armies influenced every section of the battle-front, and totally checked the execution of the plan proposed by General Pau. The plan was, in fact, still-born, and the prospect of overthrowing the Germanic Empires was postponed until such time as Russia was able to recover her power of initiative.

In particular, all along the western front the French, British, and Belgian armies merely continued that process of attrition which had been going on since the beginning of winter. Here and there a local offensive movement was undertaken, generally with success, but no determined effort was made to break the enemy's front. General Joffre resigned himself to a more restricted, but still very useful, scheme of operations. The German Staff was preparing a very large mass of new troops composed of recruits of the classes of 1915–16, of Ersatz reserves, Landsturm, and of men rejected for service on account of physical disabilities, but called to the colours by reason of the urgency of the situation. These troops were well equipped and well armed, but most of them had done no military service, and had had little more than three months' training. The intention of the German Staff was to throw something like three-quarters of a million of these men against the Russians, to form an enormous reinforcement of the already large German and Austrian armies. It was thought that the very strongly constructed lines of entrenchment in France and Flanders would enable the German armies there to hold out without serious trouble against the French and British attacks until a decision had been obtained in the eastern theatre of war.

General Joffre's immediate task

General Joffre's immediate task, therefore, was to convince the German Staff as quickly as possible that a very large number of the new recruits were urgently required along the western front. In spite of all the terrible difficulties in their way, the western Allies had to show themselves ready to undertake the genuine grand offensive movement if Germany persisted in throwing all her available new forces against the Russians. There thus remained all through the



SEQUEL TO A DUEL IN THE AIR.

Tragic end of one of the Von Bülows, an observation officer of the Prussian Guard, whose bomb-carrying Aviatik was brought down by a French airman at Braine, near Soissons.

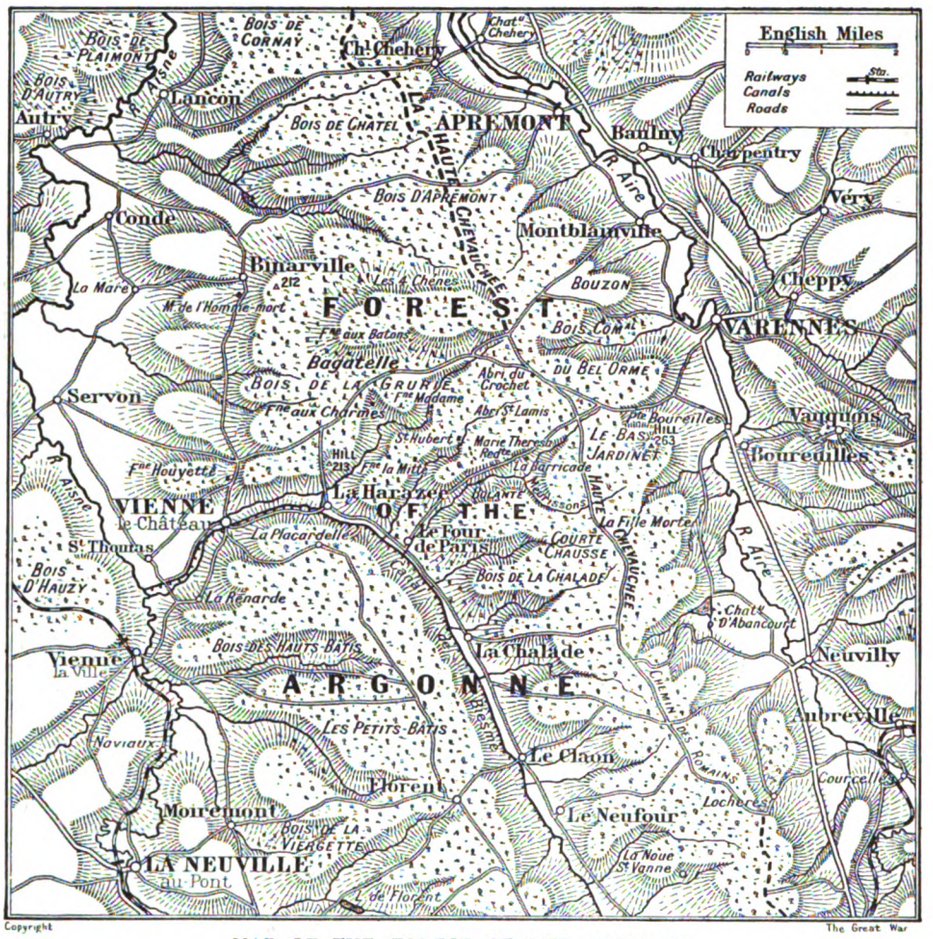




"EVEN AS MEN WRECKED UPON A SAND, THAT LOOK TO BE WASHED OFF THE NEXT TIDE."

A grim record from the battle-scarred land of France. The above photograph was taken after a charge by French infantry. In circle: French sanitary officers inspecting a captured German trench lined with German dead.

Digitized by Google



MAP OF THE FOREST OF THE ARGONNE.

The army of the German Crown Prince, half shattered in the forest fighting in the Argonne, proved powerless to drive down and complete the German "buckle" round Verdun.

spring campaign a possibility, which at times increased to a probability, that the French, British, and Belgian armies would be called upon to sacrifice even a quarter of a million men or more in order to break and rout the enemy forces in front of them. The decision rested with the German Commander-in-Chief. All he had to do in order to bring about the result was to allow his lines to weaken under the assaults made upon them by French and British troops; for the French commander was always well prepared to throw a very large army behind his ordinary assaulting lines if his continual movement of attack was not checked.

There was no attempt at concealment of the object of General Joffre's assault. Indeed, no veil of secrecy was possible. In every case, both sides put the matter to the ordeal of main force. The French army in great strength, with a very large supply of high-explosive shells, bombarded and stormed some important German position. From this position it continued to advance until it met a stronger German army. There then ensued a very fierce series of counter-attacks by the Germans, in which they seldom recovered their lost position, but always succeeded at last in preventing the breakage of their lines. The French general then attacked in the same manner a hundred miles or more away and took another German position, with the result that the enemy had again to strongly reinforce his wasted and beaten troops.

The ordeal of main force

All this could not be done merely by shifting the German troops from one part of the western front to another. As explained in a prevous chapter dealing with the French system of campaign, General Joffre possessed such a mastery of numbers over the enemy that he completely checked by a series of finely timed attacks the trick of concentrating troops against his assaults. All concentrations, except occasionally for small local purposes, became inadequate to the tasks that were set the Germans by General Joffre. Only by large and continual reinforcements was the German General Staff able to prevent the great reconnaissances in force made by the Allies from being transformed into the most desperate and savage attempt known to history to obtain a grand decision. Here the personal character of General Joffre and his chief men, such as General Foch, Sir John French, General de Castelnau, General Dubail, and other allied army commanders, told heavily on the calculations of the German Staff.

The Germans knew the temper of soul of the captains of France and Britain. They knew that if an opening were given for the great blow, that blow would be delivered with extreme fury, remarkable skill, and heroic driving power. Therefore General Joffre obtained the result at which he aimed. The new German formations were not launched *en masse* against the Russians. They were fairly equally distributed between both the western and eastern fronts of war. In spite of all the rumours that came from Holland during the summer of 1915, there was no transport of troops either way from the western or eastern theatres of conflict. But both fronts were very strongly strengthened, Austrian and Hungarian levies largely taking on the eastern front the place of many of the new German troops, railed into France after having originally been destined for the Russian seat of war. Italy profited by this result of General Joffre's strategy, and Serbia also. Austro-Hungarian troops first intended to reinforce the Austrian and Serbian fronts had in large numbers to be sent to Russia to supply the place of the new German formations drawn off to France and Flanders.

How Italy and Serbia profited

Therefore, though the present chapter is lacking in events of an apparently decisive character, it must be borne in mind that each French attack was of an extraordinary interest at the time when it developed into a local success. It was never known in advance whether the German Staff was at last ready to take the risk of weakening its lines in the west in order to win a definite victory over the Russian forces in the east. It was only when the mighty German counter-attack was delivered that each affair lapsed into one of the commonplace but useful battles of position in the war of attrition.

The Battles of Champagne and Neuve Chapelle were conflicts of this stagnant but wearing sort. About the time when the British troops were making themselves masters of Neuve Chapelle village the French troops were testing the German line. General Joffre, as a rule, made a double attack along the German front at very widely separated points during the spring of 1915. It was his chief method of preventing the enemy from countering his assault by shifting troops. Sometimes the French Commander-in-Chief would start three fierce battles simultaneously along

Digitized by Google

the German front, with a space of more than four hundred miles between his northern and southern points of attack.

His favourite scene of diversion was the high pine-wooded ridge of the Vosges between Münster and Thann, with a more southernly point of advance towards Altkirch. In this long stretch of difficult mountain country fighting went on continuously between the warlike mountaineers of France and a mixed mass of German troops, supported by large siege-guns. Many years before the war a brilliant school of French military writers had worked out a plan for countering the German advance into France by a movement on the right wing, beginning in Alsace and continuing through Lorraine. Such a movement had been attempted in the first month of the war, but had been severely checked by the great battle in Lorraine which the French called the Battle of Morhange and the Germans the Battle of Metz. The French there lost very heavily and were thrown back by the army of Metz and the Bavarian troops. But after General Foch had saved the situation, when commanding only a division, and had then, as commander of an army corps, played the chief part in helping General de Castelnau to check the Bavarians on the hills round Nancy, the French invasion of Alsace-Lorraine had been resumed. The army based on Belfort, and, composed mainly of mountain troops from the French Vosges and the Pyrenees, held the Col de la Schlucht in the High Vosges, near Münster, and the country north of Thann as far as the last high green ramparts of rock near Hartmannsweilerkopf and the hills between Belfort and Mulhouse.

Invasion of Alsace-Lorraine

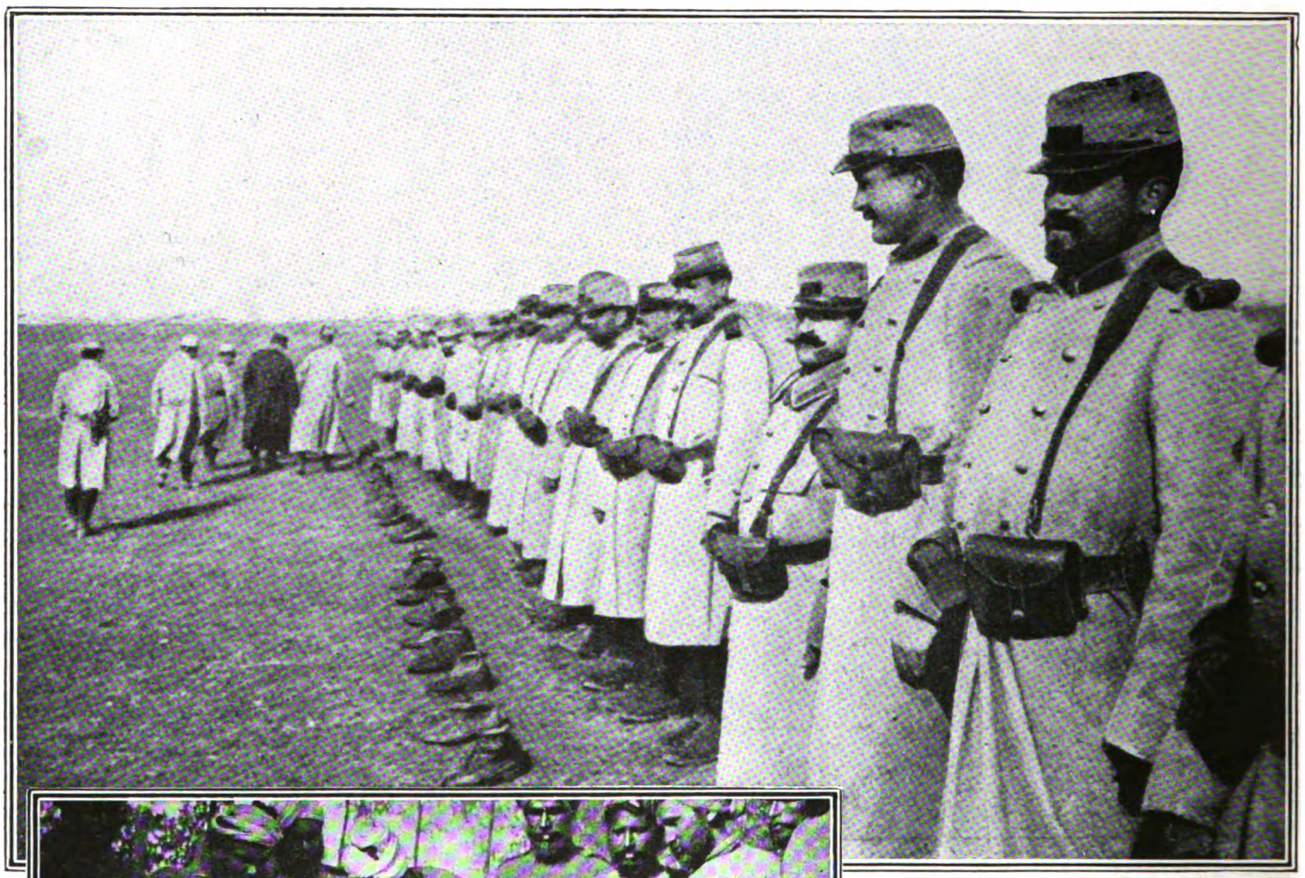
The German army defending the Rhine valley, between the wall of the Vosges and the wall of the Black Forest, was constantly hard put to it to maintian its positions, for the advance of the French mountaineers continued all through the spring and early summer of 1915. The



AN OPEN-AIR CONCERT BEHIND THE FIRING-LINE IN FRANCE.

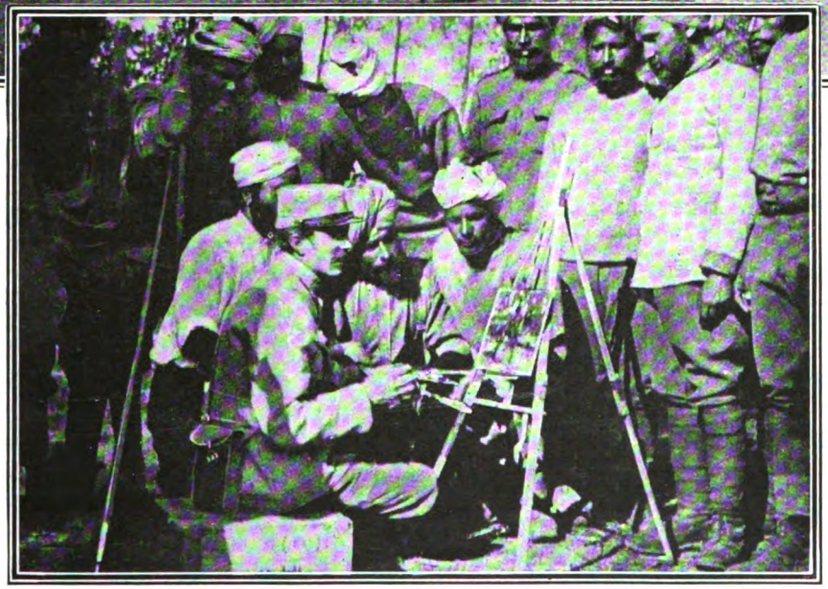
The series of concerts given by Miss Lena Ashwell's Concert Party in 1915 gave infinite pleasure both behind the firing-line and in the hospitals in France. The above photograph shows an appreciative audience of French and British soldiers. In circle: A concert in the rain. An officer is seen assisting to protect the pianist from the downpour.

Digitized by Google



ST. CRISPIN'S DAY IN FRANCE.

Not only on October 25th, but at frequent intervals, was the memory of St. Crispin and his brother Crispinian honoured in the French lines. Inspections of footgear were frequent, and boots found the worse for wear were quickly replaced. To this was largely attributed the splendid marching qualities of the French infantry.



FRENCH ARTIST IN AN INDIAN CAMP IN FLANDERS.

The French Government, in addition to organising a photographic war service, appointed an artist, M. Jonas, to collect pictorial "documents" of the progress of the war. In the above picture this well-known artist is seen in a camp in Flanders painting some typical representatives of our Indian Expeditionary Force.

Germans brought up many 12 in. Austrian howitzers and one or two 17 in. Krupp howitzers; but though this unusually heavy artillery impeded the French advance, it did not block it. This was due to the fact that the quality of the German infantry in Alsace was not entirely good. There were considerable bodies of men of the Landsturm, who acted as relieving regiments to the first-line forces; and, by a method which angered and puzzled the German Staff, the young and vigorous Alpine troops of France divined when the opposing trenches were held by the middle-aged, half-trained Landsturm regiments. The consequence was that the positions held by the Landsturm were usually stormed and captured, and the German first-line troops had then to be hurried up from their billets to make a counter-attack under such disadvantages that they were generally shattered as they charged up the slopes. So a fresh brigade or division, and at times even a fresh army corps of the enemy's best men, had to be railed in haste down to Alsace, and there used up against the victorious mountain troops of France.

The Chasseurs Alpins of France resembled the Bersaglieri of Italy. They were the finest flower of French manhood, severely trained and severely tested for their powers of physical endurance. They marched much quicker than an ordinary first-line soldier, and marched much longer; and though the Bersaglieri regiments, with their record of six miles an hour, with complete fighting kit and ammunition, were unsurpassed for strength of body, the Chasseurs Alpins—the French Alpine light infantry—were equal to their new brothers-in-arms as fighters. They were as slim as the Boers, with a talent for improvising novel ruses, which made their remarkable tenacity in both attack and defence a thing of edge as well as of weight.

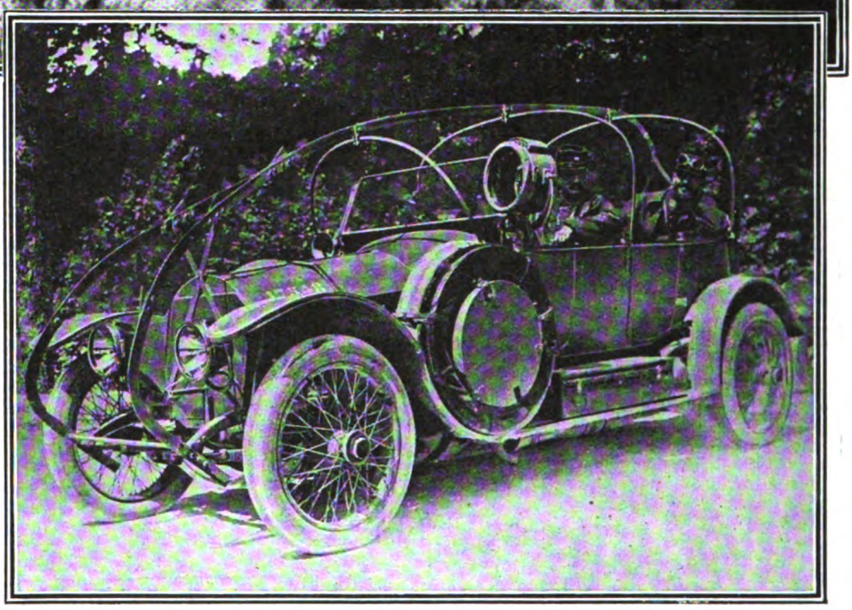
Heroes of the Argonne

They were the heroes of the great Argonne battles in which the Crown Prince's army had been crippled; they had suddenly appeared on the extreme western wing between Hazebrouck and Lille in the autumn of 1914, during the race to the sea, but their main scene of operations was the sombre pine-forests of the Vosges Mountains, rising like a great fortress wall above the plain of the Rhine between Basle and Strassburg. It was to capture this high, broad, water-seamed rampart of rocks that they had been trained from early manhood to fight and endure, and though their

Digitized by Google



COURTESY TO THE CONQUERED.
German prisoners of war being conducted through French trenches to the rear of the firing-line and so protected from their own artillery fire.



FRENCH WIRE-CUTTING AUTOMOBILE.
Type of French motor-car on war service fitted with strong steel shield for cutting its way through the barbed-wire entanglements used so liberally by the Germans across roads the Allies were expected to travel over.

numbers were small in comparison with the stretch of country in which they operated, they carried out their work in a very effective way.

All through the winter they remained on the defensive, occupying a line of mountains from the neighbourhood of the town of St. Dié to the neighbourhood of St. Amarin. In spite of the difficulty of victualling the troops holding the snowed and frozen crests, the positions were maintained through the winter against the attacks of the Germans wintering for the most part in the valleys, where they could easily be fed and supplied. The much-enduring Frenchmen, being in possession of dominating points, would not retire from them simply to get more shelter and better food and quicker supplies of ammunition. The Germans in the valleys had greater facilities for concentrating for attack and bringing up heavy artillery. The French troops were often far removed from their base, and isolated in small forces on the snow-covered, forested heights.

Hartmannsweilerkopf

As we have seen in a previous chapter, the mountain of Hartmannsweilerkopf, rising nearly 4,000 feet above sea-level, north of the town of Thann, was occupied by the French, and then lost through the troops being cut off on the icy slopes. But it was recovered by a magnificent charge and fortified in the early spring after a series of fierce conflicts which made it famous throughout the world. The last battle for the summit of Hartmannsweilerkopf took place on April 27th, after it had been occupied for a single day by the Prussian Guard, who used asphyxiating gases. Naturally, the Prussian Guard did not come hundreds of miles from La Bassée, with their poison apparatus, on a task of small importance. Yet the mountain they were ordered urgently to recapture does not at first glance appear to be the key to any position. Several neighbouring heights, such as Molkerain and the main mass of the Ballon of Guebweiler, overtop it. But the famous lower height rises at the end of a valley overlooking the plain of Alsace and the Rhine, with the Black Forest directly in front of it. It was an observation station of dominating power, and as the French Army had placed its heavy artillery on the next and higher peak of Molkerain, the guns could be directed by means of telephone from the observation mountain at any target in the Rhine valley. Such was the reason for the incessant conflict for the possession of the summit of Hartmannsweilerkopf, the principal battles occurring on January 19th, March 26th, April 26th, and April 27th, 1915. After the last victory the French batteries commanded the railway

Digitized by Google



TRENCH TOWARDS THE SUMMIT OF HARTMANNSWEILERKOPF.

This spur of the Vosges, near Steinbach, in Alsace, was the scene of most sanguinary fighting between the French and the Germans. The Germans had converted the summit into a fortress. It was taken by the French on March 27th, 1915, recaptured by the enemy about a month later, and then retaken by our allies.

from Colmar to Mulhouse, and were ready to advance when General Joffre gave the order. In the meantime, in order to keep the Germans in Alsace from growing venturesome, another line of attack against Colmar was slowly cleared by continual fighting along the valley of the Fecht, where the village of Metzeral was captured by a storming attack on June 22nd, 1915. The French troops had then before them scarcely four leagues of the wooded, difficult river valley to conquer, in order to come to the plain of Alsace at Turkheim, where in ancient days the great French commander Turenne, from whom Marlborough learned his trade of war, had won Alsace by a great victory.

The German commander employed every possible means of checking the advance along the Fecht to Metzeral. The broken ground, as a Swiss observer remarked, had been divided into small fields, by hedges of barbed-wire and mazes of concrete and armoured trenches, with machine-gun redoubts—all strengthened by a large number of field-guns and siege-pieces, working in the rear of the marked ranges. Hosts of men laboured at the fortifications from dawn to dusk; the forests were also fortified, barbed-wire being stretched from tree to tree, and wolf-pits dug, as Bruce did in preparation for the Battle of Bannockburn, with ranges of spikes and land-mines along every possible way of approach. In some places preparations were made for setting the pine-woods on fire by means of petrol and incendiary bombs.

But the French artillery triumphed over all difficulties. The light 3 in. gun, firing twenty rounds a minute, proved a superb weapon in mountain warfare. It blew away the wire entanglements, destroyed the trenches and machine-gun redoubts; and then, while the heavy artillery in the French rear shut Metzeral off westward by a curtain of shrapnel, the mountain troops charged down northward on Metzeral, while their comrades advanced on the other side by the hamlet of Altenhof. The German trenches on the slopes were carried and the enemy retired into the village houses, which had been strongly fortified. But the French general did not waste his infantry in attempting to carry the village by storm. The light French guns were again brought into action close to the battle-line; and when night fell Metzeral smoked in the darkness like a gigantic torch. The French guns had set the village on fire, and as the survivors of the garrison troops fled, again the guns smote them. Then lengthening their range the French gunners caught also the German reinforcements vainly hurrying up to enable a counter-attack to be organised. The Germans drew back some five hundred yards, leaving the burning village in the hands of the French army.

Menace of the Ban de Sapt

The attack along the Fecht was directed from Gerardmer over the neck in the mountains known as the Col de la Schlucht. But it could not proceed at most much farther than Münster until another movement more to the north got under way. This second movement was based on the town of St. Dié, interesting to Americans as the baptismal place where the new continent of the western world first received the name of America. A few miles to the north of St. Dié is a line of hills with some scattered hamlets known as the Ban de Sapt. On this line the Bavarians had entrenched after their victory at Morhange in August, 1914. The French Commander-in-Chief, therefore, had first to clear the Ban de Sapt before resuming the sweeping movement through Lorraine in conjunction with the movement through Alsace. From this fortified position on French territory the enemy was able to threaten a flanking attack against any French force working up into

Digitized by Google



Famous French leaders: General Joffre, General d'Urbal (left), and General Foch (right).

Digitized by Google



The French Commander-in-Chief conversing with the Mayor of an Alsatian town.



General Joffre and General de Maud'huy surveying the reconquered region of Alsace.

Digitized by Google



An Alsatian welcome to the French Generalissimo and General de Maud'huy



General Joffre decorating soldiers of the French Moroccan Division.

Digitized by Google



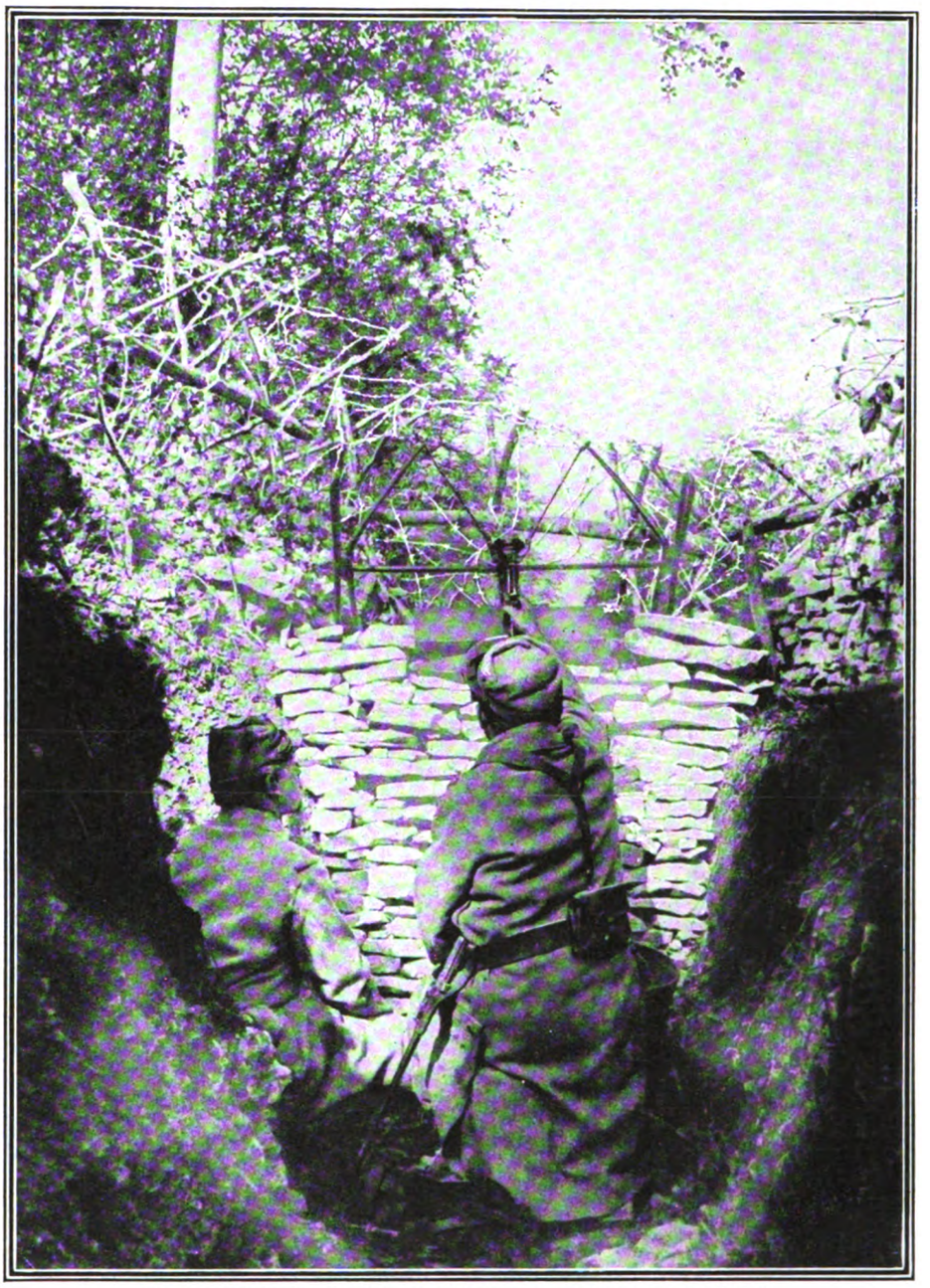
A winged messenger of death: Firing a French aerial torpedo-shell.

Digitized by Google

Lorraine. The French army based on Nancy was operating still more northward close to the frontier and about five miles from the German town of Château Salins. It was making steady progress in spite of the enemy's fortifications and violent counter-attacks.

Meanwhile the Ban de Sapt, connecting with the high rampart of the Vosges, in front of Strassburg, remained a menace. But the French sappers towards the end of April began to win the mastery over the enemy. The first affair of importance took place at the village of La Fontenelle on the summit of a height 1,900 feet above sea-level. Here the French troops had, by months of work, constructed a strong system of entrenchments protected by advanced posts. The Germans laid siege to the height, and at the end of March their saps were driven to within twenty yards of the French advanced posts. During the siege the German infantry made several attempts to carry the position by storm, but were repulsed with great losses. But when the enemy saps appproached all infantry assaults ceased.

The youngest French recruit could guess what the next stroke would be. The German sappers had sunk shafts, and begun to drive a mine under the summit. Our allies counter-mined and blew up one mine, and had a fierce struggle with hand-grenades and melinite bombs in one of their advanced works. The struggle was of a curious and terrible kind. The ground was swept by machine-gun and artillery fire on either side and no man could cross it and live. So the fighting took place underground in a maze of deep, narrow trenches and tunnels. After the struggle had gone on for three days, the French engineers brought it suddenly to a conclusion. They buried some hundredweights of high-explosive in their front trench, and constructed new traverses by which the garrison troops could retire. When the conflict was at its fiercest the French gave way and fled, and the victorious Germans crowded into the captured position crying: "Surrender, Frenchmen! Surrender!"



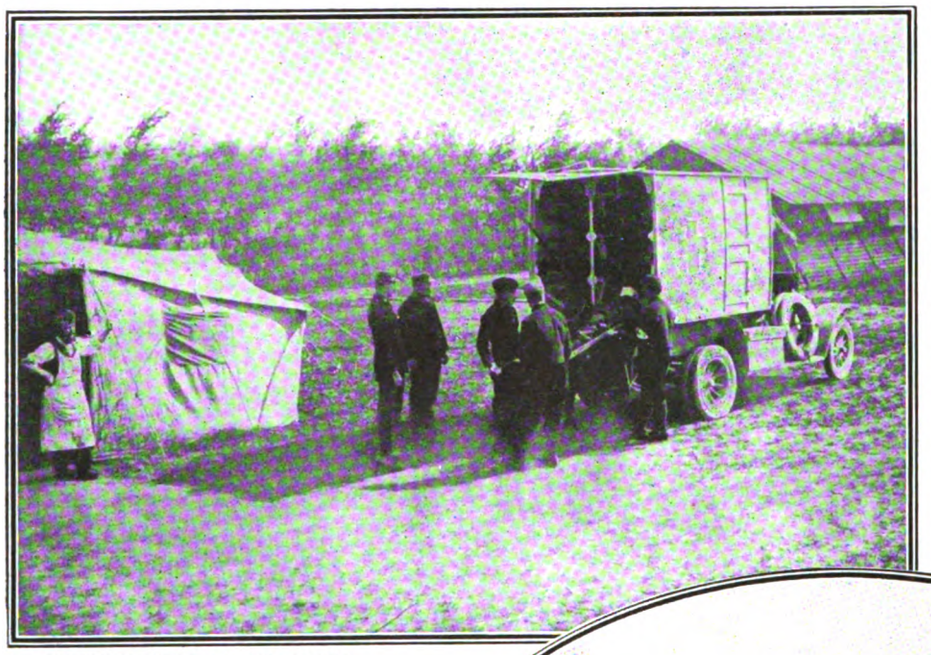
AN ANCIENT WEAPON ADAPTED TO MODERN WARFARE.
"L'Arbalète Lance-Grenade," an adaptation of the old cross-bow for hurling explosives, used most effectively by the French in trench warfare. Known familiarly as "The Grasshopper," this weapon threw a deadly bomb a distance of from twenty to eighty metres.

French engineers' master-stroke

The French maintained a strong resistance, to give the enemy a full opportunity of increasing the number of his attacking troops. Then the great mine of cheddite (a powerful high-explosive) was exploded, and when the fumes had lifted, the French went back to their position and put it in order, while their guns kept the enemy off by a barrage of shrapnel. Every German had been destroyed. The following night the French garrison could hear the German officers trying to get their men to renew the attack. But louder than the officers' orders came the answer of the terrified troops: "Nein! Nein!" Soon afterwards the French at last began to advance. It was their first movement of advance in this region since the August battle on the Grande Couronné de Nancy. They went forward slowly, as they had in turn to fight against a powerful system of defence works; but slow though their progress was it was continual, and what was even more important, it was effected at comparatively little cost of life; for the French engineers were masters of their science; they had learned many lessons from the enemy, and had improved upon them by means of that quick power of intelligence which is the mark of the French mind.

While the Ban de Sapt was thus being cleared for a further advance over the Vosges towards Strassburg by the army based on Epinal, the army based on Toul and Nancy performed a double work. By hard forest fighting in the woods around the Grande Couronné de Nancy and in villages such as Reillon, near the French edge of the frontier going towards Saarburg, it prepared the way for the old and much studied plan of a grand advance through

Digitized by Google



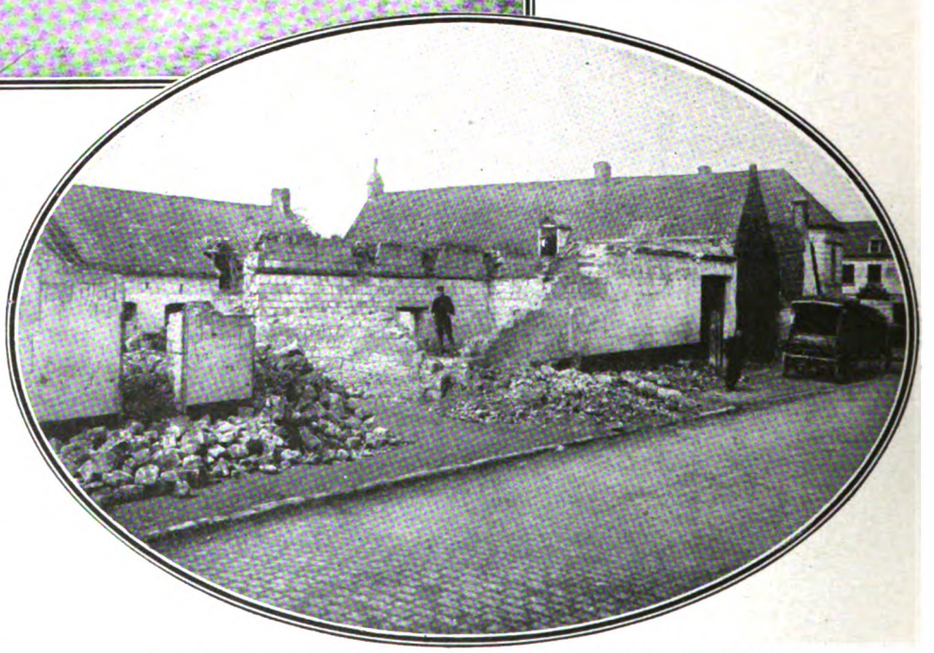
WOUNDED FRENCH SOLDIERS ARRIVING AT A FIRST-LINE FIELD HOSPITAL.

The men received first-aid at an advanced dressing station, whence they were removed by motor-ambulance to the field hospitals. After treatment in these they were drafted first to the casualty clearing stations and then to the base hospitals and depots for wounded.

Lorraine. But at the same time the army of Toul co-operated with the army of Verdun in dealing with the situation created by the partially successful advance of the German forces from Metz. As has already been related in the description of the Battle of the Marne, the army of Metz, under Field-Marshal von Heeringen, made in September, 1914, a very strong and determined assault against the line of forts running along the Meuse, and connecting Verdun with Toul. The object was to drive a wedge between Verdun and Toul from the east, while the army of the German Crown Prince drove another wedge eastward from the Forest of the Argonne. When the two wedges met Verdun would be completely encircled, and it was hoped would quickly be captured. This design remained half completed for many months. The army of Metz carried out its part of the work, and all through the winter, spring, and summer maintained at St. Mihiel, on the Heights of the Meuse, the wedge it had driven into the French system of frontier defences.

The attack on Verdun

But the army of the Crown Prince, half shattered in the forest fighting in the Argonne, was powerless to tighten and complete the German loop round Verdun. The Crown Prince had been given command of the greatest striking force of his country, with the object of exalting the prestige of the future Kaiser by the most decisive victory in the war; for by breaking through the French fortified line at Verdun and Toul, and completing the encirclement of Verdun. the Crown Prince would have struck an even heavier blow than the western German wing was vainly attempting to deal in the neighbourhood of Calais. The breaking of the eastern line of fortresses would, at any time in the campaign, have brought the Germans round the eastern flank of the Franco-British armies, and compelled those armies to withdraw in furious haste south of Paris. The continual storming attacks along the road to Calais were of lesser importance in the large strategical problem of the war when compared with the plan of operations which the Crown Prince could not carry out. This plan of operations had been carefully designed by Moltke and the German Staff long before the outbreak of hostilities, and the results of its breakdown were very disastrous when General Sarrail, with the Verdun army, and General Gouraud—the lion of the Argonne—with a single army corps of mountain troops, threw back the Crown Prince's forces, while General de Langle de Cary's army was hammering eastward at the German positions in the Argonne Forest during the advance from the Marne.



A STREET IN MARŒUIL BOMBARDED BY THE GERMANS.

The village of Marœuil, between Arras and Carency, was one of the bases from which the attacks on Neuville St. Vaast and The "Labyrinth" were pushed, and it was subjected to a very violent bombardment by the Germans.

When the retreating Germans in the middle of September, 1914, made a firm stand along the Aisne and the Suippes Rivers all that remained of the main German plan of attack was the wedge driven through the Heights of the Meuse by the army of Metz. But this wedge was soon reduced in size; for while the army of Verdun under General Sarrail was throwing all its force against the Crown Prince's army, part of the army of Toul, under General de Castelnau, advanced northward towards Pont à Mousson, a French frontier town close to Metz, and tried hard to cut across the German salient and recover all the French territory up to the frontier between Metz and Verdun. The immediate result obtained towards the end of September, 1914, was that the army of Metz was strongly enclosed north and south and partly driven back.

Castelnau's advance northward

Digitized by Google

Only a small French force, however, seems to have been employed for this purpose, and General Joffre was quite content with the comparatively small advance it made. For ten months or more the French Commander-in-Chief allowed the wedge driven from Metz to remain in the most dangerous part of his line. Even when the French and British forces outnumbered at last the Germans by nearly nine to five, the broad hostile spear-point at St. Mihiel was only slightly reduced in breadth by a little pressure against both its edges. There appear to have been two reasons for the extraordinary complaisance of the great French strategist. One reason was of a geographical nature; the other was of a more subtle, psychological kind. In regard to the geographical position, we must look at the map of the country between Metz and Verdun. Between the two cities extends a clay plateau, seamed with water-courses, and dappled with shining patches of water, forming ponds and lakes of considerable size. There are also many patches of woodland amid the moist and fertile farm-lands of the Woevre, as the flattish upland between the Meuse and the Moselle is called. Westward, above the sunken course of the Meuse, is a line of hills, mostly bare, known as the Heights of the Meuse. On these hills was constructed the chain of smaller isolated fortresses which connected Verdun with Toul. Then, running in a north-easterly direction along the highway from Commercy, through Pont à Mousson, were more hills, the most important of which, in the circumstances of the war, was the wooded height known as the Bois le Prêtre. The German wedge rested chiefly on the lower marshy ground between the Heights of the Meuse and the hills connecting with the Bois le Prêtre. The heights occupied by the French forces rose on an average from three hundred to three hundred and fifty feet above the plain of the Woevre. The distance between the high position held by the Verdun army at Bois Haut near Les Eparges and the high position held by the Toul army at the Bois le Prêtre, on the opposite side of the wedge, was only about twenty miles. With the new powerful heavy siege-guns from the Creusot foundries, both French armies at Bois Haut (High Wood) and Bois le Prêtre (Priest's Wood) could command every acre of the German salient running down to the Meuse at St. Mihiel.

The German wedge from Metz



FRENCH FIELD POST STARTING FOR THE FRONT.

An incident at Hermaville, the General Headquarters of the French army operating in the Arras region. The field post, described as one of the lesser triumphs of the war, is seen as it was leaving for the front.



SERVING OUT SOUP TO FRENCH OUTPOSTS.

The soup was served hot from a two-horsed field kitchen, and the photograph supplies interesting evidence of the excellent commissariat arrangements of our allies. The village and its cemetery, the gateway of which is seen in the background, had evidently suffered from gun fire.

Howitzer fire could be directed by aeroplane observers in the modern way against the railway line by which the Germans brought up artillery, ammunition, and general supplies from Metz. The railway ran from Metz to Thiaucourt, a town about five miles north-east of the Bois le Prêtre. But beyond Thiaucourt the line swerved away from the Heights of the Meuse and ran through the French trenches. It was therefore useful to the enemy only as far as Thiaucourt; but from this point they rapidly built a light railway along the old Roman road running to St. Mihiel. The distance of the new German railway, with all its windings, was less than twenty-five miles, and as the materials were stored in advance at Metz, the work was carried out quickly. By means of the new railway connection a large number of very heavy howitzers were brought up to the heights around St. Mihiel, and the entire plain of the Woevre was transformed with remarkable speed into a gigantic fortress of earthworks, wire entanglements, machine-gun redoubts, and artillery pits, garrisoned by the larger part of the army of Metz. The

Transformation of the Woevre

Digitized by Google



GENERAL DUBAIL ON A VISIT TO THE FRENCH HEADQUARTERS IN ALSACE.

With General de Castelnau, General Dubail (seen facing the camera) saved Nancy in August, 1914, after the retreat of the French army which had penetrated between Metz and Strassburg. On the right of our picture is a "Minenwerfer" (or trench-mortar) captured from the Germans.

Woevre thus became a grand extension of the entrenched camp of Metz. It was both the barbican of the Lorraine fortress and the gate by which half a million or more German soldiers could be sent forward to hew their way towards Central France.

The French commander made no attempt whatever to alter the situation. Under his orders the Verdun army on the north and the Toul army on the south of the wedge merely kept the enemy occupied by continual but local struggles for the hills above the plain. The fighting in the Bois le Prêtre went on for many months; and there was also a steady pressure through the Forest of Apremont, and its continuation northward—the Wood of Ailly—the latter being about a mile and a half from the fort of the Roman Camp, which defended St. Mihiel. Between Apremont and the Bois le Prêtre was a line of hills, some of which were four hundred and fifty feet above the plateau. These hills were held by the Germans. The French put little or no pressure against them, for it was unscientific and expensive to attempt to advance all along the line, when there was a couple of key-positions from which the vast and formidable fortress system of the Germans could be commanded.

Both sides knew what these two keys were. The first was the Bois le Prêtre with a lower wooded hill in front of it—the Forest des Venchères, immediately overlooking Thiaucourt. The second key, and the more important, was the hill of Les Eparges, lying immediately in front of Bois Haut, and overlooking the hamlet of Combres. For all practical purpose Les Eparges was the winning position in the long, slow, terrible wrestle for the Woevre between the army of Verdun and the army of Metz.

A long, slow, terrible wrestle

The two fortress towns were really besieging each other, and each attacking the hostile works at the point where they met in the Woevre. The two cities were only thirty miles apart, and as their ring of main forts extended far into the intervening country they could have bombarded each other with 12 in. guns had it been worth while to waste expensive ammunition. Instead of doing so, they extended their field fortifications until there was only a hundred yards or less between the advanced trenches.

The garrison of Metz, after its victory at Morhange in August, 1914, was the first to extend its range of action; and in September, 1914, it bombarded one of the isolated forts on the Heights of the Meuse, Fort Troyon; and after very narrowly failing to take it, used its 12 in. howitzers against the more southernly isolated fort on the Roman Camp near St. Mihiel, and there forced the passage of the Meuse, and occupied the village of Chauvoncourt on its further bank. This constituted the famous gateway through which a grand German attack might at any time be launched against the rear of the entire Franco-British-Belgian front. The gateway, however, was blocked from the outside, for the time being, by the French army in the Forest of the Argonne; for the high, wooded ridges of the famous forest, which for centuries have been one of France's great barriers against invaders, dominated completely the German positions around St. Mihiel. Holding the enemy at this point, the French commander began in the early spring of 1915 to make himself master of the Woevre by a movement in a more important direction.

Attack on Les Eparges

We have in a previous chapter seen that the French offensive movement opened in February, 1915, with an extraordinary bombardment and rush of infantry in Champagne, where the Germans lost 40,000 men out of a defending force of 200,000 troops. While the Battle of Champagne was at its height the French Staff gave an order for the Verdun army to attack the hill of Les Eparges. The first assault was made on February 17th by means of a mine explosion, after which the first German line was captured without a struggle. The enemy, however, counter-attacked, and there followed a terrible hand-to-hand struggle, lasting about seventy hours, in which the attacking French regiment was at last pressed into a part of the captured trenches and swept by heavy fire from the German guns. The position was untenable, and nothing remained but to retire or die fighting. But the Frenchmen, in electing to take the latter course, found another solution to the problem. In their last desperate charge, in which they left the first German trench and tore farther up the hill, they completely shattered the 8th Bavarian Regiment in front of them, and extended their footing on the height so that they were able to break down all the enemy's farther counter-attacks. The fighting on Ash Wednesday on Les Eparges had such results that it caused a feeling of terror throughout Bavaria. A letter was afterwards found on a prisoner—a baker in a little German town. His wife wrote to him that: "All the town is full of the news that 4,000 of our men have been slaughtered near Verdun." Another Bavarian woman wrote to her husband: "The doctor tells us that the 8th Regiment was completely wiped out."

Digitized by Google



GERMAN SHELL BURSTING BETWEEN ADVANCING FRENCH TROOPS.

In the Great War cavalry made charges on foot as well as took their turn in the trenches. Above is a remarkable camera-record of a German shell bursting between two lines of French Dragoons and killing two of them while the men were charging on foot with bayonets fixed—"somewhere in France."

Digitized by Google



A SHATTERED HOMESTEAD IN ALSACE—ALL THAT WAS LEFT OF THE MAYOR'S HOUSE AT ASPACH LE HAUT AFTER THE FRENCH HAD DRIVEN OUT THE ENEMY.

This was so; and the 4th Bavarian Regiment was sent forward to occupy the long ridge. But the general commanding the Woevre operations did not feel satisfied that his key-position was safe with the French holding his first line. He brought up 5,000 engineers, who worked on shifts, day and night for a month, strengthening the fortifications. They drove a tunnel from the village of Combres through the mountain of clay to the German defences near the summit. In the tunnel they built a light railway line, by which supplies and reinforcements could be hauled up by steam-power quickly, without interference from the French batteries. To provide against a heavy shell bombardment of the defence works, the troops were sheltered in large, underground chambers, eighteen feet below the surface. All the machine-guns in Metz were brought up, with many mine-throwers of large calibre, and the artillery was strengthened by sixteen additional batteries of heavy howitzers placed in concealed sites in the neighbouring plain. Aerial torpedoes of terrible power were also forwarded by the new railway, and the garrison of 4,000 infantrymen and 5,000 engineers was given the support of an entire division of infantry. The German general saw his officers, and told them that Les Eparges must be held at any cost, even at the cost of a hundred thousand men.

A tunnel through a mountain

Meanwhile the army of Verdun made no further movement of importance until the First British Army, by the shock of its surprise attack at Neuve Chapelle, caused the entire German line to tremble. In order to concentrate round Lille, the German Commander-in-Chief reduced the garrison of his trenches at every possible point. In particular, a considerable number of men were moved from the army of Metz. This was the opportunity for which General Sarrail had been waiting; and on March 19th three French battalions charged up Les Eparges ridge and broke the 4th Bavarian Regiment. The main work was done by the great new Creusot howitzers which moved by means of a light railway all round the entrenched camp of Verdun. They were massed against the ridge, and their terrible shells penetrated into the eighteen-feet-deep caverns, and by their blast put out all the lamps, while the falling earth closed the passages. Most of the men in the shelters were captured by the charging French infantry. The new first line of German trenches was occupied without a struggle by reason of the deadly effectiveness of the French siege-artillery. But from their second line the German troops violently counter-attacked, and in a fiercer struggle than that of February, they fought day and night until March 21st, by which time the French troops had advanced 380 yards along the ridge, which had a total length of about 1,580 yards, and a height of about 1,135 feet above sea-level.

On March 27th a single battalion of Chasseurs charged from the conquered trenches towards the summit, and though the colonel and all the company captains were wounded, the desired result was obtained, and a new point of vantage rushed for the final attack on the summit. In the previous fighting the Germans had tried to hold their front trenches by means of a few machine-guns, the main body of troops retiring into the underground shelters when the bombardment opened, and returning by tunnels when the infantry attack was expected. But after the success of the Chasseurs, the front German trenches had to be held continually in force to guard against another surprise assault by infantry, using only bomb and bayonet, and unheralded by heavy artillery fire. It will be remembered that Sir John French at Festubert, at a later date, omitted the preliminary bombardment, with a view to taking the Germans by surprise when they were trying to defend their front trenches in too economical a manner. No doubt the French Staff had communicated to Sir John French full details of the Les Eparges surprise attack.

French Chasseurs' great charge

Digitized by Google

By this time at Les Eparges the attacking and defending forces were so closely approached that the Germans began to lose heart. The supporting division replaced the two shattered Bavarian regiments, and in the rainy evening of April 5th, when the clay soil was a slide of mud in which men sank up to their thighs, the decisive attack was made. Two French regiments advanced through the curtain of rain towards the western side of the summit. A single aerial torpedo launched by the Germans caused enormous loss to one of the assaulting lines, but in the thick weather and twilight air most of the French troops escaped the fire of the defenders and entered the German trenches. Night fell on a furious hand-to-hand struggle, that went on all through the darkness. But when dawn broke a large, fresh body of enemy troops fell upon the victorious but worn-out French battalions and compelled them to retire. Yet again, as soon as night fell, the French infantry charged forward into the trench on the east of the summit, and also climbed up some way on the west. It was still raining, and they fought on all the night, and when dawn again broke they had won another five hundred yards.

Fighting in rain and darkness

Once more the German commander sent up fresh forces through the tunnel; but fresh French forces also arrived, and the Frenchmen, wet through, muddied all over, and often dropping their mud-clogged rifles and using their bayonets as knives—knives being handier than fixed bayonets in a narrow trench—stabbed and bombed their way forward. All the enemy's counter-attacks were repulsed, and at five o'clock in the morning of April 7th the struggle suddenly ended.

The German commander was trying to carry out his plan of holding Les Eparges at any cost. He sent out his last supports by the tunnel from Combres village, but as the troops debouched from the other side of the tunnel, the French howitzers caught them in a torrent of shrapnel fire. Every man was swept away before he could reach the trenches held by the French infantry.

A torrent of shrapnel fire

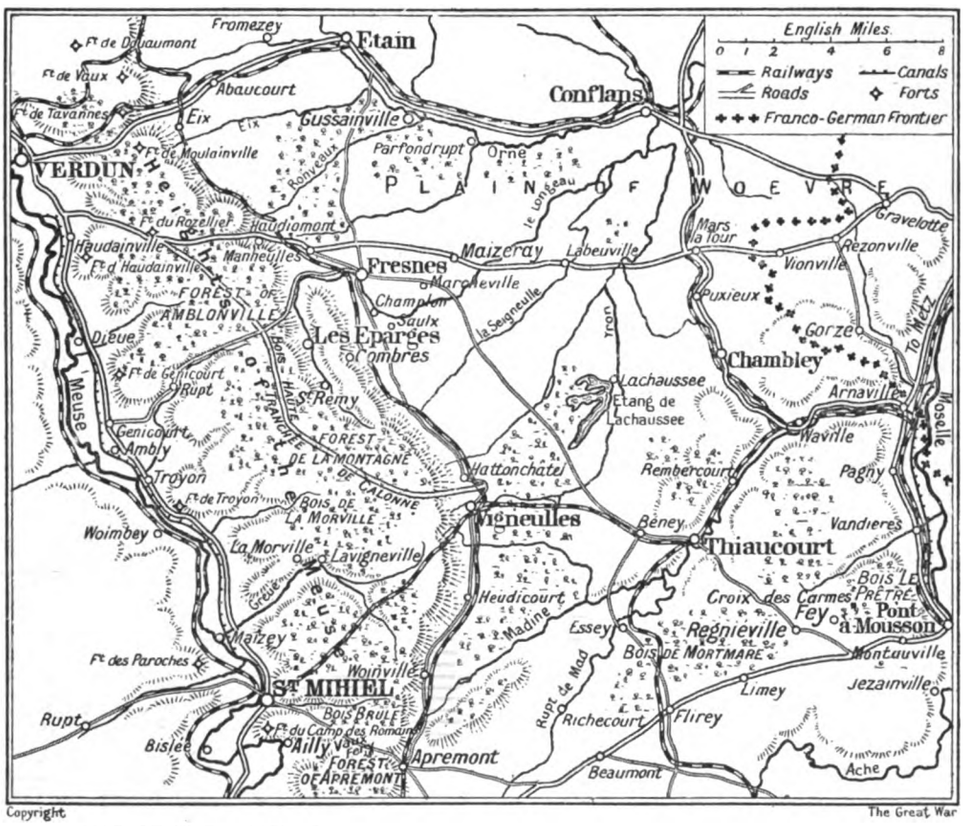
The German commander, meanwhile, was rapidly collecting an army corps from the Woevre, with a view to pushing it up the hill. Large bodies of troops massed in Combres village; but it was now daylight, and French aerial observation officers, in communication with heavy French batteries concealed in the village of St. Remy, a mile and a half south-east of Combres, directed the howitzers against the gathering masses at the foot of Les Eparges. The larger part of the enemy's reinforcements was broken up by the French guns before it could form for attack. Those that escaped the French artillery were beaten back by the French infantry, and so heavy were the enemy's losses that all the rest of the day and all the following day he attempted no further counter-attack.

All the while the rain continued, making the movement of French reinforcements through the muddy clay very difficult. It was not until the morning of April 8th that two fresh battalions of infantry and a fresh battalion of Chasseurs arrived on the ridge. They at once went into



THE RAILWAY-STATION AT ASPACH LE HAUT, ALSACE, PART OF THE TERRITORY REOCCUPIED BY THE FRENCH.

Digitized by Google



MAP OF THE HEIGHTS OF THE MEUSE AND THE PLAIN OF THE WOEVRE.
On the Heights of the Meuse were constructed a chain of smaller isolated fortresses which connected Verdun with Toul. The German "wedge" from Metz rested chiefly on the lower marshy ground between the Heights of the Meuse and the hills connecting with the Bois le Pretre.

action, and in an hour's bayonet fighting they captured the summit.

The enemy held only a little triangle of ground at the eastern extremity of the ridge, but the key to the position was in the hands of the French, and all counter-attacks were swept away by shell fire and machine-gun fire, without bayonet or bomb work. The French general conducting the operations then relieved all his fatigued, happy, and triumphant troops, and sent out sappers to put the trenches in order, and to reconstruct and enlarge the system of communicating earthworks. The fresh regiments brought to Les Eparges advanced in the everlasting rain in the afternoon of April 9th to complete the victory. It had been arranged that the heavy French artillery should produce something like an earthquake in the fragment of defences still left in the enemy's hands. But at the critical moment a blanket of mist fell upon the height, making the aerial control of the guns impossible. So the French infantry had to carry out the work at more expense, but with magnificent bravery. They went forward in a furious charge in the evening, followed by hand-to-hand fighting in the darkness. Rain and fog made searchlights, star-shells, and other modern means of illuminating the battlefield practically useless; and at ten o'clock at night the French infantrymen had felled every German on every yard of the long height, and Les Eparges was completely won. Two counter-attacks were beaten off with ease on the nights of April 11th and 12th, the French artillery being used in such a way as to make every attempted attack on the ridge on the part of the Germans only a laborious form of suicide.

How Les Eparges was won

But the German commander was not defeated. He was a man whom it was absolutely impossible to defeat. Having sworn that he would hold Les Eparges, he found a remarkable way of fulfilling his word. He withdrew his troops from Combres village in the ravine, and entrenched them upon the lower neighbouring hill. This hill had hitherto been known as Combres Hill, but the ingenious German commander rebaptised it by the name of Les Eparges. So, according to the official published reports of the German Staff, Les Eparges was still occupied by their army of Metz.

While the attack upon the original Les Eparges was being conducted by the army of Verdun, the army of Toul profited by the severe strain which its comrades in the north were imposing upon the common foe. For many months part of the Toul forces had been fighting from the south against St. Mihiel and Thiaucourt. By the Heights of the Meuse they had withstood all the winter the shock of the enemy in the Forest of Apremont. Their lines in places were only two miles from the forts defending St. Mihiel, and the commander of Metz exerted all his strength to end the battle in this region which had begun in September, 1914. The largest siege-guns in Metz were brought down by the light railway, with millions of hand-grenades, hundreds of thousands of bombs, and thousands of the huge aerial torpedoes which had been invented by a Scandinavian officer.

The French were at first at a disadvantage, owing to their lack of heavy field-artillery, but the Creusot and other gun factories, by a magnificent effort of endurance and skill on the part of their workmen and designers, armed the French forces with huge howitzers in the winter of 1914. The result was that the army of Toul, which was still the most important army in France, as it guarded the flank of all the Franco-British-Belgian line, was put on a level of equipment with the enemy. By the spring of 1915 the positions along the eastern frontier fortresses were reversed. Instead of the Germans trying to invest or break the great French entrenched camps, the French began to press strongly against the German fortifications protecting Lorraine. The army of Toul shelled, bombed, and mined its way through the Forest of Apremont, in which every tree was either broken by shell fire or blown to brushlike stumps of wood by aerial torpedoes and grenades.

The advance to Ailly Wood

Towards the end of March the French trenches had been driven through the Forest of Apremont towards the bare height crowning Ailly Wood. The advance was conducted by sapping until the French engineers issued from the north-west of the Forest of Apremont and dug their way along a ravine leading to a steep height in Ailly Wood known as "the fortress." Here the Germans had constructed a very strong system of armoured earthworks, forming the outer defence to St. Mihiel, lying less than two miles northward. Against this fortress the army of Toul massed their machinery of slaughter in the first days of April. By this time they also possessed aerial torpedoes, consisting of large, cigar-shaped tubes of metal, filled with high-explosive and steadied in their flight by a propeller. The aerial torpedoes were ejected from a kind of mortar, by means of a small charge of powder, and when they were

Digitized by Google



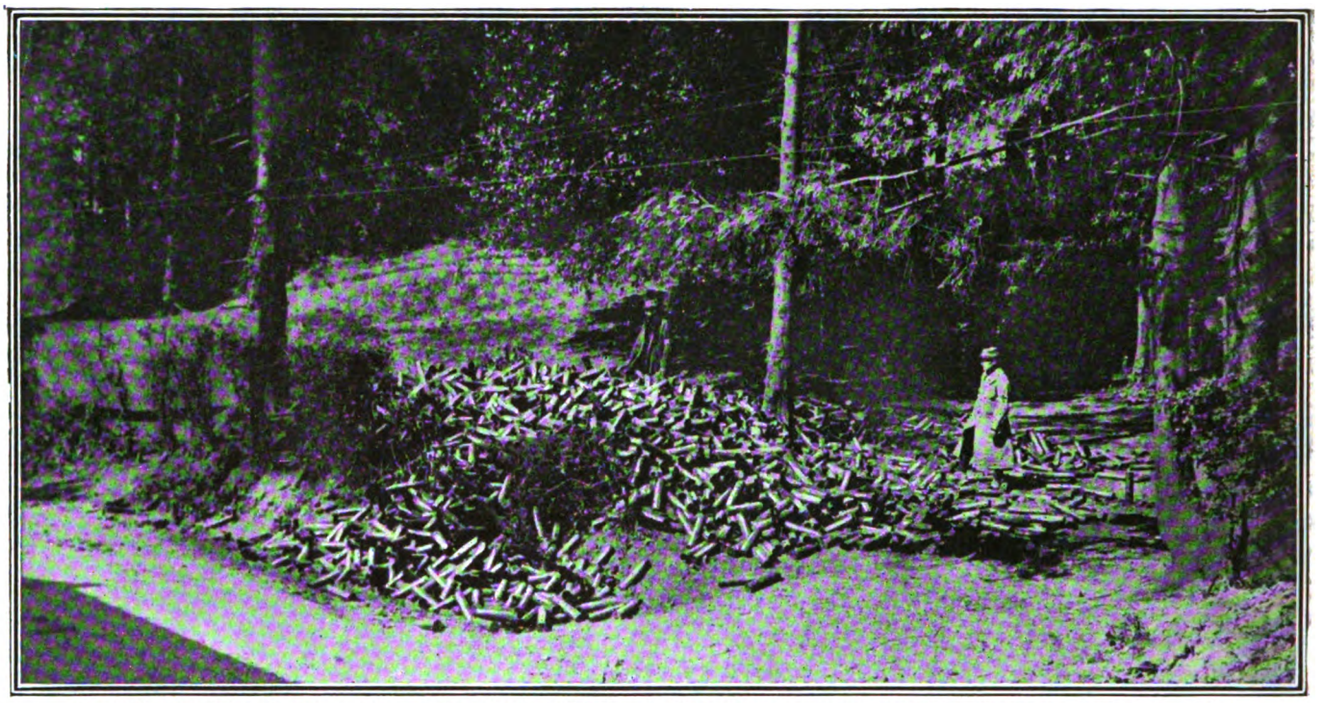
Chasseurs-à-Pied, a "crack" French Light Infantry Corps, after clearing the sand bags of the first-line enemy trench, are seen charging the second-line trench on the Heights of the Meuse to the east of the Argonne Forest.



Chasseurs-à-Pied in a German trench they had gallantly stormed and captured. They were photographed in the act of clambering over the parapet in order to charge again and capture the trench beyond.

FRENCH LIGHT INFANTRY IN ACTION ON THE HEIGHTS OF THE MEUSE.

Digitized by Google



SILENT WITNESSES TO A BIG ARTILLERY ACTION—EMPTY SHELL-CASES OF THE FAMOUS FRENCH "75's."

thrown into the air the propeller and rudder kept them on the mark. The French used many of these new missiles, and the three German lines on the hill were destroyed, together with the accessory defences. All the garrison perished, many being thrown up into the air, with trees and sand-bags, when the terrible land torpedoes struck home. At the same time the French gunners, acting as observers at a distance of only three hundred and sixty feet from the German lines; directed the new heavy siege ordnance against the enemy's machine-gun redoubts. Then, after some hours of this ghastly, mechanical slaughter, the labours of the French engineers were completed. They had driven three mines into the hill, and at noon on April 5th the mines were exploded, and before the fumes were blown away the French infantry advanced in three waves against the shattered fortress.

The troops were ordered not to enter the German trenches for any purpose, but merely to clear them out. They used the ordinary hand-grenades, and also little boxes of high-explosive which they called colanders, and threw in the manner of the classic discobolus. Avoiding the German trenches, which had probably been mined by the enemy in case he lost them, the French infantry swept round and took their foes in the rear of the hill by means of two flank movements, which completely swept the ground, and then united behind the fort. The entire German force on the hill was either blown up by torpedoes or heavy shells, or slain in the infantry rush by hand-bomb or bayonet. Only on the right of the hill were two French companies held up by machine-guns, after capturing three lines of trenches. In the evening the enemy tried to obliterate his lost positions by the massed fire of his heavy guns, but the French artillery had been concentrated round Ailly Wood in superior force and, directed by observers in aeroplanes, it poured so tremendous a fire on the German batteries that these were silenced. At six o'clock in the April evening the German infantry attempted a counter-attack. But it broke and retreated, being caught by a hurricane fire of shrapnel from both the light French field-guns and the Creusot heavy howitzers.

Genius of the French gunner

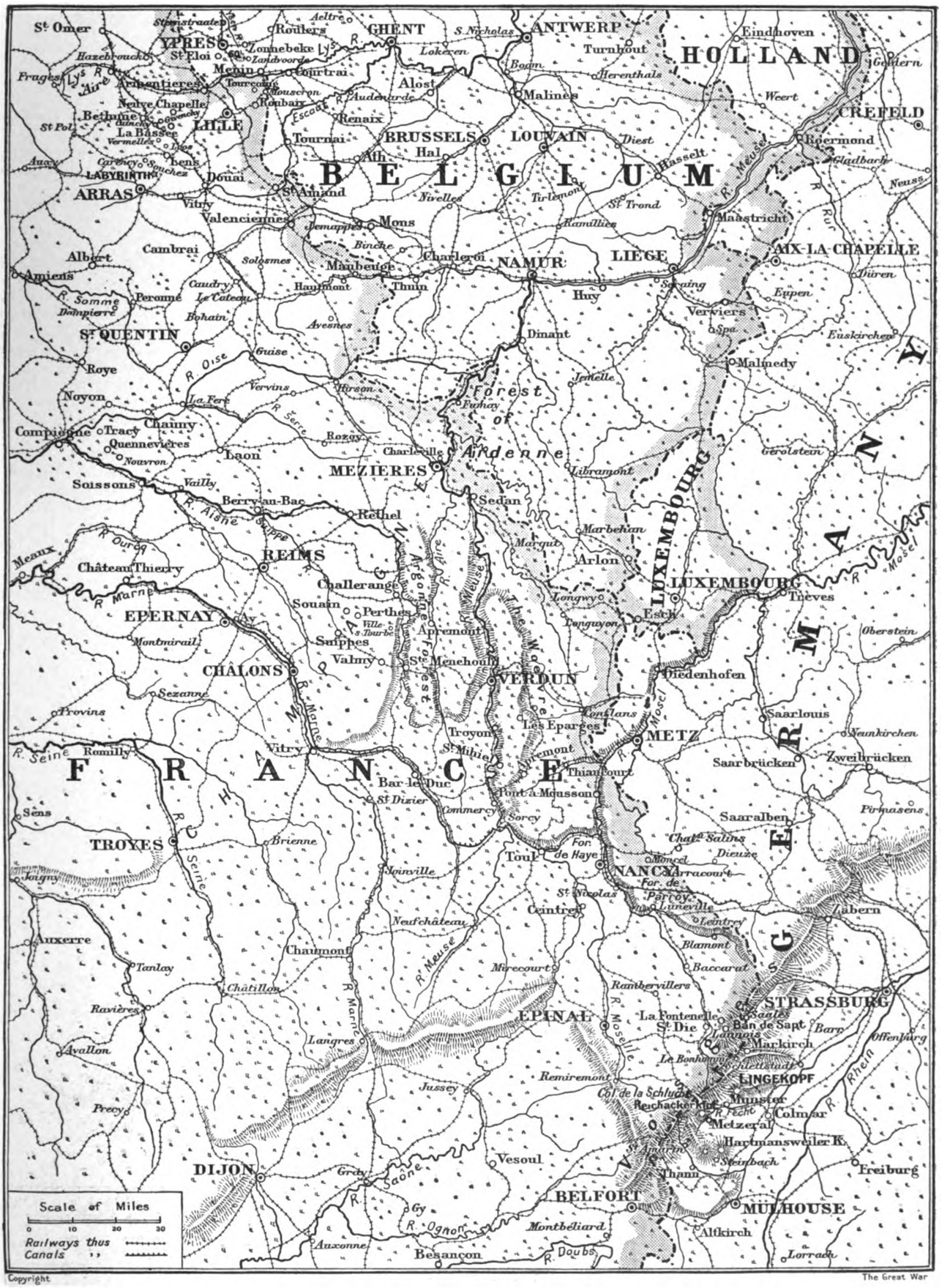
This engagement at Ailly Wood was a masterly example of modern French artillery tactics. It showed on a small scale, and at a point of great strategic importance, the genius of the French gunner, who, by the perfection of his Staff work and the excellence of his material, ranks—as he did in the days of Napoleon—above the artillerymen of every other nation. Our own gunners were very good, their marksmanship being exceedingly effective, but the French Staff work excelled even that of the German Staff, and was, therefore, superior to ours. The incomparably lucid and logical power of the French intellect was as admirably displayed in its Staff work in the reorganised French armies of 1915 as it was in the works of Pascal, Descartes, and Taine. There was a kind of mathematical rigour in modern French military work which produced a feeling of terror in the minds of the German Staff. To take a small unimportant point, there was no interruption in the work of mechanical slaughter by the French guns by reason of the destruction of telephonic communication between the observers and the batteries. Possibly the French used a dozen wires from each observation post in order to guard against the destructive effect of the enemy's shells. However this may be, the affair in Ailly Wood was a work of slaughter conducted with terrible and unfailing rigour, which produced great losses among the enemy at a cost of only a couple of hundred casualties to our allies. The action showed that it is sometimes possible to carry an intricate and very strongly fortified position at very little cost of life, provided that all the modern scientific instruments of destruction are lavishly employed in a well-prepared and well-designed manner.

Corpse-strewn German trenches

On April 6th, after the hill fort was captured, the general directing the attack launched his troops on the left of the enemy's position into a maze of German trenches. But as the German commander strongly reinforced his front, the French troops retired through the deep cuttings, and the work was resumed by the heavy French howitzers and the aerial torpedo section. Once more they blew up three lines of hostile trenches, leaving to their infantry only the work of occupying the blasted and corpse-strewn lines. The entire garrison of the works was annihilated; a few prisoners were taken—all wounded. No unwounded German escaped. The enemy then had no fresh force to continue the action, and two days elapsed before he could collect sufficient troops to make a counter-attack. Then all the German artillery in the region of St. Mihiel massed its fire on Ailly Wood, and under cover of this tempest of destruction the re-formed German infantry made eight distinct, separate attempts to recover the position by storm.

But the French engineers had not wasted time in the two days' interval allowed them. Not a single piece of

Digitized by Google



MAP OF THE BATTLE-LINE IN THE WEST FROM YPRES TO BELFORT AND ALTKIRCH.

This map has been carefully drawn to indicate the scenes of the fierce fighting along the eastern frontier of France, and to illustrate the German attacks on Verdun and the French advance in Alsace-Lorraine.

Digitized by Google

trench was lost; and, as the Germans came up in dense formation to within sixty feet of the armoured trench, and then retired through a wide zone of thick French shrapnel fire, they fell by the thousand in every broken, ebbing wave of assault.

During the struggle the thunder of the heavy German artillery was continuous, and the entire hill disappeared in the fumes of the exploding shells and asphyxiating gases. According to the report of the French Staff, every tree in the wood was destroyed, and every yard of ground was ploughed up by shells from the German siege-guns. Many of the trenches were wiped out by direct hits, and on this occasion the French telephone wires were cut for two hours. Yet during the intense bombardment the co-ordination of the defence was strictly maintained by the French Staff officers, passing from battalion to battalion and maintaining the principle of team-work, which is the chief winning factor in a modern battle. One company, having won back a lost trench in a charge through a curtain of fire, sang the "Marseillaise" when the enemy batteries again overwhelmed them. All the German attacking troops taking part in the eight assaults were completely destroyed; for as each grey line appeared on the field of battle the French batteries put a barrage of shrapnel behind them, and as the line advanced this line broadened and followed them. When, therefore, they were broken in front of the French position and tried to retire, they were shut out from their own trenches and slain without a struggle. The battle was concluded on April 10th by the advance of two French battalions, which captured the trenches from which the Germans had been issuing for their attack. The enemy then ceased to counter-attack, and the French engineers strongly fortified the new position in Ailly Wood.

French elan under fire

The army of Toul was then barely one mile from St. Mihiel. A few days later the army of Verdun captured Les Eparges, from which their guns commanded the plain of the Woevre in a range of fire extending to the forts of Metz. The Metz forts were, in fact, bombarded. Thus the geographical elements in the problem of the German wedge between Verdun and Toul were mastered. It was then that the psychological factor came into play. General Joffre had to decide whether he would shut the gate, from which the Germans had hoped to turn his eastern flank, or whether he would allow the enemy to maintain his position. A German commander would have done the safe, ordinary thing, and have continued the battles at Les Eparges and Ailly Wood until the forces at Metz withdrew over the frontier. But General Joffre was well content to allow matters to remain in the state to which he had brought them. What exactly his reasons were for refusing to capture St. Mihiel, when his siege-guns were almost within a mile of it, will not be known until the French Staff's history of the war is published some years hence.

The psychological factor

We think it will then be discovered that one of the main reasons for General Joffre's subtle strategy was that he did not wish to discourage the Crown Prince of Germany. The army, nominally commanded by this young man, but really directed by an officer of the German engineers, General von Mudra, formerly commander of the Fifteenth German Army Corps, had been very unfortunate. And if its co-operating wing, the army of Metz, was driven out of its apparently advantageous position on the Heights of the Meuse, the German Staff was likely to abandon its attempts to restore the prestige of the future Kaiser. Apparently General Joffre thought that a defeat of the Crown Prince's army in the Argonne—when it had received the larger part of the new German formations in the summer of 1915—would be a more useful achievement than to allow the Crown Prince of Bavaria to receive most of the new German forces, and then to repulse him between Ypres and Lille. So the gateway of St. Mihiel was allowed to remain, to induce the German Staff to think of the sad condition of the Crown Prince, and give him one more opportunity for trying to put the "buckle" round Verdun.



"POUR LA PATRIE!" FRENCH TROOPS, THEIR HAVERSACKS WELL SUPPLIED WITH NECESSARIES, ABOUT TO ENTRAIN FOR THE FIRING-LINE.

A picturesque episode at a small countryside railway-station in the South of France.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google



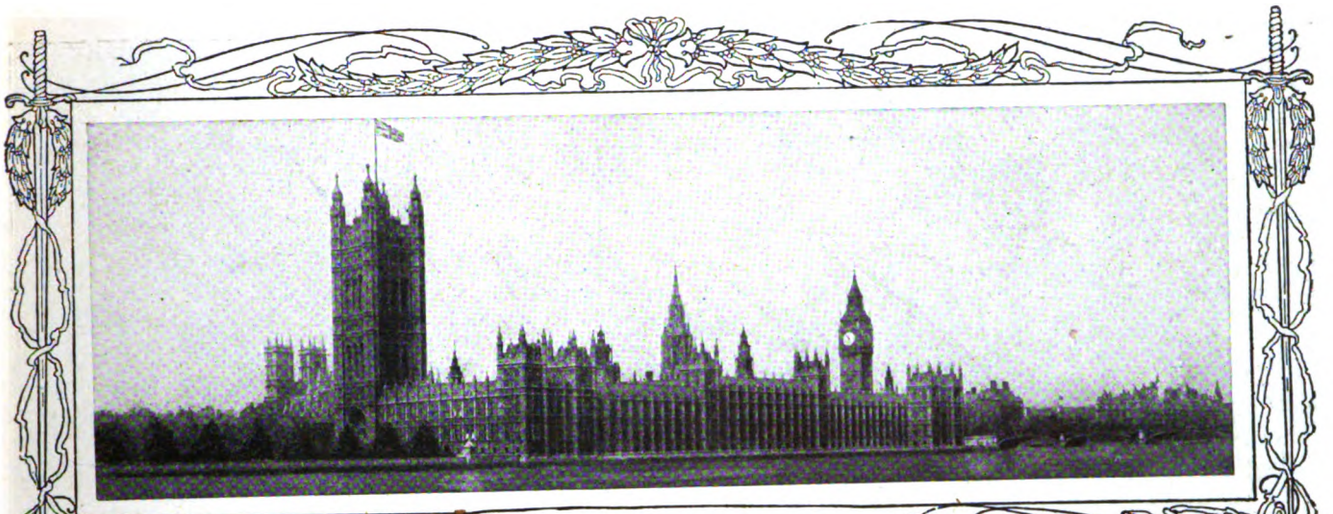
Presented with "THE GREAT WAR" PART 53

Photo by Ha[illegible]

Right Hon. David Lloyd George, M.P.

Minister of Munitions.

Digitized by Google



HOUSES OF PARLIAMENT

CHAPTER LXXIV.

FROM THE EMBANKMENT.

THE "SILVER BULLETS": A DRAMATIC STORY OF WORLD-WIDE FINANCE.

By A. W. Holland.

The Aftermath of an Era of Extravagance—How the Great War Found us Financially Unprepared—The Drain of British Gold to Germany—Great Britain on the Horns of a Dilemma—Neutrality or a Big War Indemnity to Germany—Fall of our National Credit—The Government and the Crisis—How the Financial Panic was Stayed—The British Navy and Overseas Commerce—Developments in the American Exchange—The Bank of England and Foreign Bills—Russia's Heroic Course—Meeting the Cost of Armageddon: £3,000,000 a Day—Looking to the Future—An Unprecedented Object Lesson in the Forgotten Virtue of Economy.

LORD ROSEBERY'S position as phrase-maker to the British Empire appears to have been taken by Mr. Lloyd George, whose reference to "silver bullets" attracted a good deal of attention. We do not know whether the Chancellor of the Exchequer, as Mr. George was then, had in mind the old superstition that a silver bullet will kill a witch when an ordinary leaden one is powerless to do so, or whether he had been reading Robert Herrick's lines:

> Fight thou with shafts of silver, and o'ercome,
> When no force else can get the masterdom;

but we do know that he was referring to the important part played by finance in carrying on and conducting war, and that he used the phrase "silver bullets" as a synonym for money.

It is quite easy to exaggerate the importance of finance in war, and nearly as easy to underestimate it. Money alone, though it be poured out like water, is powerless to secure victory, or Crœsus and not Alexander would have been lord of the ancient world, and Rothschild, not Napoleon, dictator of the modern one. Without skilful generals and brave soldiers it can do nothing, but with them it may well be the deciding factor in a great struggle, for it can buy for them the arms and equipment they need. The present war has shown us, even if we did not know it before, that no nation has a monopoly of courage, that each can easily find thousands of men willing to go to almost certain death; and so, with the human factor equal or nearly so, it is fair to assume that victory will fall to the nation, or group of nations, whose finances can stand the greatest strain—that is, the one which can arm the greatest number of men. In other words, money makes the big battalions possible, and the big battalions mean victory.



THE MINISTER OF MUNITIONS.

In May, 1915, on the reconstruction of the Cabinet, Mr. Lloyd George undertook the formation and temporary direction of a new department called the Ministry of Munitions. In our photograph Mr. Lloyd George is seen accompanied by Mr. J. Howard Whitehouse, M.P.

Fortunately for Great Britain and her Allies, the British Navy was ready for war in that fateful last week of July, 1914, but in other directions we were not equally prepared. Our Army, although, as far as it went, one of the best in the world, was much too small to stem the German rush into France, and to-day we know to our cost that a force ten times its size would have been none too big for the task which our heroes strove so gallantly to perform between Mons and the Marne. We realise now that we ought to have strained every nerve to make Great Britain a great military as well as a great naval Power.

It was in our financial arrangements that we were least prepared of all, and that in spite of our traditions. When France was striving to dominate Europe it was British ships and British gold which turned the scales in favour of the smaller nations. During the Seven Years' War

Digitized by Google



THE KING'S VISIT TO BIRMINGHAM MUNITION FACTORIES.

During a tour in the Midlands in July, 1915, his Majesty visited the works of Messrs. Kynochs, Ltd., the Birmingham Small Arms Company's factories at Small Heath, and the waggon works at Saltley. He manifested deep interest in all he saw, and spoke in warm terms of the zeal and cheerfulness with which the hands at the various factories were working, not only to maintain but to increase the output of munitions of war, so that the end in view—victory for the Allies—might be achieved.

the elder Pitt found the money for Frederick the Great to continue the fight against France, and during the Napoleonic Wars his son followed the same policy, for all the coalitions against Bonaparte were rendered possible by financial support from Britain. Against those twin bulwarks—the valour of our seamen and the gold of our traders—the genius of Napoleon spent itself in vain. But in years of peace and plenty we had forgotten all this. We had entered upon an era of extravagance, which is the worst possible preparation for war, and we took up arms with an enormous handicap upon us.

An era of extravagance

After the South African War our national expenditure had increased by leaps and bounds. In the financial year 1898-99 it was £117,000,000; but in 1913-14, the last year before the war, it had grown to nearly £200,000,000, while for 1914-15 it was estimated at £206,000,000. This, however, is only part of the story. Following the example of Parliament, local authorities all over the country spent money with the utmost freedom, and a cynical person might be pardoned for thinking that they were vying with each other in a laudable endeavour to bring the country to bankruptcy, or, at least, to see how much it could really stand. Moreover, although they put about fabulous and misleading stories of our wealth, the most optimistic of our amateur financiers had not the hardihood to declare that our income was growing at the same rate as our expenditure.

From time to time a few voices were raised against this orgy of extravagance, and prophecies about its consequences were uttered. In measured language bankers and financiers, men who knew what they were talking about, pointed out that this heavy expenditure, although doubtless desirable from some points of view, was gravely weakening our resources in the event of war, but their protests were ignored or derided, just as were those of Earl Roberts when he drew attention to our unpreparedness for war from the purely military point of view. It was clear that economy was looked upon rather as a vice than as a virtue, and that the age of thrift in national affairs was over. The very worst day's work ever done in the recent history of this country was when an influential group of politicians began to look upon taxation as something desirable in itself, something other than a necessary evil. Those responsible for the management of our finances apparently never gave a moment's thought to the possibility of war; they spent our money right royally, evidently believing that the age of perpetual peace had come, and that we had no need to trouble about financial reserves or anything of the kind. Truly, as the old proverb says, "There are none so blind as those who will not see."

The extravagance of the past ten years had weakened our financial resources, and made it more difficult for us to raise the money required for carrying on the war than would have been the case if economy and preparedness had been our national watchwords.

During twelve years of peace and great trade prosperity taxation was greatly increased, whereas a policy of prudent finance would have taken this opportunity of reducing it. Before the war broke out the income-tax, called rightly the sheet-anchor of our national finances, had been increased to the high figure of 1s. 3d. in the pound. In addition to this, there was a super-tax, graduated in a somewhat complicated fashion, which made the tax on big incomes just over 2s. 6d. in the pound. Before the Boer War the tax stood at 8d. in the pound, and there was no super-tax. Verily, people asked, if these things were done in the green tree, what would be done in the dry? With an income-tax of 2s. 6d. in the pound they knew.

Before the Boer War the untouched reserve of income was 19s. 4d. in the pound, and the untouched reserve of capital varied from 92 per cent. upwards. That is, a Chancellor of the Exchequer could say, referring of course only to the payers of direct taxes: "I am taking 8d. in the pound of each man's income, and a certain percentage, not exceeding 8, of each man's capital when he dies; therefore, if a great war breaks out, I shall have 19s. 4d. in every pound of income, and 92 per cent. or more of all capital on which to draw." He was like a man who has deposited securities worth £2,000 with his bankers, and has only drawn against them to the extent of £100 or less.

Our finances in 1914

How different was the position when the Great War broke out. Instead of 19s. 4d. in the pound, the Chancellor had only 18s. 9d. on which to draw, and in many cases much less than this. Of the big incomes, those which could contribute the most in times of emergency like then he had less than 17s. 6d. in the pound left. As regards capital the position was even worse. From 92 per cent. and upwards the reserve had been reduced to 80 per cent. and upwards. The plain fact is that such taxation leaves much less money in the pockets of the taxpayers, and that, therefore, they are less able to pay heavy taxes when these are most necessary. This war has taught us a good deal, and it should teach us a lesson which we had quite

Digitized by Google



[*Elliott & Fry*
SIR C. A. PARSONS, K.C.B.
Central Committee of Inventions Board.

forgotten—i.e., the wise financier is the man who allows money to fructify in the pockets of the people, who takes from them as little as he can possibly do with, not as much as he can possibly spend.

There is another and perhaps a more serious result of this extravagance. It greatly weakened our credit, and credit is the life-blood of a nation just as it is of a business. A good business man will sacrifice anything rather than let his credit suffer, and the decline of the credit of a country is a very serious matter to the people of that country. Many pointed triumphantly to the fact that German credit or French credit had fallen as much, or nearly as much, as British credit, but this argument only appeals to the frivolous. To maintain the high standard of British credit ought to have been our statesmen's constant and dearest aim, but here, too, they were found wanting.

The burden on posterity

In speaking of our national credit, we are referring to something which touches every one of us, and not merely the people who buy stocks and shares, as many ignorant persons profess to believe. The higher a nation's credit, the more cheaply it can borrow money, and when we needed such big sums for carrying on the war, it was of the utmost importance that we should be able to borrow cheaply. But unfortunately we could not do this. Careless and ignorant politicians had seriously weakened our credit, and the consequence is that we and our children and our grandchildren must pay millions a year more than we need have done if reasonable provision had been made for the possibility of war. Here is a burden so big that no possible scheme of taxation can throw it wholly on the rich. Of it we must all take a share, and so help to pay the heavy price of incompetence. The only redeeming feature is that it may perhaps be a lesson to us in the future.

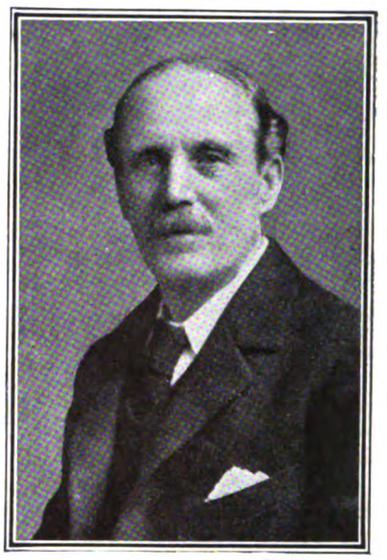


[*Elliott & Fry.*
EARL ST. ALDWYN.
Chairman of Committee of Advice on New Financial Issues.

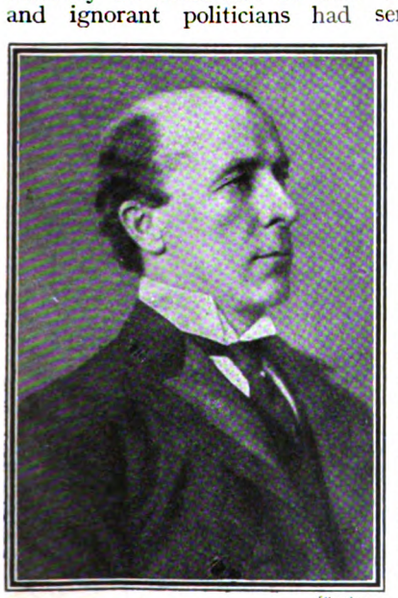
At the time of the Boer War this country could borrow as much money as it wanted at 3 per cent. or thereabouts, but thereafter its credit had steadily declined. In 1902 every £100 of Consols was selling at about 95, but from then until the end of 1905 the price fell steadily to about 85. Then, in October, 1905, came a slight spurt, but afterwards the fall was renewed, and it proved continuous.

The seriousness of the fall in the price of Consols, that is in the price of British credit, between 1902 and 1914 has not been fully realised. As we have said, the period was one of peace and prosperity. Trade was good, the revenue was rising, and the National Debt was being paid off. By all the laws of political economy, British credit ought to have risen steadily, and yet it fell almost without a break during these twelve years, and outside a small circle no one seemed to care. Before July, 1915, this steady fall had taken Consols first below 80 and then below 70, and no one knew where it would stop. Evidently investors, both at home and abroad, thought less and less of the credit of Great Britain. After all, said many, this only concerns the holders of Consols, and they, like other people, must take the rough with the smooth. They forgot that the price of Consols regulated the prices of all other British securities, not excepting house property, and that in these the working classes, through their trade unions, their insurance societies, their savings banks, their building societies and the like, had a very big interest. They forgot that a fall of this kind, if it continued beyond a certain point, would render most of these societies insolvent, and they had a warning of what to expect when, in 1911, the Birkbeck Bank failed for this reason. Finally, they forgot—and this is our most important point—that the price of Consols fixed roughly the rate which the Government had to pay if at any time it was necessary for it to borrow money. However, the time was coming when this

Consols and national credit



[*Elliott & Fry.*
DR. G. T. BEILBY, F.R.S.
Central Committee of Inventions Board.

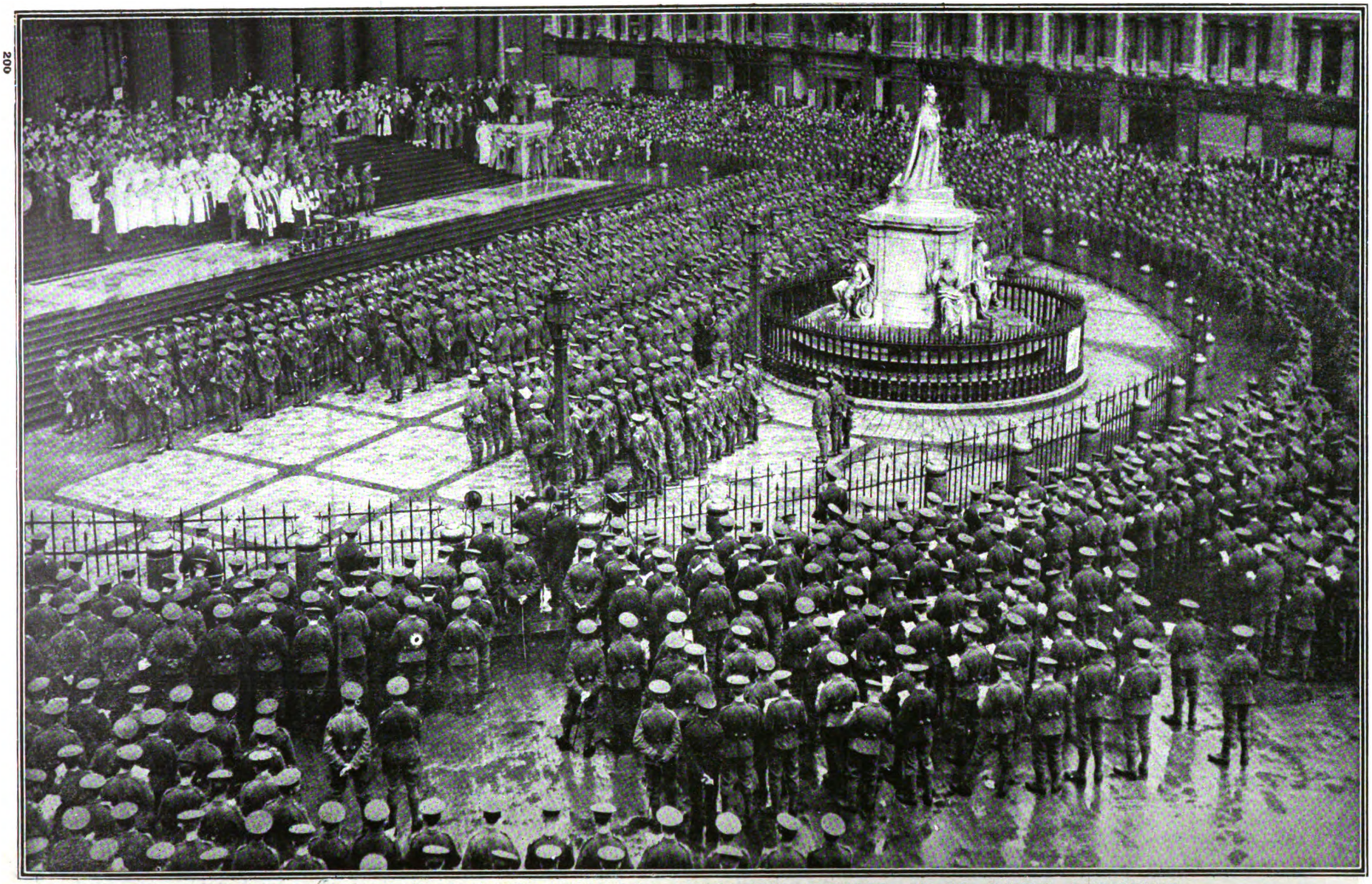


[*Swaine.*
THE RT. HON. REGINALD McKENNA.
Appointed Chancellor of the Exchequer in May, 1915.



Elliott & Fry.
THE RT. HON. HERBERT SAMUEL.
Appointed Postmaster-General in May, 1915.

Digitized by Google



INTERCESSION DAY IN LONDON: IMPRESSIVE DRUM-HEAD SERVICE AT ST. PAUL'S CATHEDRAL.

Sunday, July 25th, 1915, was observed in London as a day of intercession on behalf of the King, the nation, and the land and sea forces of the Empire. More than 3,000 Territorial troops attended a service conducted on the steps of St. Paul's Cathedral by the Bishop of London, and a great congregation of the general public filled one half of the circle of the Churchyard, and spread in mass down Ludgate Hill. Before the Bishop's sermon (based on Matt. xvi. 26: "For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul?"), the troops, led by their bands, joined in singing the hymn "O God, our help in ages past." "We summon then the soul of England," pleaded Dr. Ingram in his closing words, "to arise in all its grandeur and strength at this crisis of the day of God. Come from the four winds, thou Breath of the Spirit, and breathe upon this great people that hope and faith and love may once again revive, and the world be saved again by the 'Soul of a People.'"

Digitized by Google



ANNIVERSARY OF THE OUTBREAK OF WAR.

On August 4th, 1915, the King and Queen, with Queen Alexandra, and the leaders of the nation attended a special intercessory service at St. Paul's Cathedral, when the Archbishop of Canterbury preached from 1 Cor. xvi. 13. Our photograph shows the King and Queen on their way to the Cathedral.

specious argument would be disproved, when the state of British credit would be a matter of vital importance to every Briton. It came on August 4th, 1914.

In 1896 investors were quite willing to lend money to the British Government if they were provided with interest at the rate of £2 10s. a year for every £100 lent. At the time of the Boer War they wanted 3 per cent., but when the Great War broke out they asked nearly 4 per cent., and the Government had either to pay this or go without the money, which of course they could not do.

Why investors got bigger interest

But why, someone may perhaps ask, were investors able to get bigger interest for the same amount of money? The reason is simple. It is because the price of Consols had fallen. For £68, or perhaps less, an investor in July, 1914, could buy £100 of Consols, and so could get £2 10s. a year for every £68 which he invested, or something like £3 14s. for every £100. This being so he would not, obviously, lend his money for a mere 3 per cent., when he could buy the very highest kind of security to bring him in over 3½ per cent. If, in these circumstances, the Government had asked for money at 3 per cent. they would have got none, and so when they wanted it they had to make sure of getting it by offering a higher rate of interest. There is no mystery about this matter. The price of money—that is, the rate at which it can be borrowed—is, like the price of everything else, regulated by the simple law of supply and demand. Thus it came about that the first borrowings for the present war were at the rate of just under 4 per cent., and later, when an enormous sum was needed, it was necessary to offer 4½ per cent. and other advantages.

Let us suppose that the Great War had broken out in 1896 or thereabouts. At first the Government would have been able to borrow very large sums quite easily at 3 per cent., or probably a shade less; but as the war proceeded they would, as is always the case, have been obliged to pay more. Roughly speaking, we may say that during the twenty years or so before 1914 British credit had fallen by about one-third. In 1915 we had to pay from 4 to 4½ per cent. for money, whereas in 1896 we had only to pay 3 or 3½ per cent., 1 per cent. less. In 1915 the British people were beginning to pay for this decline in our national credit. For every £100,000,000 which our Government borrowed it had to pay £1,000,000 a year more than it would have done if it had been borrowing in 1896. This represents interest at the rate of 1 per cent., and the calculation is a simple one. If the war costs £1,000,000,000 we must pay an extra £10,000,000 a year for it; if, as is more likely, it costs £2,000,000,000, we must pay an extra £20,000,000 a year, and so on. Such is the price of financial unpreparedness for war, of being governed by men who refuse to look disagreeable facts in the face. For years and years—we know not how many—our people must go on paying something between £10,000,000 and £20,000,000 a year more than they need have done if their rulers had practised the stern virtue of economy. However, the milk is spilled. All we can do is to take to heart the costly lesson—for of nations as of men it is true that whatsoever they sow that shall they also reap.

A costly lesson

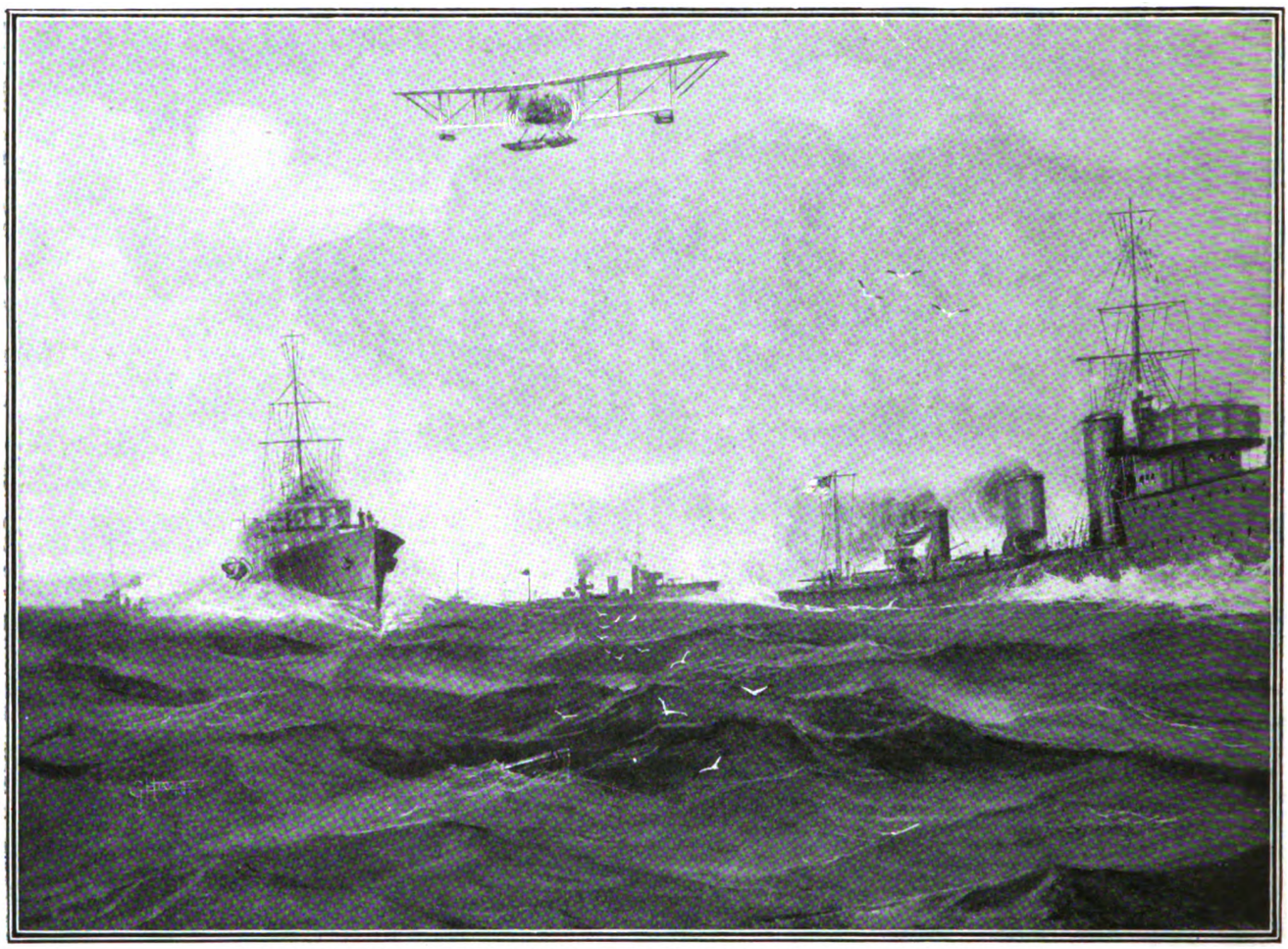
We are, of course, aware that other causes—among them the widening of the area of investments and the increased



THE BISHOP OF LONDON AND THE WOUNDED.

Before conducting the drum-head service at St. Paul's Cathedral on July 25th, 1915, the Bishop of London visited the Church of St. Martin-in-the-Field, and spoke a few words to some wounded soldiers who were waiting there, together with an escort of the London Rifle Brigade, of which Dr. Ingram is chaplain.

Digitized by Google



GUARDING THE NARROW SEAS FROM THE GERMAN SUBMARINE MENACE.

Vivid pictorial impression of an exciting incident during coast patrol work. The suspicious-looking object towards which the destroyer is seen making at full speed looked very like the eye of a periscope, but proved on closer investigation to be nothing more deadly than a fragment of wreckage.

output of gold—contributed to the fall in the price of securities. But, as far as this country is concerned, the chief cause, we are sure, was extravagance, both national and local, and this brought upon us the first of the two great financial handicaps with which we entered upon the Great War.

The same financial unpreparedness, the same reluctance to face unpleasant possibilities, was with us to the very end.

Our forfeit to Germany

Our politicians sincerely wanted peace, of that there is no doubt whatever; but they made the fatal mistake of thinking that good intentions were enough. The result was that in July, 1914, Germany, prepared for war in every conceivable way, caught this country at a great disadvantage financially. Though we did not know it at the time, we were really on the horns of a dilemma. We had either to remain neutral in the coming struggle, or to forfeit a large sum of money to Germany. For our honour and safety we chose the latter alternative, and Germany secured what may be not unfairly described as a war indemnity from this country.

Let us examine carefully what happened in the last week of July, 1914. The London Stock Exchange is the biggest market for securities in the world, and, thanks to the telegraph, every day stocks and shares from all parts of the world are sold there. Its prices, which are affected by reports and rumours from every quarter of the globe—earthquakes in Japan, railway accidents in America, rainstorms in Africa, and drought in Australia—are known everywhere in a few seconds, and the "House," as it is called, has been aptly likened to a barometer. It is a barometer which shows at a glance the financial conditions in every country of the world.

Heavy selling of stocks on German account—though the fact was not then known—began early in July and continued through the first half of the month. The hint had been given by the German military authorities to their bankers to prepare for war. They prepared by unloading as far as possible their obligations upon the British people, handing over to us securities, and taking for those securities gold. On Friday, July 24th, there was a certain amount of anxiety and nervousness on the Stock Exchange, and in financial circles generally, on account of the international situation, and on the following day this feeling was still more pronounced. There was a good deal of selling, especially selling of foreign securities, and prices fell heavily in every department. Hopes were entertained that the Sunday's rest might give the depression time to pass away, as it had often done before; but, unfortunately, this was not to be. Monday and Tuesday were worse than Friday and Saturday had been, and on Wednesday it was certain that the crisis was no ordinary one.

The business of the Stock Exchange is conducted on an elaborate system of credit, and every fortnight or thereabouts accounts are made up. Stockbrokers buy stocks and shares for which they cannot pay, in the hope that before the day of settlement arrives they will be able to sell them at a profit. If, however, they cannot do this, they can quite easily borrow money on the stocks they have bought, and so get over the difficulty in that way.

Failures on the Stock Exchange

This system works well enough in normal times. When prices are falling, falling without a break, the banks and financial houses are naturally very reluctant to lend; and this was the case in July, as the next settling day, which was Wednesday the 29th, came near. Many stockbrokers had on their hands stocks which they

Digitized by Google

could not sell at anything like the prices they had given for them a few days before, and on the security of which it was very difficult to borrow, and so it is not surprising that they looked forward to Wednesday with alarm. As an instance of the seriousness of the fall, it may be mentioned that the ordinary shares of the Canadian Pacific Railway fell 22½ points in a few days.

When Wednesday came the fall in prices continued, selling orders came from every part of the world, and in the midst of the general uneasiness it was announced that seven firms had failed; in the phraseology of stockbrokers they were "hammered." The only bright spot was that the number of failures was so few; many more were expected. Many stockbrokers, however, were hanging, like Mohammed's coffin, between the heaven of solvency and the earth of insolvency.

On Thursday the selling continued, the uneasiness became more marked, and more failures seemed likely. There had been international crises before, plenty of them, and panics and failures on the Stock Exchange, but never a day like Thursday the 30th. A known danger can be met and dealt with, but an unknown danger is a much more terrible thing. All over the Stock Exchange was the dread of the unknown, and all awaited Friday morning with the gravest anxiety, for clearly this state of affairs could not continue without a big catastrophe.

The dread of the unknown

As soon as the Stock Exchange was opened, it was seen that the position was worse and not better, and it was evident that something had to be done. Accordingly before twelve o'clock the authorities closed the Stock Exchange until further notice, and the smaller exchanges in other parts of the country followed this example. The settlements were indefinitely postponed, and so many were saved from ruin; the business of buying and selling shares was stopped, and prices could not fall any further. Never before in the history of the "House" had such a step been necessary.

In addition to the Stock Exchange, the money market was violently disturbed during these anxious days. There was a demand for gold, and to protect its reserve the Bank of England raised its rate on Thursday, July 30th, from 3 to 4 per cent. This was not very surprising, but on the Friday the position was so serious, the demand for gold was so insistent, that the Bank Rate was doubled at one stroke. It was made 8 per cent., a clear sign that there was something wrong. This meant that banks and financial institutions which wanted to borrow money from the Bank of England had to pay 8 per cent. for it or do without it. It meant, too, that every other borrower had to pay more, for just as the price of Government securities regulates the prices of other securities, so the Bank Rate regulates the rate at which practically all money is lent.

Bank Rate at 10 per cent.

Still the demand for gold continued. People were willing to pay 8 per cent., or perhaps it would be more correct to say they were obliged to pay it, for they had unexpected liabilities to meet, and as the stock of gold in the Bank was diminishing, the Rate was raised on Saturday to 10 per cent. It had not been as high as this since 1866, the year in which Overend and Gurney, the well-known bankers, failed. To use the expressive American phrase, "money was talking."

This big demand for gold was closely connected with the state of the foreign exchanges. Each country has a rate of exchange with every other country with which it does business, this being the rate at which the debts of one country are set off against the debts of the other. Let us take a simple illustration, that of the exchange between England and France. Every day a good deal of business is done between the two countries, and each owes the other money for all sorts of things. Now France pays her debts



KEEPING WATCH AND WARD—BRITISH DESTROYER "TALKING" TO MINE-SWEEPERS.

Two branches of the silent but highly efficient work of our Navy are illustrated here. On the left we see the deck of a destroyer on guard duty, and on the horizon can be discerned two mine-sweepers with which she is communicating, vessels engaged in highly perilous but necessary work, of the value of which the general public, safe at home, can have had but a very imperfect idea.

Digitized by Google

in francs and England pays her debts in sovereigns, and the rate at which these are exchanged for each other is called the rate of exchange. Usually it is about twenty-five francs twenty centimes for the sovereign, but it falls and rises according to circumstances.

The rate of exchange varies a little from day to day, according to the nature of the business done. If England owes France more than France owes England, we say that the French exchange is falling, because Frenchmen, not having so much to pay, are not giving quite so much for a sovereign as they were doing, and vice versa. Thus at the rate of exchange the debts of one side cancel the debts of the other without any money changing hands, but sometimes there is a big balance remaining, and one side or the other must send actual gold to make this up. In practice it is found that England sends gold to France when the exchange is as low as 25 francs 12½ centimes for the sovereign and France sends gold to England when it is as high as 25 francs 32½ centimes. With other countries the principle is exactly the same. When one country owes another large amounts we find that the exchange is going against it, and it must send out gold to pay its debts.

Fall in foreign exchanges



LORD KITCHENER'S CALL FOR MORE RECRUITS.

"It would be difficult to exaggerate the value of the response that has been made to my previous appeals," declared Lord Kitchener at the Guildhall on July 9th, 1915, "but I am here to-day to make another demand on the manhood of the country to come forward in its defence." Our photograph shows the War Secretary, with the Lord Mayor, at the Guildhall balcony, responding to the tremendous cheering of the assembly outside.

The last week of July saw violent fluctuations in the foreign exchanges. As regards France the exchange fell below 25 francs for the sovereign and other falls were equally severe. The curious fact was that nearly all the exchanges—the American one being a conspicuous exception—were going against England; were reaching and sometimes passing the point at which gold could be withdrawn from London, the so-called gold-point. The result was the enormous demand for British gold which so disturbed the money market.

Let us recapitulate. In the last week of July there was a financial panic, which was marked by the heavy selling of securities and the constant demand for gold in London. The two were closely connected, and—this is of the greatest importance—*both came from abroad*. Foreigners were selling securities in London, and so England's debt to them grew bigger and bigger. This drove down the foreign exchanges until several of them reached the point at which gold must be exported. It was exported, and then the Bank of England took steps to protect its stock by raising the Bank Rate to 10 per cent.

About July 14th German banks and financiers began to sell securities in large quantities, and on the 18th, so Sir Edward H. Holden told the shareholders of the London, City and Midland Bank, the Dresdner Bank caused a great commotion by selling its securities and advising its clients to sell their securities. The selling mania spread, and as the foreign stock exchanges could not, or would not, do the business, the securities found their way to London and produced the panic of July 30th and 31st.

In this way the Germans got gold for their securities, but they did something else. About July 24th and 25th the German banks in London withdrew all the gold they could lay their hands on. They called in loans, and their refusal to find the usual funds for the stockbrokers was one of the minor causes of the trouble on the Stock Exchange on July 29th. They pledged German securities with British banks, and so got the power to take still more gold from this country. Between July 22nd and July 29th the reserve of gold in the Bank of England fell from £40,164,000 to £38,131,000, and on July 30th a further £1,200,000 was taken for abroad. This was in addition to the gold, an unknown amount, which was withdrawn from banks other than the Bank of England.

This was one part of the plot to get as much gold from England as possible, but there was another, and here we must refer to bills of exchange.

By means of bills of exchange foreign trade is mainly carried on. An English merchant, let us say, having sold goods in Germany, does not receive for them a cheque, but a bill. To use technical language he "draws on" the man who owes him for the goods, and by signing the bill the latter promises to pay him in three or six months or some other stated period. The seller "accepts" the bill himself, or perhaps hands it over for "acceptance" to someone to whom he is indebted. This means that the "acceptor" makes himself responsible for the bill, in case the person on whom it is drawn fails to find the money at the proper time.

Our merchant has now got his bill, but it is not yet due for payment, and perhaps he wants money before it is. If so, he goes to a bank or to a financial house which deals in bills of exchange, and there he can, if the security is thought good, discount the bill—that is, get money for it; this varies according to the rate of the exchange and the rate of interest at the time, but it is always something less than the face value of the bill. Then at the end of the time the discounting house collects the money from the German firm. Many of these bills, we may add, are as good as bank-notes; for instance, any with the name of Rothschild on them would be, and they can be passed from one person to another just as notes can.

In London many of the houses which accepted and discounted bills of exchange were German, or at least were controlled by Germans. This gave the enemy, as he was soon to become, an enormous advantage.

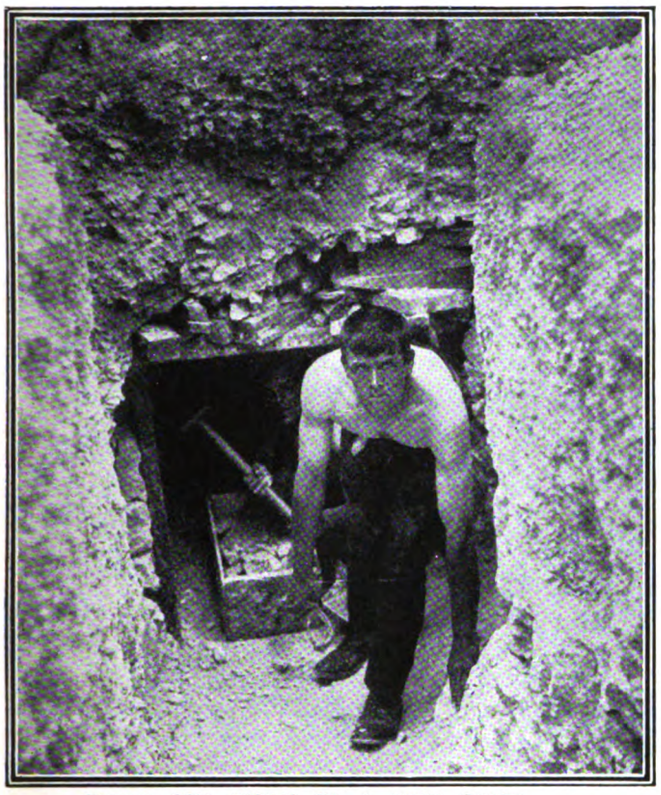
Enemy's enormous advantage

In July these and other houses held a large number of bills of exchange, representing money due from German buyers to British manufacturers, and there was a great and somewhat sudden desire to get rid of them. As fast as possible the bills were sold to English firms, and wherever they were able the sellers took gold for them.

This raid on British gold was the chief, but it was not the only feature of this financial campaign. During the earlier part of 1914 German merchants had ordered unusually large quantities of goods from this country, woollen goods from Yorkshire being bought on an exceptionally big scale, and most of these were paid for in the customary way by bills of exchange.

At the end of July the position was this. The German

Digitized by Google





THEIR OLD WORK IN A NEW GUISE.
Right and left: Durham miners who had enlisted in the New Army preparing a practice sap.



YORKSHIRE RECRUITS GETTING READY FOR ACTIVE SERVICE AT THE FRONT.
Men of a Yorkshire service battalion in training. Trench-digging and sapping.

Digitized by Google

financiers had got the gold and the German merchants had got the goods, while the British financiers had got the paper money—stocks and shares, bills of exchange, and the like. In ordinary times this would not have mattered. The stocks and shares could have been sold in the ordinary way, the bills of exchange collected as soon as they fell due, and gold sent from Germany to meet the debts. But on July 31st it did matter. *If war broke out between Great Britain and Germany, all this paper money, all these bills of exchange, would be worthless,* for no one can collect debts in an enemy country. Our financiers were not unlike men who had parted with their gold in exchange for tickets in a lottery.

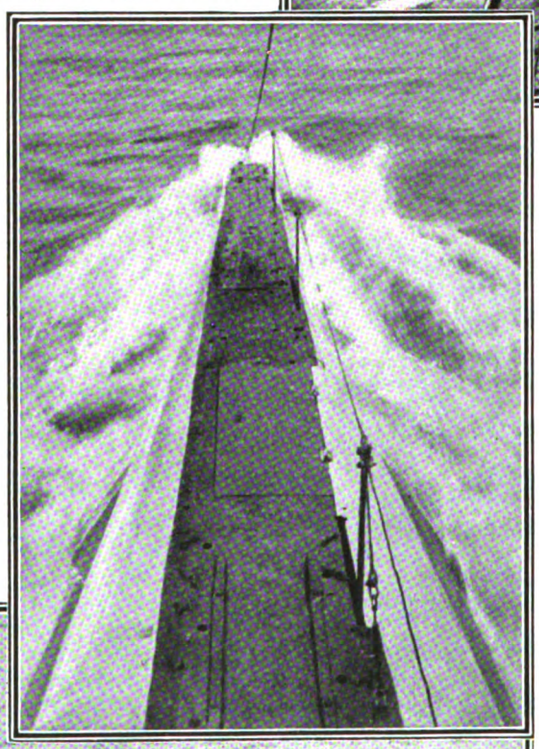
In these ways the German financiers got the better of us, and we may now ask the question—why did they act thus? There is only one possible reply. On or about July 16th they knew that a European war was certain, and they made use of their knowledge to put their own country in an advantageous position. On the 14th the Kaiser had promised his absolute support to Austria against Serbia, and on the 14th or 15th his son, the Crown Prince, told some Berlin bankers to act cautiously. Forewarned is forearmed. While others were doubting, the Germans were preparing for a grim and mighty struggle in which guns and ships, men and money were all to play their part.

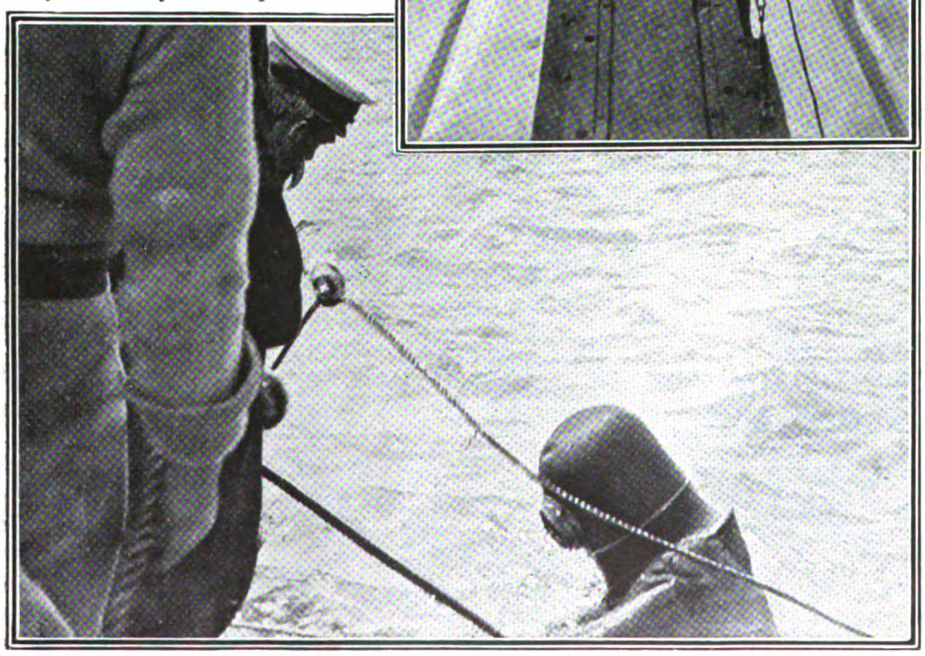
Counting on British neutrality

In these critical days the German financiers devoted their chief attention to this country. They knew France and Russia would fight, no doubt they wanted them to do so; but with us it was quite otherwise. It is now practically certain that the Germans counted on British neutrality, and they took very astute measures to make that neutrality a business proposition. They had so managed matters that we stood to lose a great deal of money if we entered the war. They could say to our politicians



Submarine crew enjoying the relaxation of a little fishing at sea: A crab being hauled in.





Diver removing an obstruction from a propeller. Above: A submersible going full speed ahead.
INCIDENTS IN LIFE ABOARD A BRITISH SUBMARINE.

—we know they did say to them—"Think what you will lose if you go to war. You had far better remain neutral." Our neutrality was indeed advocated by a prominent German in a letter which appeared in the "Westminster Gazette" on August 3rd. To this base argument we refused to listen, and as all the world knows, we took up arms on August 4th to defend the neutrality of Belgium. Even then, although somewhat disappointed, the German financiers had a card in reserve. They were able to make us pay a big price for our intervention, in addition, of course, to the ordinary expenses of a great war.

No one can say exactly how much the Germans got from us in July, 1914, but it must have been a very considerable sum, and this we are justified in calling a war indemnity. There is a story told of how two men went into partnership. When this began, A provided the money and B the experience; but when it came to an end, A had the experience and B the money. Without unduly straining the meaning, A may well stand for Great Britain and B for Germany.

A neglected danger

This skilful plot, or manœuvre, was assisted by the supineness of our Government, and also by the presence of a number of Germans, both naturalised and unnaturalised, in responsible positions in the City of London, a

Digitized by Google

danger to which attention had been called, with the usual negative result, in the past. We do not accuse all, or indeed any large part, of these gentlemen of treachery, but it is surely not uncharitable to believe that they were reluctant to think any ill of their fellow-countrymen, and were, therefore, not on their guard against their machinations. The serious fact is that they were in positions of authority at a critical time. Englishmen, we like to think, have not often cause to be ashamed of their country, but never, since the days of Hengist, has there been such good reason for whole-hearted shame as there was when, in the House of Commons in August, 1914, Mr. McKenna stated that the recent naturalisation of a German financier, Baron Schröder, was necessary for the financial stability of the City of London.

Reason for national shame

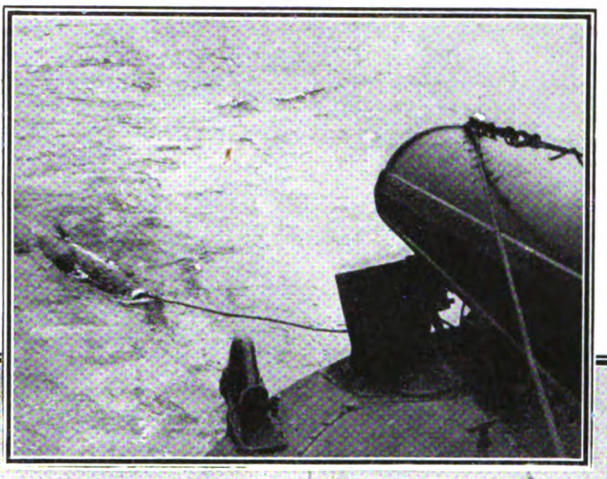
For our failure to divine and counter the German plot of July, 1914, the Government must take much of the blame. Did they know what was going on, or did the bankers and the diplomatists, in whom they trusted, fail to warn them? Possibly the diplomatists were, as usual, above taking notice of these common business matters, and the bankers—or at least the German section of them—asserted that everything was quite all right. We do not know. We know that the Government did nothing, and we feel tolerably certain that they put too much faith in the words of their German friends.

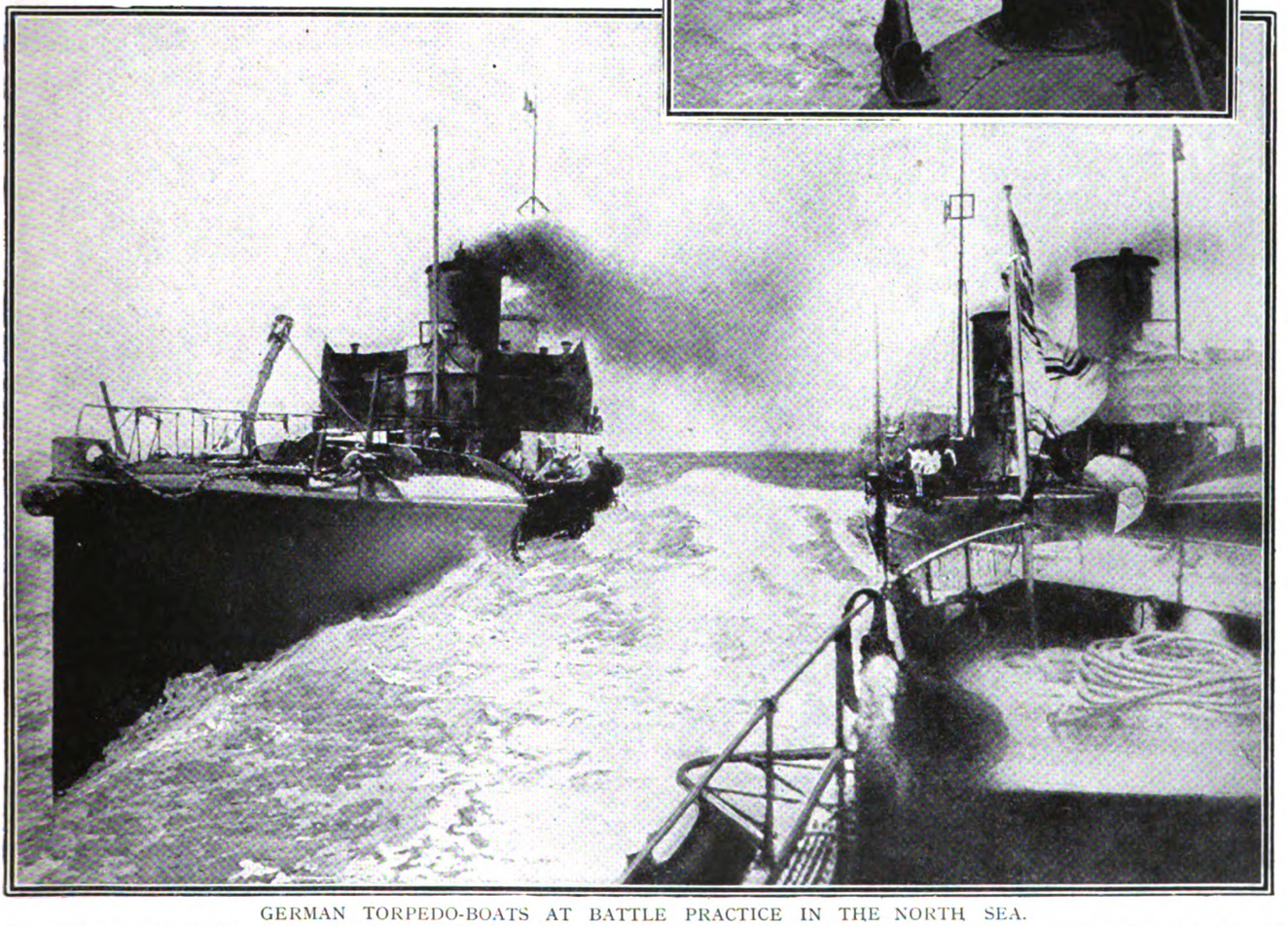
But what, some may ask, could the Government have done? They could have prevented the withdrawal of gold and the pledging of German securities. They could have intimated quietly that any loss suffered by our merchants would be made good out of the property in the British Empire owned by Germans—a property which has been valued at as much as £300,000,000—and they could have done other things. All they needed was to ask the advice of a British banker and to act on it at once. The only drawback is that strong measures at that critical time would have required more backbone than any British politician has possessed since Lord Palmerston.

But they did nothing, although at the eleventh hour the Committee of the Stock Exchange and the Directors of the Bank of England saved the situation—or what was left of it. So it came about that we started our war with two serious financial handicaps—impaired credit, the consequence of an era of extravagance, and enormous debts owing to us, which for the time being were lost.

At the eleventh hour

Before war began on Tuesday, August 4th, our financial system, the pride of Englishmen everywhere, had for the moment ceased to exist. Like the Cheshire cat in "Alice," our credit had vanished and only its grin remained. Credit





GERMAN TORPEDO-BOATS AT BATTLE PRACTICE IN THE NORTH SEA.
The smaller view is of a German torpedo discovered floating on the surface. This sinister wanderer was taken in charge by a British destroyer and towed to a place of safety.

Digitized by Google

had vanished! Let us try and realise what these few words mean.

By means of credit, it is not too much to say, 99 per cent. of our business is transacted; but credit can only be used in a highly civilised society, in a country which has good laws and a good government, wherein people trust each other. It means that instead of paying for the goods we buy, we promise to pay for them—for cheques, banknotes, postal orders, drafts, bills of exchange, and other forms of paper money are nothing more than promises to pay. The great majority of us no longer give one article in payment for another, as our ancestors did in the days of barter; we no longer give gold and silver as our great-grandparents did; we give pieces of paper which are nothing more than promises to pay. In themselves these are worthless; people accept them because they believe that those who promise to pay—whether it is the Bank of England, Messrs. Rich & Co., or John Jones, tailor—can pay and will pay.

What financial panic means

If this belief is destroyed or weakened, credit is destroyed or weakened. Then people will no longer take pieces of paper in payment of their debts; they want gold, something which has a value in itself. Something of this kind happens in times of wars and tumults. People become suspicious and distrustful, and consequently they prefer gold to paper money. Hence we have a big demand for gold at the banks, especially the Bank of England, such as there was in the last week of July, 1914, and if this reaches any great size, it develops into a panic. A financial panic means a demand for gold, the reason being that credit has been wholly or partially destroyed. Paper money is suspected, because people wonder if the promise to pay will be carried out.

On Monday, August 3rd, credit had vanished. Everybody wanted gold for his or her paper money, and the amount of gold in the country was not sufficient to pay us sixpence in the pound all round. The disappearance of credit meant that even the richest firms were bankrupt. Doubtless they had a large amount of paper money in their coffers, but this was valueless; doubtless they owned plenty of stocks and shares, but these they could not sell. The plain fact remained that, like the bankrupt, they had not enough gold to pay their debts, and people were reluctant to take anything else.

On the Friday and Saturday private persons had withdrawn large sums in gold from the banks, and they were preparing to withdraw more, while many took their notes to the Bank of England and exchanged them for gold. If this had continued it is obvious what would have followed. It would have been a case of first come first served; the gold would soon have been exhausted, and then national bankruptcy would have come upon us. In the past, financial panics had been met by suspending the Bank Acts, the Acts which compel the Bank of England to give gold for notes, but this course was not taken in the crisis of 1914.



LORD KITCHENER'S CONFERENCE WITH GENERAL JOFFRE.

A souvenir of Lord Kitchener's visit to the French front in August, 1915. The War Secretary spent two days with the French Generalissimo, and the occasion called forth some interesting recollections of his early service with the French Army in 1870. Our photograph shows the British War Minister with M. Millerand, General Joffre, General Foch, and General Dubail returning from the trenches.

Fortunately, Monday, August 3rd, was a Bank Holiday, and this accident helped matters considerably. It prevented, for the time being at least, a run on the banks, and it gave the authorities an extra day in which to do something to deal with the crisis. Parliament was sitting, and so Ministers could introduce any legislation which they thought necessary.

The first question tackled was that of bills of exchange. Towards the end of the previous week the foreign exchanges had ceased to work, and consequently no payments from abroad were reaching London. On Tuesday business would be resumed as usual, a number of bills of exchange would fall due, and in any case these had to be met. Many of them were in the hands of the Bank of England and other banks, and they would ask the acceptors for payment, whether or not they received it from their foreign clients who had bought the goods and given the bills. Under existing conditions, with nothing arriving in London, the accepting houses were faced with ruin.

On Monday, therefore, to relieve them from this serious predicament, an Act called the Postponement of Payments Act was passed through Parliament, the whole business being carried out in a few hours. This gave the Government the power to issue a Royal Proclamation postponing any kind of payment, and the same evening they acted on it. Before midnight a proclamation had been issued postponing the payment of all bills of exchange for one month, or until September 4th and later. For one month the accepting houses could not be compelled to meet the bills due, although, of course, they could do so if they wished.

The same day other urgency measures became law. The Bank Holiday was extended for three more days, and so the banks would remain closed until Friday morning, and it was stated that as soon as possible, in order to conserve our stock of gold, the Government would issue notes for £1 and 10s., and that these would be legal tender. This meant that a man could not refuse to take them in payment of a debt, as he can a cheque or a large amount of silver, although he could change them into gold at the Bank of England. At the same time postal orders were made legal tender.

On August 4th, the day war was declared, another Royal Proclamation ordered a general moratorium for a month, one applying not only to bills of exchange but to debts of other kinds. By it the payment of all debts of over £5 was postponed for a month. People could pay them if they liked, and many did like, but they could not be compelled to do so. The courts would take no notice of a man who applied for a writ or a summons for debt unless the amount was under £5. Rent was not included in this moratorium, but a new Act of Parliament made it difficult for landlords to distrain on tenants for arrears.

Passing of the crisis

In various ways people were urged to leave their money in the banks and to go about their business of buying and

Digitized by Google



[Russell & Sons.

Right Honourable Arthur James Balfour, First Lord of the Admiralty

Digitized by Google



British battery at its deadly work on a sand-ridge in Gallipoli.



Charge by the Royal Naval Division on the Gallipoli Peninsula.

Digitized by Google

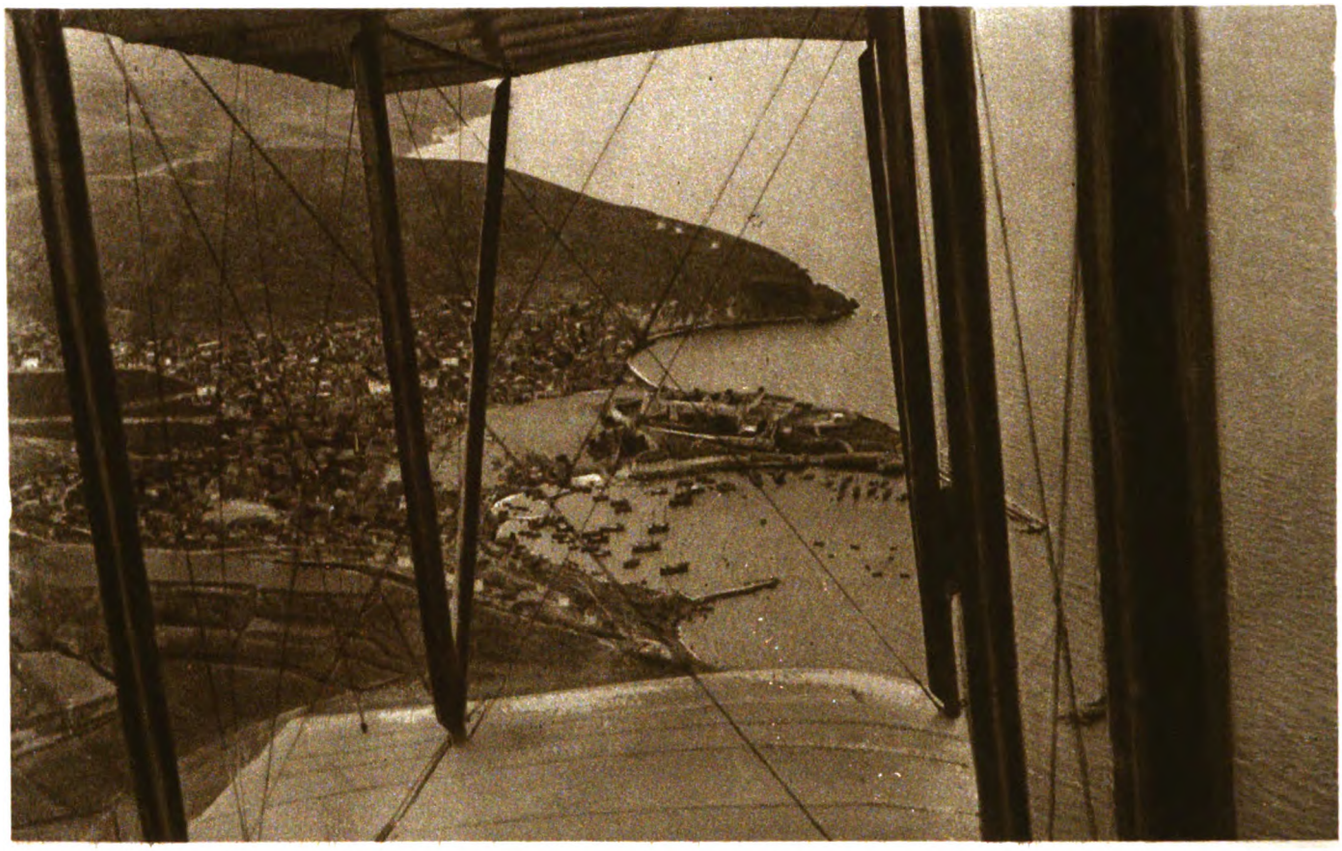


Rear-Admiral Stuart Nicholson, M.V.O., in the trenches near Cape Helles.

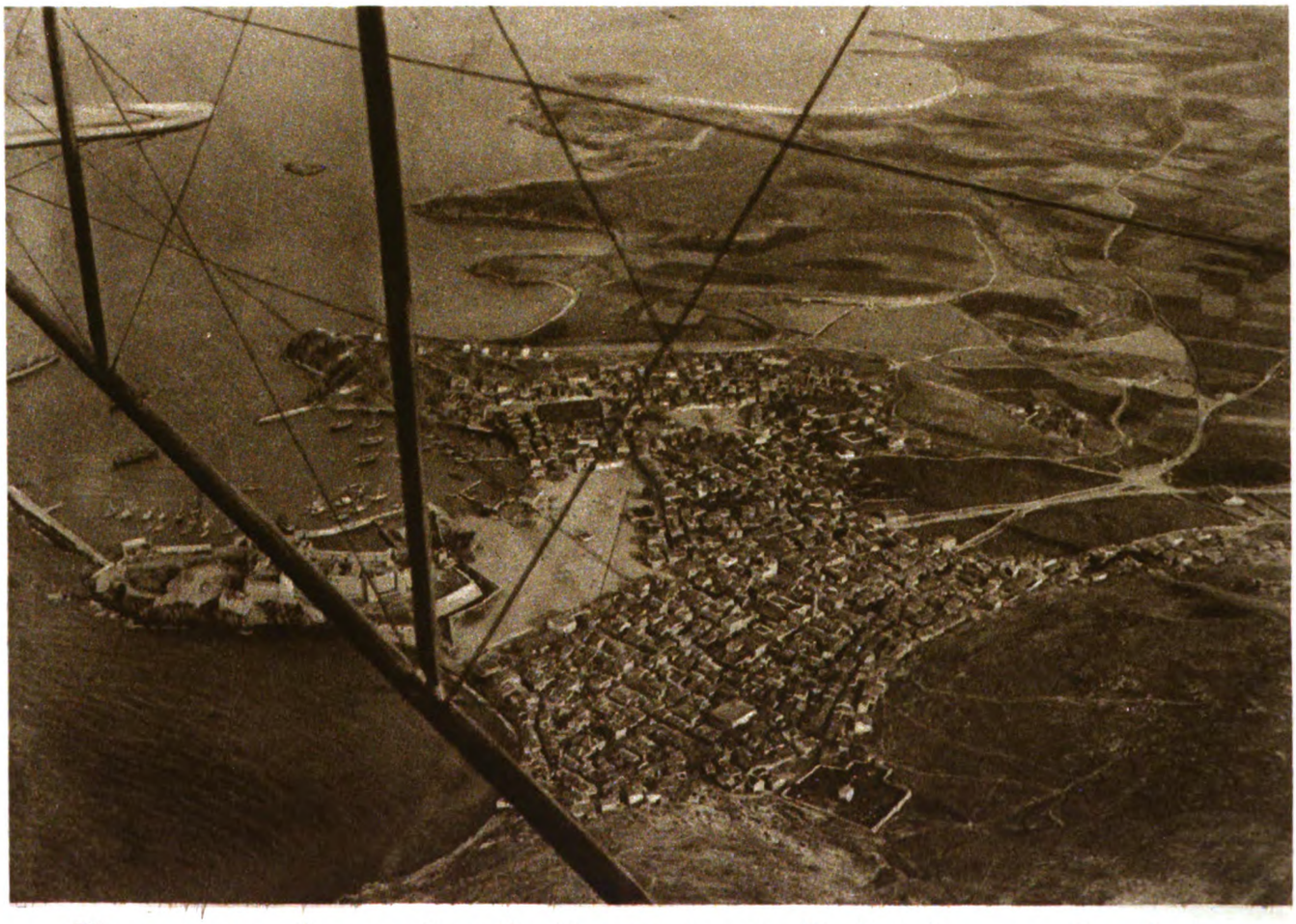


Lord Montgomery, of the Headquarters Staff, in Gallipoli.

Digitized by Google



View of a Turkish town on the Dardanelles as seen from a French aeroplane.



The same town from another direction showing the Turkish forts guarding the bay.

Digitized by Google

selling, paying and receiving, as usual. The appeals had a good effect, the excitement died down, and on the Friday, when the banks were opened, everything passed off smoothly. There was no run on them; money was paid in and paid out almost as usual, and a very serious crisis was over. On the previous day, the 6th, the Bank Rate had been reduced from 10 to 6 per cent., and on the following day, the 8th, to 5 per cent., quite a moderate rate for a time of war. On Thursday, Friday, and Saturday in the previous week over £10,000,000 in gold had been withdrawn from the Bank of England, but on the same three days of the week under consideration over £6,000,000 in gold was received. This showed clearly that public confidence, the foundation of our credit system, was returning rapidly.

So far so good; but we were by no means out of the wood. The moratorium could not last for ever, and some day or other the bills of exchange and other debts must be paid. The measures taken in the first week in August were only temporary ones, designed to serve the very useful purpose of giving time for consideration; but that was all. We had merely postponed the day of reckoning.

How the banks were protected

From September 4th the moratorium was extended for a month, and from October 4th for another. From November 4th there was a partial renewal, but on December 4th it really came to an end. For some time before that date, however, little notice had been taken of it, and its disappearance was hardly felt. By that time business was going on as usual and debts were being paid in the ordinary way.

We must now say something about the steps taken to bring about this desirable result, and it will be best to divide those who were affected by the breakdown of our credit system into classes. First come the banks. The big joint-stock banks, about a dozen in all, held about £600,000,000 of money belonging to the public, and if all this was withdrawn they were ruined, while in no possible case could they pay it all out in gold; there was not enough, or anything like enough, in the country. Much of the money they had lent to stockbrokers and tradesmen, who had given them stocks, shares, and other property as security for it; but with the stock exchanges closed these could not be sold, or only sold with great difficulty and at considerable loss.

The banks were saved primarily by the good sense of the people, who realised that there was no cause for alarm, and that their money was as safe in the banks as in their own pockets. Moreover, if they wished to withdraw unreasonable amounts, the banks could protect themselves by the moratorium and refuse to pay; and this was not without its effect. The result was that their deposits were not depleted to any great extent. However, in case of need, the Government gave the banks a further measure of protection. They offered to advance to them Treasury notes up to 20 per cent. of their deposits; but the banks only took up about £13,000,000 of these, whereas they had the right to take up ten times that amount. This transaction was described as follows by Sir Edward H. Holden, Bart.:

Position of the stockbrokers

> These notes were issued to the English, Scotch, and Irish banks, and the Savings Banks—in other words the Government placed on deposit with the bankers a certain amount of these notes which were put into circulation. By the end of September the banks had repaid the amount received from the Government with the exception of about one million sterling; by the end of October practically the whole amount was repaid. These Treasury notes were issued in the first instance without a gold basis, but the Government undertook to pay them in gold if required.

The last sentence explains the real nature of the assistance.

Next come the stockbrokers, and their position has already been explained. The moratorium and the closing of the Stock Exchange protected them, but only for a time. When the moratorium ended they expected the banks to call in loans, and as their securities were practically unsaleable they would be unable to repay the money, and would therefore be ruined. It was estimated that in August the stockbrokers owed the banks something like £70,000,000 or £80,000,000.

Between the Government and the banks an arrangement was made for the protection of the stockbrokers. The Government offered to advance money to the banks up to sixty per cent. of the value of the securities which they held from the brokers, on condition that these were not offered for sale until six months after the conclusion of the war. At the same time many of the stockbrokers managed, in various ways, to reduce the amount which they owed to the banks, and before the end of the year their special difficulty had been overcome.

All through the autumn of 1914 the Stock Exchange remained closed, although some business was done by



"THE ALLEY-WAYS OF DEATH AND GLORY."
A street trench well barricaded, ruin in the background, but stout hearts and cheery faces to the fore.

stockbrokers "in the street." This meant that stocks and shares could be sold, but not as freely as before; prices were not known in an instant, but were a matter of bargain and arrangement. This was not entirely satisfactory, and soon there was some talk about reopening the "House." At length the Government and the Stock Exchange authorities agreed upon a scheme, and the reopening took place on January 4th, 1915. The Stock Exchange had been closed for just over five months.

The London Stock Exchange was only opened, however, under very serious restrictions. The system, by which a man sells shares which he has not got and which he could not pay for if he had, was suspended; every purchase had to be "taken up" and paid for at once. In a word speculative buying and selling, the mainstay of Stock

Digitized by Google



Observers, from a coign of vantage in a tree top, wiring instructions to the guns.

Exchange business—the Hamlet of the piece—was forbidden.

Another restriction was the introduction of minimum prices for Consols and other leading securities. To prevent our credit being further injured by another fall in prices, it had been decided in the previous September that Consols should not be sold below a certain price, and when the Stock Exchange was reopened this principle—an unsound one—was extended. The minimum price of 68½ was fixed for 2½ per cent. Consols, and other minimum prices in much the same proportion.

It cannot be said that this experiment was very successful.

Stock Exchange at work again

Prices are like water, sooner or later they will find their proper level. Artificial restrictions can hamper business, but they cannot raise values. If Consols are not worth 68½ in relation to other things, no legislation on earth can make them so. As a matter of fact, there was a good deal of buying and selling at prices below the fixed minima, and, surreptitiously perhaps, these soon found their right level. In this way the London Stock Exchange got to work again after a fashion, and the smaller exchanges in other parts of the country followed its example. Stockbrokers had been saved from wholesale bankruptcy, for that certainly would have been their fate if nothing had been done for their protection.

As for the acceptors and holders of bills of exchange, they were protected for one month by the Royal Proclamation of August 3rd, but their position would not be satisfactory until the foreign exchanges were working again, and they could obtain remittances from abroad.

As regards allied and neutral countries, the difficulty was soon over, and for compassing this desirable end the British Navy must have its meed of praise. As soon as it was seen that our command of the sea was assured, foreigners began to ship goods as usual to this country, and it was these goods which really paid their debts to us. They were the real exchange; the pieces of paper were but symbols, worthless without the goods themselves. Remittances then began to reach London, and before September 4th, 1914, the accepting houses found themselves in a position to meet many of their bills.

The Navy and overseas trade

With regard to one neutral, the United States, there was a special difficulty. In August, as is usual at that time of the year, there was a big balance owing to this country which, unless the unexpected happened, would be discharged by exporting the cotton crop. But owing to the breakdown of the exchange, and still more to the paralysis of the shipping industry, merchants did not for a few days send any cotton across the Atlantic, and so the £90,000,000 or so remained unpaid. However, the American bankers came quickly to the rescue, and shipping soon resumed its normal activities. To right the exchange, £20,000,000 in gold was sent from New York to Ottawa, where it was held on account of the Bank of England, and this difficulty was overcome. American bills of exchange were





An instruction class in progress. In circle: Cyclist tapping the wires and sending information to headquarters.

BRITAIN'S NEW ARMY IN TRAINING: LESSONS IN FIELD TELEGRAPHY.

Digitized by Google



REHEARSING FOR THE GRIM DRAMA OF WAR.
Getting out of the "enemy trench." A phase of the training in trench warfare undergone by men of the New Army at Aldershot.



LEARNING TO BAYONET ENTRENCHED GERMANS.
The grenade-throwers having prepared the way, the infantry charged with the bayonet, the "enemy" being represented by sand-bags.



MEMBERS OF THE NATIONAL GUARD GETTING FIT FOR HOME DEFENCE.
The City of London National Guard Volunteer Corps learning the art of trench-digging in some waste ground near the site of the old G.P.O., under the direction of their commandant, Colonel G. T. B. Cobbett, who is seen on the extreme right of the picture.

Digitized by Google

met as usual, and in a while the balance against the States disappeared.

While speaking of the American exchange we may mention its later developments. As the war proceeded, we bought more and more goods from the States, not only foodstuffs, but arms and ammunition in great quantities, and at the same time we were unable to send there the customary amount of manufactured goods. To illustrate this point we may mention that, in the first three months of 1915, the total exports of the United States were £177,000,000, against £116,000,000 in the corresponding period of 1914. On the other hand the imports fell from £101,000,000 to £84,500,000. The result of this was that a great trade balance was soon piled up against us, and the American exchange fell away to such a point that we had to export gold. Steps were taken, however, to stop this fall by British sales of American securities. These were bought by Americans, and the price paid for them was set off against the debt we owed the States. Nevertheless, the balance against us continued to grow, and in the summer of 1915 the state of the American exchange was again a source of anxiety to our bankers and financiers.

The American exchange

There still remained, however, the German and Austrian bills of exchange of which, unfortunately, our accepting houses held a large number, and the most difficult part of the business was to know what to do with them. It was quite certain that as long as the war lasted they would not be met in the ordinary way.

On August 13th it was announced that the Bank of England would discount—that is advance money on—approved bills of exchange, and would, moreover, allow an acceptor, if necessary, to postpone meeting the bill when it fell due. This arrangement only applied to bills accepted before August 4th, and the Government undertook to make good any loss which the Bank might sustain in this connection.

Facilitating fresh business

This was but half the problem. Something had to be done to deal with the bills which would begin to fall due on September 4th, and on that very day the Government scheme was announced. It authorised the Bank of England and the joint-stock banks to find the money to meet the bills, charging interest on the money advanced at 2 per cent. above Bank Rate. The acceptors on their part had to undertake to collect, as soon as possible, the money from their clients and pay it over to the Bank, and within twelve months of the conclusion of the war they must repay everything. Any loss incurred would fall upon the nation, for the Government took this step "in order to facilitate fresh business and the movement of produce and merchandise from and to all parts of the world." This arrangement worked very





MODERN MEN-IN-ARMOUR: REVIVAL OF MEDIÆVAL MEANS OF DEFENCE.

British and French soldiers wearing helmets of specially hardened steel, fashioned to protect the head and eyes against shrapnel and shell splinters while fighting in the trenches. The smaller view is of French infantry wearing the new "calottes métallique," and taking temporary cover behind a hedge. As the war progressed there were advocates of a return to the practice of wearing breastplates and using shields.

Digitized by Google



AN INCIDENT OF THE FRENCH NATIONAL FÊTE DAY, JULY 14TH, 1915—WOUNDED HEROES ARRIVING AT A CELEBRATION CENTRE.

well, and did a good deal to restore normal business conditions in the money market.

As for the merchants and manufacturers, the ordinary traders of the country, they were unable, owing to the general suspension of credit, to obtain much of the money owing to them; but, on the other hand, they were protected by the moratorium, and for the time being they could not be sued for the money they owed.

This trouble, however, soon righted itself, as we have already explained, but some of them had a further difficulty, for they had sold goods to Germany and Austria-Hungary, and for these they would get nothing; at least, until the conclusion of the war.

The Government came to their rescue just as it had aided the holders of bills of exchange. It arranged that the banks should advance to such of their customers as were in difficulties owing to the non-arrival of remittances from abroad 50 per cent. of such debts as were approved by them. The trader would be responsible for the repayment of this loan, but if any loss resulted from it the State would bear 75 per cent. of it and the bank concerned the remaining 25 per cent. Some advantage was taken of this scheme, especially in Yorkshire, and it helped business to right itself.

Big difficulties surmounted

Before the end of 1914 our financial system had been restored. The big difficulties had been surmounted, and the machinery was working, not perhaps as smoothly as usual, but still it was working. The exchanges were operating, and debts, both home and foreign, were being paid. The gold in the Bank of England had steadily mounted up until it reached something like £70,000,000, a result partly due to the extended use of paper money, of which over £34,000,000 had been issued in £1 and 10s. notes. True there was not yet a free market in stocks and shares, and the balance of trade was being severely disturbed, while no debts could be collected from German and Austrian traders. Difficulties lay ahead, but by saving us from wholesale bankruptcy the Government had done something to atone for its inaction during the critical days before the war.

In 1915 fresh difficulties arose about the French and the Russian Exchanges, but these were soon set right. As regards France the conditions of the war after the first German advance compelled that country to buy largely in Great Britain, and the effect of these purchases was soon reflected in the Paris Exchange, which rose somewhat. In July, therefore, some London financiers agreed to steady it by taking over French bills to the extent of about £5,000,000.

Russia's heroic course

This meant that for some time, at least, France had no need to trouble about meeting these bills, and thus the transaction eased the situation.

Russia, too, soon owed this country a good deal of money for goods purchased here, and in the ordinary way would have met this by heavy shipments of wheat. But with Archangel frozen up and the Dardanelles closed this was impossible, and so Russia stood in much the same relation towards Great Britain as Great Britain towards the United States. Russia took the heroic course of paying her debts in gold, and £8,000,000 was shipped to London, but this was not enough. As in the case of France our financiers came to the rescue. They raised £10,000,000 on behalf of Russia by means of Treasury bills, this being practically a loan which relieved our ally of part of her obligations until the situation should take a more favourable turn.

Of more immediate interest to the general taxpayer was the actual financing of the Great War, and this big problem was anxiously considered by those responsible

Digitized by Google



CANADA'S ENTHUSIASTIC RESPONSE TO THE CALL OF THE MOTHERLAND.

Wonderful camera-record of the scene at Victoria, British Columbia, as one of the troopships laden with volunteers for the front was about to leave the docks on its long voyage to Europe.

Digitized by Google



[*Underwood & Underwood.*

MR. J. PIERPONT MORGAN.
Head of the American financial firm acting as British war agents in the United States. He was fired at and wounded by a German-American fanatic on July 3rd, 1915. His assailant committed suicide.

for our finances, and indeed by all men of business in the land. During the summer of 1915 the cost of carrying on operations by land and sea was £3,000,000 a day, and there was a prospect that it might rise to £4,000,000 a day and possibly more.

It may be well here to draw attention to the fact that this country made war on a much more expensive scale than did any other of the combatants. For £3,000,000 we did not get anything like the same amount of men and material as France, Germany, and Russia did, and this makes comparisons difficult if not impossible. For this there are several reasons. Our Army was a voluntary and not a conscript one, and this made it much more expensive. We paid separation allowances on a much more generous scale, and our workers received higher wages, which meant of course that it cost us much more to provide the food, clothing, and arms for our men, the ammunition for our guns, and the fodder for our horses. On the other hand, apart from the damage done by German battle-cruisers on our East Coast, no part of our land had been ravaged by the invader. France, Russia, and Austria, to say nothing of Belgium, had suffered enormous loss in this way, and even Germany, successful though she had been in keeping the fighting outside her own country, had a good deal of property in East Prussia destroyed.

Meeting the cost of the war

The cost of the war could only be met by borrowing on an enormous scale, and for this everyone was prepared. We anticipated a startling increase in our National Debt, which before the war amounted to £651,000,000. A certain proportion of the expense of the war could be met from taxation, and figures were quoted showing the amount raised in this way for our past wars, but in any case the few extra millions which could be obtained in this way would be only a drop in the ocean. Taxation was already at a very high level, and this made borrowing more necessary.

The first step towards financing the war was taken on Wednesday, August 5th, 1914, when Mr. Asquith asked the House of Commons for a vote of credit for £100,000,000. This proceeding, however, had nothing to do with finding the money, it merely authorised the Government to spend it. The spending began at the rate of about £1,000,000 a day, and, for the time being, this was provided by issuing Treasury bills. This meant simply that the Government borrowed the money for a fixed period, three or six months, from bankers and financiers. It was a temporary expedient. In November the House of Commons sanctioned a further vote of credit for £225,000,000.

On November 17th the country was given some idea of the financial position. Before the war, in May, 1914, the Chancellor of the Exchequer had presented his Budget for the year, showing that he expected to spend some £206,000,000 during the twelve months, and increasing the income-tax and death duties to make the revenue up to that amount. At this time, however, there was no thought of war, and so when this came he had to present a fresh balance-sheet. The dislocation of trade which was caused by the war, and the losses suffered by so many people, would certainly have the effect of reducing the revenue, while on the other side he had to add the cost of the war to the ordinary expenditure, which was already heavy enough. The cost of the war between August 4th, when it began, and March 31st, when the financial year ended—a period of eight months—he estimated at £328,443,000, and in addition he thought he should lose £11,128,000 of the revenue on which he had reckoned. Consequently, he had to find an extra sum of £339,571,000.

A fresh balance-sheet



[*Russell.*

LIEUT.-COLONEL LORD DERBY.
Commander of the King's (Liverpool Regiment) 1st Dockers' Battalion. The battalion, consisting of three hundred and fifty men, was inaugurated at Liverpool on April 12th, 1915.



[*Elliott & Fry.*

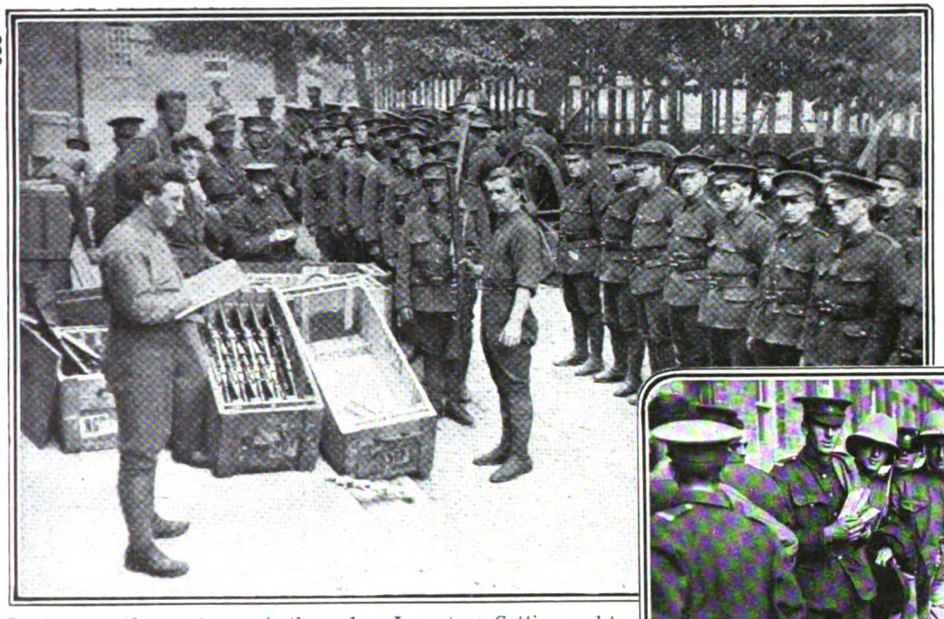
THE LATE LORD ROTHSCHILD.
Lord Rothschild, who died on March 31st, 1915, aged seventy-four, was in frequent consultation with Mr. Lloyd George and the Treasury officials, and helped greatly to preserve British financial stability in the critical days of August, 1914. He lent also his great support to the cause of the Red Cross.

A certain sum was raised by taxation. As from December 1st, 1914, the income-tax was doubled. This meant that for the year under consideration—April 1st, 1914, to March 31st, 1915—everyone would pay one-third more, and the demand notes were made out on those lines. The yield was expected to be £12,500,000 for the current year and £44,750,000 in a full year. In these figures the super-tax, which is really part of the income-tax, and which was also doubled, is included.

Other increased taxes were the duties on beer and tea. On beer an extra 17s. 3d. was charged on every barrel, this working out at a halfpenny on the half-pint, and on tea the duty was raised from 5d. to 8d. a pound. In these ways an extra £3,000,000 was raised for the expenses of the current year.

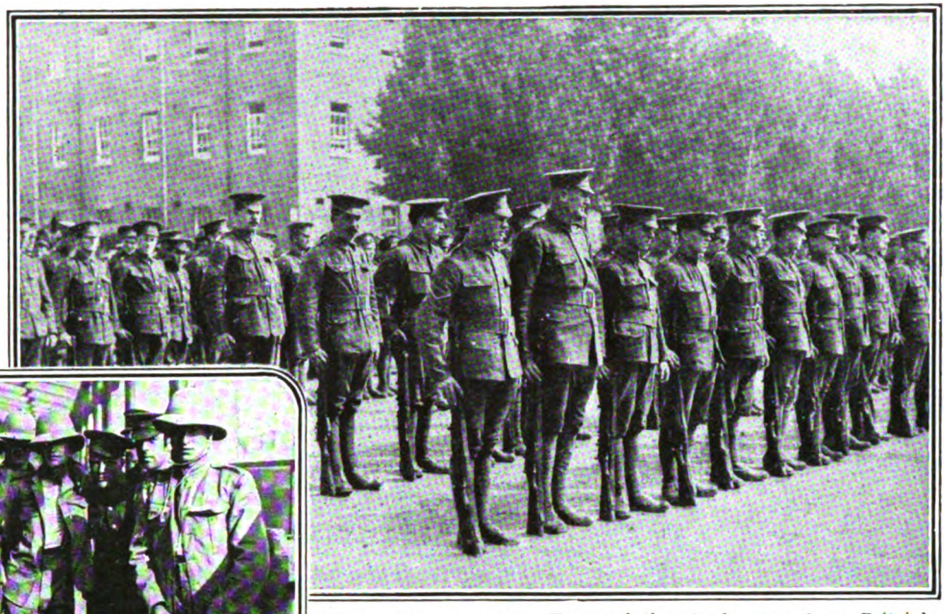
The sum of £15,500,000 was all that could be raised by fresh taxation, and so in one way or another £324,000,000

Digitized by Google



Serving out rifles to the men in the ranks. In centre: Getting used to foreign service kit.





An inspection parade. Types of the sturdy men from Britain's oldest colony.



Signalling staff of the Newfoundlanders training in England.



Section of ammunition column. Each waggon is drawn by four mules.

NEWFOUNDLANDERS FOR THE FRONT: SOME OF THE VOLUNTEERS FROM BRITAIN'S OLDEST COLONY.

Newfoundland sent a fine body of men to assist the Mother Country. They went into training in one of the home counties, where the King inspected them and spoke highly of their soldierly qualities.

Digitized by Google

had to be borrowed; £2,750,000 was taken from the money —the sinking fund—which is devoted to the repayment of the National Debt, for it was obviously rather silly to be paying off debt with one hand and borrowing more with the other; it was robbing Peter to pay Paul with a vengeance. The balance, it was decided, should be raised by a loan—by an appeal to the public.

Much thought was spent on the form which this loan should take. Borrowing, even for Governments, is not always an easy matter. The rate of interest must be fixed, and this was a difficult and anxious proceeding. If too little was offered the money would not be obtained; but, on the other hand, it would be wasteful to give more than was really necessary. The object of our financiers was to find the golden mean.

It was decided that the new loan should be for £350,000,000, and that the rate of interest should be 3½ per cent. For £100 of it investors were only asked to pay £95, so that actually the interest worked out at more than 3½ per cent. The usual advertisements were issued in the newspapers; the banks, insurance companies, and other financial institutions were asked to help, and when the subscription lists were closed the amount required had been obtained. A moment's reflection will show that the loan did not bring in £350,000,000 in cash, but 3,500,000 times £95, or £332,500,000. With this sum the Government could pay off the existing Treasury bills and carry on the war, they hoped, until the end of March. On March 1st the House of Commons authorised the Government to spend another £250,000,000, and with the end of the financial year people looked forward anxiously to the coming of another Budget statement.

The First War Loan

This was made on May 4th by Mr. Lloyd George. Dealing with the year which had just ended, the Chancellor said that the revenue had produced about £6,000,000 more than he anticipated, for it had reached £226,694,000. Unfortunately, the expenditure has also exceeded his estimate, having amounted to £560,474,000. Consequently, the amount added to our National Debt during the year was £333,780,000, or practically the amount raised by the loan in November. This had been spent, and more borrowing was inevitable.

Piling Ossa upon Pelion

Big as were the figures of the year 1914-15, those for the year 1915-16 were bigger still. In truth, they were staggering; nothing like them had been known in our history. The cost of the war, said Mr. George, had now grown to £2,100,000 a day, and although he did not



GENERAL BOTHA'S TRIUMPHANT RETURN TO CAPE TOWN.

General Botha had a most enthusiastic welcome on his return to Cape Town, on July 22nd, 1915, from his successful campaign in German **South-West** Africa. Above he is seen acknowledging the salute of the naval guard of honour. Mrs. Botha is standing to the right of her husband. At foot: Contingent of Union forces with native drivers, passing through Adderley Street, Cape Town, on their way to the City Hall.

Digitized by Google

then propose any additional taxation,* he hinted broadly that if the war continued something more must be obtained in this way.

When would the war end? The uncertainty on this point made it difficult for the Chancellor to present his estimates for the coming year, and so he took the unusual course of presenting two. In one he assumed that the war would be over by the end of September, in the other that it would last a full year more—that is, to March 31st, 1916.

In either case the revenue would not be seriously affected, and this Mr. George estimated at £270,332,000, of which £103,000,000 was to be drawn from the payers of income-tax. This was £43,638,000 more than was raised by taxation in the previous year. The difficulty was with the expenditure. If the war ended by September this would, the Chancellor thought, amount to £786,678,000, but if it continued through the financial year it would reach £1,132,654,000. If the war ended in September we had to borrow £516,346,000, if it continued until March we had to borrow £862,322,000.

Expenditure £3,000,000 a day

With that Mr. George sat down, and the question of financing the war was given a rest until June. On June 15th, 1915, Mr. Asquith asked for another vote of credit for £250,000,000, and in his speech he made some remarks on the financial position. He showed that the daily expenditure on the war had grown to £2,660,000, half a million more than Mr. George's estimate, and he added that "as our financial obligations to our Allies would not grow lighter, the total expenditure would be not much under £3,000,000 a day, and possibly might be more." He said that on June 14th the Government had £56,000,000 in hand, a sum which would carry on the war until the end of the month.

About the details of this expenditure we know very little, but something can be gleaned from Mr. Asquith's figures. During April, May, and June, 1915, the Army was costing rather more than £1,600,000 a day, the Navy just about £500,000 a day, and about £500,000 a day was being spent in other ways.

A loan of great magnitude was clearly impending, and the way for this had been cleared in January. It was then stated that, without the previous consent of the Treasury, no appeals for public money would be allowed, and to grant or withhold the necessary permission a small committee under Viscount, afterwards Earl, St. Aldwyn, was set up. This was, undoubtedly, a serious encroachment on individual rights, and in some sense a blow at business enterprise, but it was warranted by the special needs of the case. The Government would require for the purpose of the war every penny which the public could lend.

Particulars of the new loan were announced before the end of June, and these revealed several novel and interesting features. In the first place no definite sum was asked for. The Treasury had power to borrow up to £900,000,000, but it was stated that they would be satisfied with £600,000,000 or thereabouts. The interest payable was 4½ per cent., a liberal rate even bearing in mind the decline in our credit, but not too much, as events proved, to secure the sum desired. As usual the money could be paid all at once or in instalments between July 10th and October 26th, and the first half year's dividend was due on December 1st, 1915.

The Second War Loan

The question of keeping up the price of the new stock had evidently been carefully considered, and this was important. With the experiences of the past few years before them, with their capital dwindling steadily away, as had been the case with the holders of Consols and all other high-class securities, investors, it was known, would be very reluctant to face this risk again. They had been once bitten and were now twice shy.

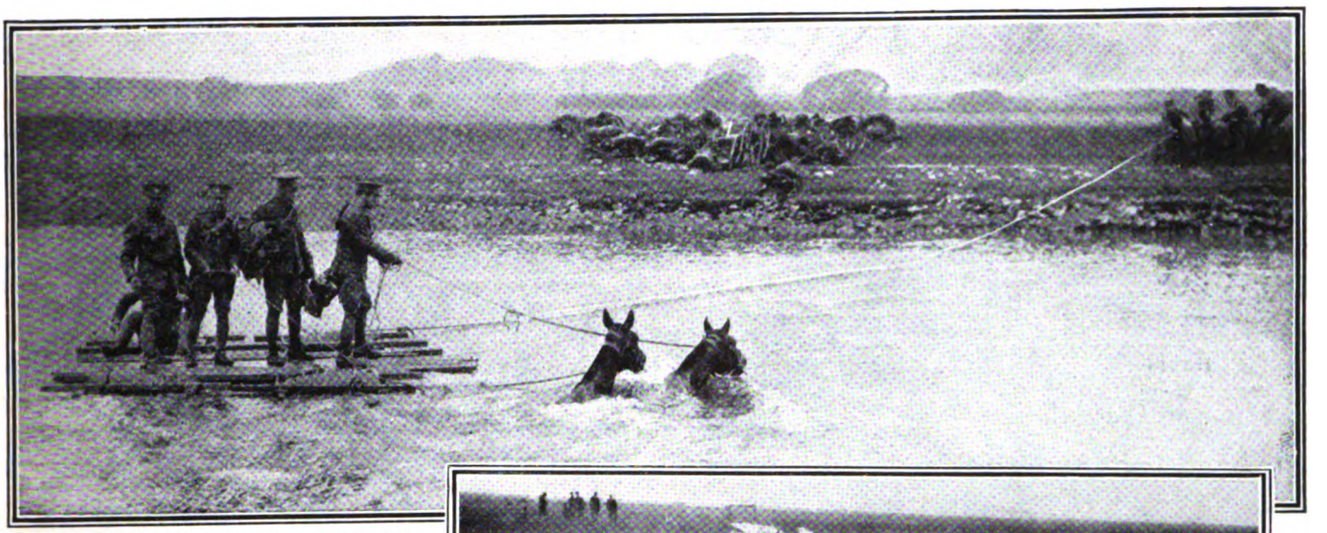
To get over the difficulty the Government undertook to repay the loan at par, to give back £100 for £100, and to do this between 1925 and 1945. As early as 1925 they have the right to repay, and in any case they must

* The extra taxes on beer and spirits proposed by Mr. George were quickly abandoned, so they need not be considered here.



IN RURAL FRANCE: RUSTIC GUARD AT A BOMBARDED VILLAGE LISTENING TO A NOTICE BEING READ OUT BY THE MAYOR.

Digitized by Google



Horses swimming across a stream guided by soldiers on a raft.



BRITISH YEOMANRY IN TRAINING.

Interesting sidelights on the training of a squadron of yeomanry in crossing rivers, and landing horses, guns, and equipment. Rafts were made with barrels and poles, while the horses swam over, either towed from rafts or guided by soldiers swimming with them in the water. The photograph immediately above shows the men loading a raft with rifles and equipment.

repay in 1945. With this guarantee it was hoped that the price of the stock would not fall much.

The same aim, the maintenance of the country's credit, dictated the conversion proposals which were associated with the loan. Holders of Consols and of the 3½ per cent. War Loan issued in November, 1914, were to be allowed to convert their holdings into the new loan. If the investor held the 3½ per cent. War Loan he must pay another £5 for every £100, and it then became a 4½ per cent. stock, but this was allowed only on the condition that he doubled his holding. It was a bait to get more money out of him. Similarly, Consols were to be exchanged at the price of 66⅔ for every £100 of the 2½ per cent. stock. Every £75 invested in Consols could be changed into £50 of the new loan, but here again only on the condition that another £50 was taken up. This had to be done before October 30th, 1915, and it was expected that £250,000,000 of Consols would be exchanged.

The really novel features of the loan were two. First, the investor was assured that if in future the Government found it necessary to borrow money at more than 4½ per cent. the money now invested would also receive a higher rate of interest—5, or whatever the new rate per cent. might be. This again was done to reassure investors, especially those who thought that by waiting they would get still more interest on their money.



WITH THE VOLUNTEER RESERVES IN ESSEX.

Men of the 11th Battalion Essex National Volunteer Reserve engaged in field operations. A "gassed" volunteer receiving treatment in the trenches.

The second and more important of the novel features of the loan was the appeal to the working classes. In every possible way—by Press and pamphlet, by politician, employers, and labour leaders—they were urged to put their savings, actual and prospective, into it, and for their special benefit bonds for £5 and £25 were on sale at all the post-offices, a discount of 8d. being allowed on every £5 invested in this way. But this was not all. Vouchers for 5s. and for multiples of 5s. were also sold, and on these interest at the rate of 5 per cent. was reckoned. In addition to the accumulated interest, the investor would receive a bonus of 1s. on every £5 when he exchanged his vouchers for bonds. When the vouchers reached £5, they could be exchanged for a bond, on which interest could be paid half-yearly in the usual way. The money invested in buying vouchers could be withdrawn in cash through the Post Office Savings Bank, a proviso which doubtless removed the dislike which many felt at locking up their money, and the bonds of £5 and £25 could be sold through the Post Office at a small cost. The amount which one person might obtain in this way was limited to £200.

Chances for small investors

To give the small investors a good chance, the Government did not at first put a limit of time to their applications as they did to those who wanted bigger amounts. As regards the applications for the bonds of £5 and £25, they reserved to themselves the right to close the lists at any time, and in July they stated that the scheme would be modified from the end of the month. This modification,

Digitized by Google

however, was not serious. The bonds could no longer be purchased through the Savings Banks, but could be bought at any money-order office until November 30th, 1915. Between December 1st and 15th the interest and bonus on these had to be collected, and the certificates exchanged for regular scrip of the War Loan. As before, no individual could obtain more than £200 of stock in this way.

As regards the vouchers for 5s. and multiples of 5s., it was stated that these would remain on sale until December 15th, and that between December 1st and 15th they must be exchanged for certificates of £5 and multiples of £5. It was also indicated that those who had vouchers totalling less than a complete £5 would be allowed further time in which to purchase the balance, and it was hinted that this method of investing in the War Loan might be continued after December 15th. Alternatively, purchasers of these fractions of £5 might have the money refunded to them by the Post Office. Arrangements were made for the sale of vouchers through the trade unions, friendly societies, and in factories and workshops, and for five months this machinery was to remain at work.

This "great national appeal to every class for a great national purpose," was a great success. On July 13th, 1915, Mr. McKenna announced the figures. Through the Bank of England 550,000 persons had applied for £570,000,000. This, of course, included all the big subscriptions, such as £21,000,000 each from Lloyd's and the London, City and Midland Banks, and enormous sums from the Prudential and other insurance corporations. Business men, however, all over the country, hastened to put their surplus funds into the loan, and among the earliest of these was the Amalgamated Press, Ltd., with £25,000. This sum of £570,000,000 did not include converted securities. It represented "new money," and established a record as being "far and away beyond any amount ever subscribed in the world's history."

A world record

As regards the small subscriptions, the list was still open and the money was still pouring in when Mr. McKenna spoke. He said, however, that up to the previous Saturday (July 10th), 547,000 persons had applied for £15,000,000 of the loan, but a week later Mr. Herbert Samuel stated that this figure had risen to £24,000,000 and did not include those who had applied for the 5s. vouchers.

This excellent result was largely due to the co-operation and loyalty of employers. Many of these—big and little firms alike—agreed to assist their employees to buy vouchers or bonds. This assistance took various forms, but the most usual was for the employer to advance the money for the purchase and for the employee to repay it by weekly or other instalments. The Post Office was empowered to make special arrangements in these cases, allowing the employer to pay for the loan by instalments, extending in some cases to as much as two years. A Parliamentary War Savings Committee was formed to encourage such schemes as these, and it was stated that its appeals met with a remarkable response. The people, so long merely recipients, took some part in finding the "silver bullets" so necessary for the successful prosecution of the Great War.

It was impossible for us, as Mr. Lloyd George said, to conduct this war on limited liability principles, and we had already lent £10,000,000 to Belgium, and a smaller sum to Serbia. In February, 1915, the Finance Ministers of the three Powers of the Entente met in Paris and agreed to unite their resources, and in June a similar arrangement was made with Italy. This did not mean, we were told, a joint loan, but it might mean a still more serious demand on the financial resources of this country.

Looking to the future

Our financial arrangements also provided for assistance to the Colonies, and in February £30,000,000 had been set aside for this purpose. This was a wise and economical precaution, and as the money will be repaid, not a serious liability, for it prevented the Colonies from making their own demands on the money market.

With the end of the war not in sight, prophecy, as George Eliot has reminded us, is the most gratuitous form of human error. We know, however, enough to say that we shall be fortunate if we finish it for £2,000,000,000, the interest on which will mean an annual charge of £90,000,000. The cost of war pensions will be hardly less than another £20,000,000 a year, and a similar sum at least, should be provided for the repayment of the debt. There is an extra £130,000,000 a year to be found, even supposing that the Army and Navy cost us no more than they did before the war, and that the revenue is maintained. Taxation at the high level of 1915 would not meet this.

We hope to come through the ordeal, but it will have been the ordeal of fire, and one of its results will be to alter entirely our ideas of taxation and expenditure. If it turns us back to the simple and forgotten virtue of economy we shall not have passed through it in vain.



LORD KITCHENER'S VISIT TO THE FRENCH FRONT.

In August, 1915, Lord Kitchener visited the Allied Armies at the front and had long interviews with General Joffre and M. Millerand. Our photograph shows the British War Minister and party on their way to review the French troops.

Digitized by Google



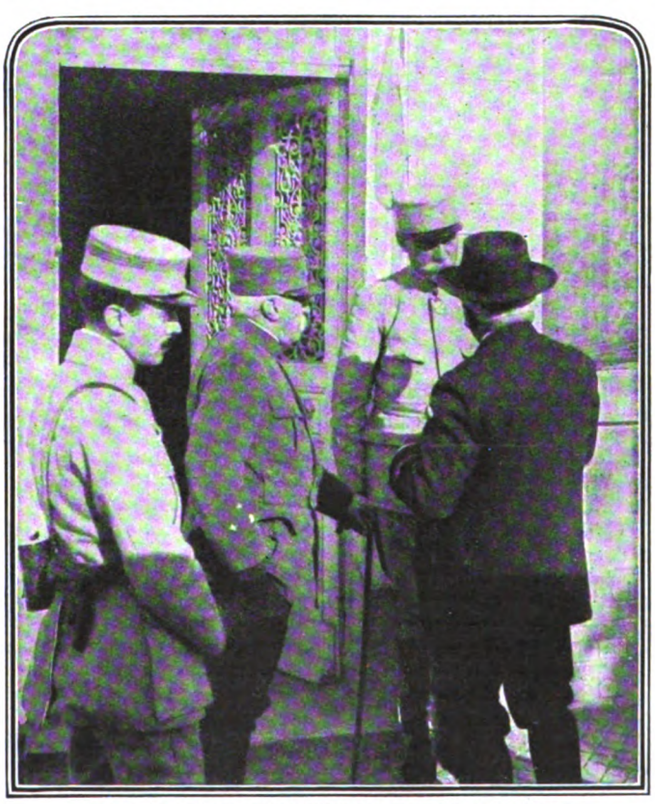
GENERAL BARBOT AND HIS CHASSEURS AT CARENCY.

CHAPTER LXXV.

THE FRENCH ADVANCE TOWARDS LENS AND THE BATTLE OF "THE LABYRINTH."

The Western Allies have to Relieve the Pressure on Russia—General Foch Undertakes the Difficult Operation—Attack Directed against the Weakest Part of German Front—First British Army Co-operates with Tenth French Army—Complexity and Subtlety of the General Plan—Battle of Notre Dame de Lorette—Hill Stormed by a Single Movement—Terrible Struggle in the Darkness over the Ruined Chapel—Capture of the White Way—How the French Gunners Won Carency Village—Subterranean Battles in Cellars and Tunnels—Ablain Enveloped from North and South—Captain Sievert's Diary of the Battle—Terrible Sufferings of the Enemy Troops—Fine Achievement by the Foreign Legion at the White Works—More Mole Warfare Thirty-three Feet below Neuville—Foch's Army is Checked by "The Labyrinth"—Extraordinary System of Defences Constructed by the Germans—Three Weeks' Struggle in the Underground Maze—Victory of the French Army—French Soldier Proves a Finer Fighter than the Boche.

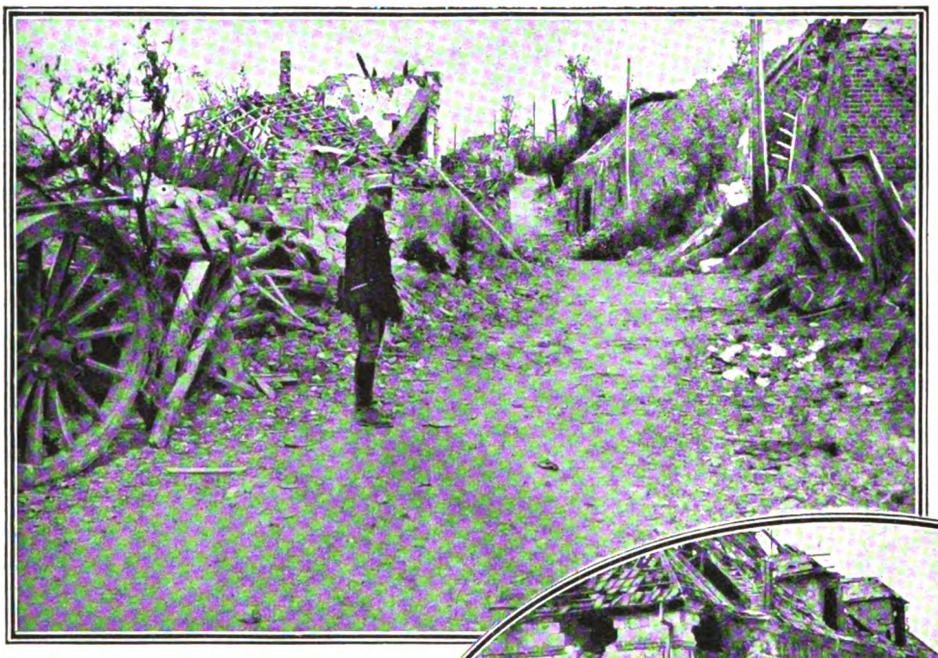
AT the time when we wrote the account of the Russian retreat from the Dunajec and Carpathian line, it was not advisable to state the chief reason of the disaster to our allies. The enemy was no doubt well acquainted with the temporary cause of the weakness of Russia, but it was thought best for all friendly historians of the war to refrain from discussing the matter. Russia had put most of her eggs in a single basket. More than half her fighting armies throughout the campaign had been supplied with smokeless powder and high-explosive shells from one great munition factory at Ochta, which is nearer to Petrograd than Woolwich is to London. Among the leading workers were men of German stock and brilliant talent, drawn from the German population of the Western Russian provinces. German Secret Service agents appear to have won over some of these men, and the result was that, at the critical hour in the history of Russia, all the works at Ochta were blown up by a series of tremendous explosions in the nitrating tanks, detonating the materials used for shell-filling. Petrograd shook as in an earthquake. Thousands of the trained workmen were killed, and nearly all the munition plant was destroyed. If Woolwich were entirely wiped out in a similar way by German agents, our country would not be crippled; for we have not centralised our manufactures of explosives. Russia was quite crippled. Most of her guns were put out of action, because they lacked both shells and charges, and even the supply of smokeless powder for the infantry seems to have run perilously short. Great siege-guns were being produced at the Putilof works, capable of coping with the largest pieces of ordnance made by Skoda and Krupp; but after the destruction of Ochta there was so extreme a dearth of ammunition that nothing could be done against the heavy artillery used by General von Mackensen.



THE FRENCH WAR MINISTER AT CARENCY.
M. Millerand chatting with General Alby (one of the French corps commanders) and General de Castelnau (commander of the Second French Army) at Carency.

Russia had therefore to fight for time, while her principal Allies came to her assistance by the circuitous Archangel route. In particular Britain and France had to give up all thought of a great spring offensive, to husband their stocks of

Digitized by Google



TOTTERING BRICKS AND ABANDONED BARRICADES.
The village of Villers au Bois, near Carency, after the Germans had been driven back.



A RESTAURANT NO MORE.
All that was left of the refreshment-room facing the railway-station after the French victory at Carency.

ammunition, and pour as much shell and smokeless powder into Russia as they could safely spare. The German whose designs were carried out in the destruction of the Ochta works certainly deserved the gratitude of his country, for it was by far the greatest stroke in the war. Besides directly crippling Russia, it checked the striking power of France and quite defeated the intentions of Lord Kitchener and Sir John French. As our two armies were holding only a small section of the line, it was more convenient to the general interests of the Allies that we should, instead of employing our increased forces, postpone the entry into action of our national armies, and bend our chief energies to the task of supplying Russia with the munitions which had suddenly become to her a matter of life or death.

Supplying Russia with munitions

Meanwhile the German lines in France and Flanders had to be very seriously menaced. There were two reasons for this. The Germans had to be prevented from weakening their western front to reinforce the troops under General Mackensen and General Linsingen. They had also to be convinced that they needed another half-million men in order to keep their lines in the west from breaking. The only way in which the German commander in France could be compelled to keep every man he had there, and call urgently for a large part of the newly-trained troops in Germany, was by the Allies severely pressing him. Therefore, a part of the great offensive movement by the Allies had to be undertaken, and pushed with much strength and much tenacity until the desired results were obtained.

General Joffre selected General Foch for this difficult and delicate operation. Had the grand offensive really been intended, it would not have consisted of a single assault against one sector of the German front. Two, three, or four widely-separated lines of advance would have been simultaneously assailed by very large massed bodies of allied troops, each backed by an overpowering concentration of light and heavy artillery. But this would have been too expensive a series of operations for what was really only a demonstration in great force. It would have been expensive in shells, especially at a time when Russia was almost broken for want of shells.

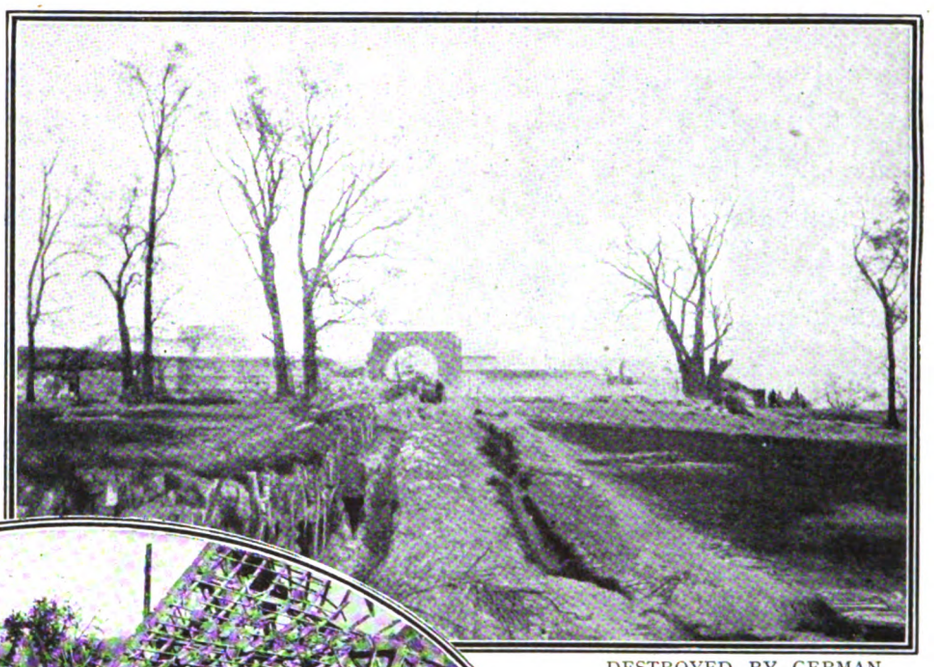
General Foch, therefore, could only select one comparatively small section of front. He chose the small lateral line between Lille and Arras, as being, in the eyes of the German commander, the chief danger-point on the German front. It was so situated that if a French army suddenly broke through, it could get on the main railway lines of communication some days before the German armies along the Aisne could withdraw with their guns. Moreover, immediately behind the German entrenchments north of Arras were the richest coal-mines in France, and the principal industrial region. The mines and industrial plant were quite as useful to the Germans as they would be to the French. So both strategically and economically the threat of a strong French advance on the Arras front was likely to make a very disturbing impression upon the Great German Staff. For this reason it was undertaken.

The advance on Arras

The movement began on the morning of Sunday, May 9th, 1915, by a concerted action between the Tenth French Army, under General Foch, with General d'Urbal and General Maud'huy, and the First British Army, under Sir Douglas Haig. We have already related at length the events of the series of attacks made by the First British Army between Armentières and La Bassée in the second, third, and fourth weeks in May. Our men's part in the affair was only of secondary importance, owing to their lack of high-explosive shells. In effect, they merely demonstrated vigorously against the left wing of the army,

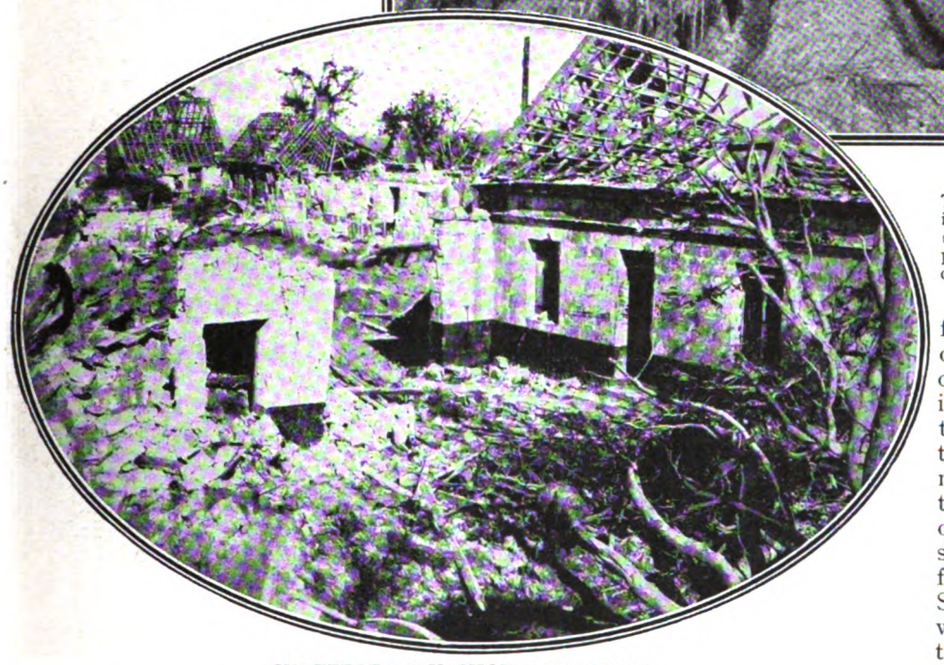
Digitized by Google

commanded by Prince Rupert of Bavaria. They forced this commander, by fiercely attacking his salient at Festubert, to concentrate strongly against them with both guns and men, when he was in dire need of more men and guns on his left wing, that covered Lens, Douai, and his main railway communications. We have already seen that Prince Rupert tried to relieve the British pressure against him by getting the Duke of Würtemberg to strike at Ypres. Our Second Army at Ypres had to fight against desperate odds, in order to allow the main strength of the Allies to be thrown against the German positions in front of Lens. Our men at Ypres wondered why they had not more heavy guns, and especially why they had not more shells.



DESTROYED BY GERMAN ARTILLERY.

The Farm d'Attiche, Carency, which was in the front of the battle-line and was destroyed by the German guns. Occupied by French troops, the position was defended by a network of trenches, as shown in the photograph.



SHATTERED BY SHOT AND SHELL.

A corner of Carency after its occupation by the French. The buildings were blown or shaken into fragments and the trees shorn of bark and foliage by the bombardment.

It could not be explained to them at the time, but the fact was that, by one of the most loyal and far-reaching schemes of military co-operation, Sir Herbert Plumer's troops at Ypres were fighting in May, 1915, both against Mackensen's Grand Phalanx in Galicia and against the Crown Prince of Bavaria's system of defences round Lens. It was the heroic powers of endurance of our half-asphyxiated, outgunned, and outnumbered men at Ypres that largely helped to repair the disaster at Ochta. Some of the shells that they needed so badly were being despatched in haste to Archangel, and some of their own guns that should have defended them were being used to put pressure upon Prince Rupert of Bavaria and compel him to insist upon hundreds of thousands of new German troops, already designated for the Russian front, being sent exactly to that section of the battle-line in France where General Foch wished them to be fixed.

An Ypres problem explained

All this complexity and subtlety of plan, in the minds of the high command of the western Allies, serves to bring out in the strongest possible light the old, everlasting, fundamental virtue of military obedience. The only man who can know everything in an army is the commander-in-chief. At times even his army generals, to say nothing of more subordinate officers, must work at the tasks assigned to them, inspired only by blind faith in the leadership of their chief. It may, for instance, be doubted whether Sir Herbert Plumer fully knew why he had to fight against terrible odds, at a time when his nation, which is one of the great industrial Powers of the world, had had nine months in which to organise and increase its military resources. Certainly some of Sir Herbert Plumer's officers, ignorant of the remote disaster which had entirely changed the general situation of the Allies, fought on amid their breaking lines, with something like despair for their country. Nevertheless, they stood to the task set them, and by their stoic courage achieved it. "Theirs but to do and die!"—to die without knowing why one is dying, when it seems as if one's death is due to a mistake on the part of the leaders of the nation. This faithfulness to death is that which constitutes, in the hours of extreme ordeal, the grand saving virtue of a people.

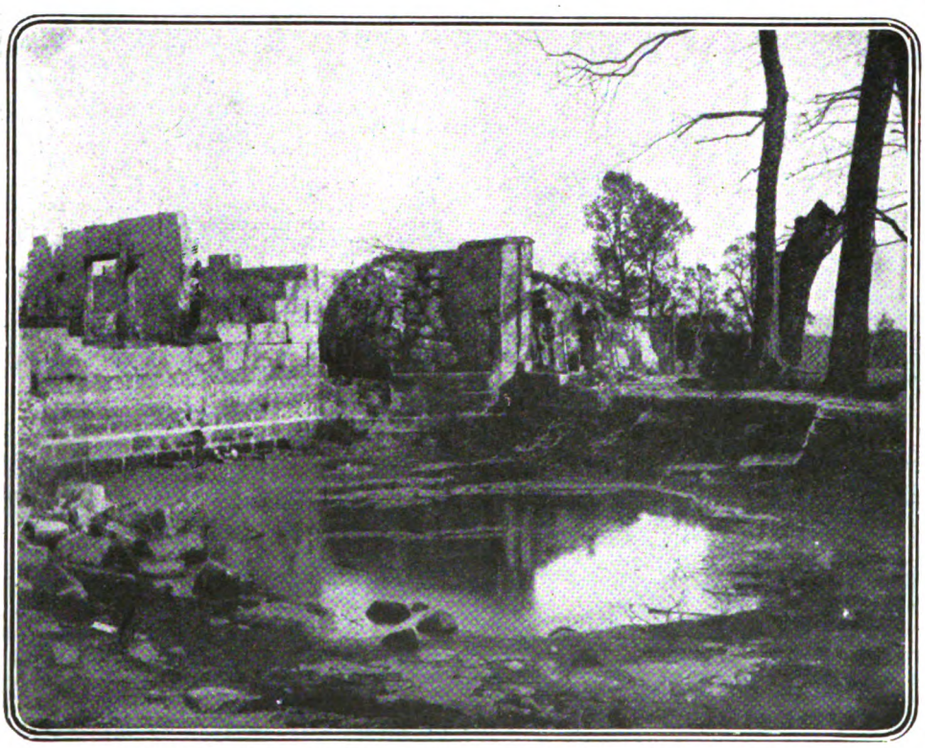
"Theirs but to do and die!"

The French troops, after their magnificent recovery at the Battles of the Marne and the Grande Couronne de Nancy, never again had to fight in such despair as overtook our soldiers in the middle of the spring campaign. When the effects of the disasters of Morhange and Charleroi were repaired, the Frenchman lived in such an atmosphere of transcendent faith in the virtue of his people that nothing could trouble him. To General Joffre, his commander, and to M. Millerand, his Minister of War, he gave a confidence that fully equalled that which his forefathers placed

Digitized by Google

in Napoleon after Austerlitz and Jena. The consequence was that the fighting power of the French soldier was increased twofold or threefold. He felt so absolutely sure of final victory that he was ready to die in battle before it was attained, knowing that by his death he would contribute to the salvation of his country. He knew that whatever happened to him, his life would not be wasted. It would be for ever one sound, solid building-stone in the new foundations of rejuvenated France.

This feeling was common. One French soldier, hearing of his wife's death, seemed strangely glad. A comrade asked him what was the matter. "My wife is dead," said he, "and my sister has adopted my little boy. Nothing whatever now attaches me to life, and if only I can make the Germans pay a good price for me before I go, I shall be quite happy." Not even the soldiers of the first Napoleon surpassed in courage the soldiers of Joffre. Frenchmen themselves remarked that the soul of Jeanne d'Arc seemed to have become incarnate in the four and a half million men arrayed for the salvation of France.



ANOTHER VIEW OF THE RUINED FARM D'ATTICHE, CARENCY.

The famous jest of the brilliant caricaturist Forain, showing the soldiers talking among themselves and saying, "Pourvu que les civils tiennent!"—"Provided the civilians do not falter!"—became one of the spiritual forces in the war. It did more to rally and invigorate French public opinion outside the trenches and the barracks than a series of most eloquent speeches by politicians could have done.

Stoic gravity of the French

The only element of weakness in the situation was the general expectation that the grand offensive movement in the spring would produce such results that no winter campaign would be necessary. The retreat of the Russians, therefore, was a grave disappointment, and the postponement of the action of the new large British armies increased the silent, stoic gravity of the French mind. Yet nothing could diminish the confidence of our allies in the ultimate victorious issue of the great struggle, and when General Foch prepared for the great demonstration at Lens he found as fine a body of troops under his command as a commander could wish for.

As the spear-point of his attack he employed Zouave and Chasseur regiments. Their superb qualities had been revealed by severe battle tests, but General Foch, a man of daring temperament, brigaded with these veteran troops large bodies of the youngest recruits in the French armies. Some of them were lads who in the ordinary course of events would not have been due to begin training until 1916; most of them were boys of the 1915 class, who had been rapidly trained since the outbreak of hostilities. According to ordinary military standards of judgment, these youngsters should have been the weakest element in the French forces.

Foch's superb spear-point

But General Foch knew his countrymen, and placed the boys with his very best troops, confident that the ecstasy of their patriotism, the vehemence of their youth, and the fine practical training they had received would make them as splendid a cutting edge in battle as were the older and more experienced men.

The task set the Tenth French Army was one of terrible difficulty. In the previous autumn campaign the Germans had occupied two ranges of hills in front of Lens. Where the hills sloped into the plain, north of Arras, they had constructed a gigantic fortification known as the Labyrinth. Along the outer rampart of hills beginning northward in a high spur, crowned by the little chapel of Notre Dame de Lorette, three or more lines of earthworks extended westward to the village of Ablain, and then swerved south-eastward to Carency. From Carency the German line ran to the hamlet of La Targette, four miles north of Arras, and then continued eastward through the village of Neuville St. Vaast, where they linked up with the Labyrinth. All this system of works, with its underground passages, armoured forts, and light artillery pits, was covered by the far-flung fire of hundreds of siege-howitzers, heavy field artillery, and naval guns, sited on and behind the second line of hills to the east running through the village of Vimy, below which, still farther eastward, extended the plain of the great French coal-fields.

In a bird's-eye view, such as the French airmen enjoyed in their continual voyages of reconnaissance, the German line formed a wedge of hills, the point of the wedge being Ablain. General Foch used three great striking forces against the point of the wedge. The first force struck out at the hill of Notre Dame de Lorette, the second force struck at Ablain, and the third force at Carency. At the same time an advance was made from the north against Lens, the scene of conflict being the village of Loos, and another advance was made southward against the town, the battlefield being La Targette and Neuville St. Vaast. In addition to all these movements a severe and persistent pressure was maintained along the entire front of the armies commanded by the Crown Prince of Bavaria from Armentières to Arras. Prince Rupert was never allowed to weaken one part of his front to strengthen another part. He had to leave his men in the positions in which they found themselves, until reinforcements arrived from the sweepings of the German army of occupation in Belgium, or from the depots in Germany. All the hostile front, from

Digitized by Google



Inspecting a shelter found just behind the trenches of the first line.



The French War Minister passing through the first-line trenches.



On the field of battle. M. Millerand having the details of the battle explained to him.





M. Millerand interested in the booty captured by the French at Carency: Machine-guns, cannon, rifles, etc. In front of the Minister is General Fayolle. Above: The French War Minister in the trenches with General de Castelnau and staff.

AFTER THE FRENCH VICTORY AT CARENCY: M. MILLERAND'S VISIT TO THE BATTLEFIELD.

Digitized by Google



FRENCH GRENADE-THROWERS IN ACTION IN THE CALONNE TRENCH.
The fighting on June 26th, 1915, at the Calonne trench was exceedingly violent, and developed into hand-to-hand conflicts. The Germans employed burning liquids, and under cover of clouds of smoke reached their old first line. They were repulsed with heavy losses.

Switzerland to the North Sea, was kept taut by the allied armies, while Foch's men drove in the great fortified hilly salient near Lens.

At each point of attack the battle opened at the same hour and in the same manner. On the morning of May 9th some thousands of French guns poured a hurricane of high-explosive shell into the German trenches. The artillery fire was especially concentrated on the Lorette spur; for as tnis rose some two hundred feet above most of the other hills, it was the main key to the general position. The Germans here had six lines of trenches, strengthened by concrete, and barred by two or three zones of barbed-wire. At every hundred yards the trenches were flanked by machine-gun redoubts. One of these redoubts, north-east of the chapel, was surrounded by a wolf-pit, lightly covered with turf, with bayonets stuck at the bottom, to catch those who fell in. During the bombardment the garrison retired into underground caverns, thirty-three feet below the surface, while a couple of officers remained with periscopes behind the visible parapets, waiting for the bombardment to cease, and watching for the advance of the French infantry.

On the Lorette spur

The redoubts were also connected, by underground telephone wires, with batteries of field-guns, some of which at Ablain swept the hill on the south, while others at Souchez were able to get a flanking shrapnel fire on any hostile force advancing up the eastern slopes. There was also an enormous concentration of heavy German artillery north-east of the hill, at Angres and Lievin, which would cover every part of the height by means of direct or indirect fire.

A division of Baden troops garrisoned the Lorette height, and the divisional general was promised reinforcements in two days. Against him came a single French division of both old and young troops, each man of it being well aware that he was going to his death, and being sternly joyful about it. The French commander waited until the attack on the Aubers ridge by the First British Army occupied the entire attention of the Prince of Bavaria. Then at ten o'clock in the morning the French gunners lengthened their range, and under cover of their fire all the first French line clambered over their parapets and charged. The French field-guns had done their work well. All the enemy's wire entanglements were destroyed. Moreover, the heavier shells had broken down all the trenches, and the three German lines were captured in a single movement of advance by the first French line. The men bombed their way into the remaining machine-gun redoubts, until they were held up by the series of rear-posts behind the enemy's centre high on the slope of the hill.

The victorious troops spent the night in rebuilding the German lines they had captured, while the sky was lighted by a continuous bombardment of the position by the enemy's distant heavy batteries. In the morning of May 10th the first French line was about to leap out again and try to capture the crowning entrenchments round the chapel, when an order came from General Foch for the men to lie down and get as much cover as they could. A reconnoitring French airman had seen a grand German counter-attack preparing round the sugar factory at Souchez. As the great column advanced, the heavy German guns deluged the hill with high-explosive shell, which would have swept away the French infantry had it been exposed. But owing to the quickness of eye of the airman, it was the counter-attacking column that got caught in the open by the French guns. As it withdrew under a torrent of shrapnel, the French infantrymen made

Digitized by Google

their charge and captured another line of trenches. Some of the younger troops attacking the hill from the south exceeded their orders.

Seized with the lust of battle they took the trench, but instead of occupying it they turned aside into a ravine running towards Ablain, and killed or captured the German company which formed the garrison. The young adventurers ought to have been then cut off by the enemy's counter-attack, but this expected hostile movement did not take place. The column had fallen back on Souchez in such a condition that it could not move out again. On the other hand, no progress could be made against the flat hill-top round the chapel. The fortress there was so well supported by the German guns at Angres that each assaulting line was swept back. It was seen that more ground would have to be cleared round the dominating height before the decisive assault could be made. In the night the advanced line of troops was reinforced, and the next day the enemy was driven back from the southern buttresses. Then in a fierce night attack, in which the French advanced by rushes from one shell-hole to another shell-hole, the spur commanding Ablain was won.

By this time the attacking division had been sadly reduced in numbers, but the men fought on in scattered bodies, crouching in the large pits in the hill-side made by the great high-explosive shells. In the communication trenches the conflict went on continuously with hand-grenades and bayonets. But the bayonets were found to be too long and awkward for use in the narrow trenches, and the Frenchmen found the knife was handier. Happily, their Army Ordnance Corps was equal to the occasion, and the Tenth Army discarded its rifles and bayonets and did most of its work with automatic pistols and hand-grenades. The rifles were brought up for use with machine-guns, when the enemy's trenches had been entirely captured and rebuilt and garrisoned against the counter-attack. And even then the pistol and knife were kept at hand for trench fighting.



A CASE OF EMERGENCY IN THE TRENCHES.
French officer, suddenly overcome, apparently by long kneeling in the trenches, being massaged by his orderly under fire.

In spite of the sweeping fire from the Angres batteries, the advanced troops on Lorette Hill were well fed by their heroic cooks, and supplied with cigarettes; and when the reinforcements arrived the final attack was made in darkness on the night of May 12th. The French troops crept out of their holes and sheltered from the enemy's distant guns by snuggling against the breastwork of the hill-top. Three inches above their heads were the barrels of the German machine-guns, but as these opened fire on the advancing lines of the French supporting companies, the advanced troops pulled down the German sand-bags and, getting their bodies half over the breastwork, shot down the German machine-gun officers. While this extraordinary combat was proceeding, the line of supports won a respite from the stream of bullets, and reached the barricade in turn and clambered over. Then in the interior of the fortress, in black darkness lighted only by passing shells, there was a long and terrible hand-to-hand fight. The French bore the Germans back across the levelled walls of the chapel, over all sorts of cellars, bomb-proof shelters, and shell-holes, and when day broke the battle-line was about five hundred feet east of the ruins, and the enemy was clinging on to the last spur.

Terrible hand-to-hand fighting

But as daylight broadened the French advance was entirely checked; for the German gunners became aware of the situation, and swept all the lost ground on the hill with such a tempest of fire that the victorious troops had to dig out shelters and make communication trenches as best they could, in order to survive. The position the Frenchmen occupied had an outline in the shape of a

Digitized by Google



REMARKABLE CAMERA-PICTURE OF A BRILLIANT CHARGE BY A REGIMENT OF FRENCH ZOUAVES.
Section of Zouaves charging German trenches on the plateau of Touvent, in the region between the Oise and the Aisne. The men, "their bayonets flashing in the sun," to quote the official record, dashed forward over nearly two hundred yards of the enemy's trenches, the whole line advancing, as it were, with one movement. The enemy was overwhelmed, and had very heavy losses in men and guns.

spoon. The works round the chapel were the ladle from which the handle extended in the form of communication trenches. The Germans had laid great dynamite mines under the fortress, but happily the electric leads had been exposed by the ploughing shells during the French bombardment. The French troops were able to discover and cut the leads, but though they managed to escape being blown up their condition was terrible.

First the German infantry counter-attacked from three sides, and when these attacks were driven off, every German gun and howitzer in a semicircle of twelve miles worked at high pressure for five days and five nights. Many Frenchmen died; not only was the original attacking force wiped out by the huge high-explosive shells, but successive reinforcements were blown to bits, buried, suffocated, or mangled.

Five days of slaughter

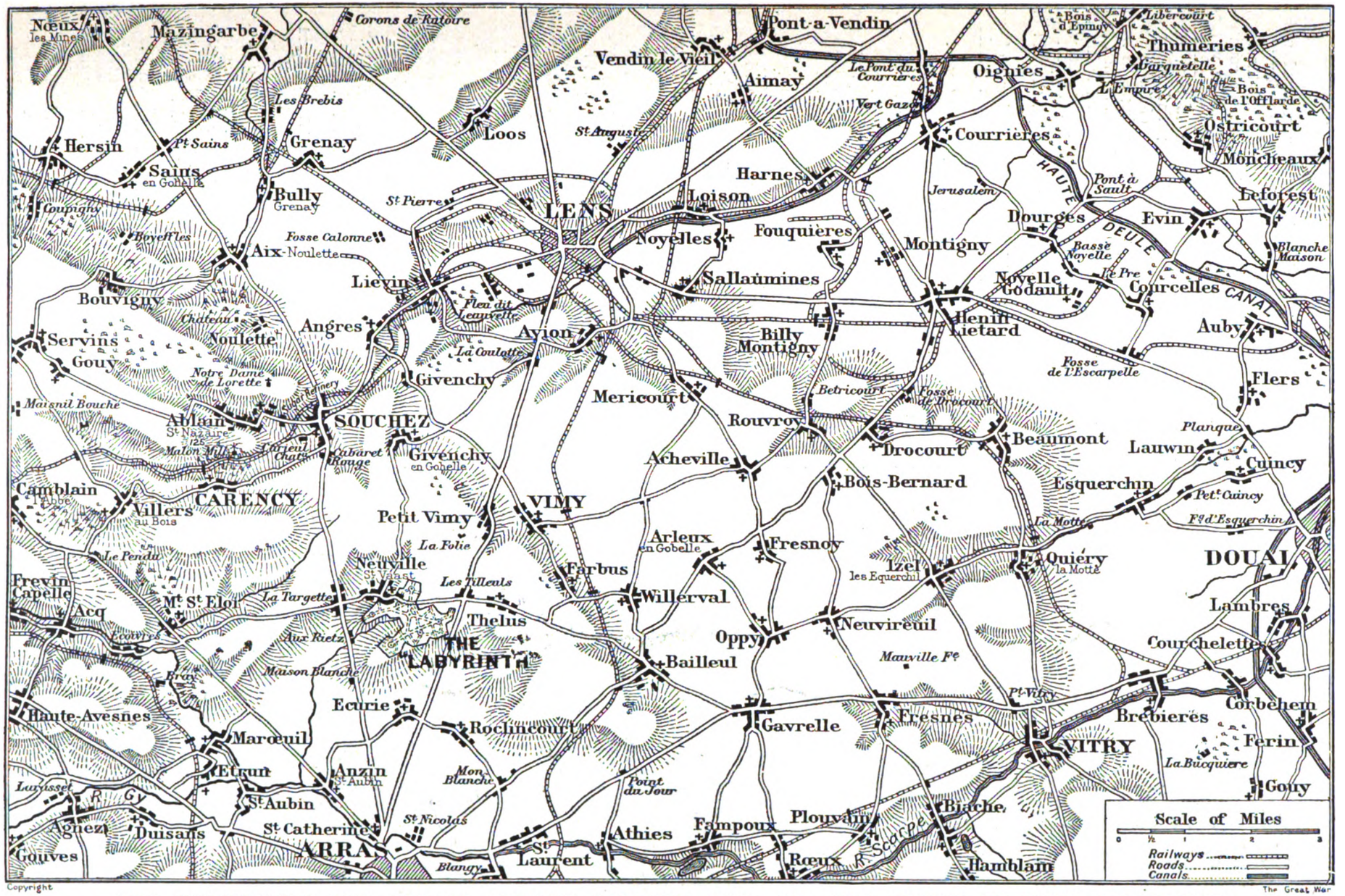
At intervals the German infantry, occupying a position on the slopes known as the White Way, stormed up to see if all power of resistance had been destroyed. But there were always Frenchmen round the vanished chapel waiting to receive them. Meanwhile the French sappers channelled and tunnelled the hill amid the falling shells, and by May 17th all the conquered positions were linked together, and the work of munitioning and victualling the troops was facilitated. For four more days the refortification of the height continued, and then on May 21st the German trenches on the White Way spur were attacked from three sides.

The northerly attack was a fine piece of combined artillery and infantry work. The infantry charged while their guns were still working furiously, and then stopped a few yards from the zone of fire and signalled, by means of a flag, to their gunners to lengthen the range just another few yards. Some of the men were hurt by their own shells, but so close was the infantry charge to the supporting shell fire that the trenches were carried in a fraction of a minute with scarcely any loss.

French victory of Lorette

At the same time the southern attack, also following very closely upon the French zone of shell fire, cut the communications of the garrison troops in the White Way, while the middle attack drove into the central German trench. All the survivors of the garrison not only surrendered but flung down their arms and ran with uplifted hands towards the French position, in order to escape from the fire of their own artillery. This concluded the French victory of Lorette, in which, after a struggle of thirteen days, one of the most important positions on the German front was captured at a loss of at least a division of enemy troops.

Digitized by Google



MAP ILLUSTRATING THE FRENCH ADVANCE TOWARDS LENS AND THE BATTLE OF "THE LABYRINTH."

The advance on the Arras front began on the morning of May 9th, 1915, by a concerted action between the Tenth French Army, under General Foch, with General d'Urbal and General Maud'huy, and the First British Army, under Sir Douglas Haig. The movement ended in a decisive victory in "The Labyrinth," an intricate system of underground defences constructed by the Germans, on June 19th.

Digitized by Google



EASTERN SLOPE OF THE SOUCHEZ SPUR. LEFT TO RIGHT: SOUCHEZ, CHATEAU CARLEUL, AND SOUCHEZ SUGAR REFINERY.
Scene of some of the most awful fighting in the Great War. The sugar factory was taken and retaken many times, and the struggle went on for months without decisive result on either side. The moats of the Chateau Carleul, filled with water, served as a base for the enemy's defences.

More than three hundred dead Germans were found on the hill. A thousand were taken prisoners, and a few pieces of artillery and scores of machine-guns and bomb-throwers. Thousands of other Germans were killed in the counter-attack between Lorette Hill and Souchez. The victors of the struggle were dreadful to look at as they came from the trenches. Their uniforms were torn to rags, their entire bodies were covered with blood; and many of them were dazed by the blast and fumes of the German shells. Day and night they had been slipping with hand and foot in their trenches over indescribable things that had once been men. In some places the shattered bodies of their comrades and foes lay four deep. Hollow-eyed were the victors, and their jaws often trembled; but they were content; they had won, and they had kept, the Hill of Our Lady of Loretto.

Importance of Ablain

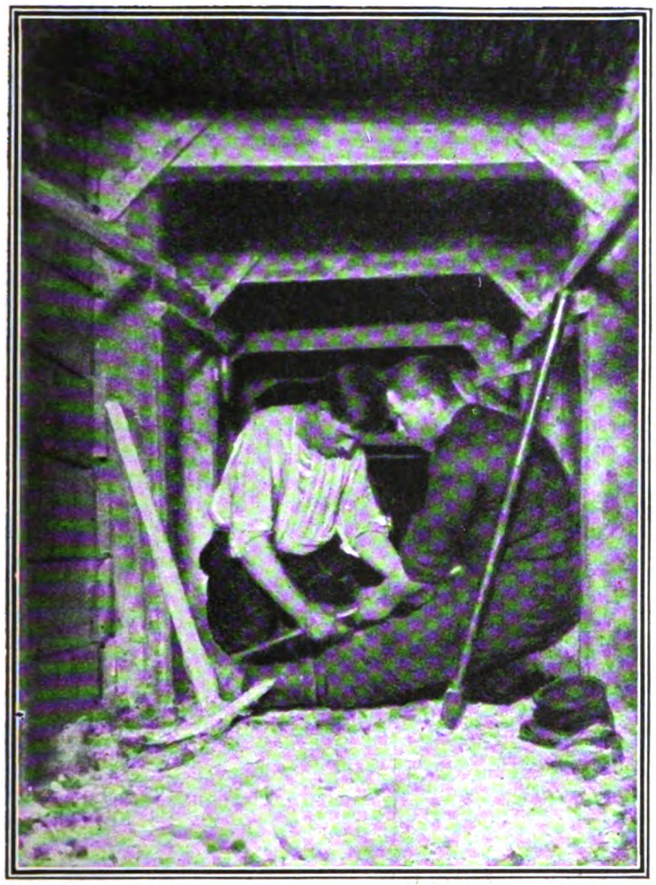
Not until the fortress of Lorette was in the hands of our allies was the capture of the village of Ablain possible; for Ablain was a low-lying, double row of peasants' and working people's houses, extending more than a mile, in the valley road running from Souchez towards Servin. The straggling village was dominated by the height of Lorette on the north and by Carency Hill on the south. To add to the difficulty of the attacking army, all the slopes on either side were covered with fruit trees or forest trees, and under this screen of foliage the enemy was able to manœuvre troops, machine-guns, and light artillery, and the reinforcements sent up from Souchez. The German engineers had left nothing to chance, but had driven long, narrow, deep communication trenches to Souchez and Givenchy en Gohelle, down which troops could pass to the firing-line at Ablain and the neighbouring points without being exposed to shrapnel fire. From the fan-shaped sloping position at Ablain the Germans commanded the main road from Arras to Bethune.

The position was therefore one of great importance and, as it was the extreme point of the German wedge, it was fortified with an extraordinary amount of labour. Every house was connected by underground passages, and linked by means of deep communication saps with the wooded spurs north and south. All the winter the attacking army at this point had rested in the low-lying westward plain, where the trenches were very watery. But in March, 1915, when the Germans were weakened by the need for reinforcements in Champagne and at Neuve Chapelle, the French infantry of the line had, by a surprise attack, won some of the drier ground together with some of the foremost houses of the village. And there they remained quietly for two months, while the distant German howitzers conducted a regular bombardment against them. Their sappers, however, dug out deep shelters for them, and after beating back several counter-attacks, they lived on fairly peaceably, in spite of the interest which the German artillerymen took in them.

Village destroyed by shell

But on the morning of May 9th their gunners at last gave them the help they needed. Every house in the long village was destroyed by high-explosive shell, some 20,000 rounds being used for this purpose. At the same time the enemy's wire entanglements were shattered by the new weapon of trench warfare in which the French Army had specialised. It was a little quick-firing cannon, made on the revolver principle. Its small, powerful shells swept away the barbed-wire obstacles, and while the heavier guns were still playing on the eastern end of the village, the French infantry leaped from their trenches and took a considerable number of the houses. They did not however advance very far, as they would have been enfiladed both from Lorette Hill and from Carency Hill, while the German siege-guns at Vimy, directly in front of them, would have battered them to pieces. Ablain did not fall until it could be encircled by the conquerors of Carency and Lorette. As a matter of fact, the village

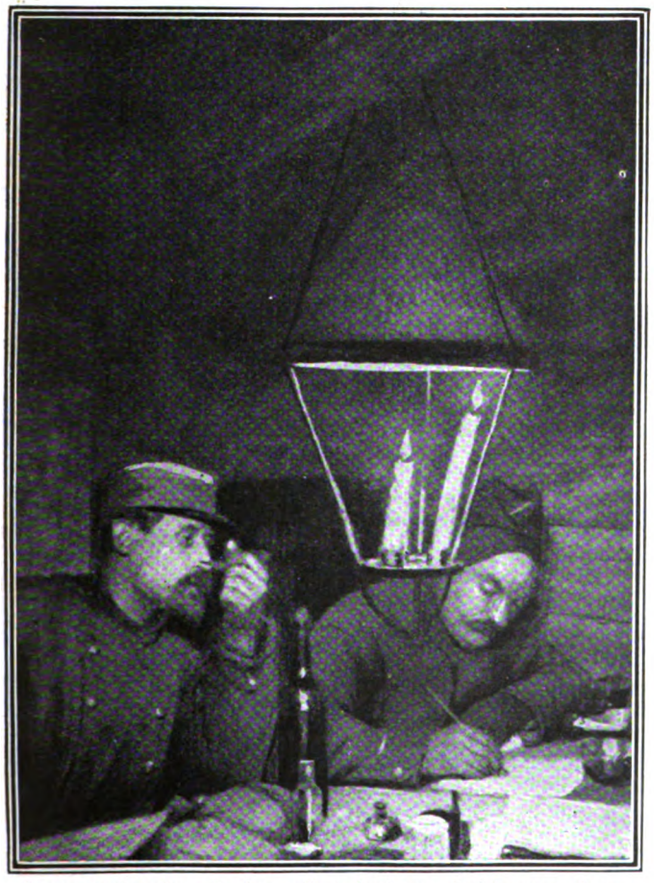
Digitized by Google



Boring operations in an underground mine—"somewhere in France."



French sappers at work underground: The making of a half-gallery.



In a control station: Engineer officers in charge of mining operations.



Commencement of a mine: Gallery entrance at the bottom of a firing-trench.

MINE WARFARE: METHOD OF AVOIDING "STALEMATE" BETWEEN RIVAL TRENCHES.

By force of circumstances, trench warfare led to mine warfare, which was adopted with a view to making a breach in the enemy's lines and abruptly destroying his flanking dispositions at the moment of attack.

Digitized by Google

was won on May 12th by the French guns. Using incendiary shells they set on fire every ruined cottage in which the Germans were sheltering, and left the infantry the task of collecting the spoil and the day's prisoners and occupying the conquered ground.

Ablain was only an episode between the grand event of Lorette and the grand event of Carency. The capture of Carency was a very arduous affair. The village lay in a hollow, which was dominated by a wooded hill. The houses formed five groups, one in the centre, and the other four admirably placed for defence on the north, west, south, and east. Each group of walled buildings had been transformed by the enemy's sappers into a modern fortress. The shattered brickwork was merely used as bullet-proof shelters for machine-guns. A single man watched with a periscope for a movement by the French troops. The garrison of machine-gun men, grenade-throwers, and sharpshooters lived far underground at a depth no howitzer shell could penetrate. Tunnels and deep, narrow saps enabled the garrison to be relieved for a furlough at Lens or Lille, and kept well supplied with food and ammunition.



DIED ON THE FIELD OF HONOUR.
French soldiers conveying the bodies of two officers to their last resting-place.

On the hill above them were light field-guns, tubes for firing aerial torpedoes, and hundreds of machine-guns. Other guns were hidden in the surrounding orchards, and also many useful field-howitzers, all the batteries being connected with observation stations on the hill-top. Then in front of this formidable and almost invisible system of fortifications were four lines of trenches, strongly garrisoned by troops, who moved in and out through tunnels.

Mine warfare at Carency

The French were in as sorry a position before Carency as they were before Ablain. They were in the Artois plain, and the water from the hills drained into their trenches, where they often stood with the mud up to their middles. They had tried to win a footing on the high ground on December 18th, 1914, but as they advanced against the village from the north and west, they were stopped by machine-gun fire, and though they charged again on December 27th they were again mowed down and forced to retire. For some months afterwards the fighting was conducted by means of mine shafts and mining saps; but in spite of the underground struggles which occurred, no damage whatever was done to the enemy's position. On the contrary, this position was continually strengthened, especially after the success of the British hurricane bombardment attack at Neuve Chapelle. Neuve Chapelle was the dearest local victory in the Great War. It so alarmed the German Commander-in Chief that he reorganised entirely his system of defences, at a cost of many millions of pounds, and the labour of tens of thousands of men, he constructed a modern "Gibraltar" all along his front. We taught the German that he had made a mistake, but we did not ask a sufficient price for our lesson. So he was able to set his lines thoroughly in order before we and our allies seriously attempted to break through.

A modern "Gibraltar"

General Foch, however, with his subordinate commanders, Generals d'Urbal and Maud'huy, was fairly well aware of the enormous improvement in the German defence works. Every yard of the line had been photographed by French airmen, and the combined films had been studied by the French Staff and measured to scale with the utmost exactitude by the French gunners. Some millions of shells had then been accumulated by the French batteries. These batteries were strengthened by a collection of heavy howitzers from other sections of the front, some of our gunners coming to Carency to increase the tempest of high-explosive shell. According to the German official report, one of our Indian divisions was also attached to the Tenth French Army, and took part in the battle in the northern section of the line of advance from Vermelles towards Loos.

Our gunners were full of admiration for French artillery tactics. According to our men, the French artillerymen were more cold-blooded, scientific, and effective than our artillery generals allowed our battery officers to be. It will be remembered that at Neuve Chapelle some of our war correspondents complained that our infantry had, on one occasion, suffered from our shell fire. The uninformed popular opinion of this country thought that the accidental slaughter of Britons by British guns was a fearful sign of incompetence. What the German practice in the matter is remains uncertain, but the French practice is to clear the way for an infantry charge by a narrow and intense zone of shell fire extending from a point only a few yards ahead of the assaulting line.

Sometimes a hundred or fewer Frenchmen were killed and wounded by their own guns. But the sufferings of the infantry in this respect were more than repaid by the devastating clearance made immediately in front of them by the extraordinarily close fire of their artillery. Our artillery were so afraid of hurting their own countrymen that they did not maintain the shell fire to the very last instant of the infantry shock. The result is that we saved a score of men from our own guns, and then lost five thousand men in the German lines, because the interval between our bombardment and our infantry attack enabled the enemy to recover. The tactics of the French gunners seemed cruel, for they killed more of their own men than

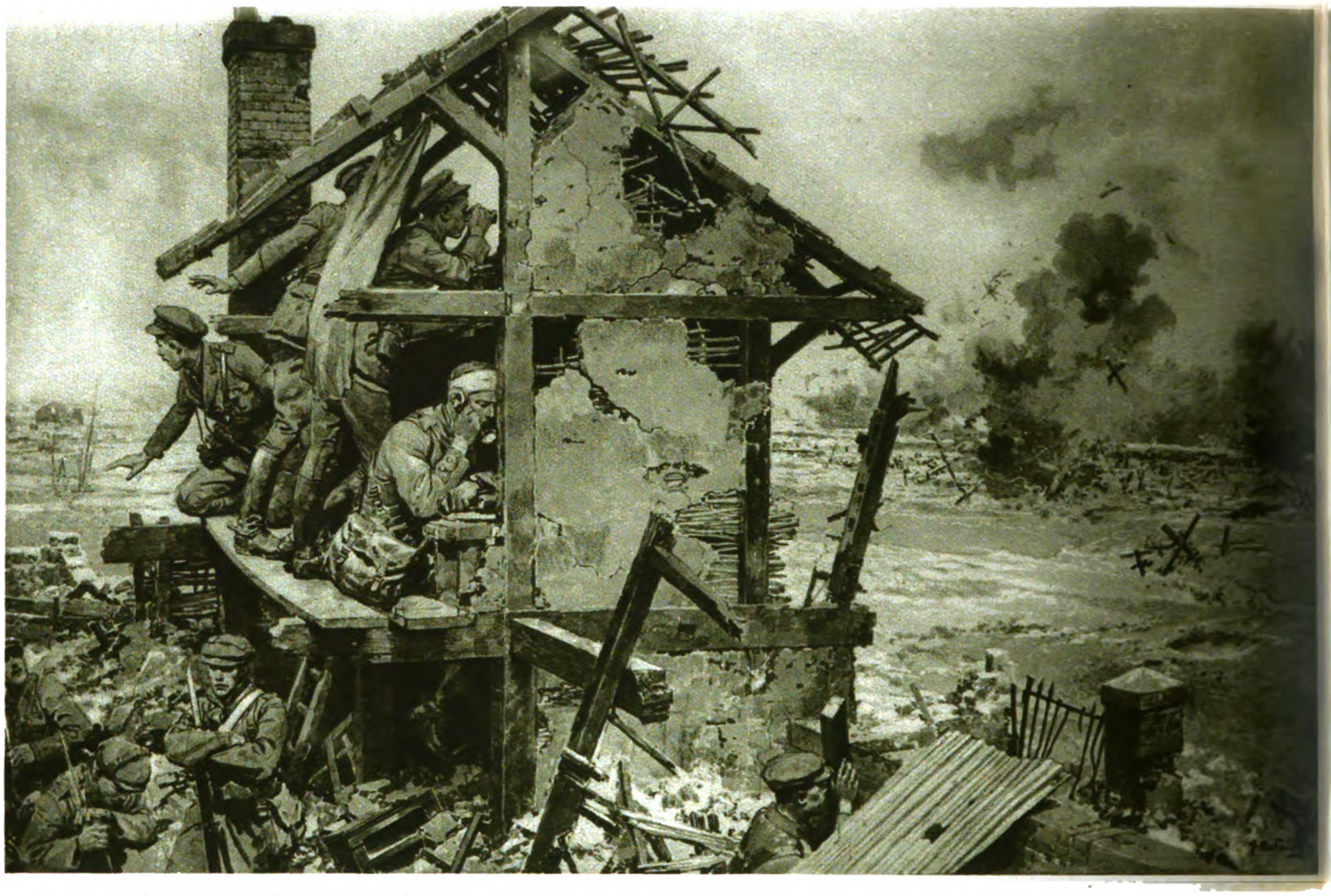
Digitized by Google



General Sir Bruce M. Hamilton, K.C.B., commanding the Sixth Army.

[Lafayette.

Digitized by Google



Watching effect of British gun fire from a sand-bagged ruin near the German line.



Relief party advancing along "Regent Street," in Ploegsteert Wood, near Ypres.

Digitized by Google



R.A.M.C. orderlies giving first-aid to the wounded after a successful advance



An interlude in the Ypres salient: British officers at "afternoon tea."

Digitized by Google



After the French victory at Carency: Shattered German trench on Hill 125, with ruins of the village in the background.

Digitized by Google

we did, but for every French life they wasted they saved a thousand French lives during the struggle in the German trenches.

It may also be worth while to point out in this connection that the French gunners still wanted their infantry to wear very bright red trousers. They regarded the khaki of the British soldier and the field-grey uniform of the German soldier as enormous mistakes. It was a fierce old French artillery general who stoutly stood out for the retention of the old-fashioned uniform of the French infantryman, and there can be little doubt that a year's experience of modern Continental European warfare demonstrated the far-sighted wisdom of his views. Invisible colours are useful for mere sharpshooters. Wellington dressed his sharpshooters in green during the Peninsular War to enable them to creep over grass and among trees without being seen; but he kept the British infantry of the line in the brightest red, and it looks as though there would be fewer British casualties to-day if our soldiers were dressed in red.

Was khaki a mistake?

For when the infantry charges, wave after wave in close or extended order, they usually meet with no opposition. As a matter of course, they have behind them a great and overpowering mass of artillery, which is shattering the enemy's trenches and turning it into a line of volcanic flames and deadly lyddite fumes. It is very rare that even the bravest of hostile machine-gun officers will stand up and work his gun when the opposing artillery is fully at work. Often our men were able to leave their trenches and charge the enemy without being shot at, while their massed guns were working. It did not matter if they were clad in khaki or in bright red. The arch of hell fire over their heads protected them. But when at last the infantry charged, the colour of their clothes became a matter of the highest importance to their own gunners. If the colour was khaki, the gunners soon lost sight of them, and had to leave them a large zone to fight in, and rely on telephone messages and signals for the further direction of their fire. But if the charging infantry had a bright uniform, as the French troops had, their artillerymen, working light field-guns fairly close to the line of combat, could see with their own eyes the position of their own infantry, and then place their shells twenty yards or so in front of them during the entire movement of advance.



THE CAMERA IN RUINED CARENCY.

Striking photograph, taken through a hole in a wall, of a street in Carency after the village was retaken by the French.

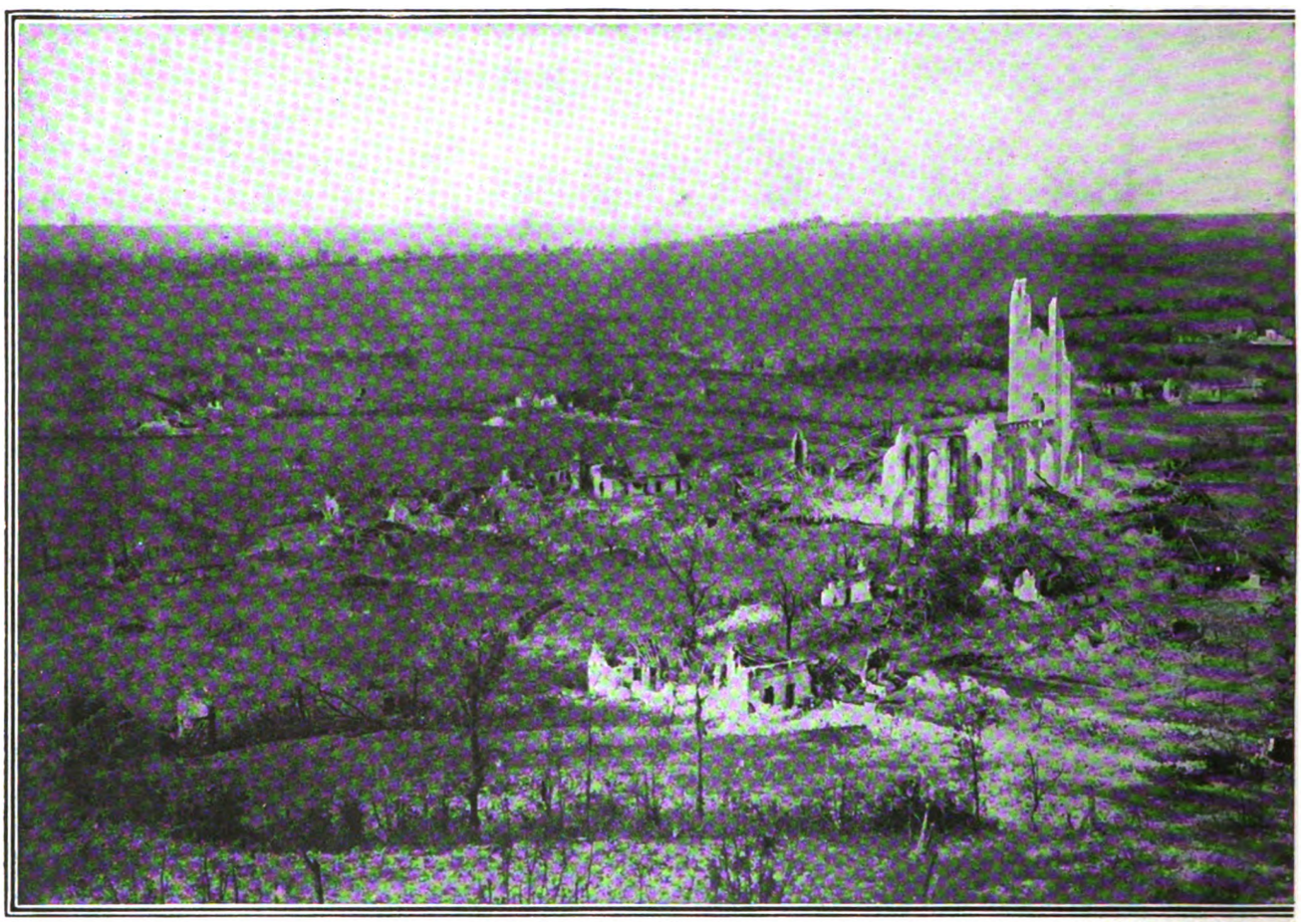
This is what happened in the Battle of Carency. The overwhelming preliminary bombardment was conducted in the usual manner for a space of three hours on the morning of May 9th. The new trench cannon broke down the wire entanglements and the parapets of the German entrenchments, while the heavy howitzer shells crashed into the fortified houses and into the concrete underground caverns. Then, when the lines of Chasseurs swept out with fixed bayonets, the lighter French guns maintained a line of fire close in front of them, and the trenches were carried and the village entered by one violent movement—in one bound, as the French themselves said. The attack was made mainly from the south and the east, across a ravine near the road running from Carency to Souchez. At only one point on the right, where the enemy was sheltered from gun fire in a hollow, was there any resistance. This spot in the fortifications was, however, almost encircled the following day by another French advance across the Souchez road. The hostile island was then conquered, and in a series of house-to-house attacks the Chasseurs and the young French troops hacked their way into the village. The struggle went on underground through the passages connecting the houses and in the shelter caverns where the garrison used to rest. The French suffered badly while trying to advance over ground, against the loopholed buildings from which machine-guns were trained on them. It was impossible to carry the village by storm, even when the French field batteries were brought up close to it.

The place was a warren; the defenders went underground when the French artillery opened fire, and by means of subterranean telephone wires they brought their heavy batteries to bear on anything they could not reach with their own machine-guns. The French infantry had to ferret them out with hand-bomb and knife, with little help from their own artillery. While this ghastly mole warfare was going on, the Saxon, Baden, and Bavarian troops holding Carency were able to communicate in almost absolute security with Souchez and Ablain by means of deep, narrow communication trenches. But on Tuesday, May 11th, the French regiments entrenched on the Souchez road fought their way into Carency Wood, east of the village, and after a terrible fight, in which they held off counter-attack after counter-attack launched from the direction of Souchez, they captured the main communication trenches.

Battle for the quarry

The Germans in Carency then had only the route to Ablain open to them. General Foch tried to enclose this by a sudden double attack eastward and westward. But the French troops attacking from the east, over the position that they had conquered in Carency Wood, were surprised by a large and formidable fortification. On a wooded hill there was a great quarry hidden amid the trees, which had been excavated out of the chalk hill to a

Digitized by Google



THE SCENE OF TWENTY-TWO DAYS' FIERCE AND INCESSANT CONFLICT.—Only a single division was used by General Foch from May 9th to June 1st, 1915, in capturing Carency, Ablain, the works round Malon Hill, and the sugar refinery at Souchez, and he only lost about one thousand men killed and two thousand slightly wounded. The success of these operations against the most formidable system of defence works ever used in open field warfare, was due to the remarkable artillery power of our allies.

depth of two hundred and sixty feet, and strengthened by casemates and bomb-proof caverns. Another regiment was sent up to reinforce the attacking troops, and the battle for the quarry opened with a surprise success on the part of the French. Two hundred and fifty German troops came out into the open on the wooded hill, with the intention of making a stand behind the wire entanglements which they had laid between the trees. But instead of charging, the French colonel sent a message along his field telephone, and the light French guns, in a sharp, intense, massed shrapnel fire, completely wiped out the hostile troops who had ventured above ground. Then the attack on the quarry opened, and went on for seventy-six hours of incessant fighting. The French lost heavily in covering the open ground leading to the subterranean fortress, but no losses could daunt the men. The more terribly they suffered, the stronger grew their will to conquer. The western wave of attack slowly mounted the hill on one side, preceded by a rain of high-explosive shell from the distant French batteries. At the same time the eastern line of attack swept into the forest, and at half-past five on Thursday, May 13th, a line of waving handkerchiefs rose about thirty yards away from the advanced French trench. The French never stirred. Their comrades had often been trapped by the enemy's trick of offering to surrender. But the Germans this time were in earnest. Rising up, their hands lifted above their heads, they came out of the fortress along the communication sap, crying "Kamerad! Kamerad!" There were more than a thousand of them, and one of their officers said to the victorious French general: "Your shooting was mathematical. Your infantry came on so quickly that they could not be withstood."

Victory at Carency and Ablain

As the prisoners filed westward in the gathering darkness a series of fires broke out in the valley northward. It was Ablain burning. Heralded by the fire of their guns, the victorious French troops swept down the northern slopes of the hill, and using the communication saps made by the Germans, they swung against the eastern end of Ablain, and after a grim hand-to-hand struggle that lasted all night they crowned the victory of Carency and Lorette by capturing the enemy's central position at Ablain and another thousand prisoners.

The extraordinary thing about the Battle of Carency and Ablain was the economy of force that General Foch employed. Only a single division was used from May 9th to June 1st in capturing Carency, Ablain, the works around Malon Mill, and the sugar refinery at Souchez.

French and German losses

In twenty-two days' fierce and incessant conflict, in which ground was continually being won, the division only lost 3,200 men. Of these, 2,000 were but slightly wounded, so that the ultimate loss amounted to scarcely more than 1,000 men out of 20,000. The division picked up 2,600 German corpses, and made altogether 3,100 prisoners. And all this was achieved against the most formidable system of defence works ever used in open field warfare. When the Crown Prince of Bavaria at last obtained the new formations he needed in order to stop the French advance, he launched eleven divisions—nearly a quarter of a million men—against the sugar factory at Souchez and the other positions won by the French troops. Yet, in spite of its enormous numbers, the fresh German army could not recover the lost ground. Though the enemy fell in tens of thousands, his lost hills of Artois were never recovered by him.

Certainly the French lost heavily in other parts of the battlefield. There were, for instance, as unsuccessful attempts at an advance north of Notre Dame de Lorette as our troops had made at Fromelles. But in the long and wearing attacks on the main German position, General

Digitized by Google



—ABLAIN, ST. NAZAIRE, AND CARENCY SEEN FROM THE SOUCHEZ SPUR.

In one battle round Souchez in June, for example, they used 300,000 high-explosive shells in twelve hours on a small section of the German front. The artillery, it is noteworthy, did not support the infantry; the main work was done by the guns. The infantry—relying chiefly on knives, pistols, and grenades, in hand-to-hand conflicts with the foe—"cleaned-up" afterwards.

Foch, after the first violent movement, endeavoured to maintain a slow but continual progress at a comparatively small loss of men.

The chief reason for the remarkable ascendancy of our comrades-in-arms was their artillery power. In one battle round Souchez in June they used 300,000 high-explosive shells in twelve hours on a small section of the German front. The French Army had entirely reversed its tactics. The artillery did not support the infantry; the artillery did the main work, and the infantry merely cleaned up after it. The rifle was almost an obsolete weapon, and so was the bayonet; for the French guns enabled the advancing infantry to get so close to the enemy that infantry action was, as we have seen, a sharp hand-to-hand affair with knives, pistols, and grenades.

Captain Sievert's diary

From the diary of Captain Sievert, a German officer who fell in the battle, we have a very illuminating account of the French advance from the enemy point of view. On May 9th the captain was ordered to hold out on the Carency-Ablain line. But in the preliminary bombardment his battalion suffered terribly. Only one experienced officer was left — himself — together with two reserve officers and two hundred and seventy-two non-commissioned officers and men. The battalion therefore lost more than two-thirds of its effectives in the opening hours of the battle.

"I again ask," he wrote, "that the battalion be relieved. I again ask (he underlines it) for reinforcements. It is absolutely necessary that I receive the large number of hand-grenades that I have already demanded. We lack illuminating pistols. The troops did not bring any with them."

On May 11th the captain writes that he has received nothing, and that it is impossible for him to make an attack:

"3.30 a.m.—I have informed the regimental Staff that it is impossible for me to execute the nocturnal operation in combination with the 2nd Battalion of the 11th Regiment and the 13th Battalion of Light Infantry. For owing to lack of indispensable material the success of the operation cannot be assured. I asked for a large number of hand-grenades, but have received only one hundred and twenty for use on both sectors. The unanimous opinion is that success is entirely improbable. The enemy has an abundance of grenades, and by means of them he stops our movement, and even makes us retreat slightly at certain points. Besides, the French artillery is firing to-day without interruption, and inflicting losses on us."

At last, on the evening of May 11th, the battalion is relieved, and it rests until May 19th. Then, as it again enters into action, the woes of the diary-writer increase. First of all the German Staff work is bad. Wrong orders are given, and the sectors of action are confused. The battalion wanders about, groping for its position, marching and counter-marching under the fire of the French guns.

Faulty German Staff work

"3.30 a.m.—I ask what sector we are to capture. Answer: 'That on the right!'—which is to say the one we know already. I ask if the battalion should at once continue its march through Souchez as far as the ravine. Affirmative answer. I set out with Boger at a quarter-past eight. We follow the brook. The path is not to be commended. Artillery fire above our heads, and also all round about. We reach Souchez streaming with sweat. Indescribable scene. A frightful heap of ruins. The street is littered with shell fragments. The Staff of the 11th Reserve Regiment of Infantry is in a cellar. Souchez is completely destroyed by shell fire. They have mistaken the south for the north. It isn't on the northern slope but on the southern slope below Lorette Hill that we have to relieve—or rather reinforce—a battalion. Therefore we have not to go through the ravine at Souchez. They gave me only very superficial information about the sector we are to relieve. To all our questions the only answer is: 'I do not know. There is no connection between the various points.' I ask for information about war material (sand-bags, ammunition, hand-grenades). I am told that all the necessary material is on the spot. Nothing precise can be told about anything."

The battalion ends by getting to Ablain. But there they find a dreadful state of things.

Digitized by Google



EXAMPLE OF THE "FUROR TEUTONICUS": SAVAGE WORK OF THE HUNS IN A ONCE PROSPEROUS CORNER OF BELGIUM IN 1915.

The range of wrecked buildings seen in the above wonderful panoramic view formed what was once a prosperous flour mill at Lizerne, near Steenstraate, not far from Ypres. Scarcely a stick or stone was left standing by German shot and shell. The photograph was taken in the presence of the King of the Belgians, and Professor Bastin, the well-known artist, was commissioned to reproduce the scene on canvas.



WRECKED BY FRIEND AND FOE.

A section of the battle-area in Northern France reconquered by the French.



SEEN FROM A CAPTURED GERMAN TRENCH.

Remarkable photograph taken by a Belgian officer from a captured German trench in Flanders.

Digitized by Google

"I set out with the adjutant, guided by a man. Rain and mud. The road from Souchez to Ablain is impracticable and exposed to an incessant shell fire. Like Souchez, Ablain is only a heap of rubble. Only a quarter of the spire remains of the church. Our guide doesn't know the way. We search for it ourselves; sweating, groping about, slipping at every step, we reach the battalion at last. Officers present: Captain Winkler, the surgeon, several company commanders, and myself.

"The spirit of the men is very low. Heavy losses. Desperate situation. The surgeon still has seventy bad cases in the shelter. The ambulance men are gone. Still, we ought to get the wounded away, sending soldiers to carry them. Winkler refuses. I insist, and manage to prevail. Yet I doubt if it can be successfully done. Suddenly a shell bursts at the entrance. Winkler thinks he is struck, but it is only the shell-blast. But a drummer of the 111th Battalion is stretched dead at the door. The light fades. It becomes as black as a cellar. This occurs three more times.

"When we were in Souchez ravine we did not think there could be anything worse than that. Now we know we were wrong. Not only are we exposed to the enemy's fire front and flank, but they are shooting us in the back. No connection with the forces on the right. The French have cut through there

Ablain worse than Souchez

There is a gap of six hundred yards between the neighbouring battalion. And to think we have been put into this furnace after having fought for twelve days in Souchez ravine! Otherwise, there is nothing to write about. Same shell fire as usual. They are pitching huge bombs at us; it is terrible. We can't discover the position of their bomb-throwers. We cannot venture outside, for we are visible on all sides."

The Staff orders arrive in a confused way, and are only executed after much discussions. The victualling is bad, and the connections irregular.

"The companies have been led towards (illegible word). A different decision has been taken in regard to the third company, without informing me of the change of plan. The seventh company has gone to Souchez ravine, and then returned to Souchez. There the order came for the men to mount at once on the heights, but they were taken off to stop a gap at another point. The seventh company of the 11th Reserve Regiment must therefore stay on here without food. The troops must be content with their reserve rations.

"The situation is frightful. I asked to be relieved. No reply. At seven in the evening I at last learn that we are attached to the 157th Regiment of Infantry, and connected with Givenchy. There is no question of relieving us. To-night, at eleven o'clock, we are about to make another attack on Lorette Hill. If only we can succeed in chasing those dogs from the height! Since the afternoon of May 17th I have eaten only a large slice of bread and butter brought from Lens. To-night they brought us food, but all cold. Impossible to light a fire.

"The seventh company should be relieved to-day. The relief should be furnished by the 3rd Battalion of the 157th. They send us a section of six groups. I cannot consent to one hundred and twenty men being replaced by forty-eight men. Row on the telephone with the commander of the 3rd Battalion. I refuse to let the company go. By this stand of mine, I get out of them the third company of the 111th Regiment, and then I give way. But the effectives occupying this position are truly weak. We cannot stand out against anything like an energetic attack. We have grown apathetic in this mouse-trap. I have asked the battalion to hold out to the last man. Though the three companies are now united, the assistant surgeon has not come."

A row on the telephone

On May 18th the position of affairs becomes desperate. The battalion can do no more, and the men see they are being killed for nothing.

"For five days the French have naturally had the time to establish themselves solidly. It has become still more difficult to attack them. I have, in spite of myself, the impression that our high command is being induced to abandon the position. At the same time many other points must be given up—ours, for instance. It seems to me that prestige (a matter of self-love) is the motive. We must recapture the hill of Notre Dame de Lorette.

"19th May, 7.15 p.m.—Last night, at ten o'clock, I sent a message to Souchez regarding the situation, with sketches showing the shell-fire effects. I asked for a decision about the seventh company, which is without food and which has been two days



FRONTIER DEATH-POSTS IN THE DEBATABLE LAND NEAR CARENCY.

Barbed-wire entanglements, partly demolished, on land near Carency, which was captured and recaptured several times in the summer of 1915. In oval: Another corner of Carency, showing the awful havoc wrought by the guns.

Digitized by Google



FRENCH ENGINEERS AT WORK IN THE ARGONNE.

Official French photographs showing a small communication railway in course of construction in the Argonne.

longer in its trenches than any other company. I have also asked for the positions of the other two companies, which have been used at another front without informing me of it. The messenger reached Souchez at half-past eleven, and found nobody there. The battalion cannot learn under whose orders it is placed, and where its new commander is. At last, in the afternoon, we are told that we are now under the orders of the Staff of the 157th Regiment.

"The enemy continues to fortify his position on the south-eastern slope. He has built important works there. Victualling is a matter of grave difficulties. It takes two and a half to three hours to reach the travelling kitchens. The road is under shell fire. My men are absolutely exhausted. I demand that my battalion be relieved."

German troops demoralised

On May 20th, at three o'clock in the morning, Captain Sievert sends another appeal. His men break away at every fall of a shell. It is necessary to threaten them with courts-martial to keep them in the position.

"The company commanders are united in complaining of the complete exhaustion and demoralisation of their men. We have great trouble in getting them to stick in the trenches. They run away at each shell. We are compelled to push them back from the rear. Even the example given by the company officers is almost without effect. This state of things is the result of the excessive efforts demanded from the men from May 2nd to May 13th, and of physical and moral overwork, interrupted only by a few days' rest.

"All to-day the battalion is exposed to the enemy's gun fire coming from all directions. Again my battalion has been three days and three nights in the trenches without being relieved. The units that held this critical position before us were relieved at the end of two or three days.

"I again demand that they take the trouble to relieve my absolutely worn-out men. Need of illuminating shells. I have asked for them several times, but have never received any. The trenches are badly made, and scarcely capable of being defended. The active co-operation of real sappers is indispensable."

But no reinforcements arrive. At ten o'clock at night Captain Sievert is in despair. Here are the last entries in his diary, containing the reports he addressed to his original regiment, the 111th, and to the 157th Regiment, to which he had been attached:

"May 20th, 10 p.m.—To the 111th Regiment and to the 157th Regiment.

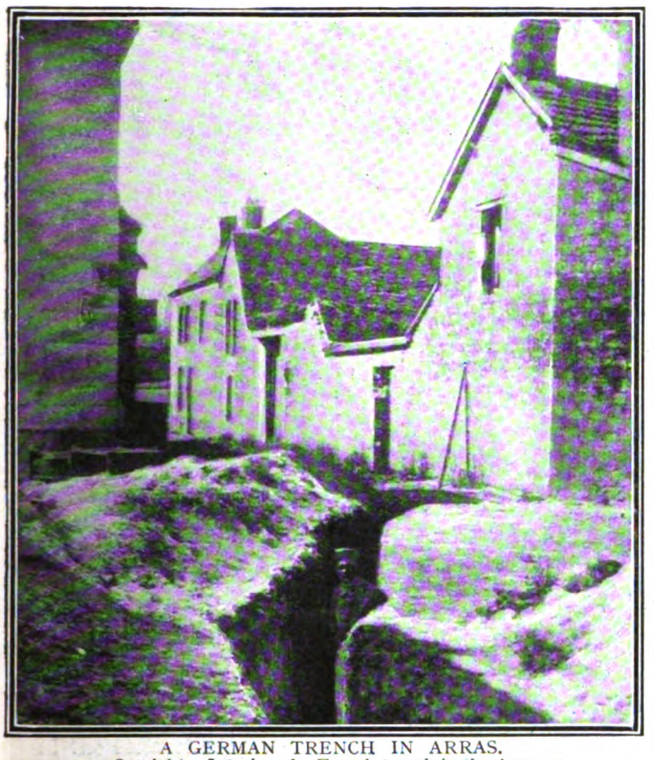
"The bombardment to-day has completely destroyed the remains of our trenches. The men have been without cover for three days. You can't call them positions.

Captain Sievert in despair

The men are stretched out beneath the eyes of the enemy. Impossible to hold the place with my weak effectives. I demand an officer be sent here from the high command to take account of the position. Of all that I have asked for—illuminating shells, sand-bags, etc.—nothing has arrived. We are left to drift. Once more I demand, instantly, that the fourth company of the 111th be placed at my disposal. The enemy's artillery fire is dreadful, especially the heavy howitzer shell that can be heard slowly coming. Everybody is anxious, and wondering where they are going to strike. The parapet trembles, the iron fragments and clods of earth fall on us. How much longer are we to remain in this mouse-trap? I think my nerves are worn out. The bombardment has attained the utmost violence. Indescribable."

Here ends the diary of Captain Sievert. It shows what superhuman efforts were imposed upon the hostile forces even before Italy entered the struggle. It indicates also the effect of the gradual but incessant movement of the

Digitized by Google





A GERMAN TRENCH IN ARRAS.
On right: Interior of a French trench in the Argonne.



DREAMING OF THE BLACK FOREST?

Picturesque view of a German position on a mountain-side in the Vosges, between which and the corresponding range of the Black Forest on the other side of the Rhine there is a remarkable similarity.

Digitized by Google

Tenth French Army. In the captain's notes there is hardly any reference to the action of the French infantry. The German battalion is slowly worn down by gun fire, and then the exhausted survivors are suddenly annihilated by the long prepared infantry charge. The French general was lavish of time, but very economical in regard to the lives of his men.

The heaviest French losses seem to have occurred in the first movement of advance on May 9th. The Foreign Legion had a terrible struggle in the system of German works lying between Carency and Neuville St. Vaast, and known, from the outlines made by the trenches in the chalk, as the White Works. For three hours the artillery smote the position, and then at 10 a.m. on May 10th—the same minute as the entire first French line charged—the Foreign Legion swept out. All the wire obstacles were cut; the first German trench was full of corpses, stacked one on the other. The garrisons of the second, third, fourth, and fifth lines retreated, under shrapnel fire from the French guns. But the legionaries reached them with the bayonet, and after an advance of an hour and a half they penetrated nearly three miles into the German front.

Foreign Legion's great charge

But the enemy then made a stand on a line of high ground, and the legion had to pass over four hundred yards of open fields to reach the slope. Onwards they ran under a hell-fire fusillade. The leading lines withered away, the scanty survivors taking cover in old shell-holes full of water. There they remained until nightfall, with German machine-guns firing in front of them and French machine-guns shooting over their heads. Companies of two hundred and fifty men were reduced to fifty men—few officers surviving. The general directing the legion was wounded, and the colonel. Three out of every four commandants were killed. But the legion was proud of itself. It had done its duty. It had taken all the five German lines in a single charge, and driven its front three miles nearer the enemy's line of retirement. The legion, 4,000 strong at the start, had taken 2,000 prisoners, six guns, and a large number of machine-guns, and killed at least 2,000 Germans.

Famous fortress of the Labyrinth

A few miles south-east of the White Works was the main German position. It consisted of a series of trenches west of the hamlet of La Targette, the houses of the hamlet, a system of works behind La Targette at the village of Neuville St. Vaast, and then, behind Neuville, the famous underground fortress of the Labyrinth. Yet a single French division was set the task of breaking through this unparalleled organisation of defences. But backing the division was a mass of French batteries that exceeded in power and weight of missiles the guns opposed to them. As in the more northerly sectors of the battle-line, the preliminary bombardment on the morning of May 9th



GRIM WORK IN "GOD'S ACRE": FRENCH ALPINE INFANTRY HOLDING THE CEMETERY AT SOUCHEZ.
The cemetery at Souchez was, like the sugar refinery not far away, taken and retaken during the fighting north of Arras. Above: General Fayolle and officers of his Staff. General Fayolle commanded the attack at Carency.

Digitized by Google



PRIZE DISTRIBUTION AT THE FRONT

During a brief spell of rest a French machine-gun section organised a sports meeting, which took place on the anniversary of the outbreak of war. Our photograph was taken just before the prize distribution.

was fearful in intensity. The German barbed cables, as thick as a man's finger, were completely destroyed, and when the French infantry rushed across the fields, stretching for a hundred and fifty yards between the hostile fronts the German troops did not shoot; for the French guns still bombarded the ground a few yards away from the van of their infantry.

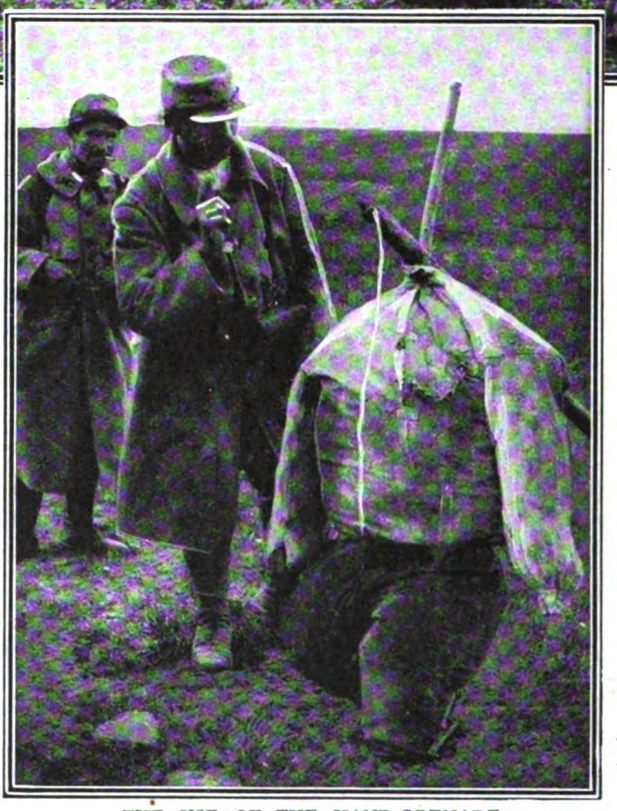
Only the enemy machine-gun officers, firing from concrete redoubts, attempted to stay the advance; but some of the French troops encircled the machine-gun forts and hand-bombed the small garrisons, while the main charging force tore into La Targette, and fought in the orchards and streets. Their light guns followed them, the horses trotting, and smashed by close-range fire the fortified houses and other machine-gun redoubts. At half-past eleven in the morning—ninety minutes after the first line charged—the troops in the sector were fighting in the first houses of Neuville.

In Neuville churchyard

At the same time the centre of the French division, working from the Bethune road and through the hamlet of Biez, reached the first line of enemy works on the southern outskirts of Neuville. Here the attacking troops drove northward towards the churchyard, where the Germans had constructed a system of defence behind the tombstones. Twice during the day the French regiment took the churchyard, and twice they lost it; but close to it they held five lines of trenches captured in the furious struggle.

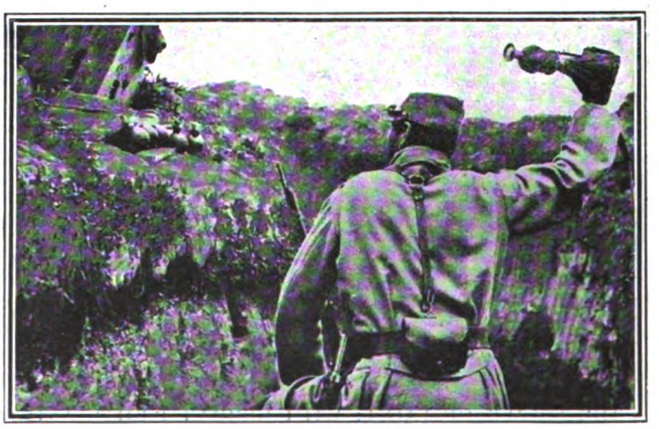
So far, the plan of attack was working out more rapidly than had been expected. Neuville, like Ablain, was being surrounded on three sides. But the right wing of the assailing division could not get forward. As it charged northward from Ecurie, with the object of penetrating behind Neuville, it was completely held up by the Labyrinth. The flanking outworks of this extraordinary invisible fortress poured a devastating fire into the French right wing. Yet with glorious stubbornness the charging lines, though thinning at every yard, went on and flooded into the southern end of the Labyrinth.

Barely could the victors save themselves from annihilation by building up sand-bag barricades in the German saps and tunnels, and digging for the electric wires connected with the mines which the enemy sappers had prepared against the day of defeat. Though the French right wing escaped complete destruction, its losses were



THE USE OF THE HAND-GRENADE.

Mannequin used by French soldiers in grenade-throwing practice.



IN DEADLY EARNEST.

French infantryman throwing hand-grenade into a German trench.

Digitized by Google

heavy, and it could make no farther advance. As soon as the full strength of the Labyrinth was perceived, General Foch altered his plan. Keeping only his footing in the subterranean stronghold, he swung heavily against Neuville the following day—Monday, May 10th—and began the systematic conquest of the village.

A subterranean town

Neuville was a curious village. The Germans lived some thirty-three feet below the street. The cellars of the houses were strengthened by a topping of cement a yard thick, and underneath the strengthened cellars was a subterranean town, the caverns being connected by large, main tunnel thoroughfares with narrower side galleries. The garrison troops circulated like moles during the battle, coming up in the most unexpected places. There was one tunnel in particular that ran under the French lines, and in the rear of the attacking troops a hidden German officer studied the French preparations through a periscope, and telephoned fire directions to German batteries miles away eastward at Thelus and Vimy. There were indeed German guns and howitzers on three sides of Neuville, and they maintained a furious fire on the French soldiers. But in the long Battle of Neuville, lasting from May 9th to May 13th, neither the German nor the French guns were predominant; for it was a battle of cave-men, going on often at a depth to which no ordinary shell ever penetrated. What was needed was a new concrete-piercing shell with a delayed fuse action. The new submarine warfare was paralleled by just as novel a subterranean warfare.

The Germans were armed with knives and bombs; the French had also pistols. Each group of houses was attacked through the cellars, and every evening there was never a recoil on the part of the French to be registered. Slowly, but continuously, they progressed in the most terrible sort of fighting in which men ever engaged. By their inventiveness, their grim audacity, and deadly tenacity the regiments won forward. Drawn largely from the eastern frontiers, the Meurthe and Moselle region, where the German beast had left the mark of its lust and cruelty, the men of Lorraine had been shaped under fire,





THE SOLACE OF FAITH: WITH GERMAN PROTESTANTS AND FRENCH ROMAN CATHOLICS IN NORTHERN FRANCE.
Lutheran pastor preaching to German soldiers from a rustic pulpit in a secluded dell near Soissons. Below: A celebration of the Mass. French soldier approaching the improvised altar at which a priest is officiating.

Digitized by Google



DISMOUNTED CAVALRY DEFENDING A TRENCH.
In front of the trench are barbed-wire entanglements. The enemy had taken up a position in the shelter of the woods in the distance.

and they were burning with a passion of vengeance—vengeance for their murdered and tortured kinsfolk and their irretrievably ruined homes.

By Saturday night, May 15th, they held all the mass of the village, with the exception of its northern corner, and their progress in the interior of the subterranean defence works was accompanied and consolidated by their progress outside Neuville. On May 11th the churchyard was again captured by a splendid charge through a cross-fire of hostile machine-guns. The men who fell were avenged that night, when the Germans made a violent counter-attack. They were allowed to advance within thirty yards of the new French position, and then they were shot down by rapid fire and bayoneted in a sudden, leaping charge made by the defenders. None of the attackers escaped except a hundred men and four officers, who were taken prisoners. There were no more attacks on the churchyard, which was developed into the radiating centre of the French operations, by which the village was slowly conquered. Seven guns, thirty Maxims, 2,040 prisoners, and two cows kept in the caverns for milking, were some of the spoils.

There remained the Labyrinth, the maze of block-houses, shelters, saps, caverned chambers, and armoured concrete defences and tunnels, on which the German engineers had exhausted all their science. It was built around two sunken country lanes, from which spread, for a mile and a half on either side, works of every kind, amply furnished with machine-guns and bomb-throwers. Naturally it was the weakest point in the entire German front; so the enemy engineers had for months used all their skill and increasing experience to supply Nature's defects by art and make their weakest point their strongest.

General Foch's difficulties

The French attack on May 9th barely bit into this tremendous novel fortress. On the following days the situation was not improved, and every attack, either from north or south, was exposed to a flanking fire. General Foch was then faced by the problem of either losing men or losing time. If he wished to break through the enemy's front and recover Lens, and perhaps Lille, he had to act quickly, before the Crown Prince of Bavaria obtained reinforcements in men and artillery. On the other hand, if he merely wished to put pressure on the hostile commander and continue to wear the German front thin by



FRENCH ARTILLERY IN ACTION.
A photograph taken in the Vosges. The men are lowering shells down an improvised slide for use by a heavy gun below.



RETURNING FROM A DAY IN THE FIELDS.
Thousands of French soldiers in the intervals of the fighting were drafted into the fields to assist in gathering in the crops.

Digitized by Google

a process of attrition, there was no need to send men to their death by the tens of thousand.

General Foch used only four thousand men in the Labyrinth, but he allowed them to take their own time. His main intention was to help Russia and attract the new German formations to France and Flanders instead of allowing them all to proceed to the eastern theatre of war. General Foch, the Lorrainer, was a man somewhat of the stamp of Sir John French, the Irishman. By temperament he was impulsively daring—a Hotspur—but by training he was cautious, being, like the British commander, a bookworm in regard to the story of the literature of war. So when he made a plan, he first built a solid, practicable design, well adjusted to the forces he employed. But he topped the scientific scheme with just the possibility of a great, decisive, happy stroke, depending largely for its execution on the condition in which he found the enemy.

A cautious Hotspur

The strength and extent of the Labyrinth made the superstructure of General Foch's design valueless. So he confined himself to carrying out, at as small a cost as possible, the solid part of the operations. The approaches to the Labyrinth were dominated by numerous German batteries, including 11 in. and 12 in. howitzers, placed at Givenchy en Gohelle, at La Folie, Thelus, Farbus, and at Beaurains, south of Arras. There were thus cross-fire effects from the north, east, and south. The French had a powerful artillery, but it was entirely concentrated on the east and south-east.



IN A GERMAN TRENCH.
Novel protection for a periscope field-glass.

The ordnance on either side was practically impregnable. It could only bombard the hostile infantry So while the French guns smote the German soldiers and the German guns smote the French soldiers, the opposing infantrymen smote each other. The attack opened on May 30th after the first German lines had been destroyed by bomb-throwers. Three French regiments charged—one on the north, one on the west, one on the south. On the north and the west the charging lines won to their goal, but the regiment on the south was again held up. Then the German batteries hammered at the lost German position, but the Frenchmen stood their ground, and in the night there was a furious attack and counter-attack, in which our allies lost and won again the position. Then from the front trenches the mole warfare began, down Kluck Passage, Eulenburg Passage, the Festival Hall and other cavernous ways. The ghastly fighting with knives and shattering hand-bombs never stopped night or day. Bare-headed, in shirts with upturned sleeves, the human moles fought, with petards for blowing up sand-bag barricades, bomb-throwers, aerial torpedoes, knife and pistol.

The French were more daring. They adventured more above ground, on exploring expeditions and leaping raids ahead of the barricaded saps where the combat was raging. One French lieutenant, on June 1st, climbed over the barricade in the central hollow road and, finding it feebly held, returned with sixty men and took by surprise the unprepared garrison of two hundred and fifty men resting in the deep-dug chambers, and made them all prisoners. The chief French losses occurred among the reserve troops. The regiment that was doing the fighting was always too close to the German soldiers for the German batteries to risk a shell at them.

Meanwhile the French sappers drove a parallel, in the ancient way, towards the Eulenburg Passage, one of the principal lines of the Labyrinth. A field of scarlet poppies stretched between the parallel and Eulenburg Passage, and on June 16th the French infantry charged through the poppies suddenly and leaped into the enemy's line. There followed a struggle in Eulenburg Passage lasting three days, and the end of it completed the French victory. An entire German regiment of 4,000 men, the 161st, perished. A Bavarian regiment was also shattered, and a thousand prisoners taken. The French had only 2,000 men put out of action, many of whom were only slightly injured.

The general results of the series of battles on the Arras front were more important than the similar series of battles on the La Bassée sector. The Tenth French Army, by reason of its superior supply of high-explosive shell, did more damage to the armies of the Crown Prince of Bavaria than did our First Army. It threw the enemy off the line of heights he occupied; it captured the most important underground system of defences that the Germans had constructed in any field of war; and it attracted against its newly-won position eleven new divisions, which it proceeded to wear down without giving ground. To the French soldier the concluding struggle in the Labyrinth was an inspiring affair. He at last recognised that he was, without any shadow of doubt, a better all-round fighter than the German soldier. His artillery was more skilfully handled, his shell supplies were equal to those of the enemy, and his personal prowess was much superior to that of the experienced first-line veteran troops of Germany. The Frenchman was slow to come to this conclusion—he remembered 1870; but the conclusion was forced upon him—by himself.

Completing the French victory

Digitized by Google



GERMAN TROOPS IN THE VICINITY OF WARSAW.

CHAPTER LXXVI.

THE FALL OF LEMBERG AND THE RUSSIAN RETREAT FROM GALICIA.

Serious Position of the Russians after the Battle of the San—The Great German Trust Magnates Enter Into the War—How They Organised at Once All their Resources in War Industries—Intrigues with the Pro-German Party in Russia—Failure of Russian Bureaucracy and Triumph of the Duma—Hindenburg Comes to the Help of Falkenhayn—Tremendous German and Austrian Losses—New and Grandiose Scheme of Attack Prepared by Hindenburg—The Problem of the Polish Quadrilateral of Fortresses—Russia Left without Help from Her Allies—Austrian Repulse at Moskisca—German Victory at Lubaczov—Marvellous Feat of Russian Cavalry—German Line Broken and Advance Held Up—Wonderful Skill of General Ivanoff in Conducting the Great Retreat—Mackensen Rescues the Austrian Armies on Either Side of Him and Turns Lemberg from the North—Russian Armoured Train Checks the Enemy's Advance—Fierce Flanking Battles along the Dniester Front—Linsingen's Army is Shattered and Pflanzer's Force is Partly Ambushed in the Deep, Winding River Channel—Failure of Mackensen's Main Plan—He Turns Northward Towards Cholm, and the Russians Make a Stand East of Lemberg—The Terrible Crime of Ravaruska.

AFTER the fall of Przemysl in the first days of June, 1915, the extraordinary strength of the attacking German forces became clearly apparent. The Russian commander, General Ivanoff, at first thought that the breaking of the lines of the Third Army at Gorlice might have been prevented. For it appeared, on inquiry, that Radko Dimitrieff, the leader of the Third Army, had been so over-confident of holding the enemy that he had not adopted the usual and proper precautionary measure of constructing fortified lines upon which to retire behind his position. When, therefore, his front was suddenly broken, no further means of resistance were available, and part of the Third Army was shattered. This very grave disaster was adjudged the result of negligence on the part of the famous Bulgarian general, and he was afterwards relieved of his command. But General Ivanoff still hoped to retrieve the situation by bringing part of the central Russian army across the Upper Vistula, and making a stand along the line of the San River.

But, as the fall of Jaroslav and Przemysl revealed, the position of affairs was far more serious than had been expected. The provision of additional entrenched lines and the closer co-operation of the Russian forces did not solve the difficulties, for these difficulties were of a peculiar nature. Military experience, military skill, and even military genius could not overcome them. There was needed a profound and far-reaching revolution in Russia in order to stay the advance of the Germanic forces.



GENERAL POLIVANOFF.
A brilliant strategist. He succeeded General Sukhomlinoff as Russian Minister of War.

The Russian Staff, including the Russian Minister of War, General Sukhomlinoff, had been mistaken about the character of the struggle, even as had been the French Staff and the British Staff.

All the allied military leaders thought that they were still contending against a similar body of military leaders, composing the German Staff. This was the capital source of the error. In so far as the German Staff represented the mind of the German aristocracy and the German bureaucracy, its organising powers in the war were exhausted by the autumn of 1914. It was then that the critical battle for Calais came to an end, owing to a lack of munitions in the German armies. The mistake in regard to the character of the war was common to all the Staffs. Germany, it is true, displayed somewhat more

Digitized by Google



PICTURESQUE VIEW OF MITAU, THE CAPITAL OF THE BALTIC PROVINCE OF COURLAND, SHOWING THE SCHLOSS.
Courland (or Kurland) was partly Germanised in mediæval times. Towards the close of the eighteenth century it was incorporated with Russia. It derives its name from that of the old Kurs, a Lettish people.

foresight in the main matter than did her opponents, but the military men of every contending country miscalculated what provision of war materials would be needed to win a decisive victory on land.

But to the great advantage of Germany, her Staff first clearly appreciated the chief problem in modern warfare between highly industrialised nations, and called at once in the autumn of 1914 for the help of the men they needed. In this manner Germany won a start of nearly six months in the veritable preparation for the critical period of the terrible struggle; for more by luck than by prevision she found, ready made to her hand, the new instrument required. This instrument consisted of the gigantic German trust system of production which, modelled first upon the American trust system, soon surpassed it in range, closeness of control, general efficiency, and concentrated power. Three hundred men dominated the industries of the country, and of these three hundred men about a score, like Ballin, Stinnes, Thyssen, Rathenau, Funke, Haniel, and Kirdorf, formed an inner oligarchy.

Kaiser and Trust magnates

Linked with the German money trust, connected with the Government, and in many cases in close personal touch with the Kaiser, the German trust magnates controlled all the industrial activities of the Empire. They were chiefly responsible for bringing about the war, as a quick means of gaining a world-wide dominion in commerce, and saving themselves from a very great crisis in overproduction, which the lack of financial staying power would have rendered most dangerous to Germany. Far from being of a pacific nature, as captains of industry should be, according to the doctrines of the Manchester school, they were more bellicose than the Prussian country squires.

They were inspired by the warlike policy of promoting trade which their ancestors, the German merchants of the old Hansa towns, had practised with success for centuries till broken by England in the days of Queen Elizabeth. The modern German trust magnates provided the Social Democratic movement with traitor leaders, who voted at once for war when the time came for deeds and not words. Kaiser Wilhelm II. had long since recognised that the leaders of the German trusts and cartel systems were the real governors of his Empire, and he entered into league with them, just as German Emperors of old entered into league with the Hansa merchant princes.

The industrial oligarchy of Germany undertook, in the autumn of 1914, the work of bringing all the manufacturing energies of the German and Austrian Empires to bear upon the battlefield. No long, difficult, and defective process of organisation was needed, as was afterwards the case in France, Britain, and Russia. The German trust system immediately amalgamated with the military system, and worked smoothly and rapidly, like an enormous machine, for war purposes. Hundreds of men of science, forming the research departments of the various syndicates and companies, ceased for the time trying to defeat foreign manufacturers



THE MARKET-PLACE IN MITAU.



HARBOUR OF LIBAU, OCCUPIED BY THE GERMANS ON MAY 7TH, 1915.

Digitized by Google



GENERAL VIEW OF LEMBERG FROM A HEIGHT NEAR THE TOWN.

Lemberg, the Capital of Galicia, situated in a beautiful and romantic district, was captured by the Russians on September 3rd, 1914, and retaken by the Austrians on June 22nd, 1915.

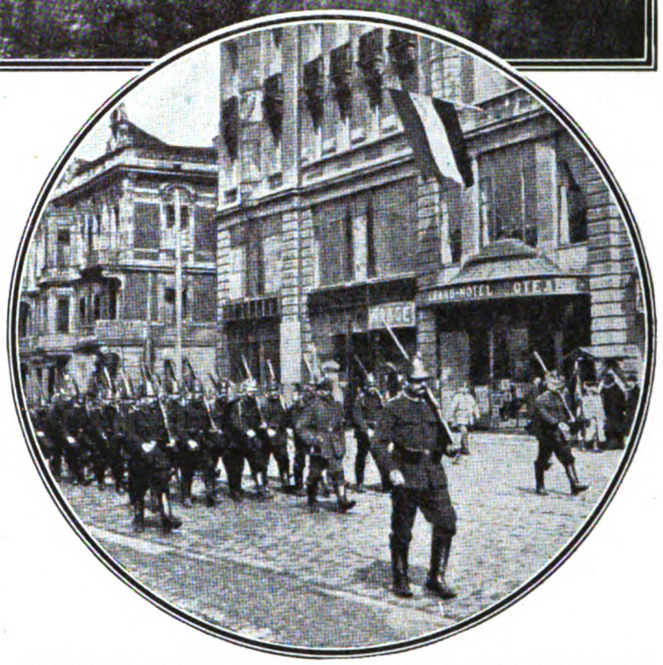
by the discovery of fresh improvements in articles of commerce, and studied how to facilitate the work of slaughter. In recent years Germany had begun to surpass both America and Britain in the production of power lathes. Her extraordinary output of lathes, combined with her intense organisation of production, enabled her at once to increase in an extraordinary manner the number of shells and guns manufactured.

She had also begun to lead the way in Europe in concrete work. The main streets in cities like Düsseldorf were being rebuilt with magnificent and well-designed façades of armoured concrete just before the war. Men and materials were conveyed to the front to make impregnable defences for the Army. Even the German asphalt paving syndicates found important warlike work. Rapidly they transformed the muddy, unmetalled roads of Poland into firm causeways, along which guns, ammunition, provision trains, and troops could move at a great speed.

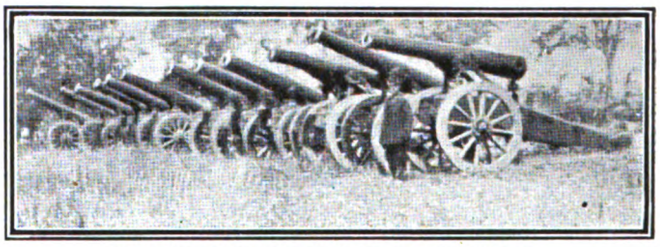
The problem of communications

The leaders of German industry, in fact, solved at once the problem of the invasion of Russia, which had defeated Napoleon, puzzled Moltke, and frightened the modern German Staff. By energetically increasing the production of motor-vehicles, while road making and railway building went on, the difficulty about communications was entirely overcome. It was on the Russian troops, tramping in an unending downpour of rain through a land of mud in the summer of 1915, that the chief strain fell. The Germanic armies had good roads behind them for supplies, and also for movements of manœuvre.

At the time when the German trust magnates threw all their magnificent forces into the war, Russia was fighting with little more than her crippled Government ordnance works at her back. A considerable number of Russian factories were managed by German technical experts, who were ready to check any production of war material. The workshops, factories and foundries controlled by the Russians themselves were neglected by the military authorities and depleted of workmen by the mobilisation. Moreover, the total production of the Russian works was small in comparison with that of Germany. Some of the Russian captains of industry advocated that the German managers and German technical advisers, who were hindering the manufacture of war material, should be dismissed and replaced by British, or even by American, factory managers. But unfortunately, the large, harm-working German element concerned in the direction of Russian industries was at first supported by the reactionary party in the Russian Government. Some of the reactionaries



GERMAN LANDSTURM MARCHING ALONG THE PRINCIPAL STREET IN LODZ.



RUSSIAN GUNS TAKEN BY THE ENEMY.



A GERMAN FORAGE STORE IN POLAND.

Digitized by Google



THE GRAND DUCHESS TATIANA.

peace with the Kaiser, and then league with him against the democracies of Western Europe. But all this web of intrigue, treachery, bureaucratic indolence, and negligence was suddenly broken by the blow intended to support the Pro-German party and the reactionaries. As the Third Russian Army began its long retreat and the Russian public learnt that the series of reverses was due to a lack of munitions and equipment, there was an abrupt, unforeseen resurgence of mind, soul, and character among the educated townspeople of the Empire, similar to that which had taken place in Italy when Prince Bülow and Signor Giolitti seemed about to triumph. The Russian municipalities started to agitate; they pointed out that the bureaucracy had failed to provide means to defend the Empire, and that only a popular assembly, in close touch with the industries of the country, could organise quickly the production of warlike material. In the meantime a central committee of soldiers and business men began to quicken the production of high-explosive shell.

General Sukhomlinoff superseded

There were riots in Moscow and other cities—not against the Government, but against the German element in Russian trade and industry. So fierce was the temper of patriotism that not only was the professed German party, once headed by Count de Witte, overthrown, but the far more loyal leaders of reactionary bureaucratism were deprived of power. General Sukhomlinoff, the Russian War Minister and reorganiser of the Army, fell, because of his political views. He was replaced by General Polivanoff, a brilliant strategist, who favoured parliamentary institutions. Several other powerful Ministers were succeeded by men willing to work with the Duma. The extraordinary change made in the British Cabinet, when Mr. Lloyd George abandoned the control of the Treasury in order to speed-up the production of munitions, had a considerable effect upon the Russian mind. The Russian manufacturers—as loosely organised as British manufacturers—felt that they could produce the best and quickest results by following the example of their western Allies. They felt also that an alert parliamentary control would help them more than their slow, routine, bureaucratic management of affairs, for a bureaucracy seldom produces men of any business capacity.

Triumph of the Duma

This large, quiet revolution in the promotion of national efficiency and in the intensification of patriotism did not immediately produce any marked improvement in the conduct of the war. It was necessary to recall tens of thousands of miners and workmen from the Army, in order to get full supplies of coal and iron, and relight many foundries that had been closed down on mobilisation. Power lathes, crucibles, and presses had to be imported, and new factories for high-explosives and smokeless powder established. Some persons estimated that it would take fully six months before the industrial energies of Russia were developed to a proper degree of productiveness. Meanwhile the Russian Commander-in-Chief had to fight for time against a splendidly equipped opponent, who was willing to sacrifice half his army for a rapid decision.

The Grand Duke Nicholas seems to have been opposed by the Kaiser in person, for it was the feverish anxiety of Wilhelm II. that inspired and directed the plans of attack made by the German Staff. So long as things went well in were not averse from seeing their country defeated, so long as the democracies of France and Britain were still more deeply involved in disaster.

They hoped that, after a sharp trial of strength in which Russia's weakness would be evident, the Tsar would be induced to make



THE TSARITZA.

The photographs on this page are of the Russian Empress and her daughters as Red Cross nurses.



THE GRAND DUCHESS OLGA.

Digitized by Google



THE TSAR, WITH MEMBERS OF HIS SUITE, ON A TOUR OF INSPECTION AT THE FRONT.

Tsar Nicholas II. left Petrograd for the front on the twentieth anniversary of his accession. He did much to inspire his troops. "France," he declared to M. Jean Cruppi, in August, 1915, "can count upon my unshakable will to fight on until definite victory is achieved."

Galicia with the Grand Phalanx, under Field-Marshal von Mackensen, the German Commander-in-Chief, General von Falkenhayn, continued to be free from interference from the popular favourite, Field-Marshal von Hindenburg. We have seen that in April, 1915, Hindenburg was practically dismissed from the command of the armies on the eastern front, because his violent, bull-like rushes around Warsaw had cost hundreds of thousands of lives, and yet had not saved Hungary from invasion. But the new favourite of the Kaiser, Field-Marshal von Mackensen, with the help of Falkenhayn's new strategic plan and an enormous equipment of heavy artillery, did not succeed in the manner expected. It is reckoned that the Grand Phalanx and its connecting German and Austrian forces lost half a million men in the Galician battles.

Von Mackensen's costly failures

Important as Mackensen's advances were from a political point of view, they were even more of a drain on the human resources of the Germanic Empires than Hindenburg's driving attacks. Moreover, with everything possible in his favour—the opportunity of surprise, overwhelming forces at the critical point, thousands of pieces of heavy ordnance, and practically inexhaustible supplies of shells—Mackensen had not accomplished the task set him. He had not divided the Russian forces and enveloped the southern army; he had used up half a million men to put out of action an equal number of Russian troops. Unless the enemy could shatter one of the Russian army groups at comparatively little cost to himself, or unless he could penetrate sufficiently into the interior of the country to cripple its manufacture of munitions or its naval forces, there was little to be gained by a long, continual struggle in which the losses on both sides were equal.

As a matter of fact, the German and Austrian casualties in the eastern theatre of war at last rose in three months—May, June, July, 1915—to one million men. Russia suffered just as badly, but she had a larger population on which to draw. Therefore, though the numerical losses were about equal, the comparative losses, in regard to the remaining resources of recruitment, told heavily against the German, Austrian, and Hungarian peoples. By the end of July, Austria-Hungary was calling out men of fifty years of age to go on active service; and Germany, as was known from a letter found on a dead German officer on the western front, was calling out men of the age of forty-seven.

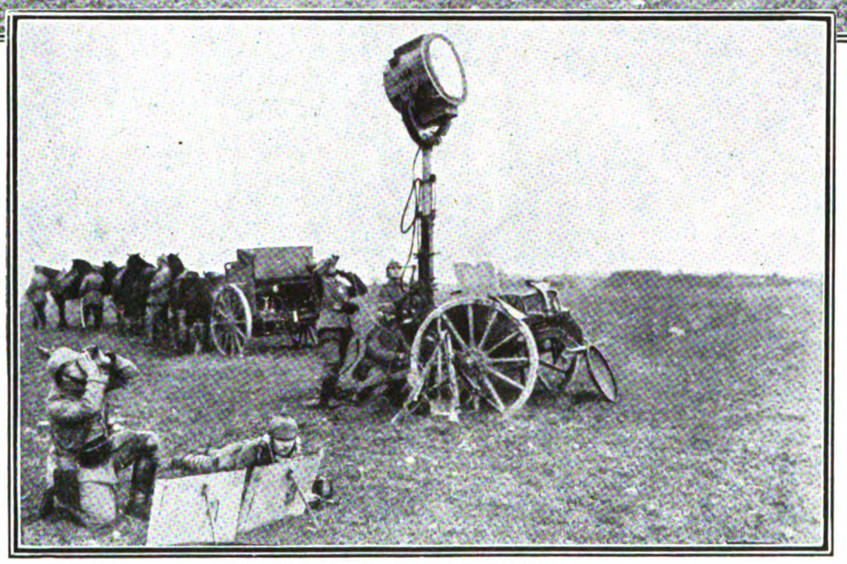
Recall of Von Hindenburg

The Russian commander, therefore, could look forward to exhausting the enemy by a slow fighting retreat, in which all attempts of the Germans to obtain and force a decisive battle would be eluded. The Kaiser was well acquainted with the situation. For both political and military purposes it was urgent for him to win a rapid decision against the Russian forces in the field. The German party in Russia were anxiously awaiting such a decision in order to use the event to bring pressure to bear upon the Tsar and his advisers. The victory over the democracies of Europe, which would lead to the even more important result in German domestic politics of fettering the German labouring and peasant classes for generations to come, depended upon winning a victory over the Russians before their industries were re-established for warlike purposes.

In his need the Kaiser turned to the man he had sent away—Hindenburg—and a few days after the battle on the San around Przemysl it was reported that Prince Henry of Prussia and the popular old Field-Marshal had

Digitized by Google





GERMANY'S HUGE WAR MACHINE.

The completeness of the huge German war machine is exemplified in the thoroughness of its searchlight service, of which we give two photographic illustrations, one of a section on the march, the other of a lamp being tested for use against aircraft. A full searchlight equipment was attached to each German army corps. The Brobdingnagian lamps were fitted on specially-built carriages, and a searchlight section on the road had the appearance of part of an artillery train.

gone to Libau, the important captured Russian seaport on the Baltic coast, to examine the position there and plan a combined naval and military campaign on the remote northern edge of the eastern battle-front.

Falkenhayn, with but partial success, had tried to retrieve the errors of Hindenburg. Hindenburg was entrusted with the task of remedying the lack of success in Falkenhayn's plan. This he proposed to do by repeating on a larger scale the movement towards Prasnysch and the Narew front, on the north-east of Warsaw, and combining it with an extension of his former attacks on the still more northerly Niemen line, between Kovno and Grodno. At the same time, in his discussions at Libau with Prince Henry of Prussia, the admiral of the German Baltic Fleet, Hindenburg designed an extraordinary prolongation of the German forces towards Riga, on the road to Petrograd, and the Riga assault by land was to be completed by action taken in the gulf with a strong German naval force.

Altogether, it was the most grandiose scheme of attack ever undertaken. The German and Austrian forces brought into action approached in number three million men. In its main outlines the campaign was based upon the plan made by the older Moltke for a war between Germany and Russia. The principal difference resided in the fact that Mackensen's group of armies, operating near Lemberg, were in a much better position than would have been a German force advancing from Silesia. Mackensen could strike directly up at Brest Litovsk, the chief entrenched camp in Russia, cutting the Ivangorod railway on his way, and thus facilitating the progress of the next advancing armies marching directly on Ivangorod and Warsaw.

Grandiose scheme of attack

The Russian Staff had for many years been aware of this tremendous scheme of attack, in which the forces of invasion advanced from the frontiers of Eastern Prussia on the one hand and along the Vistula on the other, gripping all Russian Poland in an enormous pair of pincers.

The Russians first proposed to crack the pincers by placing four great strongholds—Grodno, Novo Georgievsk, Ivangorod and Brest Litovsk—in the region of conflict where all the invading forces would most strongly co-operate. This fortress scheme—known as the Polish quadrilateral—was, however, abandoned after the experience gained at Port Arthur during the Manchurian war. Though a space of one hundred miles was left on the longer side of the fortressed region, for large armies to manœuvre in it while pivoting on the siege-guns in the strongholds, the new Russian school of strategists were averse from the plan. They put no faith in fortresses. They held it would be best to surrender Poland to the invader without a struggle, and meet him in a battle of manœuvres on the open field near the important railway-head of Brest Litovsk. This decision was arrived at in 1910. It much alarmed the French Staff. The French Chief of Staff thought that the value of the alliance with Russia would be seriously diminished if when war with Germany occurred the Russian Army stood on the defensive far away from its frontier, and thus allowed the Germans to mass their forces for a long period against the French armies.

Problems of Polish quadrilateral

There certainly was some solid ground for this objection. If Russia retired beyond the Polish quadrilateral without offering battle, leaving the Germans the easy task of fortifying and holding the Vistula line until France was beaten, the position of both Allies would in turn become extremely perilous. The extraordinary plan of opening the campaign by a great retreat was a skilful counter-move against the system of railways of invasion with which Moltke had surrounded the Russian frontier. But it was only valid in a war between Germany and Russia alone. In a struggle between Germany and Austria on the one part, and France and Russia on the other part, Russia was bound, in the common interest, to show from the beginning more activity, and strive at once for a decision. The upshot was that the scheme of an advance round Bessarabia into Galicia was prepared against the Austrians, and the Polish system of fortresses was retained as a means of delaying any encircling movement by the Germans from East Prussia and Silesia.

But after the enemy had forced the passage of the San River in June, 1915, the Russian Staff reverted to its former plan for a single-handed struggle with Germany. By then Russia had faithfully done all she could to help France. It was France that was hemmed in by the enemy along a fortified line, and Russia was left to face a mighty,

Digitized by Google

victorious host of Germans and Austrians, who were together much superior in numbers and gun-power to the first-line German armies that would have invaded Russia in a war without allies on either side. All thought of any stand in any fortress system was abandoned. Even the eventual loss of the important railway-head of Brest Litovsk was sadly contemplated as a possibility. The Russian public looked anxiously at the news from the Franco-British front, hoping that the enemy's lines there would suddenly be broken by a terrific assault, the success of which would completely relieve the pressure on their hard-pressed armies.

Russia's critical isolation

But the Russian Staff indulged in no such hopes after the news arrived of the indecisive results of the battles of Carency and Festubert. In regard to munitions, the French and British forces still remained inferior in productive power to Germany. They were not so badly off as Russia, but they were not in a position to undertake to provide four thousand guns on a narrow front with a stream of three millions of shells, such as Mackensen had employed. They could not yet equal the German achievement in artillery power. Even when using 300,000 shells in one day on a comparatively small section of the enemy's lines, they had not been able to produce the irresistible shattering effect like that at Gorlice. Therefore the Russian Staff, appreciating the situation, looked for little immediate assistance from the west.

On the other hand, the Dardanelles operations might have had an important bearing upon the solution of Russia's difficulties. Had someone in high command not muddled, early in 1915, the original design for a military surprise attack on Gallipoli in combination with a naval bombardment, Russia might have been assisted greatly by a new Balkan League, and a quick, direct line for sea-borne supplies from her Allies. As it was, the temporary failure of our subsequent attempts to capture the defences of the Dardanelles only tended to make Greece and Bulgaria doubtful of the outcome of the Great War. For some months our costly siege warfare in Gallipoli helped to lighten the pressure of the Turks against the Caucasian armies of Russia; but owing to the slow progress we had made by June, 1915, the Russian Staff could not then place much hope in any rapid, decisive victory in the Dardanelles. They had, indeed, thought of coming to our help there by landing an army in front of Constantinople. But this army had to be diverted into Galicia, when the Third Army fell back half shattered from the Dunajec line.

The siege warfare in Gallipoli

So neither from the south nor from the west was there any immediate prospect of Russia receiving assistance.



PART OF THE GREAT BATTLEFIELD IN POLAND, WHERE THE RUSSIAN TROOPS WERE DRIVEN BACK BY GENERAL VON MACKENSEN'S GRAND PHALANX.

The ground was almost denuded of trees by the shell fire of the opposing forces. Transport of heavy guns in this section of the eastern battle area was beset with extraordinary difficulties, but the Germans transformed the muddy, unmetalled roads of Poland into firm causeways, along which guns, ammunition, provision trains, and troops were able to move at a speed which surprised the Russian Staff.

Digitized by Google

She had, like France after the disaster of Charleroi, to dree her own weird, and seek by a fighting retreat to exhaust her victorious enemy. Between April 28th and June 1st, 1915, the Russian forces in Galicia had been diminished by about a quarter of a million casualties. The heaviest losses occurred among Dimitrieff's troops in the first days of May; but in the battles on the San, at the close of the month, General Ivanoff, despite the hurricane fire of the enemy's heavy artillery, greatly reduced the forces of Mackensen's Phalanx. This remarkable result was accomplished by skilful tactics and brilliant Staff work, backed by the cool, steady fighting power of the Russian infantryman. He retired from his entrenchments during the bombardment, and then returned to meet the infantry attack, and shot the Germans down by his own broken wire entanglements.

The battles along the San River

In the battles along the San River the German and Austrian infantry was patently beaten, and if General Ivanoff had only had half the number of shells used by the enemy, he would have won a decisive victory. As it was, he reckoned that he put out of action along the entire Galician front the extraordinary number of six hundred thousand hostile troops, his own losses amounting only to about half those of the enemy. Even if the German losses were overestimated, the severe shaking which the enemy received had the important result of maintaining the spirit of the southern Russian army, despite the depressing features which cannot be avoided in a long and difficult retreat. The Russian soldier felt what the British soldier had felt when he was being driven from Mons to the Marne. Far from being demoralised, he was certain that he could defeat the German soldier as soon as his gunners were able to meet the enemy gunners with something like an equality of weapons. In the meantime, however, the ordeal was dreadful, for Mackensen received continual reinforcements, which enabled him to retain half a million men on a narrow front in a formation recalling that of the Macedonian Phalanx.



MEMBERS OF THE GERMAN STAFF OBSERVING A CRITICAL ACTION IN THE FIGHTING ON THE RUSSIAN FRONT.

After the fall of Przemysl the position of the enemy forces was as follows: The army of the Archduke Joseph Ferdinand was held along the Lower San as far as Sieniava. Mackensen's army was advancing east of Jaroslav along the railway towards Ravaruska. Böhm Ermolli's army —mainly Austro-Hungarian—was fighting on the road to Lemberg, at the town of Mosciska. An army under Count Bothmer was working near the Dniester marshes. Beyond these marshes in the south, a group of armies under General Linsingen—mainly German in composition—had forced the passage of the Dniester at Zuravno, and was trying to advance on Lemberg and take on the flank General Ivanoff's main forces. Then in the Bukovina the army of General Pflanzer was fighting on the Pruth River, and trying to connect with Linsingen's right wing and take part in a grand flanking movement, which aimed at enveloping the southern Russian army.

On paper, the flanking movement along the Dniester was the most dangerous of all the operations against the Russians. Bothmer, Linsingen, and Pflanzer seemed about to win Lemberg by a quick, direct march from the south, that would leave the Archduke, Mackensen, and Böhm Ermolli little or nothing to do. But, as a matter of fact, both Linsingen and Pflanzer were more in danger of being annihilated than their opponents; for General Brussiloff, still commanding on the Dniester front under the direction of General Ivanoff, had been strongly reinforced from Kieff and Odessa. He really held his immediate enemies in his hand, and if only the advance of Mackensen's Phalanx could have been arrested, Brussiloff would have swept back to the Carpathian barrier.

There was a similar state of affairs in the northern section of the Galician battlefield. The Austrian army holding the western bank of the Lower San was at the mercy of Ivanoff's strong right wing. At the beginning of June the Archduke's front was broken at Rudnik, where an Austrian division was shattered, losing four thousand prisoners and a number of guns and Maxims. The Archduke's army was driven back for a day's march in the angle between the San and the Vistula Rivers, and German reserves had to be hurried up into the river angle to prevent an immediate disaster. The Austrian army of Böhm Ermolli also got into serious difficulties in trying to advance in the first week in June along the road from Przemysl to Lemberg. Its advance was stopped at the town of Mosciska, where a furious battle raged for a week.

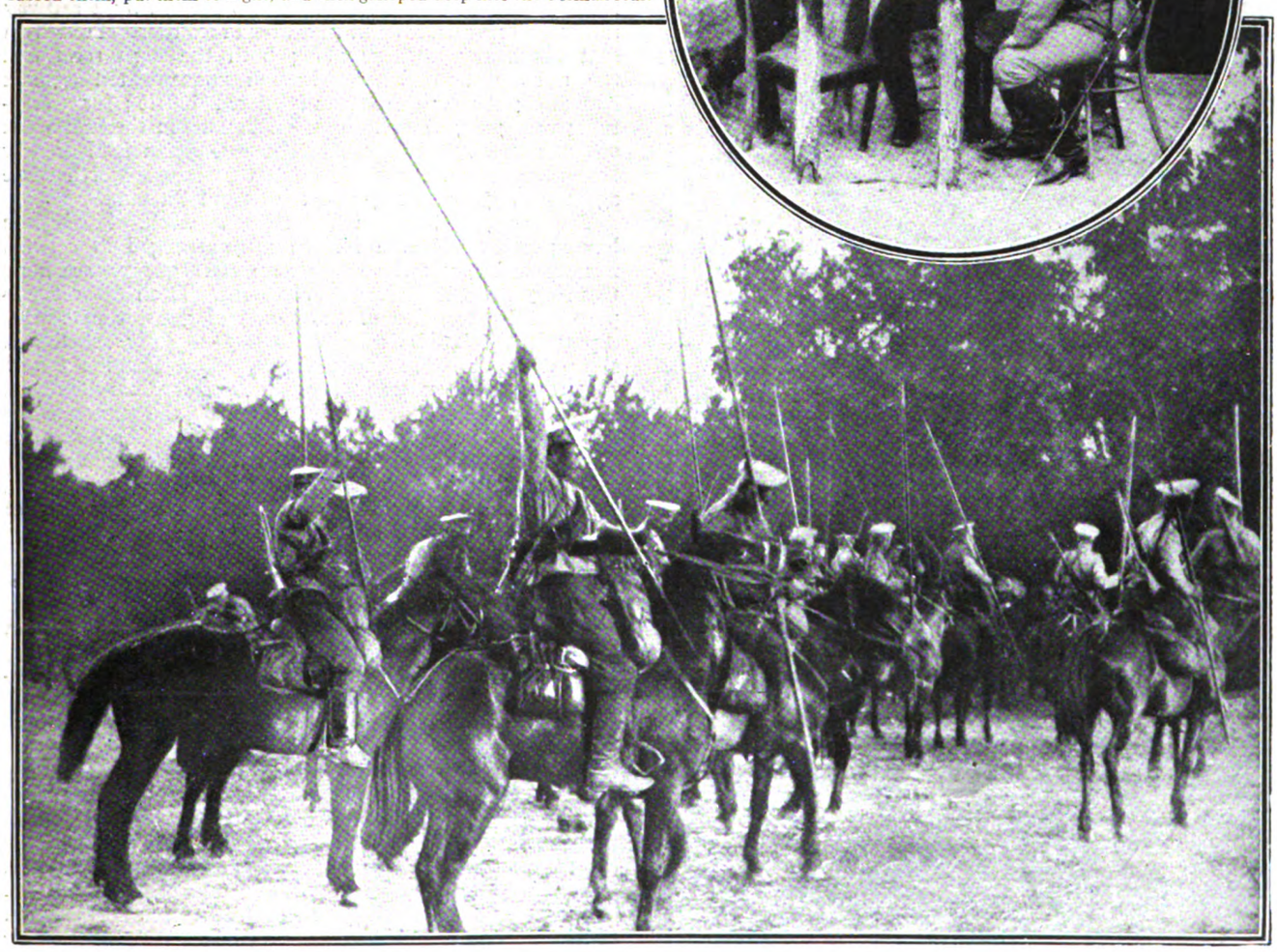
On the other hand, Mackensen's Phalanx, kept up to full strength by constant drafts and supplied with millions of high-explosive shells, continued to move forward and succour the Austrian armies on either side of it. A large number of Mackensen's heavy howitzers were hauled by motor traction towards the River Lubaczovka, in the direction of the town of Ravaruska. In other words, the Grand Phalanx turned away from the Lemberg road and struck out in a north-easterly direction, leading towards Brest Litovsk. Its path lay on the flank of the victorious Russian army holding the Lower San. This army had therefore to retire northward to the river line of the Tanev stream, and as it retired the Austrian Archduke's forces

Mackensen rescues Austrian armies

Digitized by Google



RUSSIAN CAVALRY ON THE MARCH IN GALICIA.
Russia's cavalry performed many notable exploits during the rearguard fighting in Galicia. After the German success at Lubaczov, in June, 1915, General Polodchenko's cavalry charged the victorious German infantry, sabred them, put them to flight, and then galloped deep into the German rear.



COMPANY OF RUSSIAN LANCERS HALTING FOR A REST NEAR A WOOD ON THE POLISH FRONT.
IN CIRCLE: RUSSIAN OFFICERS STUDYING PLANS—"SOMEWHERE IN POLAND."

Digitized by Google



A PICTURE FULL OF LIFE AND MOVEMENT. PHOTOGRAPH TAKEN IN THE RUSSIAN LINES AS A NUMBER OF CANNON CAPTURED FROM THE ENEMY WERE BEING BROUGHT IN

were able to recover from their defeat and follow it cautiously.

In Vienna this movement was acclaimed as a great victory for the Archduke Joseph Ferdinand. The Royal commander had been so continually unfortunate that any progress of his army was made the very most of in Vienna, where both the princes of the reigning House and the entire Austrian aristocracy had shown themselves to be so inefficient in war that the entire foundations of the national life of Austria-Hungary were badly shaken. As a matter of fact, Mackensen had done all the work and had rescued the Austrian army from another disaster. So the Prussian party in the southern Empire was able to justly claim that even the advance of the Archduke's army was only another argument in favour of allowing the Hohenzollern to become the masters of the Hapsburg territories.

Battle of the Lubaczovka

Mackensen also had to help the Austro-Hungarian forces under the Arab general Böhm Ermolli, for when Böhm Ermolli tried on the evening of June 4th to storm the Russian position at Moskisca by mass attacks of infantry he suffered such terrible losses that his troops could not be induced to go forward again. Like the troops of the Archduke Joseph Ferdinand, they had to wait until Mackensen turned the flank of the Russian position for them. This the German Field-Marshal did in one of the most violent conflicts of the war—the Battle of the Lubaczovka. The Lubaczovka is a tributary of the San, flowing down from the range of hills between Ravaruska and Lemberg. It is crossed near Jaroslav by a highway that runs in a north-easterly direction into the Lublin province of Russia; it is also crossed by a railway running to Ravaruska and the Russian frontier. Mackensen sent his heavy artillery along both the high road and the railway, and General Ivanoff concentrated against him along the river front and offered battle; for everything was going so well for the Russians in the first week of June on all other sectors of the Galician field of war that the Russian commander felt that it was worth while again testing the strength of the Grand Phalanx.

The struggle lasted more than a week. Mackensen having at least half a million men arranged in échelon formation, brought them up group after group, and flung them against the Russian river front. Each assault was prepared by the fire of thousands of guns, that hurled asphyxiating bombs as well as high-explosive shell and shrapnel on the Russian trenches. The Russian troops showed extraordinary endurance and extraordinary heroism, but they were gradually worn down by the succession of fresh forces brought against them. They had no rest day or night for more than a week, while the units of the Phalanx had each some days of respite from fighting after they had delivered their attack and been withdrawn into reserve. Sheer physical exhaustion at last incapacitated the Russian infantry, and it looked as though Mackensen would win, after six weeks' effort, the opportunity of striking a decisive blow at the Russian army. He had collected fifteen German army corps between the Lubaczovka and the Visznia Rivers, where his men outnumbered the Russians by more than three to one, in addition to possessing an artillery superiority of more than six to one. But the German commander had the same fault that had been observed in Kluck, Bülow and the Duke of Würtemberg in their combined advance through Northern France—he used his men like machines.

Ninety-six hours' exhausting struggle

Instead of husbanding their physical powers until the critical moment, he drove them forward all the time, wringing on all occasions the last ounce of energy out of them. When they were at last drawn back into reserve, they wanted a full week or more to recover. He showed none of the arts of the good jockey, who rides his horse in its natural stride during the earlier part of the race, and only whips and spurs it when the winning-

Digitized by Google



Copyright

MAP ILLUSTRATING THE RUSSIAN RETREAT FROM GALICIA IN THE SUMMER OF 1915.

Digitized by Google



RUSSIAN MACHINE-GUN IN ACTION.
A camera-record made by a journalist under fire. The gun was in operation in a Russian first-line trench in Poland.

post comes into sight. Mackensen whipped and spurred his men forward from the beginning to the end of the struggle. The result was that, when he threw the last of his fresh troops into the battlefield on Sunday morning, June 13th, 1915, the rest of his immense force was as outworn as was the Russian infantry. His fresh troops broke through the Russian lines west of the town of Lubaczov, and began a rapid advance in a northerly direction. The Russian infantry was entirely exhausted. It had been fighting for ninety-six hours without relief, and, like our First Army Corps in the neighbourhood of Le Cateau, the men had not enough strength left to march.

Russian cavalry's great feat

But at this moment—one of the most critical moments in Russian history—General Polodchenko rode out with three regiments of cavalry—the Don Cossacks, the Kinburn Dragoons, and the Chernigov Hussars. These cavalrymen charged the unbroken lines of victorious German infantry, sabred them, and put them to flight, and then galloped deep into the German rear, shook the enemy reserves, and captured five machine-guns. This extraordinary cavalry charge against unbroken infantry ranks among the greatest military exploits. The losses of the Dragoons, Hussars, and Cossacks only amounted to two hundred killed and wounded, but the force of their unexpected blow was such that it entirely checked the advance of the mighty German army; for Mackensen made no further attack that day on the exhausted Russian infantry, and the Russian commander was able to withdraw, with his front unbroken, towards the hills near Ravaruska.

The occasions on which cavalry has charged unbroken infantry since the introduction of breech-loading rifles are very few. They could almost be counted on the fingers of one hand. And when it is remembered that Mackensen's artillery corps amounted to 2,500 guns, to which had been added the great battering-ram of the mighty siege train of newly-built Austrian and German howitzers, the escape of the Russian cavalry brigade seems marvellous, and its success superhuman. Nothing but absolute desperation could have led General Polodchenko to attempt the stroke. And the incident throws a terrible light on the straits to which the Russian forces had been reduced in their six weeks' struggle against the Phalanx. Even when the exhausted infantry was saved as by a miracle from annihilation, the task with which General Ivanoff was faced was one of extreme difficulty. Yet he was practically victorious at every point except one. For while he had been fighting on the river between Jaroslav and Ravaruska, his southern armies had been completely victorious along the Dniester, and, as we have already seen, his northern army could at any time check the advance of the Archduke Joseph Ferdinand's forces. But as there was one weak link in the Russian chain, a further retirement was necessary.

The Archduke had to be allowed more opportunities for advancing, for it was necessary to weaken the Russian army opposed to him, by drawing off reinforcements to strengthen the Ravaruska front, and give the exhausted infantry there time to rest and recover. The forces opposed to Böhm Ermolli had also to be weakened for the same purpose of strengthening the Ravaruska position. And the Austrian army under Count Bothmer, which had just suffered a serious reverse at the town of Mikolaieff, about twenty-two miles due south of Lemberg, was also allowed a freer path when it turned to co-operate with Böhm Ermolli's forces at Komarno. But this process of weakening the stronger parts of the Russian front was balanced by a judicious choice of ground for the next battle. In between Przemysl and Lemberg was the famous lake line of Grodek, formed by a river running from north to south and flowing into the marshes of the Dniester. On a miniature scale the ground resembles that of the Masurian Lakes, and as the weather was very rainy the watery stretches and green swamps over which only four tracks ran, two of these being railway lines, needed but

Strengthening the Ravaruska front

Digitized by Google



[Russell & Sons.

Major-General Sir Sam Hughes, Canadian Minister of Militia.

Digitized by Google



Lord Kitchener watching effect of French shell fire near German lines.



British War Minister, M. Millerand, and General Joffre in advanced French trench.

Digitized by Google



Lord Kitchener meets General Baratier, who was with Col. Marchand at Fashoda in 1898.



British War Minister, M. Millerand, and General Joffre in North-Eastern France.

Digitized by Google

288
P



Storming of the farm-house and castle of the Count von Schieminski, near Jaroslav, by the Prussian Guard on May 16th, 1915.

Digitized by Google

few men for their defence. Then, about ten miles north of Grodek, the approaches to Lemberg were protected by entrenched hills that extended to Ravaruska. It was the firm stretch of fairly level ground round the town of Janov, north of the lake system and south of the hill country, which formed the weak point in the new Russian position. This stretch of open country had been seamed with trenches and hedged with wire entanglements, and the fresh troops brought from other parts of the front were massed there. Janov was also connected by railway with the Russian depot city of Rovno, and armoured trains with quick-firing guns were prepared for action.

But though the new Russian lines were marked by many unusual features of natural strength, General Ivanoff no longer thought of attempting to make any decisive stand against the march of the Phalanx. He did not intend to risk his armies in a battle for Lemberg. Lemberg was a city of both military and political importance. From the military point of view, it was highly valuable as a great railway centre, from which a web of railway lines radiated in all directions. From a political point of view, the loss of the capital of Galicia would be a severe blow to the prestige of Russia, would check the action of the Rumanians, and strengthen the German intrigues in Bulgaria and Greece. Lemberg certainly was worth fighting for, and if Ivanoff had had the guns he would have fought for it. But after the trial of strength with the Phalanx on the San and at Lubaczov, the Russian commander resolved that every apparent stand he made should be only a rearguard action on an important scale.



WITH THE ENEMY IN RUSSIAN POLAND.
Men of the Austrian Landsturm (reserves) in the trenches.

Though his army continued to fight with great fierceness, their fighting was only the smaller part of the work of the troops. Their most laborious task was that of making new field fortifications, step by step, every few miles beyond their front. In the end they seamed with trenches the vast stretch of country between the Vistula on the west, the Dniester on the south, and the Bug and its tributaries on the east and north-east. At every three to five miles the ground was broken by battle-lines, which, like the successive ripples of sand in a large shallow bay, showed where each wave of the slowly-advancing flood of invasion was temporarily checked. General Ivanoff, by means of his extraordinary series of defensive operations, reduced the campaign intended to break him into a war of attrition. At every three or five miles of his retreat he engaged the enemy forces, and fought them until Mackensen brought his siege artillery into action.

Ivanoff's masterly defensive

To the general public the spectacle of a retreat is a spectacle of disaster, for the common tendency of unenlightened opinion is to look on war as a game for points—geographical points. But from the military point of view the clash of great national armies tends at times to resemble naval strategy. So long as a fleet is intact and able to keep the sea, it does not matter over what vast distances it conducts its manœuvres of concentration, provided the concentration is effective. An army in being resembles a fleet in being, in the old and full sense of the term. So long as it retains its fighting cohesion and its power of manœuvring, the forces opposed to it must win a decision or fail of effect. Certainly there are some high advantages in conducting a forward driving movement, but at the end of a long campaign of this sort one thing counts, and one thing only—the fighting cohesion of the opposing forces, and the power of manœuvring which is derivable from their cohesion. A long and difficult retreat is the greatest of all tests of the genius of a commander and of the organising and co-operating qualities of all the Staff officers of his army. For this reason, the story of a successful retreat is the most illuminating and interesting of military histories. It has all the romance of a continual desperate fight against heavy odds, and this romance is enhanced by a display of science on the part of the general and endurance on the part of the troops which may in the end turn the retreat into a great military triumph.

Naval and military strategy

Digitized by Google

By reason of the German tendency to overweeningness, it was probable that they would despise the retreating Russians, even as they had despised the retreating French and British armies in the great drive towards Paris. Whenever a German Army general or a German divisional general imagined that he had exhausted his opponent, he had a tendency to become so over-confident that he would launch what he thought was a decisive infantry assault without proper artillery preparation. Kluck left hardly any guns to meet our army on the Marne, because he thought that he had demoralised our troops. The German and Austrian generals on the eastern front had a similar bias towards rapid action at any cost, at the hour in which they calculated a decision could be obtained. General Ivanoff and his subordinate commanders always watched for these moves of over-confidence in their opponents. It was indeed at these times that the Russians got the opportunity of more than balancing their losses from gun fire, by a succession of swift, punishing counter-strokes. In the battle for Lemberg, General Ivanoff only stayed long enough on his line of lakes and hills to take toll of the enemy's forces. His defensive positions enabled him to punish very severely the Austrian army under Böhm Ermolli, which was fighting directly west of Lemberg. There was especially a furious battle near Komarno, where an Austrian advance force tried to get through the Grodek lakes.

Furious battle near Komarno

It was beaten back by the Russian artillery about June 18th, and for the next three days there was a fierce struggle between the Austrian troops and the Russian forces holding the lakes. The Austrian attacks were broken, in spite of the terrific bombardment that heralded every infantry advance. The Austrians were repulsed on the river, the Russian infantry there being unexpectedly assisted by an excellent supply of both light and heavy shells railed down from Kieff. According to a German prisoner, the Austrian army lost nearly half its effectives in trying to penetrate through Grodek, and through Dornfield, fourteen miles south of Lemberg. But on Tuesday, June 22nd, 1915, Böhm Ermolli's shattered forces were able to march in triumph into Lemberg without a struggle.

It was Mackensen's Phalanx which again came to the help of the beaten Austrians. Mackensen had made a great turning movement in the region of Zolkiev, some seventeen miles north of Lemberg. He first attacked the Russian positions in the open country round Janov, and forced the Russians there across the hills and across the Ravaruska railway to Zolkiev. At the same time his left wing, which had been resting on the former battlefield of Lubaczov, tried to swing farther northward in a wheeling movement round and above Ravaruska. This wing movement was defeated in a series of terrible contests that ended in the Germans being flung back towards Lubaczov. But Mackensen's centre was so strong that it was impossible to arrest its advance except by a pitched battle. This, as we have already seen, General Ivanoff was determined to avoid. So he slowly gave ground on the hill line between Ravaruska and Lemberg, and withdrawing his troops from the city, he allowed the Austrian army to benefit by the pressure that Mackensen was exerting upon him in the north.

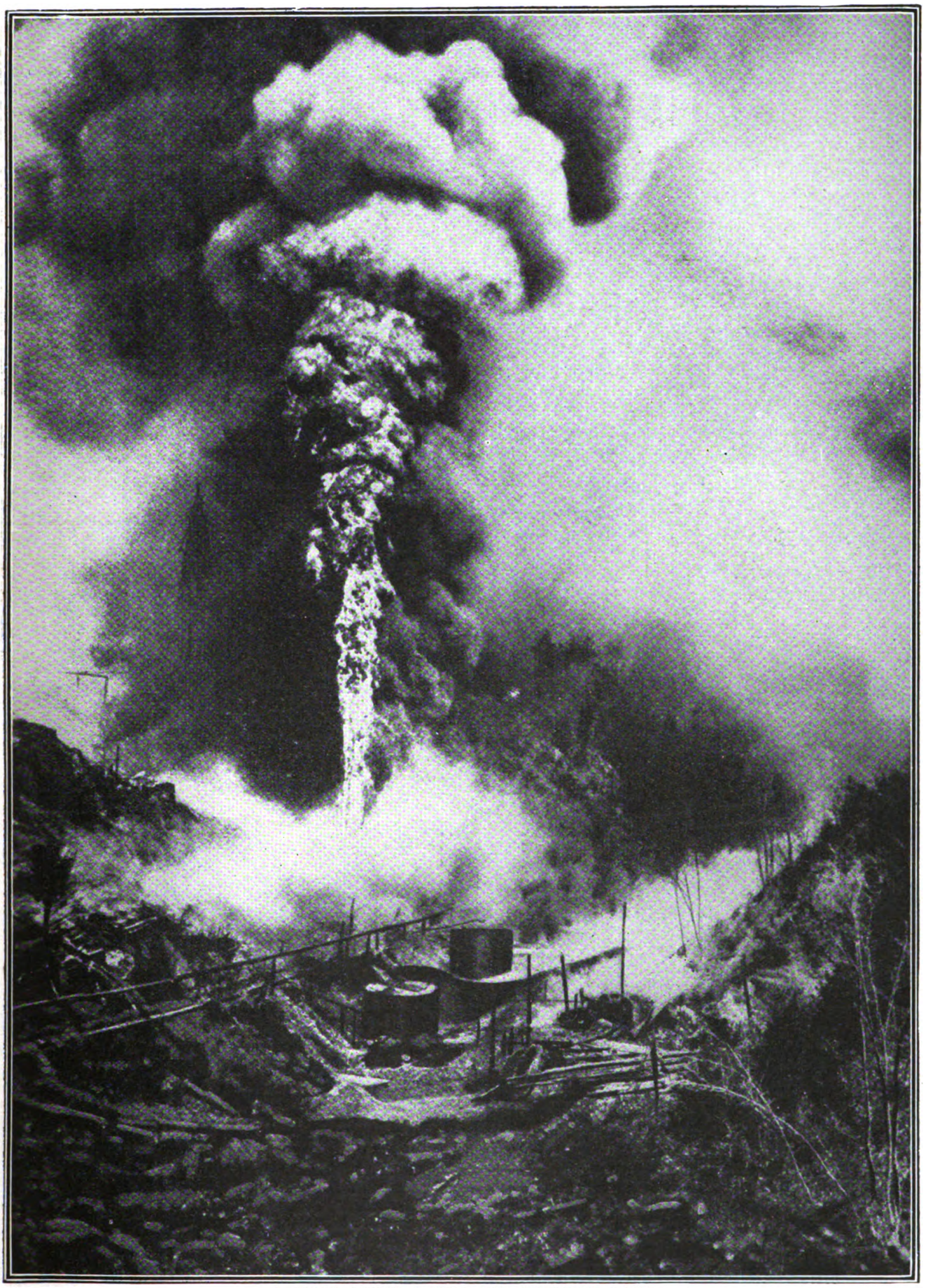
Ermolli's entry into Lemberg

Sufficient resistance, however, was maintained against all the enemy forces to enable Lemberg to be completely cleared of all war material. The stores were sent by railway into Russia, or conveyed by long strings of carts behind the retreating armies. The main body of the troops about Lemberg withdrew towards the river line of the Bug, while strong rearguards held up the enemy in the regions of Ravaruska, Zolkiev, and Bobrka. Böhm Ermolli, emboldened by the ease with which he had taken Lemberg, tried to follow up the retreating Russians along the railway lines. But the Russians violently counter-attacked his



GENERAL VIEW OF THE RUINS OF THE TOWN OF JOZEFOV, ON THE VISTULA.
Jozefov is situated in Russian territory between Kielce and Krasnik, a little to the north of the Galician frontier. Our picture shows Austrian captors driving cattle through the ruins.

Digitized by Google



A BLAZE WHICH LASTED FOR EIGHTEEN DAYS.

As in 1812 so in 1915, the Russians when compelled to retreat destroyed everything likely, if left, to prove of value to the foe. Above is a **remarkable view of oil-wells** in Galicia which were set alight by our allies and blazed for eighteen days, sending up pillars of smoke and flame, visible as far away as Bucharest, the capital of Rumania.

Digitized by Google



SOLDIERS OF THE TSAR.

Group of Russian soldiers, with towels and clean linen, awaiting their turn for a bath in the special Red Cross train which followed the Russian Army in the field, and was provided with bath-rooms, laundry, operating-rooms, etc.



A TYPICAL MUSCOVITE.

forces in the region south-east of Lemberg, and there broke another of his divisions which was trying to connect with the German armies on the Dniester under Bothmer and Linsingen.

On the same date the Grand Phalanx of Mackensen was also attacked between Zolkiev and Ravaruska. Around Ravaruska the Russians brought an armoured train into action in an unexpected manner, and broke a German division with the help of its quick-firing guns, making two thousand Germans prisoners, and capturing thirteen of their machine-guns. This series of magnificent rearguard actions checked the enemy's advance and enabled the southern Russian army, which had been holding the Dniester line, to avoid being outflanked.

Armoured train in action

After the fall of Lemberg most of the weight of the enemy's attacks fell upon the forces under General Brussiloff. All through the war Brussiloff had never been defeated. It was he who had done most of the work in capturing Lemberg in September, 1914, and it was his troops that had stormed the rampart of the Carpathians and invaded the Hungarian plain. Even when he had been compelled to retire from the mountain line to the Dniester front, he had trapped Linsingen's army and had put at least half of its effectives out of action. His last great victory at Zuravno had been achieved just after the loss of Przemysl by Ivanoff's troops at the beginning of June. All the next week he fought back the armies of Bothmer, Linsingen, and Pflanzer along the Dniester, from Zuravno to Nizniov, and along the Pruth River through Bukovina to the Russian frontier. There was a string of battles along a front of something like a hundred and fifty miles, following the looping, intricate course of the Dniester and its southern tributary streams. In many places the main river flowed in a large volume of water between high bluffs, making long winding turns, with only a narrow neck of high land between the eastern and western channels. The Russian troops entrenched with artillery across the neck of each bend. The enemy threw his forces over the river in the unoccupied part of the loop, with the result that this detached force broke against the Russian position, and was thrown back in deadly disorder to the river.

Fighting along the Dniester

It would be tedious to give the names of all the riverside villages at which the enemy vainly attempted to penetrate the southern Russian front. There were battles in forests, battles on the edge of the marshland, battles on the river cliffs, and at the towns where the railway lines from Hungary crossed the stream. All the battles ended in the same way—few of the enemy troops that crossed the river returned to their main armies, for Brussiloff had behind him the Tarnopol system of railways, and he was able quickly to manœuvre his troops and his artillery and reply to every move of the enemy. By the middle of June the German army under Linsingen was exhausted,

Digitized by Google

in spite of the fact that it had received a continual stream of reinforcements by the Stry railway, and the assistance of several divisions from Bothmer's forces.

The task of forcing the Dniester was then given to Pflanzer's army, which had been operating in the Bukovina. It advanced from the town of Kolomea over the hills to the hilly bend of the Dniester at Nizniov, where a railway line crossed the river. On the night of June 13th the Tyrolese rifles were annihilated by a Russian cavalry charge across the railway bridge. The next day Pflanzer brought up his heavy artillery and made an infantry attack under an arch of shell fire, and after a struggle of three days he captured Nizniov at a terrible cost of life. Then, in a violent effort, he pushed the Russians back from the river and captured some of the villages near the confluence of that famous northern tributary stream of the Dniester, the Zlota Lipa.

Tyrolese rifles annihilated

It was along the Zlota Lipa that Brussiloff had won his first important victory in the first Galician campaign in August, 1914. It was also along the Zlota Lipa that General Ivanoff had ordered the southern Russian army to make its final definite stand when the main Russian forces in Galicia had retired northward to the line of the Bug River. It was unfortunate for General Pflanzer that he had used all the main strength of his army in capturing a position which General Brussiloff needed, for the southern Russian army had not put out its strength in defending the bridge-head. It had acted against the Austrians under Pflanzer as it had acted against the Germans under Linsingen. It had allowed the enemy to capture the position with extraordinary loss of life, while firing from cover at the charging masses of infantry and pouring shrapnel at them, and then giving ground before the pressure became severe on its own front. Meanwhile, fresh field fortifications were being constructed across the river for the decisive stand of the Russian army, and train-loads of shells were being brought from Tarnopol for the principal battle.

General Brussiloff always contrived to make his decisive attacks when the enemy troops faced him with their backs to the river, and with only a few pontoon bridges behind them when they retreated. It was a simple device which he had repeatedly practised throughout the Dniester combats. He placed a few heavy howitzers of long range in a position to command the pontoon bridges of the enemy, and then waited for them to cross the river in great force before delivering his counter-stroke. It was by these annihilating tactics that he had wrecked Linsingen's army so completely that Linsingen's name disappeared at last from both the German and the Austrian daily communiqués. Pflanzer crossed the Dniester at Nizniov in great force on June 19th, but his troops were hemmed in between the

Linsingen's army shattered



THE FORTUNE OF WAR: AN EPISODE IN GALICIA.

Meeting between Russian prisoners proceeding under escort to the German rear and German Reserves on their way to the trenches. The German Reserves were wearing putties.

Digitized by Google



PATROL OF AUSTRIAN CAVALRY RECONNOITRING: A PICTURESQUE STUDY FROM THE SOUTH-EASTERN FRONT.

In order to save their horses in traversing this undulating country, the men are leading them downhill. The picture suggests poignant contrasts between the summer calm of nature and the storms of war.

Digitized by Google

deep windings of the river, and there bombarded furiously and swept by machine-gun and rifle fire for four days and nights. A remnant of some three thousand Austrians surrendered on June 22nd. On the same day Linsingen's army, which had also thrown large forces across the Dniester, higher up the stream near Zuravno, again met with an overwhelming disaster. The German troops were driven back to the river and forced into the water, where some managed to swim to the islands in the middle of the stream. Those who remained on the northern bank were captured.

This double blow at Linsingen and Pflanzer had an important effect upon the end of the Galician campaign. It entirely defeated the military aim of Mackensen. When he drove his Phalanx in a turning movement north of Lemberg, he confidently expected that Böhm Ermolli's troops would shake the retiring forces directly in front of them and throw them into confusion. Then it was designed that Bothmer's army should drive in from the south-east, while Linsingen and Pflanzer were engaging Brussiloff's army and driving it back from the Dniester front. As planned, the operations promised to achieve Mackensen's and Falkenhayn's long-considered plan for enveloping and destroying the southern Russian army. But owing to the strength of this army and to the genius of its commander, it shattered the forces brought against it, and became the pivot on which all the other Russian forces swung in their long movement of retirement.

The retreat on Halicz

The deep-sunken waters of the Zlota Lipa, running up to the range of hills east of Lemberg, close to the sources of the Bug River, were chosen as the final line of the Russian retreat in Galicia. The line left the Tarnopol railway and the Brody railway in Russian hands, giving rapid means of transit to Odessa and Kieff. But instead of withdrawing with all speed to this river line, General Brussiloff continued to harry the German and Austrian forces in front of him. Having thrown Linsingen over the Dniester, he swung away from the scene of his victory at Zuravno and joined in the attack on the central Austrian army at Bobrka, south-east of Lemberg. Here the battle raged until June 27th, when, after the enemy had been severely handled, a rearguard held the position until the main southern Russian forces were entrenched on the Gnila Lipa, a river a hard day's march eastward. It ran into the Dniester, and at its confluence was the town of Halicz, one of the famous battle-scenes in the first Galician campaign. During the retreat on Halicz, Linsingen made a final attempt to snatch a decisive victory, and sought with all his remaining troops and a large reinforcement from Germany to break across the Dniester and take the





WITH THE TROOPS OF FRANCIS JOSEPH: TRENCH VIEW IN ONE OF THE CARPATHIAN PASSES.
Above: Prisoners in the hands of the Austrians.

Digitized by Google



THE WAR IN THE GALICIAN OIL-FIELD AREA: A SCENE AT BORYSLAV.

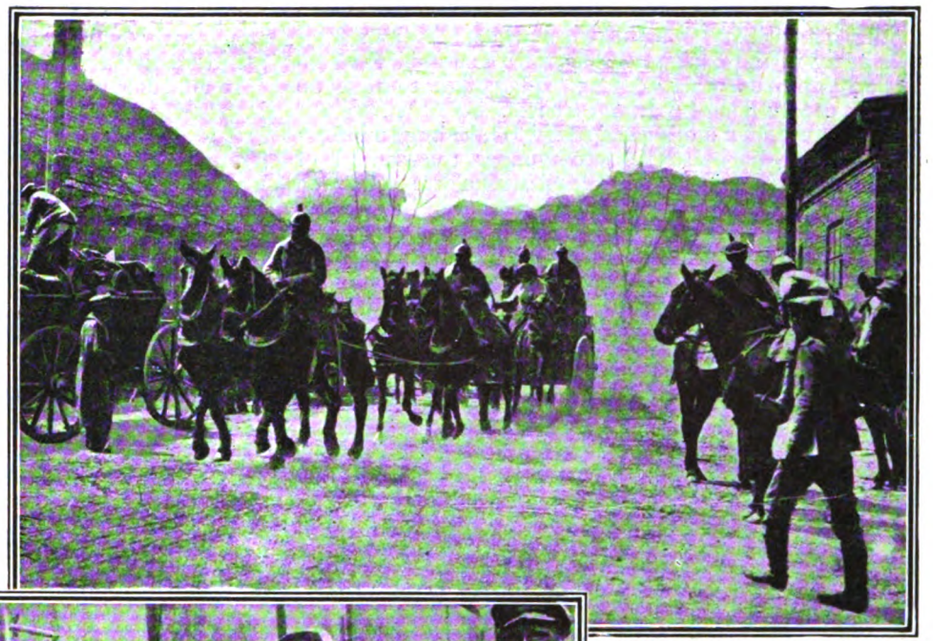
Boryslav, in Galicia, is a great centre of the Austro-Hungarian petroleum industry. The naphtha mines here were fired by the Russians to prevent them from being of service to the oncoming foe. Our photograph gives a vivid impression of the conflagration, which served as a formidable screen between the retiring Russian forces and the enemy

Digitized by Google

Russian army on the flank. In desperate fury, surpassing even his former attacks on the Stry, he launched division after division across the river. The men came on in close-packed columns in the old-fashioned Napoleonic manner, but the columns were wiped out with shrapnel and machine-gun fire by the Russian rearguard. The fiercest drives failed at a hundred paces from the defending trenches, and in their counter-attacks the Russians took large numbers of prisoners. Böhm Ermolli's army and Bothmer's army co-operated with Linsingen's forces in trying for a week to break through the rearguard of the southern Russian army. But by the night of July 3rd Brussiloff had effected a strong and orderly retirement from the Gnila Lipa to the Zlota Lipa, where a system of magnificent field fortifications enabled his army to hold out with ease for many months.

Cossack advance from Chotin

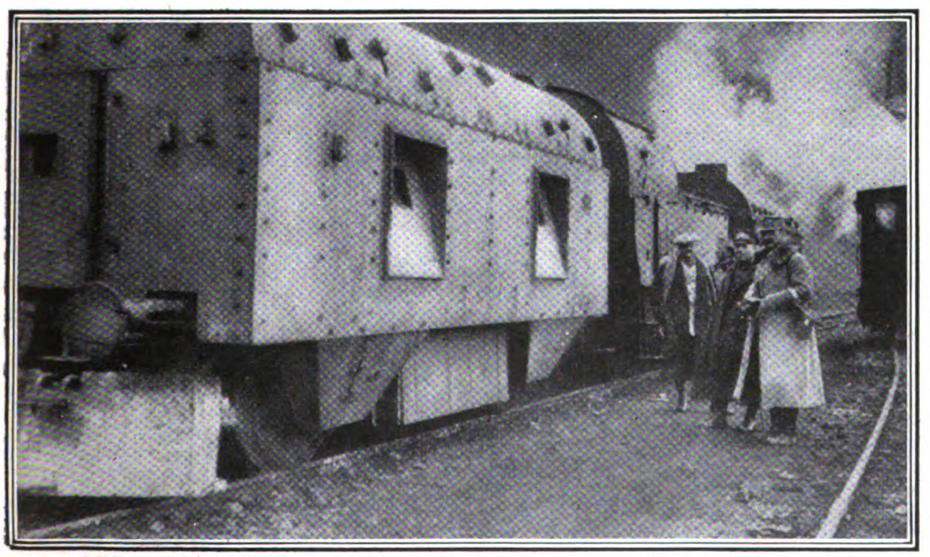
A victory by the extreme left wing of the southern Russian army helped to strengthen the general position. In the middle of June the Cossack forces operating in Bukovina retired to the frontier as a precautionary measure. But when General Ivanoff's troops were secure and there was no danger of the Russian line breaking, the Cossacks advanced from the region of Chotin, and delivered a succession of fierce actions south of the Dniester, and their driving force carried them in the last week of June within fifteen miles of Czernovitz. All regard to the damage done to the enemy, it was one of the most extraordinary retreats in history. The explanation was that Brussiloff's forces were full of fight, and capable of standing their ground against the three hostile armies operating on their front. When they were obliged to retire through the weakness of another part of the Russian line, they went back by forced marches to carefully chosen positions of great natural strength. At each of these positions they made a stand for several days, compelling the hostile infantry to advance across the open ground and attack them, while they themselves remained under cover with excellent artillery at their back. In each case the enemy paid the maximum price for the advance he made. When he had



GERMAN ARTILLERY GOING INTO ACTION NEAR GORLICE.



FEEDING GERMAN SOLDIERS IN PRZEMYSL.



AUSTRIAN ARMOURED TRAIN USED IN THE CARPATHIAN CAMPAIGN.

Brussiloff's historic retreat

General von Pflanzer's troops in this region were badly shaken. More than a month elapsed before they were sufficiently strengthened by reinforcements to attack again the Dniester line. The attack occurred about July 18th on a river-town just to the north of Bukovina, but it failed completely.

In the main field of struggle, from the Stry to the Zlota Lipa, General Brussiloff's army had conducted a fighting retreat for six weeks. In the course of this retreat it had taken 53,000 prisoners and had practically destroyed Linsingen's army. Having

Digitized by Google

been severely handled, a small rearguard was left to make another feint at a strong defence, while the main force stole away in the darkness at night to maintain the connection with the other retiring armies, and to take up another deadly line of natural defences.

It is not usual for a retreating army to take large numbers of prisoners; but all the forces under the control of General Ivanoff did so, for the Austrian troops which were used in all the attacking forces, and even brigaded in the Grand Phalanx under Mackensen's personal command, were dispirited. Even the recapture of Lemberg did not renew their confidence. As an Austrian officer explained: "The Germans have taken over our country, and are sole masters over all of us. They put us in the forefront, sacrificing us by thousands, while they keep close to their artillery. They simply use us to tire out the Russian defence, in order to facilitate their own attacks. We are doomed to die in any case, if not from the Russian bullet and bayonet, then from the Germans behind us. That is why we are indifferent to victory, and only too glad to be taken prisoners."

Austrians "doomed to die"

The Austrians also complained that they had to live in a half-starved manner on inferior food, while the Germans in Galicia insisted on being provided from Austria and Hungary with most liberal provisions. The discontent of the Austrian soldiers deepened when the news came of the outbreak of the war with Italy. Eleven companies of Tyrolese sharpshooters came out of their trenches on the Dniester front and offered themselves as prisoners. They may have been Italians of the Trentino region, disgusted at having to battle for the Germans and Austrians. By this defection of the Tyrolese the Russians won nearly eight miles of the enemy's defences, which greatly assisted them at a critical moment in the retreat.

In all, some two hundred miles of ground were lost from May 1st to July 3rd between the Dunajec and Gnila Lipa. The Russians continued to hold the country twenty-five miles east of Lemberg. Their lines ran from the Rumanian frontier along the Dniester as far as Nizniov. Thence they extended northward to Sokal, and continued along the marshy banks of the Bug towards Cholm, Lublin, and Brest Litovsk.

Germans shoot 5,000 prisoners

General Ivanoff threw only a weak force along the river swamps, for the ground there was so bad that the enemy could not make any progress over it. Owing to the incessant rains there were difficulties even in maintaining communications with the Headquarter's Staff. General Ivanoff's chief forces withdrew from Ravaruska along a new Russian railway running to Cholm. The railway is not marked on any map, as it was built in the autumn of 1914, after the Russian conquest of Galicia. This new railway was of inestimable value to the Russian commander; for, after the battle north of Lemberg, Mackensen swung his Phalanx up northward towards Cholm, instead of endeavouring to complete the entire reconquest of Galicia.

His German troops had suffered severe losses round Ravaruska, and in a frenzy of baffled anger they committed near that town the most shocking crime in modern military history. During the fighting they captured five thousand Russians, shot them all, and buried them in a huge, common grave. The Russian General Staff published

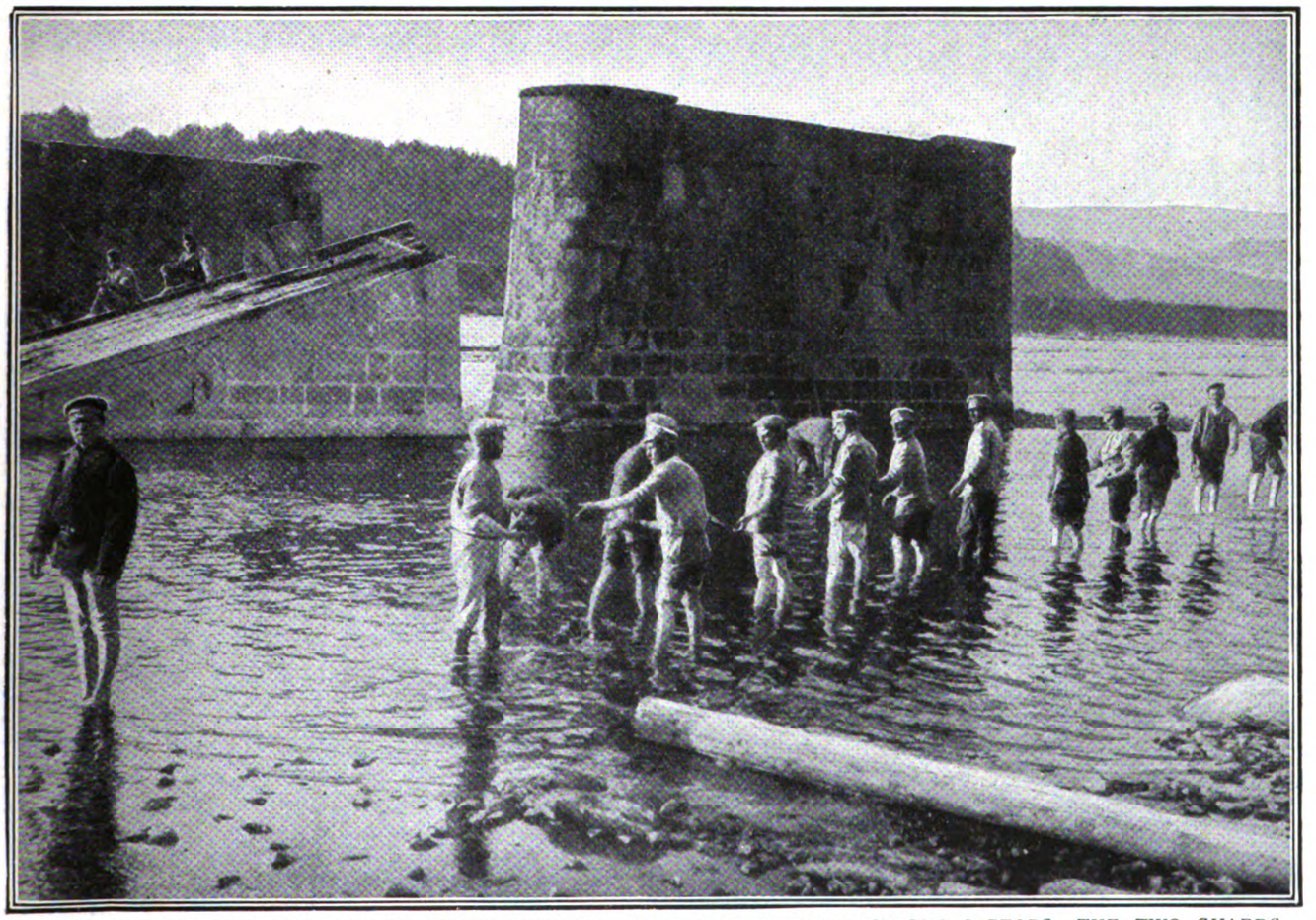


INTERIOR OF A TEXTILE FACTORY IN GALICIA WRECKED BY THE RUSSIANS TO PREVENT IT FROM BEING OF ANY USE TO MACKENSEN'S AND HINDENBURG'S GREAT ARMIES.

Digitized by Google



THE WORK OF MACKENSEN'S GRAND PHALANX: GERMAN OFFICERS CONTEMPLATING THE RUIN WROUGHT BY THEIR ADVANCE AGAINST THE RUSSIANS IN GALICIA.



RUSSIAN PRISONERS ENGAGED IN CONSTRUCTIONAL WORK FOR THEIR AUSTRIAN CAPTORS. THE TWO GUARDS SEEN IN THE BACKGROUND SEEM TO HAVE LOOKED UPON THEIR OWN TASK AS A LIGHT ONE.

Digitized by Google

a statement concerning this crime against humanity, based on statements made by soldiers belonging to the Sixth Austrian Army Corps. A multitude of five thousand prisoners cannot be murdered by wrathful privates of the line. A general's orders must have directed the deed, and as General Mackensen was in command the responsibility rested upon him. It was one of the chief things that the Russian people laid up in their memory for consideration on the settlement of the war. In other places on the fighting-line, single Russian soldiers falling into the hands of the Germans had been tortured and shockingly mutilated with a view to compelling them to reveal the position of their country's forces. This systematic resort to mediæval means of extracting information from prisoners seemed at the time to mark the limit of German barbarism. But the murder of a body of five thousand men proved that no limit could be set to the process of decivilisation in a people that still boasted of its morality and its culture.

Occupation of Tomaszov

After the fall of Lemberg the army of Mackensen remained for some time inactive near Ravaruska, after having been repulsed by the Russian force co-operating with an armoured train on June 25th. It was one of the usual halts of the Phalanx, necessitated by its immense expenditure of ammunition and the difficulty of obtaining sufficient shell for its thousands of guns. But towards the end of June the Phalanx, with fresh stores of shell, crossed the Russian frontier and began to advance between the River Wieprz and the River Bug. The town of Tomaszov was occupied on June 29th after a conflict with General Ivanoff's rearguard. This advance of the Germans enabled them to threaten a rear attack westward on the Russian forces opposing the Archduke Joseph Ferdinand's army, along the Tanev River. The Russians therefore withdrew from their Tanev front towards Lublin.

The third battle for Warsaw

This retirement of the western wing of General Ivanoff's army had a marked effect upon the armies of General Alexieff, which were defending Warsaw and Ivangorod in the great bend of the Vistula. Alexieff and Ivanoff had the broad, swift waters of the Vistula between them, and they had to keep strong forces in line across the river, to prevent the enemy on either bank from breaking through. No overlapping was possible. As Ivanoff's force retired under pressure from Mackensen's Phalanx, Alexieff's force had also to withdraw, to prevent the troops of the Archduke from crossing the river and getting on his rear.

Thus the decisive influence of Mackensen's movement began to extend in an enormous manner. From a position only a few miles north of the boundary of Eastern Galicia, it was able to shake the Russian line near Warsaw and, in particular, to compel the retreat of the Russian army on the Pilica, nearly two hundred miles east of the point at which he was striking. Such was the beginning of the third battle for Warsaw, which was to prove more successful than all the furious direct rushes that Hindenburg had made upon the ancient capital of Poland. Mackensen was undoubtedly an abler strategist than the older German commander, under whom he had risen to distinction. His plan of attack was well made and carried out in a strong manner. But it had the defect of needing so enormous a train of heavy artillery that its movement of advance was extremely slow. It had taken him exactly two months to advance from Gorlice across Western Galicia to Tomaszov, the distance between the two towns in a straight line being under one hundred and twenty miles. It was not much more than an average of two miles a day. It was still a long, long way to Moscow by the Mackensen-Falkenhayn method, and Hindenburg and Prince Henry of Prussia hoped to find a quicker path to Petrograd.



GERMAN PIONEERS REPAIRING THE BRIDGE BETWEEN THE OLD CITY OF WARSAW AND PRAGA SUBURB.

Digitized by Google



AWAITING THE ARRIVAL OF PRINCE LEOPOLD IN WARSAW.

CHAPTER LXXVII.

THE GIGANTIC ATTEMPT TO ENVELOP THE RUSSIAN ARMIES.

German Plan for Annexing Baltic Provinces—Cavalry Raid into Courland and Capture of Libau—Petrograd Army Makes a Counter-Attack—Prince Henry of Prussia Tries to Take Riga from the Sea—Terrible Hand-to-Hand Struggle on the Dubissa—Another German Squadron Defeated near Gulf of Riga—Germans Make a More Violent Attempt by Land—Russky again Successfully Counter-Attacks—Great Naval Battle in the Gulf of Riga—Success of British Submarines—Migration of Letts and Lithuanians—Hindenburg's Grandiose Plan to Capture Central Russian Armies—Austrian Archduke Defeated at Krasnik—Hindenburg Batters at the Russian Flank—The Doom of Warsaw—The Most Dramatic Situation in History—Hindenburg and Mackensen, with Two Million Men, Try to "Sedan" the Russian Armies—Hindenburg is Defeated on the Narew Front—Mackensen Comes to his Help by Breaking the Russian Railway Line—Woyrsch Cuts the Russian Front between Warsaw and Ivangorod—Extraordinary Migration of the Polish Nation—Fall of Warsaw and Ivangorod—Kaiser Wilhelm Offers Terms to Russia—Sublime Spirit of the Russian People—Why the Kaiser had to Continue to Advance after he Won the Vistula—Wonderful Spread of the Democratic Movement in Russia.

ON April 30th, 1915, when Mackensen was making his first attempt to break and envelop the Russian armies on the Carpathian front, an important movement occurred at a point some four hundred miles distant from the extreme left wing of the Teutonic forces. A German army corps, screened by all the available cavalry of the Central Empires, made a great raid across Lithuania into Courland. In the first week in May the raiders penetrated a hundred and twenty miles into Russian territory and menaced Riga. They won a victory over the small Russian forces of defence near the town of Shavli, lying midway on the railway running from Tilsit to Riga. A German cruiser squadron, based on Dantzic, co-operated in the flat Baltic coast with the wing of the German land forces. By means of a combined naval and military attack, the valuable commercial port of Libau was captured by the enemy on May 8th. The next day the German squadron appeared at the port of Windau, which lies more to the north, and soon afterward reconnoitring destroyers adventured into the Gulf of Riga.

At first the general opinion of the Russians was that the enemy intended merely a diversion and a plundering expedition. The German advance over the Niemen seemed to have been made in reply to the Russian dash on Memel, described in a previous chapter. Even when the pressure of the hostile forces became heavy, the movement was thought to be only an attempt to capture forage and grain stores, and attract to the Baltic provinces some of the fresh Russian troops needed on the Galician battlefields. This, however, was a mistaken view. The German Staff proposed to conquer the country, partly for a strategical purpose and partly in the hope of being able to occupy it permanently. The German people seriously considered that their work of annexation in the west, accomplished in 1870 by the seizure of Alsace and Lorraine, needed to be rounded off in the north-east—in Lithuania, Courland, and Livonia—before the complete unity of the German Empire was achieved. This had for years been popularly regarded in Germany as one of the main objects in a war with Russia, and the modern German school of political historians had forged beforehand all the evidence for the right of annexation.



ADMIRAL GREGOROVITCH.
Russian Minister of Marine. To his energy and initiative was largely due the renaissance of the Russian Navy after the Russo-Japanese War.

There was nothing in common between the people of the Baltic provinces and the Teutonic race. The people were Lithuanians and Letts, using a language of their own, which was the most ancient of all Indo-European forms of

Digitized by Google



GOADED INTO SACRIFICE BY THE IRON WHIP OF THE PRUSSIAN HIERARCHY.

Austrian Generals taking observations from a trench in Poland. Whatever may have been Austria's part in precipitating the world-war, her armies, as hostilities progressed, moved more and more at the dictation of her ally. An Austrian officer declared: "The Germans have taken over our country and are sole masters over all of us. They put us in the forefront, sacrificing us by thousands, while they keep close to their artillery."



HAPPY ENOUGH FOR THE TIME BEING.

Austrian officer's sleeping quarters in the field.

speech—more ancient than the Sanscrit of the Hindus. They were, however, related to the real Prussians who form the large serf element in modern Prussia. Like their Prussian kinsmen, they had been conquered in the thirteenth century by bands of German knights, who converted them to Christianity and reduced them to a state of serfdom. From these conquering knights were descended the German nobles of the Baltic provinces of Russia. These nobles had fought for seven centuries for their own hand, accepting any strong master—Bohemian king, Polish king, Swedish king, or Russian Tsar—so long as they were allowed to hold the native peasantry in utter serfdom. They had been well content with Russian rule until the Tsar took measures to raise all the peasants of the Empire from a state of serfdom. The German nobles of the Baltic provinces then became the leaders and inspirers of all reactionary movements in Russia. They fought against every current of liberalising force, and played the principal part in Prussianising the Russian system of bureaucratic government. They wanted to retain over their own peasants the same power as the Prussian squire retained over the people his forefathers had enslaved.

German influence in Baltic provinces

Sowing the seeds of reaction

When Russia generally began to turn to democratic France and democratic Britain for inspiration in the art of reforming her institutions, the German military settlers in the Baltic provinces appear to have considered that, in the last resort, they would stand to gain by the German conquest of their country. Some of these men had displayed remarkable skill in war during the Manchurian campaign. Thereby they won important commands at the beginning of the present war; but in spite of their former achievements against the Japanese, they failed in an extraordinary way when they were placed at the head of Russian armies to fight the Austrian and the German. Soon after the outbreak of the war the Austrians won an easy victory in the Lublin Province against a Russian force commanded by a German baron. But when this same Russian force was placed under a Russian commander, it enveloped and shattered two hosts of invaders. Another German baron of the Baltic provinces, General Rennenkampf, was more subtly unfortunate. The Russian commanders who acted with him were defeated, but Rennenkampf himself did not patently fail until he was entrusted with the task of completing the encirclement of Mackensen's force near Lodz, when he invalidated a superb manœuvre on the part of General Russky by not marching his troops to the battlefield at the appointed time.

We do not, of course, intend to imply that there was no loyalty to Russia in the German military caste of the Baltic provinces, for after the removal of Rennenkampf,

Digitized by Google

other distinguished German barons were entrusted with important duties by the Grand Duke and the Tsar. But there can be little doubt that a considerable part of the German element in Russia had been prepared, in the three years previous to the outbreak of hostilities, to work for the weakening of the Russian Empire and the annexation of the ancient dominions of the Brethren of the Sword and the Teutonic Order.

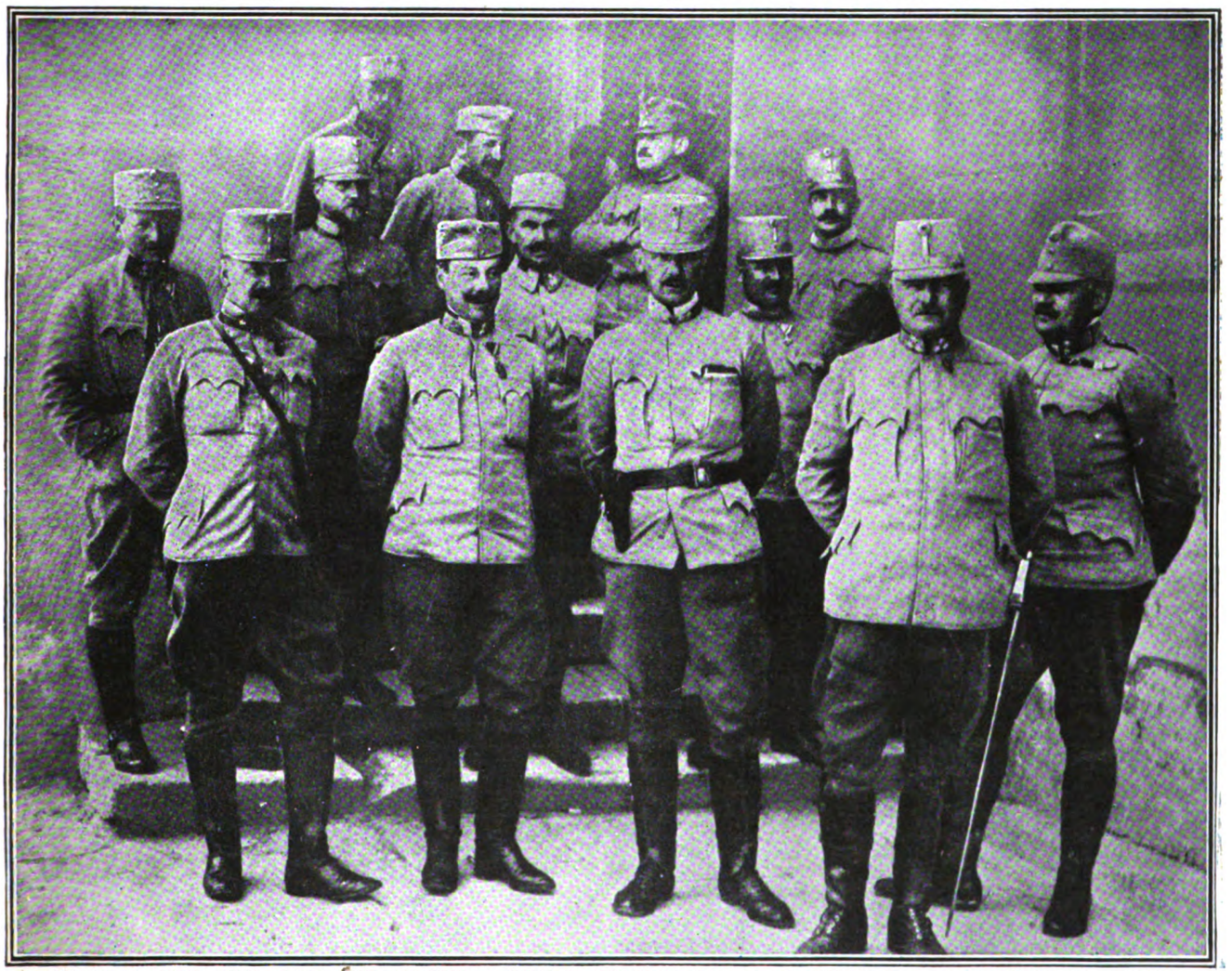
The loss of Libau

When the German Staff had at last, as it thought, stretched the Russian power of resistance to breaking-point in Galicia, and then broken it, the campaign for the conquest of the Baltic provinces was developed with swift and striking force.

It is difficult to say whether anything more was intended at first than the occupation of the country as far as Riga, for the forces used at the beginning of May were too small to threaten a great turning movement between Kovno and Riga against the railway communications between Warsaw and Petrograd. Throughout the critical period of the struggle between Warsaw and Brest Litovsk, the German army between Kovno and Riga, though strongly reinforced, struck no blow eastward of decisive importance. This, however, may have been due more to the skilful counter-movements made by the Russian army in the Baltic provinces than to a lack of grandiose unity of plan in all the manœuvres of the Austro-German forces between Riga on the Baltic and Chotin near the Rumanian frontier.

The loss of Libau on May 8th was a serious blow, for the port was a large centre of trade and manufacture, and was usually free from ice throughout the year. The Government had constructed on the narrow sandy peninsula an extensive system of moles and breakwaters for sheltering the Russian war fleet; and though the naval fortifications had been dismantled in recent years owing to the Russian Baltic Fleet being unprepared to hold the inland sea, the great harbour was a useful advanced base for the German warships, which had been operating from Dantzic. Libau became a menace to Riga. But on the day on which the former port fell, a Russian army advanced from Mitau, near Riga, and speedily forced back the invaders. The Germans had constructed a fortified position south of Mitau, but a rapid flanking movement compelled them to hurriedly retreat and leave a large amount of war material in the hands of the Russians. Then on a broad front the Russians closed round the German land forces between Riga and Kovno. A regiment of the ubiquitous Prussian Guard, brought from the British front to co-operate with a division of Bavarian cavalry, was advancing against the railway to Petrograd. The Germans had enveloped part of the Russian line of defence, the Bavarian horsemen having reached the rear of the Russian troops. But before the invaders could achieve their victory, they were suddenly taken in flank by a hard-riding Cossack force. The Bavarians were broken and scattered, and in their disorderly flight they dragged the Prussian Guard along with them for some twenty miles.

Invaders forced to retreat



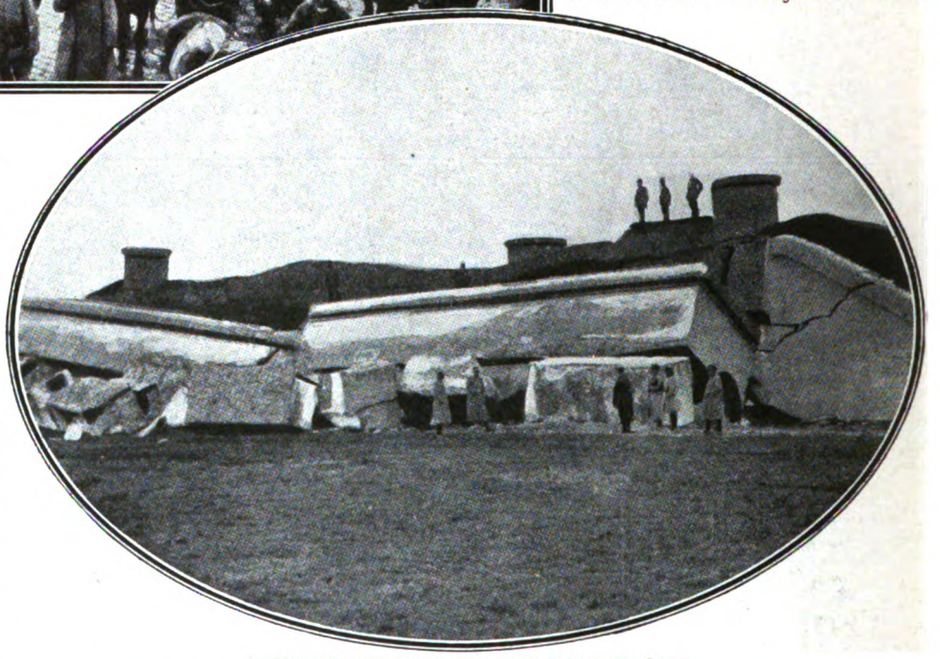
GENERAL VON PUCHALLO, ONE OF THE AUSTRIAN COMMANDERS, AND HIS STAFF. A PHOTOGRAPH TAKEN IN A RUSSIAN TOWN.

During the fighting retreat of the Russian forces in Galicia the Austrian commanders did not appear to have distinguished themselves. The German Field-Marshal von Mackensen had to rescue Austrian armies on either side of him.

Digitized by Google



THE PRUSSIAN INVASION OF COURLAND.
German troops massed on the quay at the seaport of Libau.



ADVANCE OF THE ENEMY INTO RUSSIA.
Blown-up forts on the east front of Libau abandoned by the Russians in May, 1915.

So Below had to wait until the training of the German reserves was sufficiently completed to enable his army to be trebled in number. Meanwhile he tried to relieve the general pressure on his front by concentrating a force and launching it swiftly across the Dubissa to the north-east of Kovno. But his troops were again thrown back over the river on May 23rd. In turn the Russian general massed against the German line near Shavli and broke it on May 28th, capturing nine guns and large stores. The town in which the Germans were lodged was set on fire and after being burned out of their position, the invaders were caught by a force of mounted Cossacks and sabred as they ran. By the end of the month of May it was clear that the land attack on Riga had for the moment failed. Yet it was then that the first of the extraordinary attempts to transport troops into the Gulf of Riga north of the city was undertaken. In the morning of June 3rd a German destroyer flotilla, scouting in advance of its cruiser squadron, tried to enter the gulf. But the Russians had one old, useful battleship in the wide shallow bay, together with a destroyer and submarine force. The Russian warships were attacked by enemy seaplanes, but all the aerial bombs missed their targets, and the airmen were driven off by anti-aircraft guns. There then followed one of those obscure engagements about which the Russian Admiralty gave scarcely any particulars, and about which the enemy remained quite silent. Some of the German ships were led into a mine-field, and also attacked by submarines. According to the official Russian statement, three German ships were either sunk or put out of action, but the names of the vessels were not given.

Riga and Windau attacked

The attempt to force the passage through the Gulf of Riga lasted from June 3rd to June 6th, and it was apparently during this attack that a small, old-fashioned Russian submarine had a stroke of luck. It had been

General von Below, the hostile commander, tried to counteract this check to his main raiding force by massing against the Russian centre at Shavli. But instead of retreating at this point, the Russians joined battle on May 10th and drove the Germans out of the town. Next day the enemy returned with still larger forces and tried to recapture Shavli; for this was the most important road and railway centre in the Lithuanian province, and possession of it was vital to the German plan of campaign. Five times during the night the German infantrymen tried to storm the Russian lines, but on each occasion they were shattered. Despairing of carrying the city by a frontal attack, Below sent out at dawn a strong outflanking column. But the column was ambushed, losing five of its guns and many prisoners. Then on May 14th came a shrewd Russian stroke, which cleared the greater part of the province of the invaders. In a series of fierce fights over the flat country, densely wooded and full of lakes and marshes, the German forces were thrown back over the Windau and Dubissa Rivers. Their trenches on the Dubissa were carried at the point of the bayonet, some thousands of prisoners being taken, among them being Saxon and Bavarian infantry regiments from the French front. Apparently it had been the intention of the German Staff to draw a large number of veteran troops from France and Flanders in order to achieve the conquest of Courland and menace Petrograd. But the furious attacks delivered by French and British troops around Lille and Lens, and in particular the progress which General Foch made around Carency all through May and June, entirely upset this plan. Far from being able to let any troops go, the Crown Prince of Bavaria had to ask for an additional quarter of a million men in order to make a stand at Souchez.

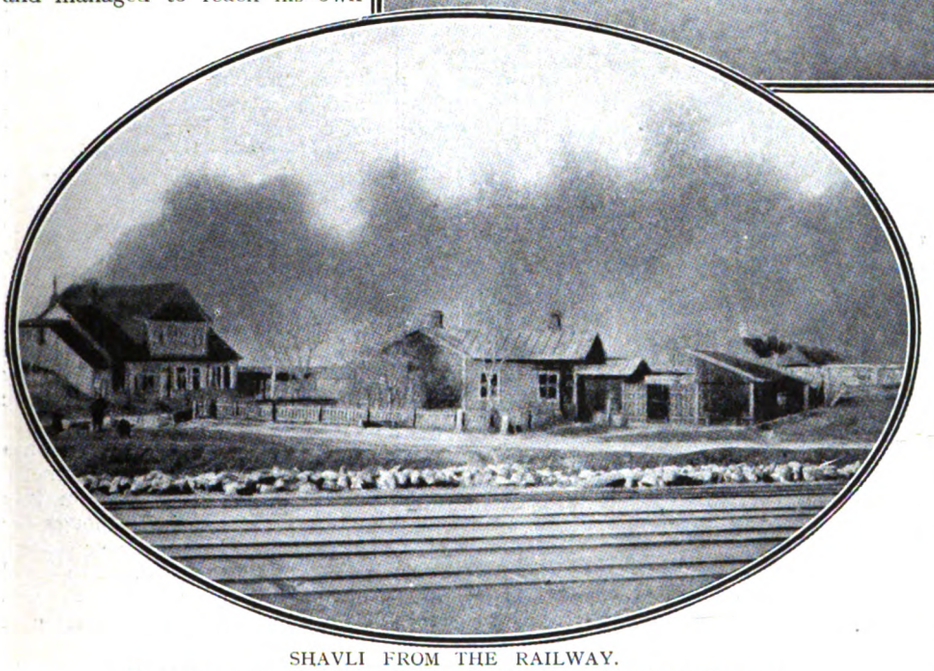
The struggle around Shavli

Digitized by Google

lying for weeks in the narrow sea-way near the entrance to the gulf, watching for something to happen. It rested on the bottom of the deep passage, where it had to rise at least three times a day to get air, being one of the little petrol-engine boats that only stayed for a few hours under water. But at last as it lifted its periscope it saw two modern German battleships close at hand making the passage. The Russian lieutenant fired two torpedoes into the leading ship, and certainly exploded something, but he could not discern what had happened, for his single periscope was shattered just as the second torpedo was released. He dived for safety, and when forced at last to rise he found no enemy in sight, and managed to reach his own



COURIERS OF "KULTUR."
German cavalry entering the conquered town of Shavli, in Courland.



SHAVLI FROM THE RAILWAY.
The railway-station was set on fire by the Russians before their retirement.

port. Again on June 28th a German naval force, consisting of an old battleship of the Siegfried type, with four light cruisers and a vanguard of destroyers, made an attack on the Baltic coast at Windau. The town was only defended by a company or two of territorial troops, as the Russian general kept the line of his army some seventy miles west of the coast for reasons of strategy. He could not risk having part of his forces cut off in a corner, so he concentrated on the inland rivers, between Riga and Kovno. Windau remained an apparently undefended coast-town like Libau. But when a landing-party of German Marines dashed into Windau, after the port had been bombarded, a flotilla of Russian destroyers steamed up and opened fire. The German admiral was alarmed, though not so much at the destroyers as at the thought that there would be a strong Russian naval force behind the sea-scouts. He put his ships about abruptly, and went southward; and the landing-party had to undergo a severe shelling before it regained the ships.

Terrible fighting on the Dubissa

Meanwhile the land battle continued to rage with extreme fury along the River Dubissa, a tributary stream which flows into the Niemen west of Kovno At the little Lithuanian town of Rossieny the stream shallows for half a mile, so that it can be crossed on foot. Here General von Below's troops, increased at the beginning of June to three army corps (130,000), stubbornly tried to break the Russian front in another long, desperate struggle. By the pressure of close masses they bore the Russians back over the stream. The Russian commander threw more of his men into the fight, and after spraying the enemy with shrapnel, delivered a bayonet attack.

The enemy was driven over the river, and every man who fell, even slightly wounded, was drowned, as, though the stream was shallow, its current was too strong for an injured man to contend against it. Then it was the turn of the Russians to retire, as the German commander brought new forces into the field. Five times that dreadful day did the Dubissa change hands. The effect of the struggle was ghastly; the river was dammed with bodies; the dead men formed at last a causeway over the waters; and in the evening the Russian gun-teams galloped across this human bridge and achieved the hard-fought victory by pouring shells on the Germans.

A causeway of dead men

At the end of the first week of June the hostile army commander, General von Below, was again reinforced, his forces being increased to nine divisions (150,000 men). But, though he did not know it at the time, he was contending against one of the best minds in Russia—General Russky, the man who broke the Austro-Hungarian first-line armies, and afterwards trapped Mackensen near Lodz. Russky had been compelled to give up the command of the armies in the bend of the Vistula owing to a very serious illness. But in the spring of 1915 he recovered sufficient health to take over the control of the Petrograd army.

It was first thought that he would not have to lead his new troops into active service for several months, by

Digitized by Google

which time his health would be quite re-established. But the menace to Riga and Livonia, with the indirect threat at Petrograd itself, brought Russky in person into the new battlefield. His chief object seems to have been to economise his forces. He did not want to launch all the Petrograd army into Courland, and win a cheap victory there, while the Germans and Austrians were massing in a more critical direction farther south for a decisive blow at Ivanoff's or Alexeieff's armies. Russky had to stand ready to reinforce other parts of the front in case of need. So he only put into Courland sufficient troops to hold the line running from Kovno to Riga. But at the same time he guarded against any surprise attack on this line by maintaining a more forward first position along the Dubissa and Windau Rivers. Only as the pressure of the enemy definitely increased against his forces there did he throw more men into the field.

Fighting went on continuously along the river-line until July 13th without any important change of position occurring. Then Below was again reinforced, so that his command became one of the strongest army groups on the eastern front. Nearly 400,000 men seem at last to have been put under his orders. As already explained, Hindenburg and Prince Henry of Prussia met at Libau on June 19th, and there planned a combined military and naval scheme of operations. The idea seems to have been to advance through Riga on to Petrograd, and then, by the capture of the Russian capital, to drive the Russian Fleet to accept battle in the Baltic against a superior German naval force. But the new naval operations, directed by Prince Henry as admiral of the German Baltic squadron, did not open happily. On July 2nd a detachment of German ships went steaming towards the Riga Gulf in a dense fog. It was caught by a more powerful Russian cruiser squadron. The German ships consisted of a cruiser of the Augsburg type, the light cruiser Albatross, fitted up for mine-laying, and three destroyers. They were seen off the Swedish island of Gothland at 7.35 a.m., at a distance of twenty-three leagues from the coast.

German design against Petrograd



THE CHART OF DESTINY.

Officers of the Russian Headquarters Staff studying a large-scale map of the eastern war area. The Great War made the following of the late Lord Salisbury's advice, "Study large maps," a matter of grim necessity.

The main opening into the Gulf of Riga lies opposite the northern part of Gothland, so the German design was evident. But in spite of the fog, which greatly hampered the fire of the Russian gunners, the engagement was fiercely maintained for half an hour. The cruiser of the Augsburg class then fled southward, profiting by her speed and the thick mist, and the Russian ships massed their guns upon the Albatross. The three German torpedo-boats emitted clouds of smoke in order to screen the light cruiser from the Russian gunners. But the Russians maintained a destructive fire, and at nine o'clock in the morning the Albatross lowered her flag and steamed toward the coast. The Russians at once ceased firing at their sinking enemy, and the crippled ship was beached six leagues from Ostergarn Lighthouse.

British submarine's brilliant feat

Thus ended the second naval attempt upon Riga, the defeat of the advanced force of light cruisers and destroyers being seriously aggravated by the brilliant feat of a British submarine officer, Commander Max K. Horton, who on July 2nd torpedoed and sank the valuable pre-Dreadnought battleship Pommern. The Pommern, with her four 11 in. guns, her sixteen 6·7 in. guns, six torpedo-tubes, and crew of seven hundred and twenty-nine men, was part of the main German naval force detached for the Riga Gulf operations. She was sunk by the British submarine a day after the Russian cruisers defeated the German light cruiser force scouting in advance of the German battleships. The loss of a good battleship of the 1905 class and a light cruiser seems to have been a serious check to Prince Henry of Prussia's part in the Baltic campaign.

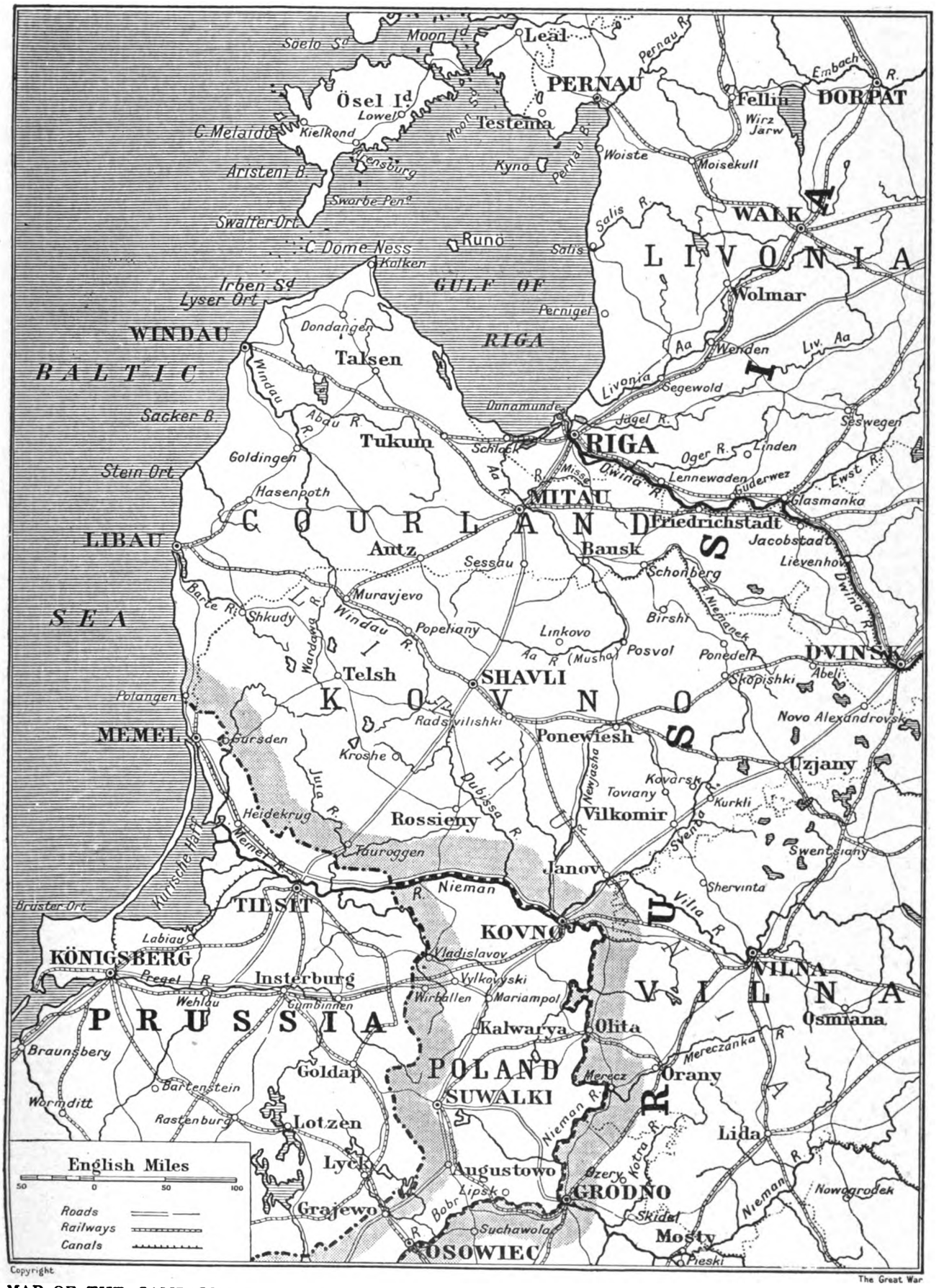
The Schlesien, a capital ship of the same class as the Pommern, also had some casualties on July 2nd. So it looked as though the second German battle squadron, of which the Pommern and Schlesien formed part, was engaged in the abortive attempt on Riga Gulf.

Hindenburg tried to remedy the naval disaster by a sudden and very violent attempt to capture Riga with a land attack. General von Below's army was strengthened by another hundred thousand or more men, and on July 14th he massed upon the extreme north end of his line at the town of Goldingen, and thrust the Russians back from the Windau River in a fortnight of terrible incessant fighting. The port of Windau was captured by the Germans, and the northern Russian wing in Courland was pressed back to the town of Tukum, and then to Schlock, almost within cannon-shot of the outskirts of Riga.

The southern wing of Russky's forces had to withdraw from Shavli and the line of the Dubissa River in order to keep in touch with their comrades around Riga. Using another river, the Muhs, as a protection for their uncovered flank, the heroic defenders of Shavli retired fighting, and linked up with their forces on the north, which held the River Aa, and with their forces on the south which connected with Kovno. Russky's line then stretched for two hundred and fifty miles from a point a little west of Riga to a point a little west of Kovno.

The German newspapers at the beginning of August, 1915, confidently predicted that Riga would be captured

Digitized by Google



Copyright

The Great War

MAP OF THE CAMPAIGN IN COURLAND, KOVNO, AND THE GULF OF RIGA, ILLUSTRATING THE GERMAN ATTACK ON THE ROAD TO PETROGRAD.

Digitized by Google

in a few days, and declared that a new division of the German Fleet was preparing to sail into the gulf and base itself upon that seaport. At first everything went in accordance with the plans of the enemy. By the sheer weight of numbers they smashed through the Russian lines on the Aa River, close to the town of Mitau, south of Riga. The victorious column on August 3rd captured Mitau and threw the Russians on the Dwina River, which runs in a south-easterly direction from Riga. At the same time the Russians were driven back all along the centre of their line beyond the towns of Schönberg and Ponewiesch. In the south the German force passed Kovno, and settled behind at the town of Vilkomir.

It looked as though Russky had been thoroughly defeated, and as if Riga was doomed immediately to fall. But the Russian commander, in spite of all appearances, had the situation well in hand. He had only been waiting to make sure that the direct threat to Riga and the indirect threat to Petrograd were backed by an enormous German force. When this fact was proved by the hard rearguard actions which his first line of troops had to conduct for three weeks, he suddenly reinforced them with a large mass of the Petrograd army, and again launched one of his great counter-strokes. The blow fell on August 7th, leading to a battle all along a line of two hundred and fifty miles. It raged for days in great fury. Once more the Russians won a victory, and the German communiqués, which had been full of news concerning the progress of the army in Courland, abruptly ceased on August 8th to make any mention of the existence of its extreme northern wing. Russky had thrown the German armies back with terrible losses, and General von Below needed another quarter of a million men in order to resume the attack.

Russky's great counter-stroke

But no fresh troops were at the moment available. Hindenburg had lost too heavily in storming Kovno. His method, and the method of his disciple Von Below, were too expensive for even so populous an empire as that of Germany. So another attempt was made from the sea by Prince Henry of Prussia to capture Riga. This third naval operation against the famous Russian seaport opened on Monday, August 16th, 1915. It was a very foggy day, and taking advantage of the thick weather a strong German cruiser force with reconnoitring destroyers stole into the gulf, past Osel Island. The narrow fairway for large ships had been sown with contact mines by the defenders; but under cover of the milky mist, and protected by the guns of their cruisers, a German flotilla of mine-trawlers cleared the passage, and the Russian warships in the gulf fell back without revealing their strength. They consisted in fact mainly of destroyers and gunboats. But there was also an old battleship, the Slava, with four 12 in. guns and twelve 6 in. guns, which had been secretly placed in the gulf to deal with any venturesome German cruisers. The retirement of the Russian forces was carried out mainly with a view to concealing the presence of the Slava until the decisive moment. Meanwhile, a running fight went on in the broad misty waters from August 16th to August 21st.

The third naval attack on Riga

There were at the time rumours that the Germans had tried to land along the deep-water channel running north of Riga. But, according to the commandant of Reval, the affair was misrepresented by some of our newspapers. The fierce, exciting Battle of Pernau, between a strong force of German Marines and the Russian local levies, though brilliantly described in a report sent to London from Petrograd, did not take place. All the enemy did at the town of Pernau, on the Gulf of Riga, was to sink three steamers in the channel, under cover of the fog, to prevent the Russians using the deep waterway for conveying reinforcements to the Riga front.

One by one the enemy's destroyers were caught at a disadvantage, as they scattered for reconnoitring work, until eight of them were either sunk or put out of action. In these preliminary skirmishes the little gunboat Sivoutch (or Sea Lion) nobly distinguished herself. She was a vessel of nine hundred and sixty



A POLISH FUGITIVE.

If Russia chastised the Poles with whips, the Prussians chastised them with scorpions. The Pole in our photograph is seen fleeing from the modern Huns with the most valuable of his possessions that he could collect in the time allowed to him.



WOUNDED RUSSIANS ON THEIR WAY FROM WARSAW.

The Polish capital fell into the hands of the Germans in August, 1915, after two earlier, but ineffectual, attempts had been made to capture it.

Digitized by Google

tons, with a speed of only twelve knots and a crew of one hundred and forty-eight men. Her captain, Commander Cherkasoff, had won renown at Port Arthur, and he made the action in the Gulf of Riga one of the glories of Russian history by the heroism of himself and his men. The little Sea Lion was pursuing an enemy destroyer in the mist when she came within sight of a German cruiser, which was escorting the hostile torpedo craft. The cruiser closed with her to a distance of four hundred yards, and her shells set the little boat on fire fore and aft. But the men of the Sea Lion continued to work their guns. Having sunk one of the enemy's torpedo craft, the Sea Lion still answered shot for shot, when her deck-plates were red hot, and at last the crew went down to death all standing. Meanwhile, two of the German cruisers either got too close to the Slava or to a new mine-field, the Russian General Naval Staff refraining from any precise information on the matter; for, as future naval attacks by German squadrons on the Riga region were anticipated, the composition of all the defending Russian forces continued to be kept as far as possible secret. It may have been the loss of the two cruisers, the eight destroyers, and an armed liner which decided the German admiral to withdraw from the gulf on August 21st; or the retreat may have been due to an even greater disaster to the vessels placed under the command of Prince Henry of Prussia.

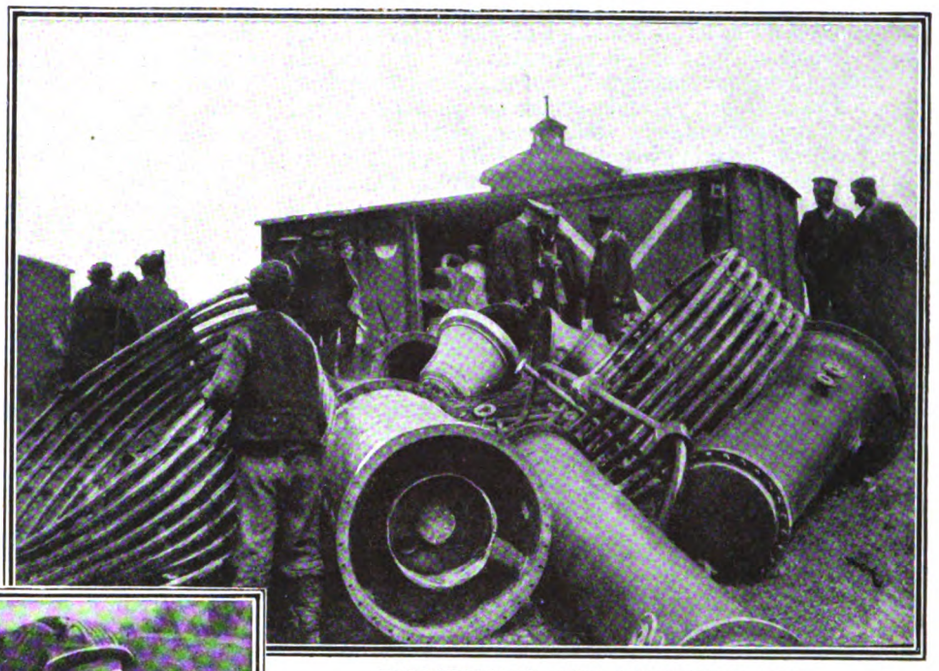
German losses off Riga

The Prince had apparently been apprehensive that the forces he had sent into the gulf might be suddenly assailed in the rear by a flying squadron of powerful battle units steaming from the Russian naval base in the Gulf of Finland. With a view to guarding against a surprise attack of this sort, some of the finest German Dreadnoughts were temporarily detached from the High Sea Fleet at Cuxhaven, and brought up the Baltic as a watching force. But watching them in turn was a British submarine flotilla, and one of our skilful submarine officers, by the most brilliant stroke in underwater warfare in the first year of the war, was said by the Russians to have torpedoed the German battle-cruiser the Moltke. She was one of the ships that had taken part in the raid on our East Coast, and in the running battle-cruiser action in which the Blücher was sunk. The reported loss of the Moltke, which had not up to the date of writing been confirmed by the British Admiralty, brought to a definite end the third attempt of the enemy to reach Riga and start the advance on Petrograd by a successful naval operation. Both on land and by sea the schemes hatched by Hindenburg and Prince Henry of Prussia at Libau in the third week of June had failed in a very disastrous manner. Petrograd was, for at least some time to come, secure against the bull-like attacks of the old Field-Marshal and the timid, amateurish essays in naval warfare made by the brother of the Kaiser. Meanwhile the land campaign in the Baltic provinces was resumed with increased fury, and the people fled as the Germans extended their lines of attack.

Fate of the Moltke

It was a strange country which the Letts and Lithuanians left behind them when General von Below's armies began to advance. It was a land of burning farms, flaming meadows, and fiery forests. As it was known that the enemy badly needed forage, even the grass was destroyed. Light chaff was sprinkled over the pastures, and oil was poured on the chaff and set alight. By their own confession, the German troops were dismayed at the widespread fires lighting the nocturnal sky. It stirred in them memories of the fate of Napoleon's Grand Army, which had set out from Kovno in the summer of 1812 and perished in the wilderness which the retreating Russians made behind them.

In the towns all the manufacturing plant was conveyed by railway into the heart of Russia, and all manufacturing materials were removed. Even the church-bells were transported to Moscow, and the horses, cattle, sheep, and goats moved in vast droves along the roads left open by the Russian army for the migrating nations of the Baltic provinces. Many of the rearguard actions and local



FORESTALLING THE MARAUDING FOE.
Before abandoning Warsaw the Russians stripped the city of all that was likely to prove of military value to the enemy. Bells were taken from the belfries, and metal—especially copper—accessories from the factories, to be railed in advance on the line of retreat.



"THE ARTILLERY OF THE CHURCH."
"Bells," said the German Emperor, Joseph II., "are the artillery of the Church." His successor, Kaiser Wilhelm II., would have turned the bells of Warsaw into munitions of oppression. The Russians forestalled him by removing them—in the cause of liberty.

Digitized by Google

counter-strokes were undertaken with a view to gaining more time for the terrible task of dispeopling and laying waste the country which the Russian commander was surrendering to the enemy. Through Riga the people streamed to the railway-stations at the rate of ten thousand a day. They were mainly workmen, with their families, from the manufacturing towns of Courland and Lithuania. Valuable men they were to Russia, not only for the immediate production of munitions, but for the general reorganisation of Russian industries. Hundreds of railway trains were specially provided for them, many of them being transported as far as the Ural Mountains, where the larger part of the mineral wealth of Russia was being mined. Everything possible in the circumstances was done to prevent the fugitives from passing under the control of German taskmasters. Yet so immense was the pressure of the emigrants at the railway that they had at times to wait days to get a ticket, and when at last the ticket had been bought, more days passed before a seat was found on a train. Each train that brought fresh battalions of the Petrograd army to the Courland battlefield returned to the capital packed with fugitives. Happily, the troops under General Russky had the situation well in hand, and by fighting fiercely for time they enabled the organisers of the great migration of the people to prevent any disaster occurring. Then the kindly, charitable Russian peasantry along the routes to Central Russia helped the wandering streams of farming folk to feed their animals and themselves. Food was abundant in Russia, for the great export crop of 1914 had been retained owing to the closing of the Dardanelles. When the people and all the farming stock had been removed throughout a deep zone behind the fighting-line, little but the empty farms, the railways, and telegraph lines remained to serve the troops. And as the soldiers began to prepare merely for rearguard actions, the Board of Evacuation, with its centre at Moscow, entered upon its last task. Hundreds of special goods trains were brought up and loaded with the cranes and heavy materials. Each group of goods was marked with its new destination. Then, as the rearguard action opened, other trains went to the working end of their lines, carrying gangs of labourers, and took up the rails, packed them in the trucks with the sleepers, and ploughed up

Great exodus from Courland

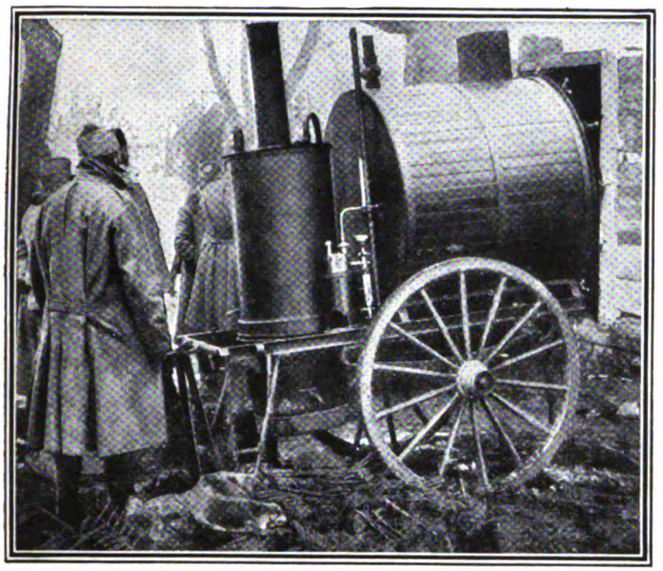
An empty land for the foe



THE ATTACK BY AUSTRIAN TROOPS ON THE CHOLM-LUBLIN LINE.

Some of the men were so exhausted after forced marching and constant fighting that they threw themselves on the ground and lay there helpless at different stages of their arduous advance. The Austrian centre was eventually broken by the Russians on July 9th, 1915, when they lost 15,000 men and dozens of machine-guns. Above: One of the celebrated Skoda guns in action.

Digitized by Google



THE WAR AGAINST INFECTION.
Apparatus for disinfecting clothing in use by the Austrian forces in Galicia. Typhoid and cholera were reported to be very prevalent.

the permanent way with dynamite and special machines of destruction. At the same time a staff of electricians removed for transportation all the material of the telegraph lines. So when the rearguard at last fell back, nothing but bare earth and burning buildings was left to the enemy. It is said that not a single railway carriage was captured by the Germans.

Very pathetic was the appeal which the Lettish refugees addressed to the Russian people. After describing the situation in Poland, occupied by the enemy and covered with ruins, the appeal ran: "Long files of fugitives are crossing the neighbouring provinces, knocking at the door of their more fortunate inhabitants, and relying on their hospitality. Help us! We are strangers to you in language, and most Letts hold to another form of Christianity than yours. Our names will sound in your ears like the names of foreigners—and yet we are your countrymen. For more than seven hundred years we have held back the German thrust towards the east, and if the Baltic provinces are not now German land, this is due to us. We are your advance guard. Help us! Do not be slow in showing that Russian hospitality which is known throughout the world and the charity of the compassionate Russian heart. We are a hard-working people, who can be useful to you by the knowledge we possess and the talents we have."

Refugees' pathetic appeal

It is doubtful whether General von Below's raid into Courland was originally planned by Hindenburg. For, as we have seen, it began in May, when, according to a telegram of congratulation sent by the Kaiser to his Chief of Staff, Falkenhayn was in supreme control in the eastern theatre as well as in the western field of conflict. Hindenburg, however, was definitely restored to power by the middle of June, when it could be seen that Mackensen, with a million men, had lost all opportunity of encircling or breaking the southern Russian armies. Hindenburg seems to have retained Falkenhayn's scheme for the conquest of the Baltic provinces as a means of diverting the attention of the Grand Duke Nicholas, and masking his own main preparations. These were simple, straightforward, but enormous. The German Marshal collected about a million men, and arranged them in three mighty armies from Kovno to Mlava. The forces around Kovno were under the command of Eichhorn, who had been fighting in the Niemen River region for many months. Connecting with his southern wing were two great armies near Prasnysch, under General von Scholtz and General von Gallwitz. Scholtz and Gallwitz were further reinforced by an army under General von Beseler, the conqueror of Antwerp, who was again provided with a siege train of many 11, 12, 17, and 20 in. howitzers. He was to shatter and storm the great Russian entrenched camp of Novo Georgievsk on the Vistula River, while the armies of Gallwitz and Scholtz burst through the Russian lines on the Narew and Bobr Rivers, and got in the rear of the Russian army defending Warsaw.

Hindenburg's ambitious project

This in itself would have been no mean achievement, but the scope of the scheme did not content Hindenburg. He intended not only to destroy the central Russian army under General Alexeieff, but to deal at the same time a tremendous flank blow against the left wing of General Ivanoff's forces, between Ivangorod and Brest Litovsk. In order to accomplish this, it was necessary to allow time for the group of armies under Mackensen to progress into line at Cholm and Lublin. And the central Austro-German forces, operating in the great bend of the Vistula in the direction of Warsaw and Ivangorod, had also to be allowed time to fight their way closer to the central Russian armies.

The general position, therefore, remained for some weeks very deceptive in appearance. Nothing occurred to show that Warsaw was in immediate danger. Hindenburg, with a million men under his orders, remained quietly at his base in the East Prussian railway town of Allenstein, and forbade his corps and army commanders to exercise any marked pressure on the Russian forces entrenched around Prasnysch. Then his neighbour, Prince Leopold of Bavaria, commanding the Austro-German forces on the



AN ATTACK UNDER A SMOKE CLOUD.
Russian counter-attack under a veil of smoke caused by firing a wood in the face of the advancing Prussians.

Digitized by Google

Rawka River in front of Warsaw, remained also very quiet, after a vain attempt to throw the Russian army back by means of a poison-gas cloud. On the right of the Bavarian Prince was the remnant of the first-line Austro-Hungarian army, which General Dankl had led across the Russian frontier in August, 1914. Dankl had gone to the Italian front, and his twice-shattered army had been strengthened by fresh troops, stiffened with a large German element, and placed under the command of General von Woyrsch. Woyrsch operated between the Pilica River and the Upper Vistula, but he was firmly held in front of Radom by General Alexeieff's troops. He made progress only when Alexeieff had to swing down along the stream, in order to maintain connection with Ivanoff's forces between the Vistula and the Bug.

Ivanoff was still opposed by the Austrian army under the Archduke Joseph Ferdinand and the Grand Phalanx



THE MONEY-CHANGERS: AN UNCONVENTIONAL INCIDENT IN THE RUSSIAN WAR AREA.
German soldiers exchanging their money with Russian prisoners of war.

under Mackensen. And, as in the Galician campaign, it was the slowly-moving, gigantic force of Mackensen's Phalanx which controlled the situation. On July 1st Mackensen occupied the Polish town of Zamosc, through which a firm road ran northward to the railway-station of Cholm. The Archduke Joseph Ferdinand occupied the Polish town of Krasnik, through which a highway ran to the railway-station of Lublin. Between the army of the Archduke and the army of Mackensen there ran the River Wieprz, with marshland on either side of it soaked with the extraordinary rainfall of the previous month. The position is worth examining on a map. It will there be seen that Krasnik is barely twenty-five miles south of Lublin, and that Zamosc is about the same distance from the railway running to Cholm. As the Cholm and Lublin railway connected Ivangorod and Warsaw with the great Russian depot city of Kieff, all the Russian armies in Poland were menaced by the enemy forces at Krasnik and Zamosc. And with Hindenburg waiting, silent, motionless, and in stupendous strength, to leap unexpectedly upon their northern flank, the position of the Russian armies in Poland was one of horrible peril.

Peril of the Russian armies

Moltke's feat in shepherding the French army into the trap of Sedan was a small affair compared with that which Hindenburg was devising, in collaboration with his old rival Falkenhayn. They had taken a plan formed by General von der Goltz, and worked it out in terms of big gun transport. All that scientific calculation and prevision could do had been done. The result seemed as certain as human effort could make it. Having regard to the impressionable character of Kaiser Wilhelm II., it is not to be wondered that he swelled with vain glory before the event, and began to make speeches about the war ending in a series of great German victories by October, 1915.

Planning a new Sedan

There was, however, one change in the circumstances of warfare since the days of Sedan. The reconnoitring aeroplane made great strokes of surprise, that needed long preparation, somewhat difficult to conceal. The Grand Duke Nicholas learned enough to make him suspicious, and he sought for some means of delaying the immense movement of envelopment. He selected the weakest link in the chain that was being dragged around him. This weak link was the Austrian army at Krasnik, under the Archduke Joseph Ferdinand. Its artillery was more powerful than the Russian, but the Austrian guns were too far from their railway-station in Galicia, and as there was only one firm road by which ammunition could be brought up, the opposing Russian army, with the railway behind it at Lublin, was able to get a quicker supply of shells.

The Lublin army seems to have been the Third Russian Army, formerly commanded by Radko Dimitrieff. Its original four army corps had been half shattered on the Dunajec, but its record was still a fine one. Its original 96,000 bayonets had taken more than 300,000 prisoners since entering into action in Galicia in August, 1914. Most of the survivors were now sent back into Central Russia to rest, and into the cadres was poured new material composed of the best fighting men available in Russia; a new general was appointed—a man unknown in Western Europe, but with a high reputation among his own countrymen. The Eighth Russian Army had retired alongside the Third, and had also been severely handled. It also was reorganised from the best fighting material in Russia, for the design was that it should hold up Mackensen's forces at Cholm, while the Third Army struck at the Archduke.

The battle began on July 2nd. With about a third of a million men, the Archduke deployed on a front of ten miles at Krasnik, and tried to break the Russians in a series of fierce night attacks. But his men were held up on the Wysnica, a tributary of the Vistula that runs through Krasnik. The battle continued for some days, with extreme fury, along the river and a brook flowing into it. After some heavy losses the Austrians managed, on July 4th, to push the Russians back and occupy the town of Bychava,

Digitized by Google



The Emperor of Russia with the Grand Duke Nicholas at the front.

Digitized by Google



In British trenches: Under shell fire on the battlefield of Neuve Chapelle.



Lieut.-Colonel Birchall's death while leading the 4th Canadians at Ypres.

Digitized by Google



The Manchester Regiment captures the village of Givenchy.



With the R.H.A. in Flanders: Rushing a gun to the firing-line.

Digitized by Google



On the line of the Russian retreat: A halt for refreshments by the roadside in Poland.

Digitized by Google

at the foot of a hill six hundred and fifty feet above sea-level, known as Hill 218. The Archduke joyfully claimed that he had broken through the Russian front on either side of Krasnik. But the battle had not ended; it was only beginning. The Austrians had been merely contending with a well-posted rearguard, and after they had expended much of their strength in advancing over the river, the main Russian force came into action. It drove at the Archduke's flank on the Vistula, and Woyrsch's troops had to be flung across the stream to reinforce the Austrian army. At the same time the Russians attacked the Archduke's right wing above Turobin, and Mackensen had to hurry a large part of his forces across the difficult ground on the Wieprz River. Then the Russian troops attacked the Austrian centre, lying across the road to Lublin, and in a fierce, persistent, driving movement, lasting till Friday, July 9th, they broke the Austrian centre, captured some 15,000 men and some dozens of machine-guns.

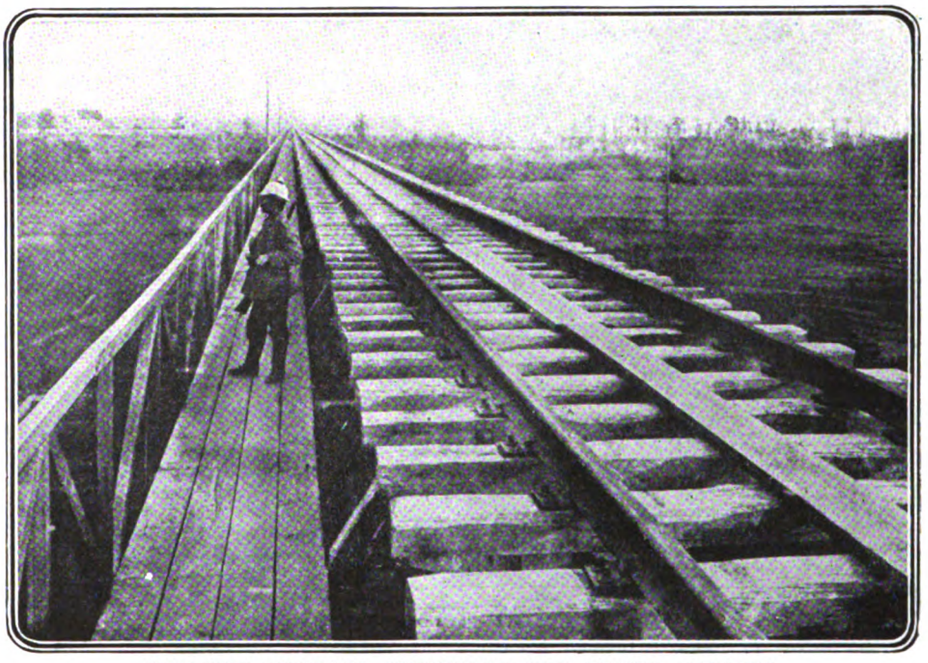
The Austrian centre broken

The Austrians withdrew to the high ground around Krasnik, leaving in front of them a strong force on Hill 218, which dominated the country. The Russians made several attempts to carry the height, but the Austro-German machine-gun parties, helped by their artillery fire, countered all the attacks. In turn, the Austrians swept down upon the hill, and tried to carry the village at the foot. But they were repulsed. By this time the two armies were fully entrenched against each other, and, as in a week's incessant fighting the Austrian army lost in prisoners alone 22,464 men and two hundred and ninety-seven officers, its total casualties were very heavy. They seem to have amounted to about one-third of the Archduke's entire forces.

In so far as the Lublin army had aimed at breaking and routing the forces of the Archduke Joseph Ferdinand, and then getting on the flank of Mackensen's Phalanx, the great Russian counter-attack had failed. But in so far as it had been designed to check the enemy's advance, it had succeeded. The Austrian army of invasion was weakened in a very serious manner, and instead of being able to co-operate in a forward movement with Mackensen's force, it had to be saved from destruction by the German Marshal. This aggravated the weight of fighting thrown on Mackensen's men, and though they stubbornly crawled onward, along the causeway leading to Cholm, they had to pay a terrible price for every mile they won. Mackensen's enormous battering-ram of heavy artillery had to have a railway built for it from Ravaruska along the line where the temporary Russian light railway had been destroyed.

There was only a single firm road running through the muddy Polish fields, and this causeway had been damaged as much as possible by the retreating Russians. As is known from German and Austrian soldiers' letters, the advance towards Cholm, after the extraordinary rainfall of the previous June, was a terribly exhausting struggle against Polish mud. Men and horses were severely strained with the labour of movement, and the Russians inflicted severe punishment on the weary German advance forces in a series of flank conflicts along the eastern tributaries of the Wieprz. Mackensen could do nothing without thousands of guns behind him to command the battlefield, for his infantry had had much of its pugnacity knocked out of it. On July 16th he tried to get into line with the Austrian forces at Krasnik by carrying by storm the Russian entrenchments east of the town of Tarnagora, along the Wolika River. But his men fell in heaps in front of the water-course, without effecting any advance. Again, on July 17th, Mackensen tried to break across the river by massed infantry attacks, supported only by machine-guns and light field artillery. But the German troops were shattered at every point between the Bug and the Wieprz, and in the evening of that day the victorious Russian rear-guard charged with the bayonet and cleared a large river-side forest of the enemy.

The German Field-Marshal succeeded after a fortnight's delay in getting his great howitzers dragged up to the battle-front, and there accumulating a great store of shells. By a hurricane fire he destroyed the Russian trenches on either side of the highway to Cholm at dawn on July 18th, and captured the town of Krasnostav on the Wieprz River. This was a decisive success, for Krasnostav was only seven and a half miles from the railway running through Cholm and Lublin, and connecting Kieff with Ivangorod and Warsaw. In ordinary circumstances it was only an easy half-day's march for Mackensen's troops from Krasnostav to the railway. General Ivanoff's armies, of course, were able to make the short journey a matter of considerable difficulty to the invading force, but there were other circumstances which entirely changed the situation, and made the Lublin and Cholm battlefield for the time a scene of secondary importance.



HOW THE GERMANS CONQUERED THE POLISH MARSHES.

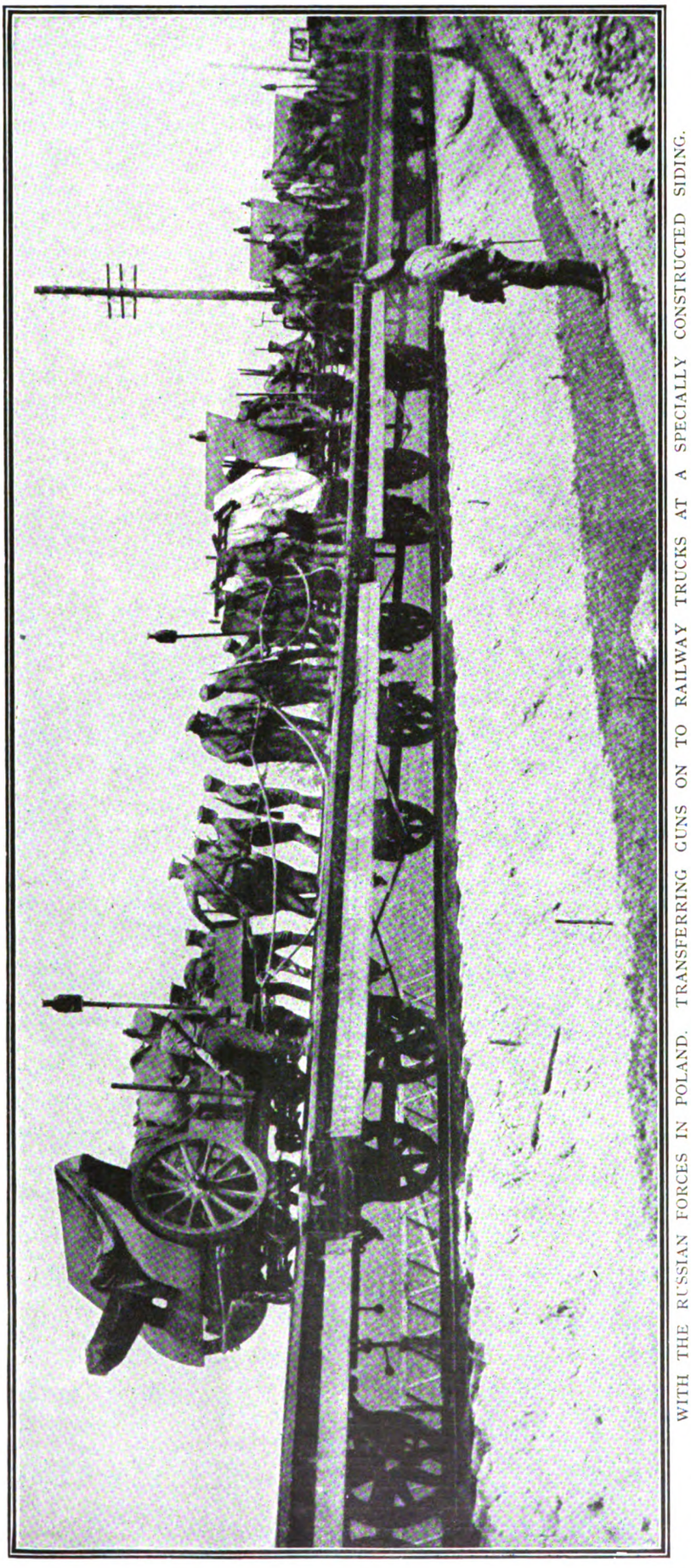
Owing to the swampy nature of the ground in their line of advance in Poland, the Germans had to construct this special railway for the passage of Mackensen's enormous "battering ram." Apart from its military significance, the achievement throws an interesting light on Teutonic engineering skill.

For Hindenburg had shown his hand. Either by design or from over-anxiety, the German Commander-in-Chief had tried to redeem the check to the Archduke Joseph's forces at Krasnik by a fierce swoop from Prasnysch.

Capture of Prasnysch

The closing-in movement had begun on July 11th, the day when the Russian army at Lublin completed its great counter-offensive. Hindenburg should have waited until Mackensen retrieved the local situation between the Vistula and the Bug by bringing up his heavy artillery and blasting a path to Krasnostav. But either the old German Field-Marshal, crouched for his great spring north-east of Warsaw, was

Digitized by Google



WITH THE RUSSIAN FORCES IN POLAND. TRANSFERRING GUNS ON TO RAILWAY TRUCKS AT A SPECIALLY CONSTRUCTED SIDING.

over-anxious to make his long-prepared leap, or the German Staff was put off its balance by the apparent demoralisation of the Archduke's army, and stampeded into immediate action. However this may be, the vast strategical plan of envelopment was somewhat prematurely revealed by an exceedingly violent bombardment of all the Russian positions from Osoviec on the Bobr River to the trenches along the Wkra stream. The positions extended for nearly a hundred and forty miles north and north-east of Warsaw, with Prasnysch and Lomza as the central sector of the winding river-line.

Hindenburg opened his tornado of fire at night on July 11th, thus boldly revealing the position of his guns in the darkness by the flames they emitted, and challenging the Russian batteries to show themselves by their gun flashes. Naturally the Russian gunners attempted no reply, for each of their pieces would have been overwhelmed by the massed fire of the more numerous enemy batteries. Only the little fort of Osoviec, which commanded a road over the marshes where the Germans had only room to bring up a few guns, maintained an artillery duel. For three nights the artillery of Hindenburg's three armies swept the Russian positions with high-explosive shell. Then, on July 14th, the German infantry advanced under the arching fire of their ordnance, and captured Prasnysch, about fifty-five miles north of Warsaw. The Russian forces holding the famous village, round which they had gained so many victories, did not resist the German advance, for an attempt to do so would have meant destruction.

They fell back towards the Narew River, out of reach of the German artillery, which on part of the front seems to have included, from the start of the action, the great siege train under General von Beseler. The combined artillery power of Beseler's, Gallwitz's, and Scholtz's armies could only be met by bringing into action the fortress guns of Novo Georgievsk and the heavy position artillery behind the bridge-heads along the Narew River. In the meantime the movement of the German infantry forces was continually checked, whenever these forces attacked without the help of the heavy howitzers, and great losses were inflicted upon the too confident enemy in the river marshes north of Lomza and Ostrolenka, and also south of Prasnysch. But on July 19th, which was the day when Mackensen drove forward towards the railway which connects Warsaw with Southern Russia, Hindenburg also brought up his thousands of heavy pieces of artillery and his million men towards the Narew front, menacing the north-eastern railway communications of the Polish capital.

Beseler's colossal siege train

Warsaw was then clearly doomed, together with Novo Georgievsk and Ivangorod, and the fortress bridge-heads along the Narew River. There was no question of saving Warsaw. The problem was to save the central Russian army under General Alexeieff. The position of this army constituted a vast salient. The base of the salient stretched

Digitized by Google



LIEUT.-GENERAL PAUL KNEUSSL.
He led the Bavarians against Przemysl and received the Order Pour le Mérite from the Kaiser and that of the Iron Crown from the Emperor Francis Joseph.

from Lomza on the Narew to a point near Lublin on the Vistula, the distance between the two points being about one hundred and thirty miles. From the base-line stretching from Lomza to Lublin the Russian salient extended forward nearly a hundred miles to the famous battle-line along the Bzura River. Could Alexeieff withdraw his forces from the Bzura River and from the Upper Vistula, and entrench them strongly near Brest Litovsk before Hindenburg and Mackensen were able to smash through his right rear flank and his left rear flank, and surround, capture, or annihilate the principal Russian army? Such was the terrible problem.

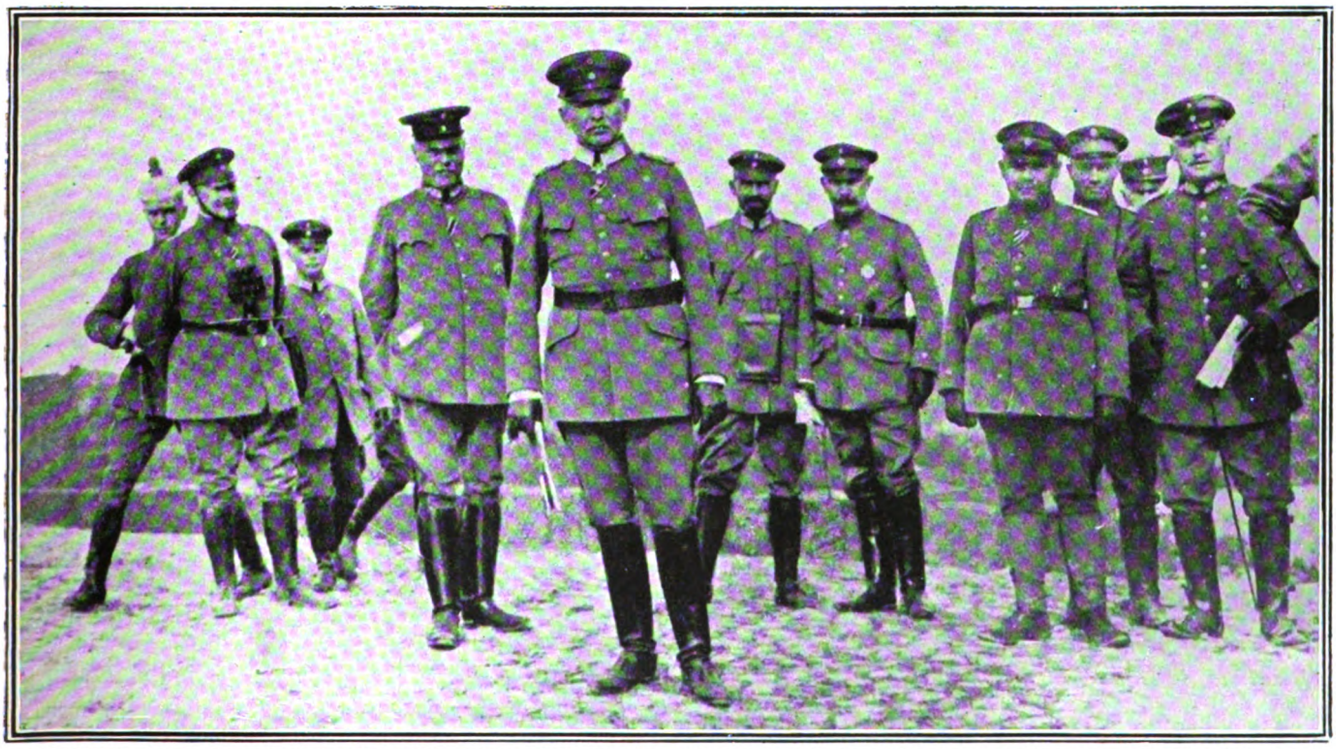
It was the most dramatic situation in history. The Russian forces holding the great salient were very numerous—many hundreds of thousands—but against them were armies of two million men, with an artillery power of unparalleled magnitude. The guns of the great German fortresses in the east had been placed on special carriages, and moved first by train and then by motor traction along the new asphalted roads which Hindenburg's armies made as they advanced. Two huge Austro-German siege trains battered in either side of the salient, and the lighter pieces of ordnance could be reckoned by tens of thousands. The work of feeding the guns with shells and charges was enormous, the common estimated production of a quarter of a million shells a day being under the mark. For the continued expenditure of shell by Mackensen's Phalanx on the right wing, which amounted to some millions a week, was eclipsed by the hurricane of fire which Hindenburg at the same time maintained on the Narew and Bobr front. In the great manœuvre of envelopment, Hindenburg's forces formed the marching wing, and the success of the scheme depended upon the rapidity with which they moved. Their expenditure of shell was staggering, and the sustained volume of fire which wrecked the Russian trenches was an incomparable tribute to the organising power of the great German industrial trusts. The number of power-lathes working in Germany and Austria for the army was calculated to stagger our Ministry of Munitions and our strangely-minded trade unionists.

A terrible problem



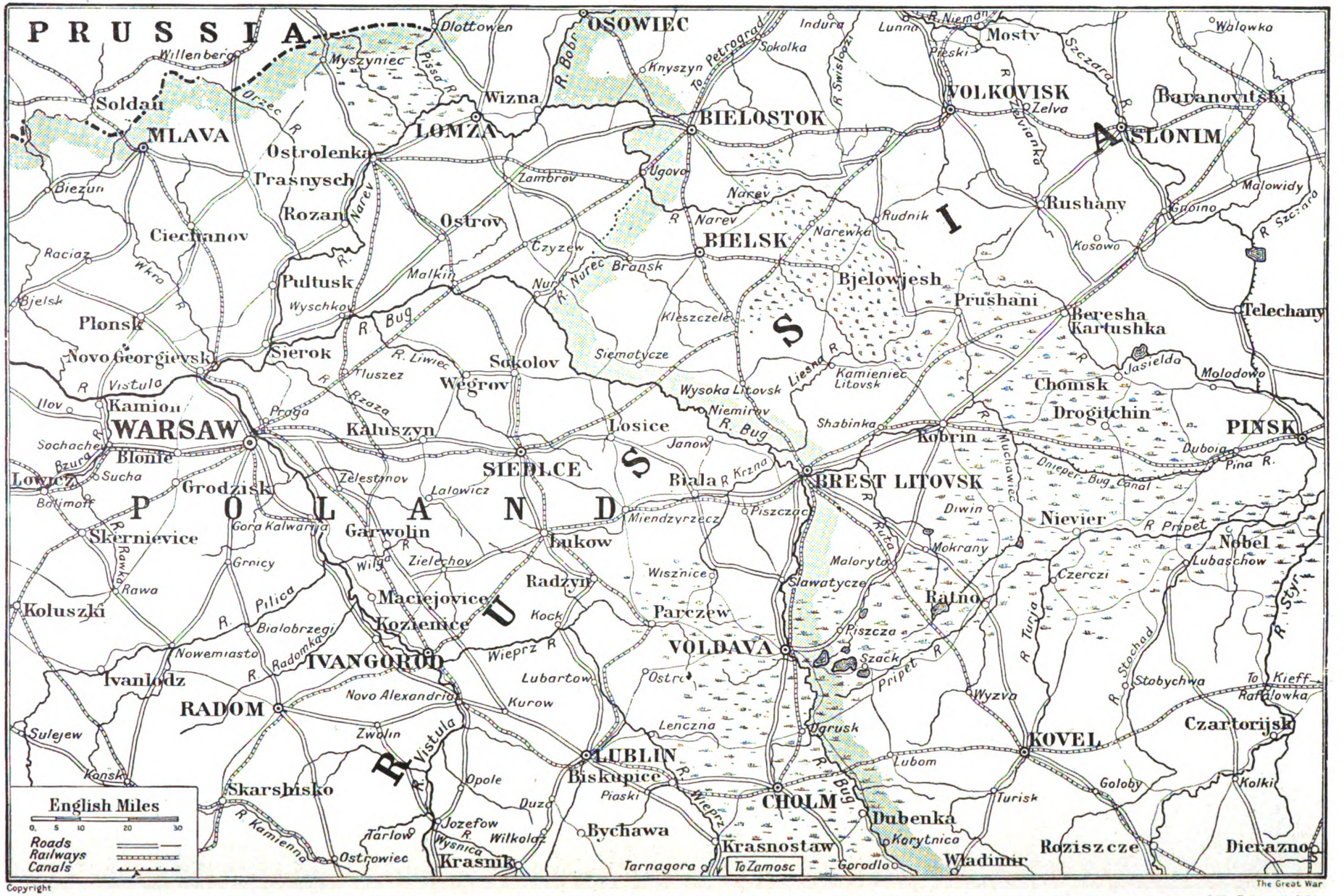
GENERAL VON BESELER.
The conqueror of Antwerp. His success in taking Novo Georgievsk was recognised by a special visit from the Kaiser.

The main work fell on Hindenburg's armies, owing to the fact that Mackensen could not drive forward quickly enough. After weakening his Phalanx to help the Archduke, Mackensen was firmly held for some weeks by the Russian Army at Cholm. But in the circumstances the delay in his advance to the railway line did not matter. It



GENERAL VON SCHEFFER BOYADEL, WITH HIS STAFF, BEFORE ONE OF THE FORTS OF THE POLISH CAPITAL.
General Boyadel was one of the leaders of Prince Leopold of Bavaria's army of occupation.

Digitized by Google



Copyright

The Great War

THE LAND OF THE DISMAL SWAMP WHICH FACED THE GERMAN INVADERS AFTER THE CAPTURE OF WARSAW AND BREST LITOVSK.

This map has been specially drawn to illustrate the area East of Warsaw covered by the great Russian retreat, and Alexeieff's masterly counter to the titanic Austro-German attack. The Pripet marshes are clearly indicated, together with the principal railways, roads, rivers and canals.

Digitized by Google

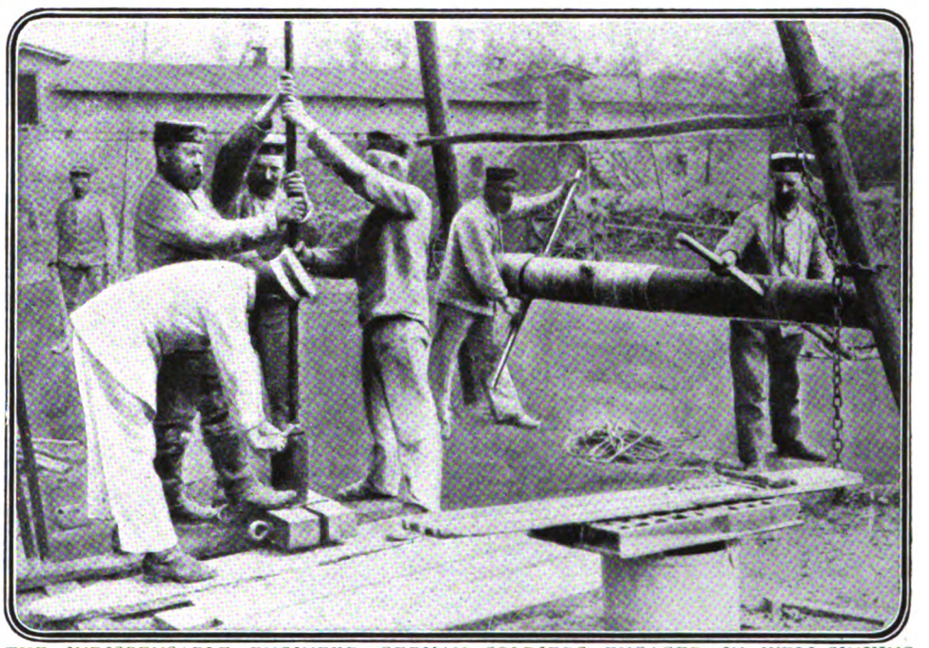
may have been subtly designed with a view to lulling the central Russian army into a feeling of false security, and inducing the Grand Duke Nicholas to risk holding on to the Warsaw front until Hindenburg's great hammer-stroke fell with terrific force on the rear flank, when Mackensen was suddenly to strike with all his power on the other flank.

The Grand Duke Nicholas, however, was not deceived. The success of his Lublin and Cholm armies did not mislead him in his general strategy, for he gave the historic order for the abandonment of Warsaw on July 18th. It was on this day that the remarkable strength of Hindenburg's armies was clearly revealed in a mighty swoop down from Prasnysch to the Narew River. So close did the Germans come to the Russian river defences immediately above Warsaw that the guns of the Vistula fortress of Novo Georgievsk had to be brought into action to repulse the leading German columns. Under the skilful direction of General Alexeieff, all the Russian forces in the centre swiftly concentrated round the doomed capital of Poland. The famous river lines along the Rawka were abandoned in the night, the guns being removed closer to Warsaw, to the Blonie lines, and the troops retiring under the protection of a strong rearguard, which in turn escaped to the new lines.

The doomed capital of Poland

On this sector of the front, where Mackensen and Hindenburg had acted together the previous winter and vainly sacrificed hundreds of thousands of men in an attempt to break through to Warsaw, the enemy forces were now commanded by Prince Leopold of Bavaria—brother of the King of Bavaria. The new German commander did not display any initiative, and the Russian retirement was carried out without a hitch. General von Woyrsch, acting in the neighbouring sector between the Pilica and the Upper Vistula, with Ivangorod as his objective, showed more driving power and grasp of the situation than the Bavarian Prince. Knowing that the Russian forces in front of him were certain to be preparing to retire, Woyrsch made a fierce attack on Radom along two roads which converged on this town. Unhappily for him, the Russian commander had divined the attack and the way it would be made. He sent out two strong forces west and north-west of Radom, and the attackers were met by counter-attackers and violently thrown back. The army defending Ivangorod then fell back on its lines close to the Vistula and the bridge across the great river. Ivangorod was no longer a fortress, its works of brick being too old to withstand the heavy shells of modern siege-howitzers. The old-fashioned 6 in. guns had been removed and placed in pits behind the trenches in which the infantry worked. There were field-guns on some of the river islands and behind the wire entanglements in the riverside forests where the Russian infantrymen broke Hindenburg's first attack on the Vistula line in the autumn of 1914. The Russian heavy artillery was sited across the river, thus making a retirement from Ivangorod a quick and easy operation for the troops. As a matter of fact, they had no difficulty at any time in holding back Woyrsch's forces. Only Mackensen's and Hindenburg's distant enveloping movements put them in danger. It was the Ivangorod army and the Warsaw army that the German Field-Marshals hoped to capture by their great flanking operations. General Alexeieff answered these flanking operations by withdrawing the menaced troops towards the Vistula and giving them shorter lines to hold, so that a considerable part of their forces could be at once sent through Warsaw and Ivangorod to reinforce the critical Narew front. In this way, the great Warsaw retreat was begun by a direct and strong movement of concentration against Hindenburg's group of armies.

Very great powers of judgment were needed in this intricate rearrangement of forces under the guns of the enemy. The German Commander-in-Chief had large reserves, kept on or about the railways in his rear. It was his object to mask the direction in which he intended to launch his reserve force and make his decisive stroke, while deceiving his opponent if possible by feints of new concentrations. This the strategical Prussian railway system enabled him to do. But General Alexeieff, by remarkable foresight, penetrated the enemy's plan with such success that, after he had extracted his forces from the German noose and withdrawn them along the railway to Petrograd, the Tsar claimed him as the best Russian strategist and, taking him from his army command, made him Chief of Staff to all the Russian forces.



THE INDISPENSABLE ENGINEER—GERMAN SOLDIERS ENGAGED IN WELL-SINKING OPERATIONS IN RUSSIAN POLAND.

It was a Napoleonic axiom that an army advances on its stomach. The above photograph emphasises part of the vital work that has to be carried out behind the fighting-line where the normal drinking-water supply is scanty.

All the while this rearrangement of the Russian forces was taking place in the salient, Hindenburg was drawing in on the bridge-heads of the Narew River. At the same time, his northern armies fiercely attacked all along the line from Riga to Kovno and thence down the Niemen and the Bobr streams. Far in the south-east an Austro-Hungarian army, under General Kirchbach, operating on the frontier of Galicia, made a violent effort near Sokal, on the Bug, and forced the passage of the river, threatening to divide the force under General Ivanoff. In the centre General von Woyrsch, with the Landwehr of Silesia and the infantry of Transylvania, closed down on Ivangorod, while Mackensen, with the German Phalanx and the Austrian troops, still nominally commanded by the Archduke Joseph Ferdinand, suddenly brought all his reserves into action and, with his guns again supplied with millions of shells, struck with

Woyrsch's sudden blow

Digitized by Google

terrific force at the Ivangorod-Lublin-Cholm-Kieff railway. It was on Friday, July 23rd, 1915, that the great blow fell in the direction foreseen by General Alexeieff. For a thousand miles the Russian troops were kept at a tension by the attacking forces, each group of which advanced to the assault with the heightened energy of men who know that a great victory is within their reach. Between the Vistula and the Bug, Mackensen was washing the Russian trenches away by a tornado of shell fire. In the bend of the Vistula, Woyrsch had broken the connection between the army of Warsaw and the army of Ivangorod by capturing a river position between the two cities at Kozienice. All the Russian forces between the mouth of the Pilica and Kozienice were forced across the Vistula. Prince Leopold of Bavaria was able to close in on Warsaw from the west and south and approach within sixteen miles of the city. And while all the forces of Russia were thus apparently extended to breaking point, Hindenburg made what he thought at the time was the grand, decisive stroke.

Under his direction the army of General von Gallwitz, which for days had been bombarding all the bridge-heads of the Narew River, advanced in dense masses and stormed the redoubts at the crossing-places of Rozan and Pultusk. The losses of the attacking infantry were dreadful, for the Russian commander had placed his heavy guns south of the river, in such sites as brought a cross-fire to bear upon any forces approaching the bridge-heads. These concealed guns had as long a range as anything made by Krupp and Skoda, and the only reason why they had avoided an artillery duel was the scarcity of high-explosive shell. But there was a useful amount of shrapnel, and when the entire German army was deployed in the open field, the long-silent heavy Russian batteries got to work. Hindenburg had to use up the larger part of his reserve in order to force the river, and when this success had been achieved at enormous cost, it was found to be fruitless.

"The grand, decisive stroke"

Alexeieff defeats Hindenburg's design

For, far from being broken, the Russian forces on the Narew were in tremendous strength. So strong were they indeed that, in spite of the fact that they had barely a quarter of the amount of shell which the Germans possessed, they entirely defeated Hindenburg's design. This design was to make a rapid, sweeping movement across the Narew to the Lower Bug, in the rear of Warsaw, and on Sunday, July 25th, the Berlin communiqué announced to an alarmed and half-stunned world that Hindenburg's troops were approaching the Bug from Pultusk. It was by this sort of sensational anticipatory announcement of the successes at which he aimed that Hindenburg of old had so delighted the civilian population of his country as to eclipse in popularity the Kaiser and all other generals. He sent a telegram to Sven Hedin, the Swedish Press agent of German barbarism, bidding him hasten if he wished to see the victorious entry of the conquerors of Warsaw. The Kaiser and the Kaiserin came by express train to Hindenburg's headquarters on the East Prussian frontier, in order to make a Royal progress into the Polish



NEGOTIATING AN AWKWARD BIT OF GROUND: RUSSIAN HORSE ARTILLERY CROSSING A STREAM AND TAKING THE OPPOSITE BANK.

A picturesque camera-picture from the Polish front. The splendid quality and condition of the horses are specially noticeable.

Digitized by Google



SALVAGE WORK BY THE HUNS AT A BLAZING GRANARY IN BREST LITOVSK.

When the Germans entered Brest Litovsk on August 25th, 1915, they found the citadel on fire. By putting the soldiers to salve what was left, they were able to secure as plunder a few hundred bags of grain. The above remarkable photograph shows the salvage work in progress.

capital, and a dispute arose between Vienna and Berlin concerning the problem of dividing the gains in Courland and Russian Poland between the Hohenzollern and Hapsburg Empires.

But while the two Teutonic races were opening their great quarrel over the sharing of the skin of the bear, the bear was far from being slain.

The Russian commander had been holding the Narew line merely with a thin line of troops; his chief forces were concealed in the forests extending from the south side of the river. All the actions at the crossings were merely rearguard actions, fought to gain time for the new concentration of troops. Despite the fact that the evacuation of Warsaw was rapidly proceeding, and that all manufacturing plant and materials and workmen were being moved into Central Russia, General Alexeieff seems to have been half inclined to stand and offer battle, for he was in a position of great advantage. His men were now little inferior in numbers to those of Hindenburg, and the overpowering hostile artillery was not able to work well; for as the region between the Narew and the Bug was marshy and thickly wooded, the movement of heavy guns was a slow and arduous business, and the field of fire was restricted. It was a country for hand-to-hand fighting, in which the Russian bayonet would be one of the master weapons.

Russians recross the Narew

Gallwitz's forces formed a salient between Novo Georgievsk and the Forest of Rozan, leaving him open to a combined attack on both flanks. This attack was delivered with extreme fury on July 26th, and though Hindenburg threw into the field his last reserves from the direction of Sierok, the Germans were forced back to the Narew in disorder at several points. The Russians then closed on Sierok, which lies at the confluence of the Bug and Vistula, and recrossed the Narew, and a long, fluctuating, murderous conflict went on day and night on both sides of the river until July 30th. The German offensive movement then stopped, Hindenburg having no more infantry at hand to attempt further to force a decision. He tried to mask his weakness by bringing up siege-guns to the Narew front, and occupied the interval of artillery practice in accumulating asphyxiating gas apparatus on the northerly forest line.

All this clearly indicated what had happened—Hindenburg's gigantic stroke had failed. His men had been out-fought; even his enormous trains of artillery had been reduced to practical impotence in the battles of manœuvres in the open field. In trying to get a smashing rear flank thrust against Alexeieff's forces, he had advanced with such over-confidence, after breaking through the Russian covering troops on the Narew, that his principal army—Gallwitz's—had been caught on the flank instead and terribly mauled.

Hindenburg's men out-fought

So far as Hindenburg was concerned, Warsaw, with its protecting fortress of Novo Georgievsk, and its connecting northern entrenched camp at Grodno, might have stood firm throughout the campaign, with the Petrograd railway in the rear supplying the fighting-line. The German army under Below was held firmly in Courland. Eichhorn was vainly wasting men by tens of thousands in trying to

Digitized by Google

approach Kovno. Gallwitz's troops were nearly exhausted. Scholtz's army had come into action on his right, without bettering the situation, and Novo Georgievsk was encircled by a Russian army which prevented Beseler from getting his siege-guns within range of the steel-domed and concrete-walled forts.

But the failure of Hindenburg was redeemed by the success of Mackensen. On July 29th the famous Phalanx reached the railway track between Lublin and Cholm, thus turning by a flank attack all the Russian lines along the Vistula. Ivangorod, which had been munitioned and fed by the lost railway, had to be abandoned, and on its abandonment the armies of Prince Leopold, Woyrsch, the Archduke Joseph Ferdinand, and Mackensen's great force could link up and sweep forward in a vast enveloping movement on the east of Warsaw.

For more than two weeks the Russian armies, based on Lublin and Cholm, had stubbornly stood out against the victors of the Dunajec and other Galician battle-fields. All that men could do, the wing of the old southern Russian forces had done. What had defeated them at last was the road-making plant of the German Phalanx. As the roads were made, the tremendous train of heavy howitzers came closer to the vital railway line. We have seen that the lighter gunned and more mobile Russian army holding Lublin first tried to assail Mackensen's western flank by breaking through the Austrian army at Krasnik. When this desperate plan failed, the Cholm army essayed an equally hard task, and advanced directly against Mackensen's eastern flank, some thirty miles south of Cholm, at Grubieszov. Mackensen's main artillery force was then slowly crawling towards the railway line, so that the quicker-moving Russian force was able to strike behind it.



PRINCE LEOPOLD OF BAVARIA.
Brother of the King of Bavaria. He was in supreme command of the army to which was entrusted the final assault on Warsaw.

These, it may be remarked, were the usual Russian tactics in cases where the enemy was chained to a slow, cumbersome mass of extraordinarily heavy ordnance. They gave way on the sector in which the hurricane fire of large shells made their trenches untenable, but as they gave way they massed and struck out in a side attack on a sector where the enemy had to meet them on more equal terms in the matter of artillery power. Unless the German commander concentrated his guns on a narrow front, in order to obtain a sudden, wrecking shell fire, by which his infantry could profit, he made but little progress; for the Russians always answered his ordinary attacks by counter-attacks. He was compelled, by the difficulty of getting hard roads for his great howitzers, and by the need for massing his artillery fire so as to obtain decisive effects, to keep his large pieces of ordnance close together. So in the other sectors of the battle-line the Russian commander had less heavy odds against him. It was then the German machine-guns, arranged behind wire defences so as to bring a cross-fire to bear, which were the chief source of trouble. On some notable occasions, where the lie of the land favoured the enterprise, the Russians surmounted the difficulty caused by hostile machine-gun fire by launching a squadron of armoured motor-cars in front of the charging lines of their infantry. And where no armoured cars were immediately available, the Russian sharpshooters worked forward and, with well-planned help from their field-guns, broke into the enemy's field redoubts.

Russian tactics against big guns

Use of the armoured car

We may now remark, since it is fairly notorious, that in the flood-time of Russian successes on the Carpathian front, in the first months of 1915, the defects of temperament of the Russian upper class were at times very apparent. The officers of some battalions took their men into action merely with the ambition of making a great name for the battalion. They recked little of the general operations of the brigade, division, or army corps in which their men formed just a single unit of force. There was, in short, little sense of team work. In one case, it was reported, even neighbouring Russian armies failed to co-operate harmoniously at a critical moment. It is said that the Grand Duke Nicholas published an Army order in March, 1915, concerning the lack of combination of effort between regiments, brigades, and divisions.

There was a kind of Byronism, derived immediately from Puschkin, the Russian disciple of Byron, and remotely inherited from the extremely independent character of all the old Slav nobility, which seemed to survive in the officer class. It can be seen in Tolstoy's early life and writings, and it remained an element of romanticism in the terrible period of scientific warfare.

But in the great retreat this defect in certain of the fighting aristocracy of Russia was removed. Stern, capable, masterly men, such as Russky, Ivanoff, Alexeieff, and Evert, the splendid commander of the Sixth Army, maintained a firm system of Staff control, leading to a deep, patriotic sense of the high value of team work. The officers themselves were also individually trained by long, grim, actual experience of the difficulties and the achievements of co-operative efforts. The feeling that the very life of Russia was in peril put an end to all longing for personal distinction. The men had, from the beginning of the tremendous struggle, been inspired by the spirit of pure self-sacrifice, and the more self-conscious educated class felt in the days of disaster the wonderfully contagious

Digitized by Google

quality of the simple-minded peasant's faith in his country. The upshot was that, partly by the skilful direction of the leading commanders and partly by a sort of act of conversion in the hearts of the subordinate officers, the Russian forces approached the clockwork efficiency in intricate combined movements which marked the Austro-German armies. This was, indeed, the most striking feature of the later phase of the eastern campaign. The Russian armies, with their large proportion of illiterate peasantry, and their once notorious easy-going methods, proved almost a match for the best drilled and most highly organised military Power of modern times in the supreme end of all organisation—finely combined efforts.

Ivanoff's struggle against Mackensen and Alexeieff's struggle against Hindenburg formed a remarkable example of this nobly patriotic team work. The two commanders seem to have shared the service of a common reserve force that moved between the Narew front and the Lublin-Cholm line. If Ivanoff could have fought Mackensen to a definite standstill before the German Field-Marshal advanced within striking distance of the railway linking Ivangorod to Kieff, Hindenburg would, in all probability, have been defeated, together with Prince Leopold of Bavaria and General von Woyrsch.

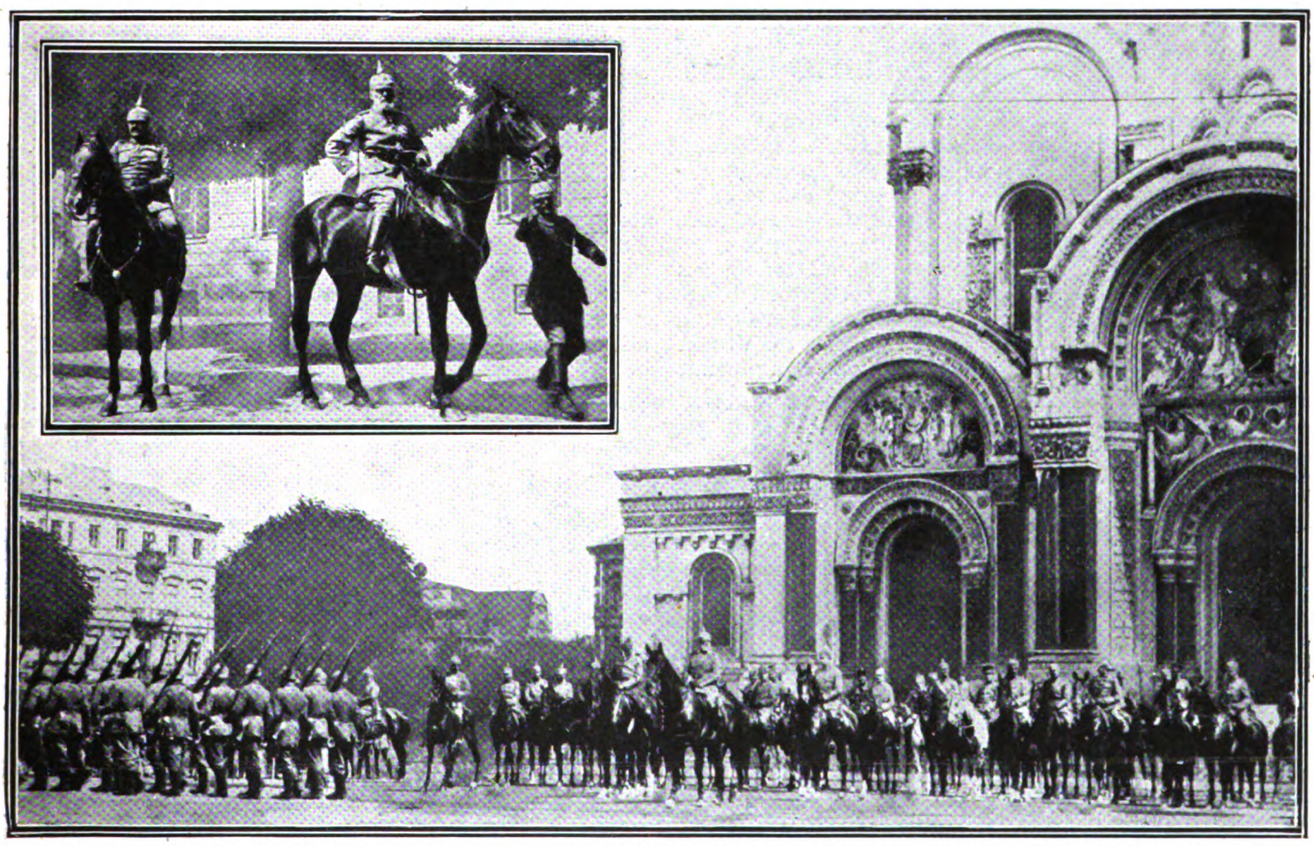
Nobly patriotic team work

For the Russian fortress guns on this section of the front were useful weapons when the enemy had been lured within their range, and the Germans were so confident of success that they could be exasperated by local defeats into undertaking very perilous projects. Hindenburg especially was a human bull, to whom any check to his time-table of prearranged victories acted like a banderillo's dart. He would send his men out to die by the hundred thousand, as was seen before in front of Warsaw, and afterwards in front of Kovno, rather than alter the direction of his rush attack.

But Mackensen, unfortunately for the Russians, was a man of more supple mind and improvising genius His quality of determination was as remarkable as that of the older German Field-Marshal and, at need, he sacrificed the manhood of his nation with the same ghastly cold-bloodedness. But it must be said of this descendant of some Jacobite Scotsman that, though touched by the modern German mob passion for the "kolossal" at any cost, he retained somewhat of the old cautiousness of his race. His expenditure of the human resources of Germany was terrific. Misled, like all other German high commanders, by the example of Napoleon as interpreted by Clausewitz, he used up men as if they were the automata of warfare, as easily and as quickly manufactured as shells. But though he purchased his results too dearly, he ever managed, after his failure on the Bzura front in the winter of 1914, to achieve some result.

Mackensen's greatest achievement

And the greatest of all his achievements was the breaking of the Lublin-Cholm line towards the end of July, 1915. After he suddenly turned northward at Ravaruska in the middle of June, his progress was uncommonly slow. His average pace was only about a mile and a half a day. But though he was still faced by the armies he had broken on the Dunajec, the quality and temper of those armies had changed, and he had lost the advantage of surprise in his further conflicts with them. They had been thoroughly reorganised and placed under one of the ablest of Russian strategists, who was well informed of the smashing artillery power and great infantry force which Mackensen wielded. Yet the Russian commander considered he might fight the German to a standstill. He nearly succeeded in getting on his flank at Krasnik, and then at Grubieszov Mackensen was again held up by a thrust towards his rear. He countered it by making a strong attempt to envelop the hostile forces, which were in a dangerously advanced position, at Grubieszov, on July 22nd. A German division was destroyed in trying to



THE ENTRY OF THE HUNS INTO WARSAW: PRINCE LEOPOLD OF BAVARIA AND STAFF OUTSIDE THE ALEXANDER-NEVSKY CATHEDRAL REVIEWING THE TROOPS AS THEY ENTERED THE CITY.
In small panel: Prince Leopold of Bavaria's entry into Warsaw.

Digitized by Google

break through the Russian line of entrenched hills north of Grubieszov, and reach the railway at a point near the Bug. But this division did not die in vain. It was thrown away, with tens of thousands of other troops, in a fierce but misleading demonstration, and on July 29th, when the Cholm army had massed eastward near the Bug after the victory, Mackensen's main force worked westward up the Wieprz River, from its old advanced base of Krasnostav, and in a conflict of extreme violence broke the Russian line between Cholm and Lublin, on the evening of July 29th, and reached the railway at the village station of Biskupice.

Prince Leopold enters Warsaw

The battle was waged on both sides of the Wieprz stream on a front of seventeen miles, and it was won by shell fire from thousands of pieces, many of the largest calibre. Deep as the Russian trenches had been built in places, they were wrecked by high explosives, and the sand-bag breastworks in the river marshes were more easily destroyed. In this way wide gaps were blown in the line of defence, and under the continuing stream of shells the Austrian army corps under General von Arz, which formed part of the German Phalanx, stormed into the Russian lines and held them. The hand-to-hand fighting that followed was of furiously desperate character, for the Russians would not accept a machine-made defeat, but charged in frenzy against their visible human foes. Their counter-attacks, though at first successful, were at last shattered by the fire of guns and machine-guns well concealed, and when night fell the railway was definitely lost.

The Ivangorod garrison then had to prepare to retire, and as the troops holding this section of the Vistula weakened, General von Woyrsch, who had secured a favourable position on the river between Ivangorod and Warsaw, threw two pontoon bridges over it and advanced to cut off Warsaw on Saturday, July 31st. He was beaten back to his bridge-head at Maciejovice, but as the Russian line continued to weaken, owing to the pressure of Mackensen's forces eastward, General von Woyrsch poured his army over the river again, and on Sunday afternoon, August 1st, he had four divisions across the water. The Russian troops in the neighbourhood were forced back a considerable distance towards Garwolin, and this new irruption into our allies' lines definitely concluded the Russian stand on the Warsaw front. The Polish capital, from which everything useful was removed, except food and private property belonging to the townsmen who chose to remain, was entered by Prince Leopold of Bavaria on the morning of August 5th, 1915. A Russian rearguard held the last lines until the bridges were blown up. Then the defending troops nonchalantly marched through the lost city, having left the attacking forces a long task to restore the means of crossing the Vistula and getting guns and ammunition over to make a pursuit.

Neither the Bavarian Prince nor Marshal Hindenburg, who was acting with him, had any direct, immediate influence in bringing about the fall of Warsaw. It was Mackensen's new menace to the Brest Litovsk line, combined with the advance in the same direction by Woyrsch, largely brought about by Mackensen's manœuvre, that decided the fate of Warsaw and its neighbouring positions of Ivangorod and Novo Georgievsk.

The migration of the people from the country north and south of Warsaw, and from Warsaw itself, was a slow, enormous movement. Several million persons preceded the armies in the great retreat into Central Russia. They were mainly Lithuanians, Poles, and Jews, the proportion of Russians being very small. The Poles fled because of their well-founded terror of the Teutonic soldiers, whose deeds in Russian Poland had eclipsed all the atrocities in Belgium and France. Warsaw was emptied of material. Both factories and churches were stripped, one of the principal relics removed being the heart of the great Polish composer Chopin, which was taken to Moscow. Along the roads to Moscow, a thousand miles away, moved all the carriages, carts, and horses, the vehicles being filled with household treasures. Thousands of trucks were accumulated in the sidings, and sent full of human freight and materials on a three days' journey to Moscow by way of Vilna. The direct route through Brest Litovsk was occupied with military business, troop trains and munition trains shuttling to and fro in answer to the pressure exerted by Mackensen and Hindenburg. The wealthy people in Warsaw, who stayed to near the end, when all motor-cars had vanished, were glad of standing room in the cattle trucks. But the gigantic evacuation was managed with great organising power, considering the circumstances, and when Prince Leopold's cavalry entered the city, there was nothing but an empty shell for the conquerors. The great noose had been drawn tight at last, but there was nothing of importance, in a military point of view, within it.

An empty shell for the victors

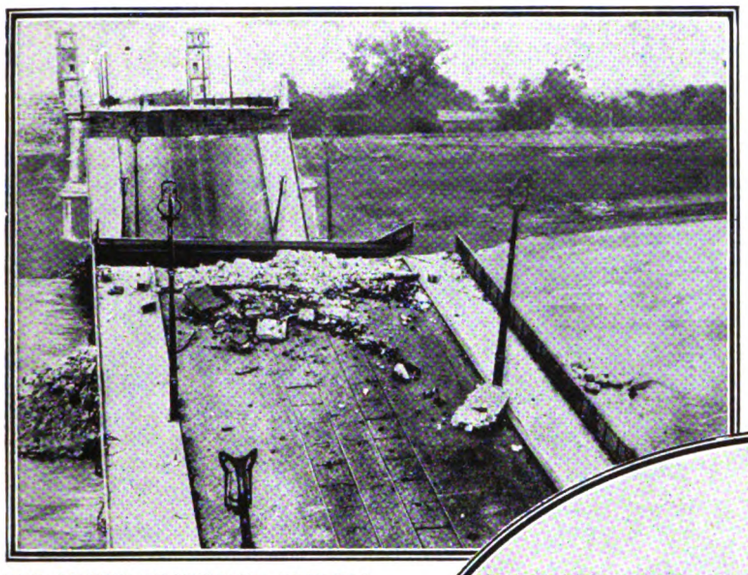
"We don't want peace," said one of the weary Russian soldiers on the outskirts of the lost city. "When we have plenty of shells we shall take Warsaw back again. We can never leave it in the hands of the Germans."

The spirit of Napoleon had risen from its tomb under the dome in Paris to inspire those old opponents of his who had become the allies of a rejuvenated France. The tradition of the retreat of a thousand miles against the Grand Army of the greatest of captains was a priceless source of moral and spiritual strength to the Russian people in the days of their dreadful trial. Every Russian peasant was confident that the Hohenzollern Emperor would advance into disaster, even as the greater Emperor had done. To a Russian a retreat had nothing of the gloomy



AFTER WARSAW: THE ATTACK ON THE GREAT RUSSIAN ENTRENCHMENTS AT NOVO GEORGIEVSK.
Austrian troops advancing. It will be noticed that the officer is calling to his men and not leading them.

Digitized by Google



ONE OF THE SHATTERED BRIDGES ACROSS THE VISTULA AT WARSAW.

significance it has for a Frenchman or a Briton. He regarded it with stoic hopefulness, as the most costly but most decisive means of attaining complete victory.

It was the high and peculiar strength of Russia that the natural faculty for recoiling a long distance for a spring, which was derived from the extent and character of the country, was enhanced by historic memories of the most marvellous retirement in history. They imbued the willpower of this extraordinary people with the quality of invincibility in the very hour of defeat. In Russia when night was darkest, dawn was nearest. Such was the moral force of a tradition prevailing among a nation of peasants, largely illiterate, but strong in faith. After the war materialists will again be found blindly contending that only material things, resolvable into chemical or electrical formula, have a veritable being, and that thought, emotion, and ecstasy of the soul are but phantasmal shadows cast by the transient combination of the atoms of the grey matter of the brain. Yet it was entirely that strange, spiritual thing, faith—faith without any immediate, personal experience substantiating it—which upheld the Russian and made him terrible to his victors in the day of their victory.

Moral force of Russian tradition

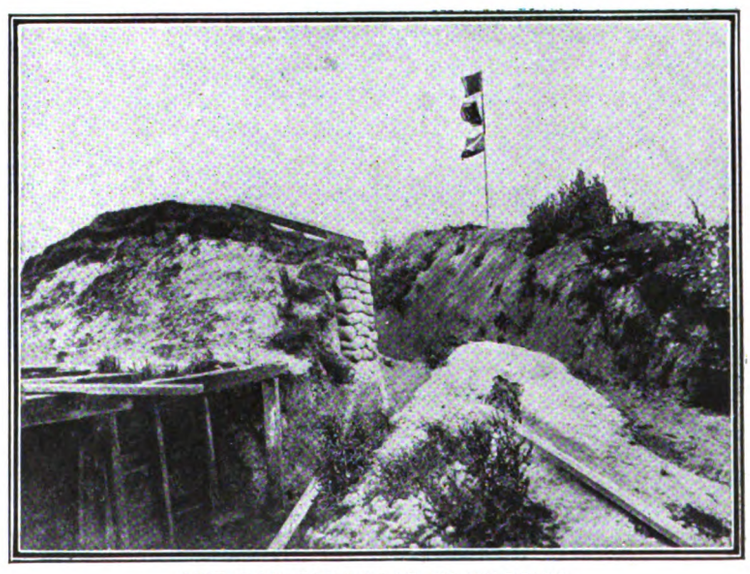
Kaiser Wilhelm II. did not ride in triumph into Warsaw. Instead, he is said to have sent, through a group of financiers, an offer of a separate peace with the Tsar, on extraordinary terms, marked by an apparent generosity that dishonoured the peace-seeker and displayed his dread of the Empire he had invaded. He offered, it was reported, Constantinople and the Dardanelles, belonging to one of his allies; and Galicia, the territory of his other allies, to the ruler whom he had seemingly defeated, and against whom he had originally engineered the war that shook the world. At his suggestion his principal Press agent, Sven Hedin, supposed to be raging with hate for everything Russian, broke out into loud praise of Russian heroism and Russian endurance, and the docile German newspapers for a while executed variations on the same theme.

The tradition of the end of Napoleon's Grand Army weighed on the very impressionable mind of the Hohenzollern, and his extraordinary offer was also influenced by the way in which Bismarck handled Austria after the victory at Königratz. Germany and Austria had already begun to quarrel over Russian Poland, especially over the appointment of the ruler of the new kingdom and the extent of the German and Austrian territories to be restored to it. All these matters of anxiety were further aggravated by a lively apprehension of the strong movement towards free government which was spreading through Russia and

The Kaiser's extraordinary offer



WATCHING THE AUSTRO-GERMAN ENTRY INTO WARSAW.
Standing on one of the broken bridges, with German soldiers among them, part of the resident population are seen watching the entry of the enemy troops into the city.



THE BAVARIAN FLAG IN WARSAW.
The Bavarian colours, with the flags of Germany and Austria, floating over one of the captured forts by way of compliment to Prince Leopold.

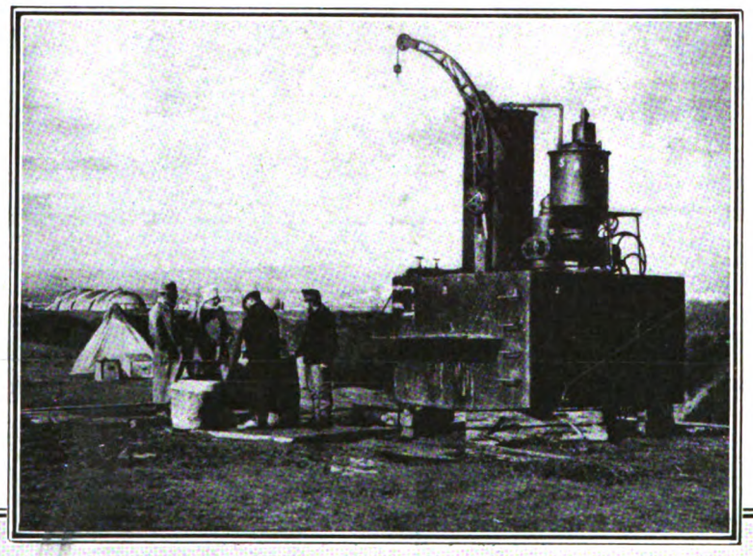
Digitized by Google

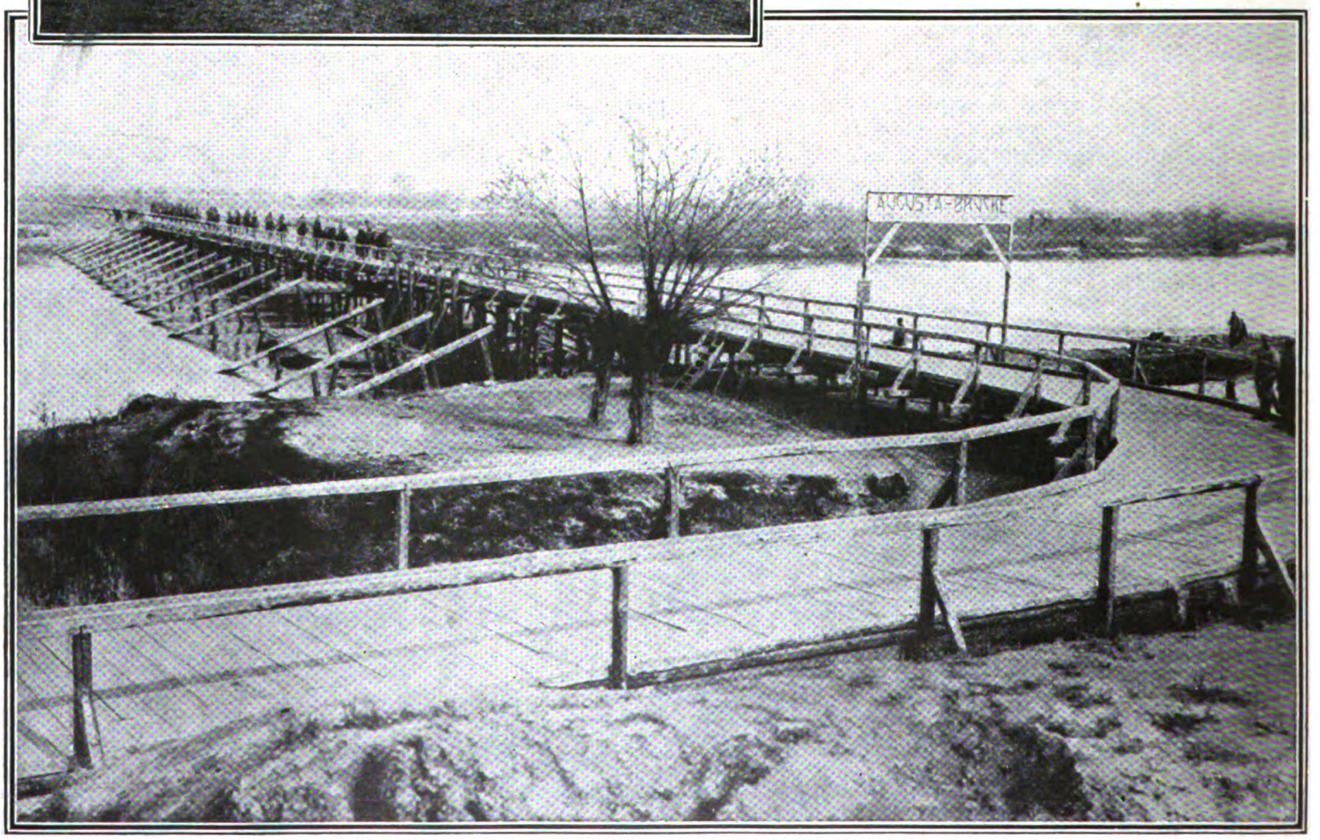
attracting the favouring interest of Tsar Nicholas. If Russia, as a result of the war, discredited the bureaucratic system, how could the same system, reduced to a far more efficient machinery of tyranny, be maintained in Germany? It looked as though the Kaiser, for the first time in his life, began seriously to appreciate—from the point of view of German domestic politics—the subtle skill of Bismarck's ancient policy of keeping on friendly terms with Russia, even at the expense of Austria's good will.

The old bureaucratic illiberal Russia, which was being so swiftly transformed into a fiery but patriotic and self-organising democracy, had been the Hohenzollern's chief rampart against the German Social Democratic movement. Since Peter the Great violently moulded the national life of Russia upon the model of Prussia, Russia had aided her neighbour in many ways. She first saved Prussia from entire destruction after Jena, and afterwards she became the hidden mainstay of the Prussian system of government. Then, while professing to regard her as a menacing, expansive, despotic Power, the German military caste used her as a bugbear to reduce the German middle classes and working classes into a state of subjection.

Treated as a friendly neighbouring Empire, with a common interest in the maintenance of Imperial bureaucracy and in the repression of popular clamour for free government, she had even as late as 1906 helped to augment the prestige of the Prussian system. A free Russia would, soon after the war, create by the force of example and suggestion a free Germany. So the Kaiser, for the sake of his own despotic power, was moved to offer terms of peace. They were rejected. It then became his main object to crush Russia before the leaders of the Duma and the manufacturing classes could develop their production of munitions. He wished to prove to the Tsar that parliamentary institutions would produce no more efficiency in the production of munitions than the bureaucratic system of government had done. Instead of entrenching on the Vistula and transferring a million men and thousands of guns with their stream of shells to the western front, the War Lord continued the advance into Russia, for reasons of German domestic politics. This strange, unexpected liberalising Russia, where the Council of Empire was being invaded by leaders of the revered Duma, was his chief enemy. It threatened most harm to him and all that he stood for. For if the Social Democrats were faced by freed Russians, a revolution in Germany was likely to follow defeat.

The Kaiser's chief enemy





INTERESTING EXAMPLE OF MILITARY BRIDGE BUILDING BY THE AUSTRIAN ENGINEERS—THE "AUGUSTA-BRUCKE" ACROSS THE VISTULA.

In the smaller picture is seen apparatus originally intended for the preparation of hydrogen and adapted by the Austrians for the manufacture of poison gas. To the left is an Austrian captive balloon.

Digitized by Google



KING GEORGE V. WITH HIS STAFF ON SALISBURY PLAIN.

CHAPTER LXXVIII.

THE WAR AND THE WORKER: A YEAR'S SURVEY.

The Difference Between Ancient and Modern Wars—Nations in Arms—The Connection Between War and Poverty—The Great War a Prosperous Time for the Worker—Measures to Deal with the Anticipated Distress—Employment and Wages in 1914—The Prices of Food and their Regulation—Absence of Strikes—Employment in 1915—Big Increases of Wages—The Price of Coal Regulated—Prosperity Helped by Separation Allowances—A Serious Shortage of Labour—An Industrial Revolution—Expenditure on Luxuries Curtailed—Volunteer Labour—Mr. Lloyd George and the Lure of Drink.

IN this chapter we shall consider the condition of the people during the war. We propose to confine ourselves to the first year of warfare—*i.e.*, to the year which ended on August 3rd, 1915—and we must, of necessity, deal with the question in a very broad and general way. In the Middle Ages and later, wars were waged by small armies of professional soldiers, while the mass of the people knew little, and cared less, about their exploits. Wars, even those which were marked by decisive victories, such as Bannockburn and Agincourt, were in no real sense national. The soldier just took up and cleaned or sharpened his bow, or sword, or pike, or musket, and was ready for the fray; he did not need an army of workmen at home to keep him supplied with arms and ammunition. His food he took as required, and a transport and commissariat service did not exist.

To-day all this is changed. In modern warfare the whole people take part in some way or another, and in a literal sense the combatants are nations in arms. Those who are not in the firing-line are probably making ammunition or guns, or clothing, or are providing or carrying food for those who are, and their efforts are as important as are those of the men who serve the guns or rush the trenches. It is said, and no doubt it is roughly true, that every soldier in the field needs two men at home to keep him equipped and efficient.



[*Elliott & Fry.*

SIR JOSEPH J. THOMSON, O.M., F.R.S.
A member of the Central Committee of Inventions Board. He was awarded the Nobel Prize for Physics in 1906.

For this reason it has come about that the condition of the people at home must be considered by those responsible for the conduct of a modern war almost as much as that of the soldiers at the front. If the workers are impoverished, discontented, or diseased, the fighting power of the nation will be seriously weakened. The wars of to-day are well described by the phrase "a nation in arms," and, consequently, an authoritative narrative of the Great War must make mention of many subjects which have rightly no place in the histories of earlier struggles—for instance, those of Clarendon and Napier. When, in 1066, Duke William crossed over to conquer England, the condition of the people in Normandy mattered nothing to him, and had no bearing on the issue of his struggle with Harold; in 1915, the condition of the people of this country mattered a great deal to Lord Kitchener and Sir John French.

For a period of seventy years or so—let us say after the repeal of the Corn Laws in 1846—we were told that war must be avoided because it invariably brings with it distress and destitution. This was laid down as a law to which there was no exception, and most people who had no specialistic knowledge believed it implicitly. We know now that this is not so, that war and prosperity may well go together, and the year 1914-15—at least, as far as this country is concerned—is a case in point. Once again, in August, 1914, it was seen that the pacifists were completely wrong. They foretold want and misery, little

Digitized by Google



"MR. ATKINS" IN THE HOP FIELDS.
In England, as in France, troops not needed at the front helped in the harvest fields. Above is a view of some of our men in khaki hoeing between the bines in a Kentish hop garden.

work and low wages; and, instead, we had plenty of both.

The war which they had in mind, the war which brings with it distress and destitution, is the one which is waged in one's own land and neighbourhood, and this shows the soundness of the German theory that the best place wherein to conduct war is the enemy's country. When hostile soldiers are marching through the land, treading down crops, commandeering food, sacking towns, and killing non-combatants without mercy—for, like the tribesmen in Kipling's ballad,

"They will feed their horse on the standing crop,
Their men on the garnered grain"—

it is certain that extreme misery and privation, if not actual famine, will follow. It is the experience of this kind of warfare which was partly responsible for the idea which prevailed in August, 1914.

Where pacifists were wrong

Further, pacifists confused the time of war with the time after war. The end of a war always brings with it confusion and dislocation of trade, and this has been the parent of poverty and misery. At such a time men are discharged from the Army in large numbers, while concurrently the orders for stores, ammunition, and clothing for the troops cease. A sudden transition of this kind must cause poverty and distress; but, strictly speaking, this is not due to war, but to the cessation of war. It is neither war nor peace, but sudden change, which is bad for trade.

Our own tradition about the terrible evils of war has been handed down to us from the time of the Napoleonic Wars, but it should be remembered that the misery and distress which afflicted this country were far greater after 1815 than they were before it. It was then that wages fell, unemployment increased, and bankruptcies were general, that riots and disorders broke out, and that Great Britain was filled with that unrest about which many of us have heard our grandparents speak.

During the first year of the Great War prosperity and not adversity was the lot of the worker, and this is the outstanding fact in any discussion on the condition of the people. In this connection, we must not forget the work done by our Navy. By controlling the seas of the world, our ships not only preserved our shores from the footsteps of the foeman; they also enabled us to draw supplies of food from all parts of the world. Without this "sure shield," the plight of our workers would have been pitiable indeed, and incidentally this chapter would have told a very different tale.



A WELCOME CHANGE FROM "FORM FOURS."
Those of our soldiers in training who were given a turn at hop-picking found the occupation a congenial change from the parade ground.

When war was declared in August, 1914, our Government shared the prevailing idea about its ill effects on industry. At once a committee was appointed to advise on the measures necessary to deal with any distress which might arise, and on August 11th Mr. J. A. Pease, then President of the Board of Education, wrote to "The Times" explaining the scheme agreed upon, and saying: "It is feared that many workers will be thrown out of employment by the dislocation of industry caused by the war." In the cities and towns local committees were formed to assist the Central Committee in this matter; and, under the auspices of the Prince of Wales, a fund was opened which in a few months amounted to over £4,000,000. To meet the special care of women a committee was formed at the instance of the Queen, and for them workshops were opened in London. In addition, schemes for the training of women and girls, and for experiments in the creation of new industries were inaugurated.

Plans for relieving distress

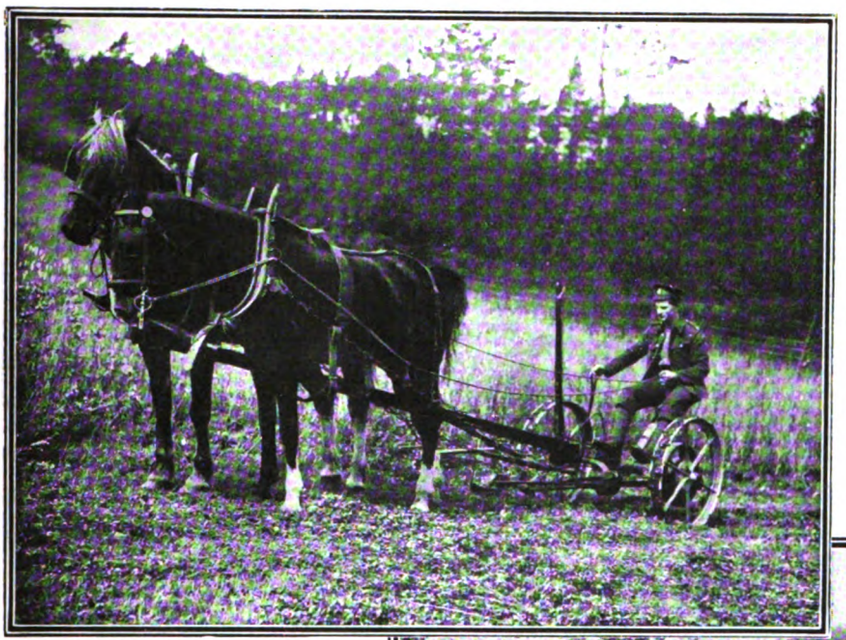
Other measures were taken to deal with an avalanche of unemployment. A Bill, the Housing Act (No. 2), was passed through Parliament, the object of which was to provide £4,000,000 for building houses, and the Development Fund and the Road Board took steps to put fresh

Digitized by Google

schemes in hand. Local authorities were urged to press on public works of all kinds, and in other ways efforts were made to provide plenty of employment. At the same time, in order to alleviate the lot of those who were deprived of their livelihood, laws were passed protecting them to some extent from their creditors and making it more difficult for landlords to distrain upon them for arrears of rent. A little later the Government promised to assist the trade unions in case they were called upon to pay out exceptional sums to their unemployed members.

"Business as usual"

In the first few anxious days of August a certain number of workpeople were dismissed, others had their wages or salaries reduced, and many more were warned to prepare for the worst; but, contrary to expectations, there was no great increase in unemployment, and it was not necessary to put into execution the many schemes prepared by the Local Government Board for dealing with distress. This fortunate state of affairs was due largely to the restoration of credit and public confidence, on which our industrial system rests, and this has already been described in Chapter LXXIV. of this history. It was aided by the enlistment of many workers and by the orders which the Government began to place for arms, food, and clothing for the troops.



A HARVESTER IN KHAKI.

A novel scene on one of the pleasant English uplands. One of the men of the new army lending a hand with an oat-cutting machine—and probably thinking of the grim harvest his comrades were helping to reap in Flanders.

The popular cry of "Business as usual" echoed from the platform and the Press did its part in preventing unemployment. People were urged to keep as far as possible to their usual mode of life, to dismiss no servants, to curtail no orders, to abstain from no reasonable luxury. By acting in this way, they were told, they would reduce the distress inevitable in a time of war to a minimum, and there is no doubt but that this was serviceable advice for the time being.

The parent of prosperity is regular and remunerative employment. There are several ways of testing the state of employment in this country, and although no one of them is perfect, yet all are useful and in the main correct. One is to take the case of 1,000,000 trade unionists and find out what percentage of them are unemployed at any given time. At the end of August the percentage was 7·1 as compared with 2·8 at the end of July, and 2 per cent. at the end of August, 1913. This showed a rise in unemployment, but not a very serious one in the circumstances; and, as the "Board of Trade Labour Gazette" said, it was "a figure which has frequently been exceeded in periods of bad trade, and which is much lower than that recorded during the national coal strike of 1912, when the percentage rose to 11·3." The decline in employment was general in all industries, except in shipbuilding, which benefited by increased activity on Government work, and unemployment was especially high in the cotton industry.

Another test of the condition of the people is found in the number of paupers at any given time. At the end of August the rate of pauperism in thirty-five selected urban districts was 188 per 10,000. At the end of July it was 184, and at the end of August, 1913, it was 183; so here the increase was slight. A third source of information are the figures issued every month about the work of the Labour Exchanges. On August 14th 194,580 persons had their names on the registers of these exchanges, compared with 112,622 on July 17th, 1914, and 89,049 on August 15th, 1913.

Pauperism and unemployment

Again in certain trades, or groups of trades, those in which insurance against unemployment is compulsory, exact figures are available from time to time about the condition of the workers therein. In five big industries—building, shipbuilding, engineering, construction of vehicles, and saw-milling — 180,233 persons claimed unemployment benefit in the four weeks ending August 28th; during the



HAY-MAKING IN FRANCE.

In France much of the work in the fields was done by women; but as many soldiers as could be spared for the purpose helped to gather in the harvest. Above is a picturesque view of French soldiers at work on the hay crop.

Digitized by Google

five weeks ending July 31st, 1914, the number was 103,730, and during the five weeks ending August 29th, 1913, it was 78,229. The average amount paid out was £11,772 per week in August, 1914, compared with £8,793 a week in July, 1914, and £7,276 a week in August, 1913.

A good time for workers

These facts all point to the same conclusion. There was an increase in unemployment and poverty just after the outbreak of the war, but it was nothing like so serious as we had been led to believe it would be. Moreover, from about the end of August or the middle of September, there was an improvement, until we soon reached a time when there was practically no unemployment and very little distress among the working classes.

At the end of September the percentage of unemployed among the million trade unionists had fallen from 7·1 to 5·9, and at the end of October to 4·4. At the end of the year it was only 2·5, not far from the lowest rate on record. The other tests, or at least two of them, showed the same result. On September 11th there were 207,429 names on the registers of the Labour Exchanges, but on October 16th there were only 157,248, and on December 11th only 109,208, or somewhat less than on July 17th, and nearly half the number registered on August 14th.



DEVELOPMENT OF DEFENSIVE WARFARE: PERISCOPE ATTACHMENT FOR RIFLES. This attachment allowed our men in the trenches to take deliberate aim without being exposed to the fire of the enemy's snipers.

As regards unemployment benefit in the five trades, this was claimed by 133,692 persons during the four weeks ending September 25th, and by 124,730 during the five weeks ending October 30th. By the end of December the total had fallen to 55,610, a most significant indication of the state of trade. In September the amount of money paid out was £19,734 a week, but this was reduced to £14,190 a week during October, and to £7,780 a week during December. For pauperism the figure rose in September to 195 per 10,000, but then it fell to 191 in October, to 190 in November, and finally rose to 191 in December, when it was slightly higher than it had been at the end of August. However, it must be remembered that August is a summer month and December a winter one.

The Board of Trade in a short report summed up the position as regards employment in these words:

The outbreak of war at the beginning of August caused an immediate great decline in employment in practically all industries except shipbuilding, but especially in the cotton trade, and in the tinplate, furnishing, and jewellery trades; the percentage of trade union members unemployed rose from 2·8 per cent. at the end of July to 7·1 per cent. at the end of August, and there was also a large amount of short time. In the succeeding months of the year, however, unemployment rapidly improved, and at the close of the year the percentage of trade union members unemployed was actually lower than at the end of 1913. Some industries were still very inactive, especially the cotton trade, though even the depressed trades generally showed a considerable improvement as compared with August. Other trades, however, were enjoying an unprecedented degree of activity; this was specially the case in trades largely engaged on Government work, notably the woollen trade, the leather, saddlery, and the heavy boot trades, the hosiery and wholesale clothing trades, the engineering, shipbuilding, and many branches of the metal trades. These trades were, as a rule, working the maximum possible hours, many factories having double shifts, working day and night, and working on Sundays as well as weekdays.

A similar state of affairs was disclosed by a special report on the state of employment in October, which was issued by the Board of Trade in December. This report was based on returns received from over 20,000 industrial firms, employing altogether over 4,000,000 workpeople, or about 43 per cent. of the whole industrial population—so it should be reliable. It stated that soon after the outbreak of war it "became apparent that the restriction of ordinary industrial activities would be much less serious than had at first been feared, owing largely to the continuance of our foreign trade." The total reduction shown in the number of male workpeople employed as between July and October was 10·7 per cent., or almost precisely equal to the percentage of workmen who were shown by the figures to have joined the military and naval forces. As regards women, the total reduction in the number employed was 6·2 per cent., and as this contraction was not counterbalanced by enlistments, there was a net displacement of labour. Among both men and women, however, there was a good deal of short time in October, this being especially the case in the cotton trade; but in this respect a steady improvement made itself felt before the end of the year.

"The two fundamental needs of the population," says Professor Ashley, "are adequate remuneration for their labour and regularity in their employment." After the first shock of the new conditions caused by the war was over, regularity of employment was secured for the workers. But what about adequate remuneration for their labours?

Tendency of wages in 1914

Here again there was little or nothing about which to complain. Labour got gradually scarcer, and consequently able to command higher wages, and this was the tendency of events in the months between the outbreak of the war and the end of the year. Exact figures about wages are not possible to obtain, but the Board of Trade returns showed that while from January to July the tendency of wages was downwards, from August to December it was upwards. The official statement said that "from August to the end of the year, four months of increase and one of

Digitized by Google



Lord Kitchener looking well pleased with the Artillery passing before him at an Aldershot review.



Detachment of infantry, part of the new army in training, marching past the King on the review ground at Aldershot.



More guns for the front: Splendid display of the new artillery under review by King George at Aldershot.

Digitized by Google



BRIGADIER-GENERAL R. E. W. TURNER, V.C., C.B., D.S.O.
Commanding the 2nd Canadian Division. The photograph was taken at a review of the Canadian troops at Shorncliffe.

decrease, produced a net increase of £6,433 a week." This meant something like £325,000 a year more in wages.

Wages, however, are not really pounds, shillings, and pence; they are food and clothing, shelter and warmth, and the real question is how much of these can the working man—or rathe , we should say, the working woman—buy with the money which is given her. Wages and the cost of living are two parts of the same subject. For instance, if all wages were doubled, but if at the same time the prices of food and other necessaries were trebled, people would be worse off than they are now, although we could prove that there had been a big increase in wages. Whereas, if wages were reduced by one-third and prices by one-half, people would be better off, although wages had been reduced considerably. The wages of one country, or even the wages of one district, cannot properly be compared with those of another, unless a good deal of attention is paid to the cost of living in each.

The problem of food prices

The condition of the people centres round this question of prices, and prices, as we all know, are regulated by the relation between supply and demand. The main thing is to have a plentiful supply of food in the country, and, if this is provided, the cost of living cannot become unduly high. On the outbreak of war there was some justifiable anxiety on this score, and a committee of the Cabinet was appointed to look into the question. A statement was issued to the effect that the supply of wheat in the country together with the crops then being harvested was sufficient for four months' ordinary consumption. Further, the Government encouraged shippers to carry on their business as usual by guaranteeing war risks on wheat and flour shipped from Atlantic or Canadian ports under existing contracts.

In every emergency, however grave, there will always be unpatriotic and greedy people, and so it was in August, 1914. Aided by the panic which led some householders to buy huge stores of provisions, merchants and shopkeepers put up prices, and to check this proceeding, the Government decided to fix maximum prices for certain articles. These were put in force on August 7th, and referred to sugar, butter, margarine, lard, bacon, and cheese; 1s. 6d. a pound was fixed as the maximum price for the first quality of butter, 10d. a pound for margarine, 8d. a pound for lard, and 9½d. a pound for Colonial cheese. For granulated sugar the price was at first 4½d. a pound, but on the 11th it was reduced to 3¾d.; for loaf sugar it was at first 5d., but was lowered to 4¼d. on the 11th. The price of bacon, at first fixed at 1s. 4d. and 1s. 6d. a pound, was also reduced a few days later. This was the retail price, and maximum prices were also fixed for meat, the following statement being made on August 25th: "For prime parts the advance compared with a month ago need not exceed 1d. per pound. For the coarser parts, the demand continues to be relatively greater than for prime joints, and the committee consider that an advance, compared with a month ago, of 1½d. to 2d. per pound on the average may reasonably be charged for these parts. The prices of pork and veal show no advance at present."

Government and the increase

The general trend of food prices was upwards, and at this no one need be surprised. Many, however, were surprised that the rise was so slight, for we had entered upon a struggle about which Mr. Asquith truly said "no man can foresee the end." In September the experts of the Board of Trade, surveying the critical days of August, said that "retail prices of food began to move upward on



THE LORD-PROVOST OF EDINBURGH AT AN INSPECTION.
Lord-Provost Inches inspecting the heavy battery of the Lowland (City of Edinburgh) Royal Garrison Artillery.

Digitized by Google

Saturday, August 1st; but it was not until after the Bank Holiday (August 3rd) that any sharp general rise occurred. By August 8th prices had risen, on average, by 15 or 16 per cent. After that date, however, there was a fall in the price of most articles until, on September 12th, food prices, on the whole, were approximately 10 per cent. above the level of July."

The next movement was a rise, "a slight upward movement" taking place between September 12th and October 1st.

The law of supply and demand

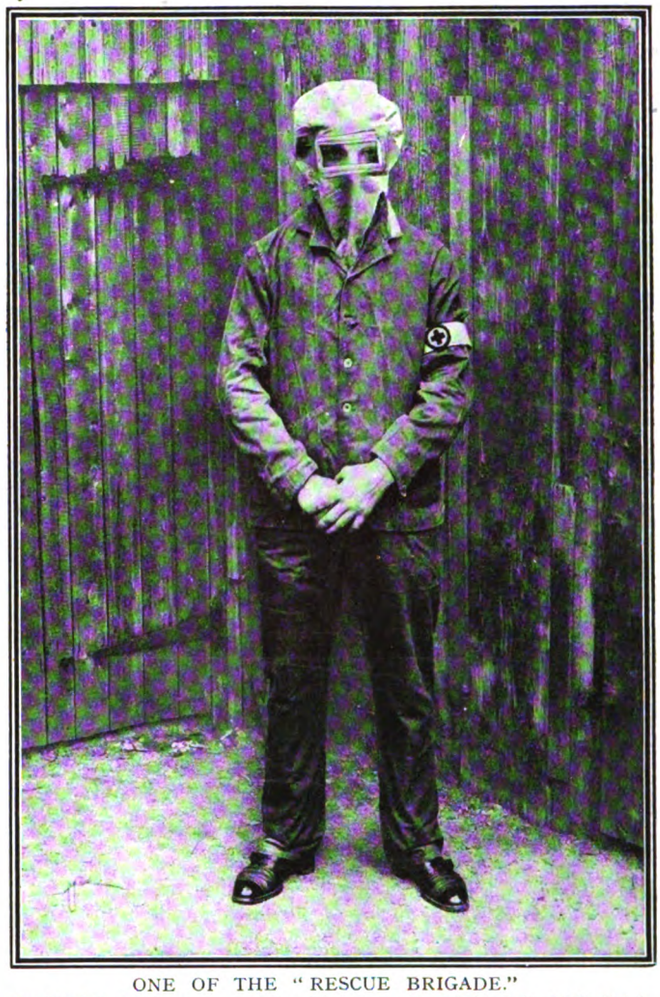
There were appreciable increases in the prices of sugar, eggs, and fish, and although the price of potatoes continued to fall, the general net increase over July prices at October 1st averaged about 12 per cent. During October there was practically no change in food prices, but during November there was an advance on average of between 2 and 3 per cent. The gradual increase continued, the result being that at the end of the year prices were about 18 per cent. above the level of July. The articles which showed the greatest advance were sugar, eggs, and fish. British meat did not increase much in price, but imported meat was much dearer than before the war. Obviously many people were economising by buying foreign instead of British meat, and so the law of supply and demand was at work on the prices of each.

The general prosperity was aided by the absence of strikes and labour troubles. In July there were many of these strikes and rumours of strikes everywhere, but at the outbreak of war all were composed as if by magic. As we were officially told: "Up to the end of July, labour disputes were nearly as numerous as in the corresponding period of 1913; but, on the outbreak of war, most of the outstanding disputes were brought to a close, and the disputes since then have been few and generally unimportant." To prove this, we may say that during the seven months of peace there were 836 disputes, affecting 423,000 workpeople, while during the five months of war there were only 137 disputes affecting 23,000 workpeople.



THE "HORSE DENTIST."

The teeth of the horse as well as those of the soldier require skilled supervision. The above picture shows a "horse dentist" at work—"somewhere in France."



ONE OF THE "RESCUE BRIGADE."

Qualified first-aid men were formed into a "rescue brigade" at Woolwich Arsenal, and were supplied with gas masks for use in cases of necessity.

In the general dislocation of trade which took place in August, women suffered probably more than men, and in this there is nothing at all surprising, for in their case enlistment could not take off the surplus workers. In October, however, employment among women showed considerable improvement. Army contracts created a demand for women machinists and others in the men's clothing trades, in the boot and shoe trade, and others of the kind. On the other hand, dressmakers in the most highly skilled branches had very little work, and in some cases the number of servants was reduced.

At the end of the year 1914 we may take stock of the position of the working classes. Employment was good—very good—which means that practically everybody could find work. Wages were rising, not very much it is true, but still they were rising. On the other side of the account must be set the very serious fact that the retail prices of food had risen during the war by nearly 20 per cent., or something like 4s. in the £. This was bad enough, but if anyone had prophesied that nothing more than this would happen during the course of the most tremendous war in all history, he would have been voted an optimist of the most foolish and impracticable kind.

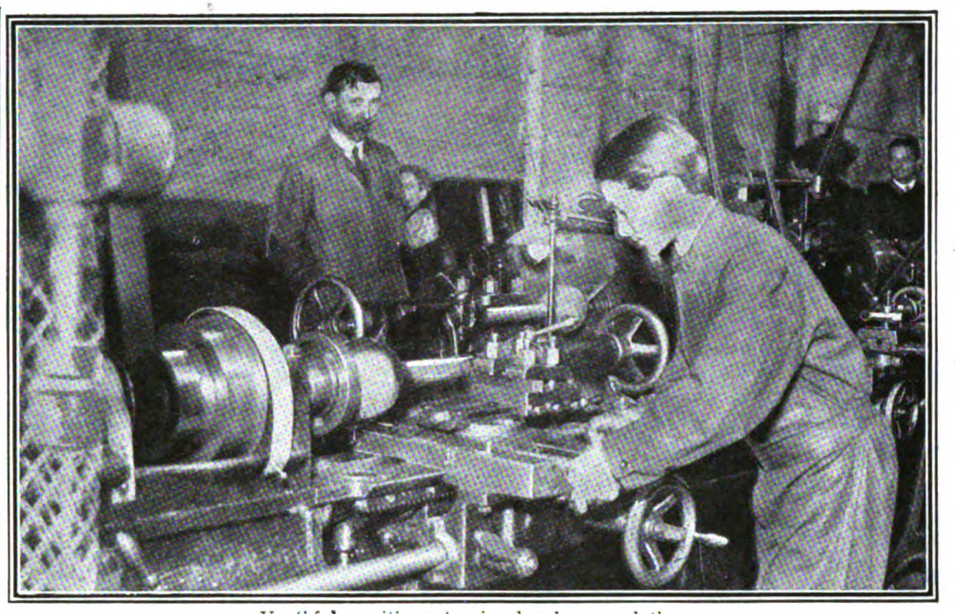
Wages and prices in 1915

These conditions continued during the seven months of 1915 about which we are writing. The rate of unemployment among trade unionists fell steadily from the low figure of December. At the end of February it was 1·6 per cent., at the end of April 1·2 per cent., at the end of June

Digitized by Google



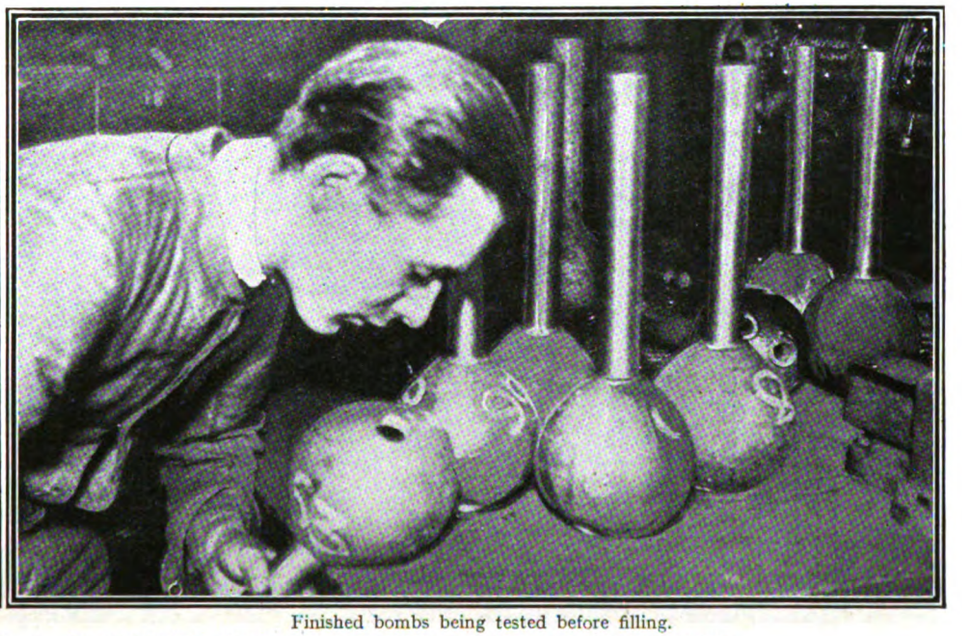
A batch of bomb castings ready for turning.



Youthful munitioner turning bombs on a lathe.



Measuring and cutting bombs.



Finished bombs being tested before filling.

YOUNG ENGLAND AT MUNITION WORK: BOYS AT A TRAINING SCHOOL ENGAGED IN BOMB-MAKING.

Digitized by Google

1 per cent., and at the end of July, after a year of war, only ·9 per cent., by far the lowest on record. The returns from the Labour Exchanges told the same tale. On February 12th the number of names on their registers was 100,616, from which it fell to 95,245 on April 26th, and to 92,025 on June 11th. On July 16th there was a rise to 99,773. To appreciate these figures properly, they should be compared with those of 1914, the previous year. On February 13th, 1914, the number on the registers was 145,297, on April 17th it was 106,472, on June 12th it was 110,853, and on July 17th it was 112,622.

As may be expected, much less money was paid out to the unemployed in the five insured trades. During the five weeks ending January 29th, 73,395 persons claimed benefit, and received on the average £8,250 a week, but during the four weeks ending March 26th these figures had been more than halved, for only 32,916 persons claimed, receiving £3,146 a week. During April and May there were further falls, and during the four weeks ending June 25th only 22,867 persons claimed, the sum paid out being only £1,378 a week. For July the weekly average was almost exactly the same as for June. It is not surprising to find that the rate of pauperism in the thirty-five selected urban districts fell from 189 per 10,000 in January to 181 per 10,000 in April, then to 172 in June, and 169 in July. In June, 1914, it was 186, and in July, 1914, it was 184.

Wages increase: £3,000,000 a year

But these figures are as nothing compared with the extraordinary increase in wages which took place in 1915. It began in February, when increases of £17,889 a week, or something like £900,000 a year, were recorded by the Board of Trade, and there were certainly many others about which the Board heard nothing. Most of the increases took the form of bonuses, usually for the duration of the war, to meet the rise in the cost of living, and the industries mostly affected by them were the engineering, linen and jute, and dock labour groups. This movement continued, and by the end of April the increases in wages amounted to the large sum of £133,537 a week, or nearly £3,000,000 a year. Moreover, this figure was exclusive of increased earnings due to overtime, and also of changes affecting agricultural labourers, seamen, railway servants, police, and Government employees, and, we were told, "it is known, however, that considerable bodies of workpeople in these occupations have received bonuses or increases since the beginning of the year."

"By far the largest ever recorded in a single month." This sentence refers to the increase of wages during May, which amounted to no less than £188,485 a week, most of it being in the coal-mining industry. It brought the total increase in wages during the year to nearly £350,000 a week, or something like 3s. 6d. each to the workpeople concerned. In June the increases recorded were comparatively small, being only £20,000 a week, and in July only £8,000. However, for the seven months a total of £394,000 a week was reported, quite a satisfactory amount to set against the increased cost of living. While referring to this question of increased wages, it is pleasant to be able to say that the agricultural labourer—the worst paid man in the community—shared in this movement. In 1914 the weekly cash wages of 242,000 agricultural labourers

Agricultural labourers benefit



GERMAN PRISONERS AT WORK IN ENGLAND: FROM THE SANDBAGGED TRENCHES OF FLANDERS TO THE SANDPITS OF DORSET.

On returning from their labours each day the German prisoners who worked in the Dorset sandpits were given refreshments by an old lady as they passed through the wood in which she lived. The circular view shows the men at the refreshment hut.

N N

Digitized by Google



HIGHLAND OFFICERS IN TRAINING.
A scene at firing-butts somewhere north of the Tweed.



GRENADIERS AT SNIPING PRACTICE.
Squad of Grenadier Guards on Wimbledon Common being instructed in sniping tactics.

little unemployment, except in a few luxury trades, while in a number of industries, notably coal-mining, engineering, shipbuilding, agriculture, and transport, the demand for labour greatly exceeds the supply.

Partly owing to this great improvement in employment, and partly to the rise in the cost of living, nearly two and a half million workpeople have had since August last increases in rates of wages or war bonuses, amounting to over £400,000 per week, or over 3s. per head of those benefiting. These figures are exclusive of increases which have been granted to agricultural labourers, seamen, railway servants, police, and Government employees. They also exclude increased earnings owing to overtime."

were increased by £19,337 a week, an amount equal to the accumulated net increase of the ten years 1903-14. The majority of the increases took place in the autumn—*i.e.*, after the outbreak of war—and the upward movement continued in 1915. In Scotland, we were told, wages in May, 1915, compared with a year before, showed a rise in every county.

The Board of Trade review

In August, a year having then elapsed since the outbreak of hostilities, the situation was reviewed in the "Board of Trade Labour Gazette." This said that the disquieting conditions of August were of short duration, and by the end of September a distinct improvement had been manifested. By the end of November employment was at about the same level as that prevailing just before the war, and since November the demand for labour had steadily increased. For months past the industries engaged in supplying the requirements of the allied forces had been working at the highest pressure. The review continued:

Owing to the large number of enlistments the number of males available has greatly decreased. To meet this shortage of labour there has been a considerable transference from trades adversely affected by the war to other industries which were rendered abnormally active; in addition, there has been, wherever possible, a growing movement in the direction of substituting female for male labour. The net result is that at the present time there is very

As regards the cost of living, the increase noted in the later months of 1914 continued in 1915. In January there was an advance of between 3 and 4 per cent., the most important feature being the continued upward movement in the prices of flour and bread, and in February there was a somewhat smaller increase, the chief rise taking place in the same two articles. This continued, and the upward movement of retail prices of food reported for April was accentuated in May, but this time a different article was mainly responsible for it; this increase was owing chiefly to the sharp rise in the price of meat. A small but steady rise in retail prices was reported in June and July.

A year's advances in food prices

On July 30th, practically a year after the outbreak of war, retail prices of food had risen by 34 per cent., the increase having been a fairly steady one since the fluctuations of August, 1914. For beef and mutton, prices had advanced by 40 per cent. and more, and for fish by over 60 per cent. Bread, in July, was nearly 40 per cent. dearer than a year before, and flour 45 per cent. dearer, although both were cheaper than they had been in April and May. The price of sugar had risen during the war period by 68 per cent., and thus the heaviest advance took place in an article the supply of which was taken over by the Government.

Digitized by Google



THE PRICE OF VICTORY: A GRIM CAMERA-RECORD FROM THE ARGONNE.

The above wonderful, if painful, photograph shows soldiers of our French ally removing their dead and wounded comrades from the trenches in an interval between the terrible fighting in the Argonne. The men had a grim task to perform, but carried it through with reverence for those who had fallen never to fight again, and with an equally marked solicitude for the wounded.

Digitized by Google



AN EARLY STAGE IN THE MANUFACTURE OF A SHRAPNEL SHELL-CASE.
Scene at a munition factory. A red-hot bar is being cut by what is called a "hot saw." The operation is arduous and dangerous, the men having to work in intense heat and amid showers of sparks, for protection against which they wear special spectacles and breathing-tubes.

Considerable, but still less serious, were the rises in the prices of tea and potatoes. Tea rose by 20 per cent., but this included the additional duty of 3d. a pound, and potatoes by 25 per cent. The retail price of butter increased by 19 per cent., and of milk by 11 per cent. These few facts about our principal articles of food will give us some idea of the general rise, but perhaps the clearest and best idea will be obtained by remembering that a year of war resulted in retail prices rising on the average by one-third. Bearing this in mind, perhaps, after all, the rise of 3s. a week in the wages of the worker was not such an extraordinary boon.

Before the end of 1914 the Government had abandoned its scheme of fixing maximum prices for food, although the Board of Trade continued to keep a watchful eye on the price of meat; but with regard to one article of almost equal importance to the worker—coal—there was a general feeling that something of this kind should be done. During the winter of 1914-15 the price of coal rose enormously in spite of the fact that the colliery proprietor, the middleman, and the working miner protested loudly and frequently that nothing whatever in the nature of excessive profits or wages was coming their way. Neither these assertions, however, nor even the figures which were presented to prove them, altered the fact that the householder was paying 10s. or so a ton more for his coal than he had previously done, and although he could not say for certain who received this, it left his pocket, and he felt tolerably sure that it was not lost by the wayside, but that it reached someone else in some form or other.

On February 25th a committee was appointed to inquire into the causes of the rise in the retail price of coal sold for domestic use, especially to the poorer classes of consumers in London and other centres, and this committee issued a report on April 1st. In this reference was made to the reduction in the output of coal due to the enlistment of miners, the lack of shipping, and other causes, and these striking sentences occurred:

"The total rise in the cost of production and distribution has been at most 3s. per ton, whereas the price to the consumer has risen above normal winter prices by an amount varying, according to the quality of the coal, from 7s. to 11s. per ton. The net result," says the report, "is that the sums recently paid and now being paid for coal by London consumers include a large surplus above ordinary profits, after making full allowance for the increased cost of production and distribution."

The report adds that the system of fixing prices which prevails in London "gives coal-owners and merchants a common interest in high prices," and is indefensible. The recommendations made for reducing the price of coal were that reserves in or near London should be accumulated, that exports to neutral countries should be restricted, that more shipping should be made available, and finally that "if prices do not shortly return to a reasonable level, the Government should consider a scheme for assuming control of the output of the collieries during the continuance of the war."

The price of coal regulated

As a consequence of the agitation and of this report, a Bill was introduced into Parliament in July, and with one or two alterations this became law in August. It provided that at the pit's mouth the price of coal should be not more than 4s. a ton in excess of the price paid for similar qualities during the year which ended on June 30th, 1914. It did not say anything about the profits of the middlemen, but the coal merchants of London gave a voluntary undertaking that these would be limited. Owing to the many varieties of coal, the authorities thought that it would be impossible to fix maximum retail prices, and so the Bill represented the best they could do in the circumstances

Digitized by Google



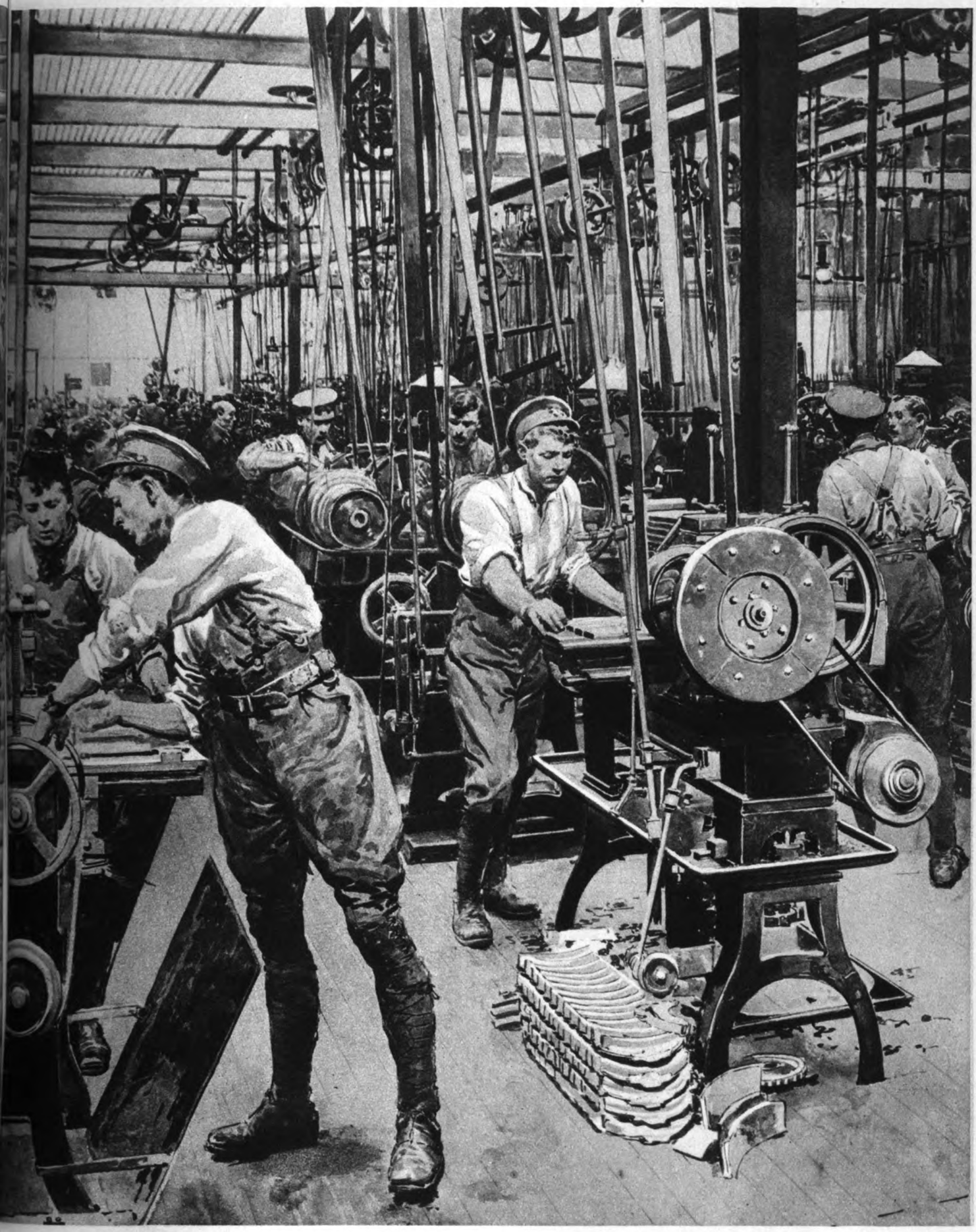
Rear-Admiral Charles Lionèl Vaughan-Lee, appointed Director of Air Services, September, 1915.

Digitized by Google



"Nosing" shells in one of the great factories of Vickers, Ltd.

Digitized by Google



Back from Flanders to the factory: Skilled men from the trenches making munitions.

Digitized by Google



Women at work that men might fight: Busy scene in one of the munitions workshops in the summer of 1915.

Digitized by Google

A practical test of its efficacy or otherwise would come in the winter of 1915-16.

Ample employment, good wages, but on the other hand high prices for food and other necessaries describe the condition of the worker during the first year of the Great War. This was not an ideal state of affairs, but it was much more like national prosperity than national adversity, and so we are justified in referring to the period as a prosperous one.

This prosperity was due mainly to the shortage of labour and to the enormous expenditure on the war. More than £3,000,000 a day was being spent by our Government, nearly all of it in this country, in addition to large sums by France and Russia, and most of this eventually took the form of wages.

The prosperity among the working classes was helped by the increase in the separation allowances, the result being that many married women were better off than they had ever been before. As one good woman is reported to have said: "Thirty bob a week, and my husband away; why, it's paradise!" The increase in the separation allowances, which came into force on March 1st, 1915, was due primarily to the will of the people that, cost what it might, the dependents of the men who had crossed the sea to fight their battles should be provided for by the State. This feeling was wholly honourable; for often in the past this country had suffered disgrace by allowing the wives and children of heroes to pass their days in penury and want. During the year under review sad cases—far too many of them—due often to the incompetence or carelessness of well-paid officials, came to light, but these became fewer as public opinion made itself felt more and more. We realised, as we had never done before, that our soldiers and their dependents had the first claim, not indeed upon our charity, but upon the wealth and resources of the whole nation, and some of us were daring enough to think that they should be paid even if Cabinet Ministers and civil servants went short. Only one grave abuse remained—that the widows of officers who had perished in the nation's service were left with the most miserable pittances, and even these pittances they could not claim as a right.

Providing for soldiers' dependents

The committee appointed to consider the question of separation allowances recommended that the wife of a soldier should receive 12s. 6d. a week, with an additional sum for each child—5s. for the first, 3s. 6d. for the second, and 2s. for each succeeding one. Of this sum of 12s. 6d. the soldier provided 3s. 6d. from his pay. To the wife of a sailor 6s. a week was recommended, with extra amounts for each child, but this was conditional upon the sailor making her an allowance of 5s. a week. The suggestions of the committee were accepted by Parliament and, as already stated, they came into force on March 1st, 1915, before which date smaller sums had been paid.



EFFECT OF A SUCCESSFUL FRENCH MINING OPERATION.
View of the interior of a strong German position which, after being mined by the French, was carried by a brilliant bayonet assault, occupied, and then consolidated.

It will be seen that in the aggregate these allowances amounted to a large sum. We were told, in July, 1915, that there were about 850,000 married men in the Army, so we cannot be far wrong if we assume that their wives were receiving something like £1,000,000 a week. This sum must not be overlooked in considering the question before us, for together with higher wages, it accounted for the prosperity enjoyed in working-class districts, a prosperity in which the drapers, butchers, and other shopkeepers shared. One heard many stories of clothing bought on an unusual scale by the poor, of a bigger demand for the better joints of meat, of purchases of furniture and articles of this kind by those who rarely, if ever, had indulged in such extravagances before, of longer trips to the seaside, and of other evidences of prosperity. It is a matter for whole-hearted congratulation that at last fortune came to these humble folk, and even if they did not lay out every penny to the best advantage, none envied them their prosperity; on the contrary, all hoped that it would endure.

Digitized by Google

We have hinted several times already at the growing shortage of labour, and in the spring of 1915 an unprecedented state of affairs arose. The lack of workers became so serious that the nation had, of necessity, to revise its ideas and to adopt itself quickly to entirely different and novel conditions. "Business as usual," a hitherto excellent motto, became suddenly a most injurious one, the exact reverse of what was wanted.

The shortage of labour did not come all at once. As far back as September, 1914, we were officially told that there was some shortage of agricultural labourers, owing to the number of men joining the Army, and month by month this became more pronounced. In November "some shortage of labour" was reported in connection with industry generally, and so it was in December and in the first two months of 1915.

In March and April the shortage became really serious. As regards the position in April we were told that there was a general shortage of male labour, which was especially marked in engineering, coal-mining, and agriculture. In the clothing trades there was some scarcity of female labour. Farm labour was scarce in almost every district in Great Britain; in some districts extra labourers were unobtainable. In May a scarcity of male labour was reported by nearly all trades, and this shortage was now extending to female and boy labour in many occupations. Those who distrust official statements such as these may be referred to the advertisement columns of the daily papers about this time. There, under the heading of "situations vacant," they will find pages and pages of requests for labour of almost every kind. Further proof, if such be required, can be obtained from one's own experience.

A national awakening

This shortage coincided with a national awakening about the war. In the spring of 1915 it was generally recognised that this country would have to do much more than it had done; would have to take a bigger share in the struggle if the Allies were to emerge victorious therefrom. Not only must Great Britain send more men to the seat of war, but, more urgent still, she must turn herself into one great arsenal, and produce guns and munitions of all kinds on an enormous scale. Nothing less than this would avail. Then came the Munitions Act, the opening of Government factories throughout the land, and the necessity of obtaining a great deal of labour to man them.



DEMONIACAL PHASE OF THE MACHINE-MADE WAR: FRENCH SOLDIERS OPERATING A CAPTURED GERMAN "FLAMMENWERFER," OR FLAME-PROJECTOR.

Above is a closer view of the dense black smoke-clouds emitted by a "flammenwerfer." At Hooge in July, 1915, British troops suffered from this inhuman projection of the German scientific mind.

Digitized by Google

The problem, although big, was fairly simple. The labour force was strictly limited in number, and consequently it must be organised and put to the best possible use. The necessary industries—agriculture, coal-mining, munitions, and transport being perhaps the chief—must be provided with men and the unnecessary ones must go to the wall. The output of luxuries must be curtailed in order that the men engaged thereon might be transferred to more useful spheres, and in general everything must be made subservient to the great work of prosecuting the war to a successful conclusion.

The changed position and the special needs of the hour were well expressed in a circular issued by the Local Government Board on March 11th: "In view of the needs of recruiting and of the demand for labour for the manufacture of war materials and for the production and transport of the necessary supplies for the population, the Committee of Imperial Defence emphasise the importance of releasing male labour of high physical quality, as far as possible from other occupations, and of substituting, where necessary, men of more advanced years or, where the conditions allow, women workers."

This industrial revolution, for it was nothing less, took place in May, June, and July, 1915, the last three months of the period under review, but its results were only just becoming apparent when the war entered upon its second year.

As in August, 1914, the national duty at this crisis was the text of innumerable speeches, sermons, and articles, but the advice given was of a very different kind. Instead of retaining in their personal service all the labour they possibly could, people were urged to do with as little as possible. They were asked to release gardeners, gamekeepers, chauffeurs, and others for more useful duties, and not to order or use articles such as motor-cars for their own pleasure or convenience. Economy in food and dress was advocated, primarily because it would help to relieve the strain on the labour market. An entirely new principle—economy in men—was introduced into public life. Whereas in the past the patriot had been the man who gave as much employment as possible, under the changed conditions, of 1915, he was the man who gave the least.

A new principle in public life

These exhortations were not without their effect. Expenditure on luxuries was decidedly curtailed; there was much less travelling and far fewer persons were engaged in ministering to the pleasures of others. The closing of M. Worth's London branch was a sign that economies were being made at the expense of the dressmaker, and the returns of the fashionable drapers told the same story. Ladies were seen carrying home their own purchases, shops were closed at an earlier hour to enable fewer assistants to do the work, and in a thousand ways labour-saving was the order of the day.

To get more work of the necessary kind done, large calls were made upon the army of unemployed women. In shops, banks, warehouses, and offices thousands of women took places hitherto filled by men. Women were seen issuing and punching tickets at the railway-stations, carrying round letters, and even driving vans and motors. Police-women came into existence, and by the substitution of female for male labour probably some hundreds of thousands of men were released either for fighting or for making munitions.

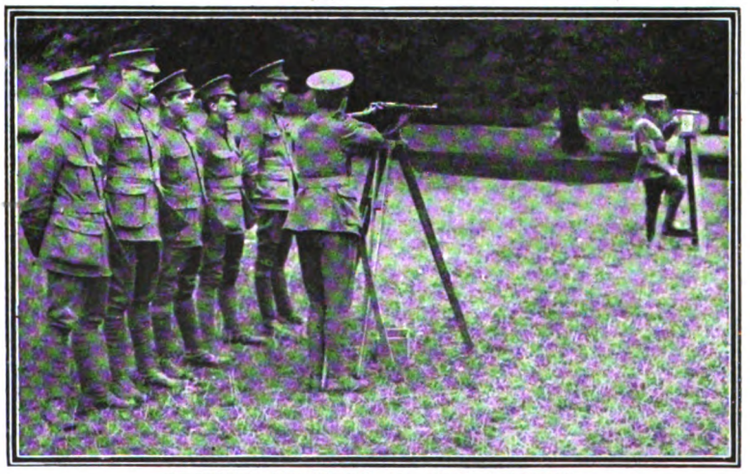
Men were also provided for the fighting-line or the factory by the employment of volunteer labour in various directions. Many men, generally those who were too old for active service, were able and willing to give a few hours a week to the public service. Early in the war some of them were employed as special constables, thus enabling many policemen to join or rejoin the Army, and later, bands of workers were organised to labour during their spare time in the munition factories. Similarly volunteers were collected for work in the harvest-field, and special arrangements were made by which soldiers were allowed to assist the farmers.

To economise labour to the greatest extent possible was the nation's need, and consequently instructions were issued with a view of preventing men engaged in the vital industries—agriculture, coal-mining, munitions, and the like—from enlisting. This protected from further depletion the limited number of skilled workers, an indispensable asset, and something was done to get more work out of them. In March, 1915, Mr. Lloyd George told the representatives of the trade unions that for the period of the war all their rules and regulations restricting output should be suspended, and something of the kind was accepted in the Munitions Act, which also empowered the authorities to punish men who stayed away from work without proper cause.

Lloyd George and the drink lure

This problem—workmen absenting themselves from their work—was responsible for a certain reduction of output, and it was attributed largely to the lure of drink. Mr. Lloyd George was understood to favour very drastic measures to prevent this, but they were not accepted by his colleagues, and were condemned by the Nationalists and Labour Party. On March 29th he said that "nothing but root-and-branch methods will be of the slightest avail in dealing with this evil," and spoke somewhat rhetorically of our three enemies—"Germany, Austria, and drink"—drink being the greatest.

Something, however, was done. Under the Defence of the Realm Act a Board was set up, and to this was entrusted the duty of controlling the sale of intoxicating liquor in the munitions, transport, and camp areas. By proclamation it could prohibit wholly or in part the sale of drink in any area, and in July restrictions were applied to certain important districts in England. In these it was expedient, for the purpose of the successful prosecution of the war, that the sale and supply of intoxicating liquor should be controlled by the State. In Scotland two large areas were proclaimed. Therein the hours during which intoxicating liquor might be sold were restricted to four and a half days a week. These various measures were, in general, successful in increasing the output of munitions and providing more soldiers for the front, while at the same time the necessary industries were kept going. More work was obtained from the workers, and in many cases men worked to the limit of human endurance; women entered gaily upon their novel duties, and children were exempted from attendance at school in order to work in the fields, a move which was carefully watched by the authorities and by Parliament.



BRITISH OFFICERS IN THE MAKING.
Members of the Inns of Court Officers Training Corps receiving instruction in the use of a device for teaching accurate rifle-shooting.

Digitized by Google



BRITISH CHARGE AT HOOGE: WHERE TRENCHES LOST THROUGH GERMAN "LIQUID FIRE" WERE RECAPTURED.

For several months in the summer of 1915, following a severe gas attack launched by the Germans on May 24th, very heavy fighting took place around the village and chateau of Hooge. On July 19th the British blew up a mine west of the chateau and then gained 150 yards of trenches. The Germans replied on July 30th by a heavy bombardment of our line and by an attack with "flame-projectors." This caused a temporary abandonment of some of our trenches, but was punished severely by a counter-attack, in which the Liverpool Scottish and other regiments fought with splendid dash and courage. Says an eye-witness of the British charge above depicted: "One thing was made clear on this day, and that is, that in the point of endurance and courage the German is absolutely no match for the Britisher."

Digitized by Google



M. VANDERVELDE CHATTING WITH

KHAKI-CLAD BELGIANS AT THE FRONT.

CHAPTER LXXIX.

THE BATTLE OF RUE D'OUVERT AND STONY MOUNTAIN AND THE STRUGGLE ROUND HOOGE.

How the First British Army Helped the Tenth French Army—The Double Thrust Against the Bavarian Crown Prince—The Romance of Plug Street—Successes of Our Mining Parties—Duck's Bill and the Destruction of the Bomb Depots—The Great Bombardment of the La Bassée Triangle—The Heroism of the Ontario Regiment—Lumberjack as a Machine-Gun Base—Private Smith's Adventures in the Death Zone—Stony Mountain Fort Holds Up Our Advance—Germans Have the Advantage of Position and Profit by It—British and Canadian Troops Retire to their Own Lines—The Great Gas Cloud at Ypres—Magnificent Achievement of the 3rd Dragoon Guards—Flame-Projector Attack by the Germans—The Battle for Hooge and the Victory of the Crater.

AFTER our First Army captured the salient at Festubert in May, 1915, the British forces made no further serious attempt to break the enemy's lines. For it was reckoned at the time that the German gunners were often able to fire four shells to our one. Moreover, the new concrete defences of the enemy had proved to be of exceeding strength. The German system of works extended for miles behind their first line of sand-bags, and on the old battlefield at Messines, where the London Scottish first went into action, there was an immense field fortress, quite equal in strength to the famous Labyrinth, which had checked the French rush towards Lens.

All that our two armies could do, while Mr. Lloyd George was speeding up the supplies of munitions, was to hold the Germans on their front, and prevent them from massing against the Tenth French Army, which was continuing the struggle for the approaches to Lens. Naturally our men could not keep the Germans occupied by remaining quiet themselves. Both the First Army, under Sir Douglas Haig, and the Second Army, under Sir Herbert Plumer, had to maintain a severe pressure against the German lines. That is to say, we had to attack, sometimes at any cost and without any hope of victory, in order to facilitate the progress of the French forces on our left. The most important operation of this collaborative kind was that which took place along the La Bassée Canal east of Festubert on June 15th. The Tenth French Army was then making its great effort against the Bavarian army, in an action of desperate fierceness about Souchez and round the north-eastern end of the Labyrinth. General Foch had used something like four million shells in blasting his way into the German wedge north of Arras, and he still had sufficient ammunition in hand to throw three hundred thousand shells at Souchez in a single day. The strain he thus placed upon the army of the Crown Prince of Bavaria was enormous. The prince clamoured for reinforcements, and broke out into a very serious personal quarrel with the Crown Prince of Prussia, whom he accused of deflecting into the Argonne section of conflict large new German forces that were vitally required for the protection of Lens and Lille.



THE REVIVAL OF ARMOUR.
British soldier wearing a steel helmet for protection against shrapnel.

As we have already seen, in the chapter relating the deeds of the Tenth French Army, the Crown Prince of Bavaria succeeded at last in getting the reinforcements he wanted, and the German Staff detached eleven divisions from the reserves destined for the Russian front, and sent them to Souchez to stay the French advance. Our First British Army took an important part in inducing the German Staff to reinforce the Lille defences with nearly a quarter of a million more men, for while the French were penetrating the enemy's position

Digitized by Google

near Angres and Souchez, our troops made a sudden drive into the defences of the Westphalian Army Corps at La Bassée.

The action began with a feint at a forward movement by our Second Army in the Ypres section. Some of our cavalry, in an action that will later be described in detail, carried the manor-house of Hooge at the point of the bayonet in the first week of June. While the fighting continued in this northerly sector, the inhabitants of "Plug Street" aroused the Germans in front of them by a mine explosion, followed by a charge that ended in the capture of part of the German trenches. "Plug Street" was the soldiers' name for the Forest of Ploegsteert, stretching south of Messines and north-west of Lille, and forming in peace-time the shooting preserves of a rich brewer of Armentières. His last pheasants were shot by British troops for their Christmas dinner, by which time the forest



FRENCH SOLDIERS, WEARING ANTI-POISON GAS MASKS AND RESPIRATORS, AWAITING A THREATENED ATTACK UNDER COVER OF A GAS-CLOUD.

was dotted with graves, littered with shell-smashed trees, and transformed into a hidden city of cave-men. It was made famous by British and American war correspondents, who found it the most interesting sight on the British front, for under the surface of the ground there was a circle of caves with the signpost, "Piccadilly Circus," from which a Regent Street ran, with a Leicester Square close by. In June there was also a fragrant Kensington Gardens in "Plug Street," composed of wild flowers, which the soldiers had transplanted from the forest nooks. All the singing-birds fled, and only the bullets from the neighbouring German trenches sang amid the trees, after missing the top of our breastworks rising just beyond the edge of the wood.

Flowers and dynamite

There had been little fighting in "Plug Street" since the Germans were bayoneted out of it during their attempts to break through to Calais the previous autumn. The defeated enemy raised his trenches only four hundred feet from the eastern boundary of the wood. When the ground dried in the late spring, our sappers drove a shaft beneath the zone of death and made a great dynamite mine under the German defences. This sort of work was going on all along the front. Both sides had men listening in advance saps for sounds of subterranean activity, and when mining operations were discovered, a counter-shaft was driven forward with fierce rapidity, and either a counter-mine was exploded, blowing up the enemy sappers, or the hostile tunnel was rushed suddenly from the counter-shaft, and a hand-to-hand conflict was waged in the dark, narrow underground passage.

Battles of the "cave-men"

Mining was certainly one of the revived forms of ancient warfare, in which our engineers won and held the mastery, for we had far more mining successes than the enemy. We first wiped the Germans out of Hill 60 by a mine, and we repeated this success at "Plug Street" and at La Bassée. The Germans in return drove five mines at our lines in the second week in June, but the explosions did not occur close enough to our defences to damage them. At "Plug Street," on the other hand, on June 6th, the German trenches were transformed into a great crater, from which our bombing parties worked along the enemy's front. From a similar crater at Hooge the work of keeping the Duke of Würtemberg's army occupied also proceeded, and at other points held by our Second Army the necessary pressure was maintained in the middle of June.

But all this was only a demonstration, and the real attack was delivered by the First Army. A mine was driven towards the German trenches between Rue d'Ouvert and Rue du Bois, near the La Bassée Canal; but, unfortunately, there was water below the German position near the canal, and our sappers therefore could not tunnel right under the hostile trench. When they tried to do so, they were washed out. So they kept out the water with sand-bags and clay, and stacked against the enemy's trench an extraordinary amount of dynamite to make sure that the German line would be blown up.

This, however, was one of the causes of the subsequent failure of our infantry attack; for at Duck's Bill, as the position was called, there was a salient in our line, and the opposing trenches were extremely close to each other. To guard against accidents, our troops were withdrawn just before the mine was exploded, on the evening of June 16th. But so large and powerful was the mass of dynamite that it not only destroyed the German position, but buried one of our own magazines of hand-grenades, and killed several of our bomb-throwers. Then, about the same time, another depot of bombs close at hand was blown up by a German howitzer shell. The result was that our attacking troops found themselves perilously short of hand-grenades in the critical period of the battle. The troops consisted of a British division, supported by a Canadian brigade, and

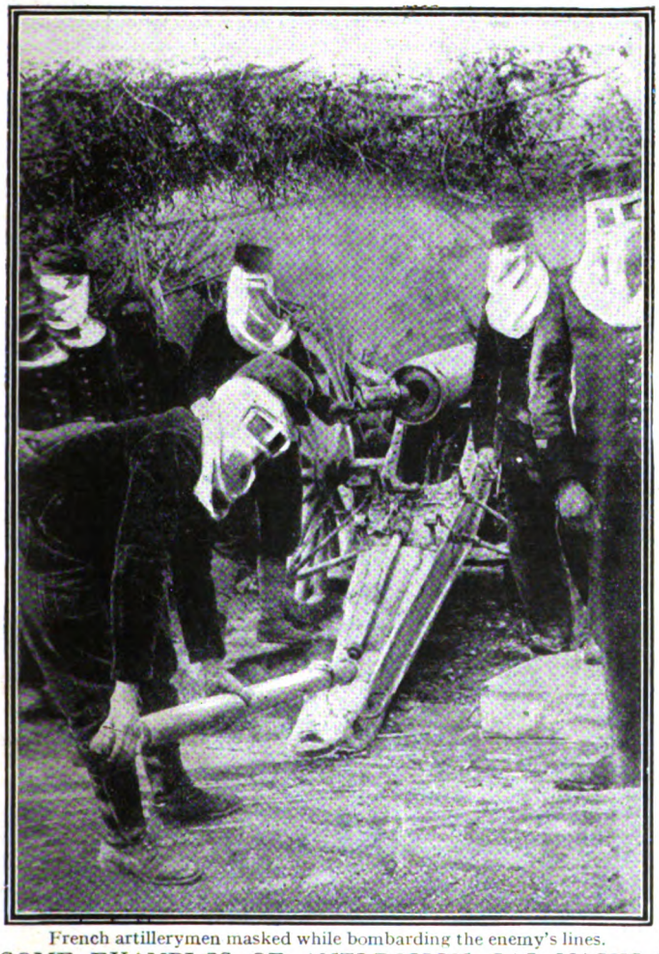
Digitized by Google



An anti-poison gas mask of the more "fashionable" type.



A Highlander wearing a mask which makes him resemble the Sphinx.



French artillerymen masked while bombarding the enemy's lines.



A weird—but effective—form of anti-gas mask adopted by the French.

SOME EXAMPLES OF ANTI-POISON GAS MASKS WORN BY ALLIED TROOPS IN THE FIRING-LINE.

Digitized by Google



"NEMO ME IMPUNE LACESSIT": SCOTTISH RELIEFS EN ROUTE TO THE TRENCHES.

Sturdy Scots, light of foot and light of heart, on their way to the trenches to convince the Huns ahead that any estimate of Scotia's fighting power based on the cartoons of German "comic" papers was likely to be a very misleading one. For many months after the outbreak of war no German comic paper was regarded as complete if it did not contain a more or less gross insult to the wearers of the glengarry and the kilt.

among them were the 1st Canadian Ontario Regiment, commanded by Lieutenant-Colonel Hill, and the 2nd and 4th Canadian Battalions, the 3rd Canadian Toronto Regiment, and the East Yorkshires. The Ontario Regiment formed the spear-head of the advance. The Ontario men had to make a frontal attack on a fortified place in the enemy's lines known as Stony Mountain. A hundred and fifty yards to the south was another fortified place, known as Dorchester, and this also the regiment had to seize in order to secure the right flank of the British division.

Stony Mountain was the key to the entire position, for it dominated, with its machine-guns and its northern earthworks, the ground over which the British division was about to advance. It would, however, have been useless to begin by merely attacking the hostile fort by one Canadian regiment, for this would have given the enemy full means of concentrating against the single unit of the assault. So the British division on the left also swept out to the frontal attack on the enemy's lines north of Stony Mountain, at the moment when the Ontario regiment leapt down from its breastworks.

Our artillery had been working for days in preparation for the infantry advance. In sunlight and darkness the heavy guns and the howitzers had hurled their huge high-explosive shell on forts and buildings, while the lighter field-guns knocked down the wire entanglements and burst the shrapnel in clouds over the German communication trenches, fire trenches, and billets. Among the chief targets of our guns were the famous brickfields near La Bassée, extending in front of the shapeless ruins of Cuinchy village. The brick-stacks, behind which German machine-gun parties operated, appeared to belie the new opinions regarding the superiority of the mobile heavy howitzer over the fixed, old-fashioned forts, for the great brick-stacks—square, fortlike blocks of burnt clay, caked-into solid masses—were wonderfully resistant. Shells that would shatter a strongly-built house scarcely made a dent in the red masses. Our soldiers could see a shell crash full upon a brick-stack, and watch the blaze of the explosion and the huge cloud of smoke, turning from black to dusky red by the flying brickdust, and feel the ground rock and quiver hundreds of yards behind our own forward trenches. Yet when the red billows of fume and dust rolled away, and the spectators expected to see the brick-stack scattered and strewn about the ground, it still emerged four-square and solid, undamaged except for a notch on its top or a shallow cavity on its face.

Shell-proof brick-stacks

Nests of German machine-guns

But though the stacks still stood, the heavy shells dropping upon and behind them scattered the broken bricks and the splinters on the defending force, and shook their nerves and injured their bodies. Then, north of the brickfield, there were farms and other buildings, half ruined as a rule by previous bombardments, but still showing walls that were likely to be nests of German machine-guns.

Especially was this the case with all the houses behind the enemy's lines, for it was one of the main principles of the German defence system to hold the fire trench lightly with a small force, and rely upon a close chain of strongly-fortified machine-gun forts in the rear of the trenches to check any partially successful hostile infantry advance. Every building, therefore, immediately behind the German lines had been transformed into a fortress, with concreted underground chambers and telephonic communications with headquarters.

Our howitzers and heavy guns pounded day and night at all these *points d'appui* in the enemy's system of fortification, and at the same time the ordinary trenches and deep communicating ways were hammered with lyddite shells. Naturally, the German batteries did not rest idly under this incessant cannonade. They answered shot for shot, sometimes sending, indeed, three or four shells to our one, showing that the vast expenditure of ammunition by Mackensen's Phalanx on the Russian front and the terrific counter-bombardments against General Foch's army between Arras and Lens had not produced a shortage of shell in Germany. Our forward trenches were flailed by

Digitized by Google

the answering gun fire, and the villages behind our front were severely shelled. Yet, as our troops were the attacking force, they retained many advantages. They could be brought up in comparative safety and installed in well-covered dug-outs, where they might eat and sleep without anxiety, knowing that due warning would be given of the intended assault.

The enemy, on the other hand, knew from the continual and violent bombardment that an attack was being prepared, but at what time and at what place it would be made there was no indication. Some of the troops had to be kept standing to arms; the others were frequently roused and kept in suspense by artfully contrived bursts of heavier fire from our artillery, machine-guns, and rifles. For the best part of a week this preliminary work went on. In the night flares blazed over the zone between the opposing fronts, and a ceaseless rain of shell, shrapnel, and bullets prevented the enemy from profiting by the interval of darkness to repair his gapped earthworks, and replace his uptorn barriers of wire.

Throughout the day of June 15th our cannonade increased in intensity; then, as the sun was wearing low, at six o'clock in the evening, the German gunners knew that their turn had at last come, for the outbreak of shell fire from our lines rose in a crescendo of fury that could mean only one thing. The 18-pounders secretly conveyed to our fire trenches joined in the nerve-racking tumult, and smote at short range the nearest German machine-gun redoubts and the remaining lengths of wire entanglement. The great mine near Stony Mountain was exploded, and as the German guns poured a shrieking stream of shrapnel over our first line and support trenches, in the hope of breaking down the coming attack, the British division leaped over their sand-bags, and, with the heroes of Canada on their right, passed through their own wire defences and charged across the open ground towards the hostile breastwork, which showed through the rolling smoke by the sparkle and spitting jets of fire that came from it.

The heroes of Canada

The German shrapnel descended in clamorous squalls, and the waves of khaki were in places broken by the bursting fans of shot and by the clattering streams of bullets from the machine-gun posts. But, though the attack was held up in some parts, the charging lines drove over the German parapets in other spots, and the victorious troops, bombing and stabbing their way along the trenches, kept down the rifle and machine-gun fire, and enabled other companies of their comrades to race more safely across the intervening zone and strengthen the forces fighting in the enemy's line. In less than an hour the German fire trenches for the length of a mile were captured by our men, and some of our troops were working down the communicating ditches into the second line of the enemy's works.

North Lancashire valour

Our gains stretched from Rue d'Ouvert to Rue du Bois; the Territorial battalion of the North Lancashires were among those who distinguished themselves by their valour. Meanwhile, the Canadian troops, to whom had been entrusted one of the hardest tasks, were assailing Stony Mountain and Dorchester redoubts on the southern sector

The leading company of the Ontario Regiment rushed forward through the smoke and dust of the mine explosion only to meet a deadly fire from the machine-guns in the German forts. But the drive of the Ontarians was irresistible, and in a single charge they captured the Dorchester redoubt and the connecting trench. The decisive position of Stony Mountain, however, remained impregnable. Every infantryman who tried to reach it was shot down. Then a bombing party, under Lieutenant Gordon, sprang forward and valiantly essayed to get within throwing distance of the fortress. But the bombers were also shot down, Lieutenant Gordon himself falling wounded in the German fire trench, where he was killed by the enemy, with two of his men—the survivors of the bomb attack.

The second and third companies of the Ontarians swept out, suffering heavily from the fire from Stony Mountain as they crossed the open ground. Both companies broke into the enemy's second line, and at once began to enlarge their footing by sending out bombing parties on either side. At the same time the captured first German



ANIMATED SCENE IN A FRENCH VILLAGE: BRITISH SOLDIERS LEAVING THEIR BILLETS AND LINING UP TO AWAIT THE COMING OF THE MOTOR-BUSES THAT WERE TO TAKE THEM TO THE TRENCHES.

Digitized by Google



REALISTIC CAMERA-RECORD OF A SHELL BURSTING OVER A TRENCH.
This photograph, which was taken but thirty yards away from the explosion, gives a wonderfully graphic idea of a shell bursting over a trench. Of the three men who were caught, one threw himself down in an effort to avoid the flying splinters. The others were knocked over, perhaps never to rise again.

line was set in order by rebuilding the parapet on the front facing the enemy. When a machine-gun had been brought into the new position, an advance was made down the trench in the direction of Stony Mountain. The machine-gun crew led the way, and their stream of bullets was reinforced by volleys of grenades from a bombing party immediately behind them.

A magnificent gun-crew

The gunners were magnificent. They had been reduced to two men, Lieutenant Campbell and Private Vincent, and among other things they had lost, through the man carrying it being killed, the base of their machine-gun. But Private Vincent, an Ontario lumberjack, was a genius at makeshifts. He offered his broad back as a machine-gun base, and the Maxim was employed in this extraordinary way, until the German bombers got into the trench and wounded Lieutenant Campbell. But even with the enemy upon him, the lumberjack would not lose his gun. It was too hot to handle, but by abandoning the tripod, Vincent managed to drag it to safety, while his lieutenant crawled out of the German trench and was carried away in a dying condition.

It was at this time that the succession of accidents to the magazines of bombs began to tell against the fine, heroic effort of the men of Ontario; for, as night fell, the Germans massed bombing parties down every communication trench, while their machine-guns and riflemen swept with a continual fierce fire their lost lines and the open space leading to our lines. Volunteer after volunteer went back to get bombs for the Canadians, but they were shot either going or coming. Exceptionally lucky was Private Smith, a minister's son, of Southampton, Ontario. First of all he was buried in our mine explosion, with which the attack opened. He was sitting in the trench singing the "Old Folks at Home" when the combination of an earthquake and tornado occurred. He managed to dig himself out, but could not find his rifle; so he festooned himself with bombs from the dead and wounded men about him, and crawled over the zone of fire to his comrades fighting in the German lines. Five times he went forward with bombs, and though his uniform was torn with shot, his person was uninjured. He was almost the only source of supply; for other men who had tried to do the same thing were killed. As the bombs ran short, one Canadian thrower, weeping with rage, leaped on the parapet, though already wounded, and hurled bricks and stones at the Germans until they slew him.

The 3rd Canadian Battalion was sent forward to help the hard-pressed Ontario Regiment, but as a further supply of bombs was not immediately available, the reinforcement of men did not change the situation. Three non-commissioned officers, Sergeant Krantz, Sergeant Newell, and Sergeant-Major Cuddy, succeeded in fetching up a few hand-grenades after other volunteers had been put out of action; but the new supply was still terribly insufficient, and when another band of volunteers was shot down, the expeditions for bombs failed with them. The Ontario Regiment had lost nearly all its officers, and at half-past nine at night a strong accumulation of hostile forces compelled the Canadians to evacuate all the ground they had won. The retirement was carried out deliberately, but the enemy used an abundance of bombs and kept up a heavy machine-gun and rifle fire, and the men of Ontario and their comrades suffered heavily. Out of twenty-three officers who went into action only three returned unhurt.

Owing to the strength of the German position at Stony Mountain, and the extraordinary number of machine-gun posts along the line northward, the British division had also been unable to advance. The Canadians had held on, hoping that the attacking force on their left would clear the way for them. But Stony Mountain stood between the British and the Canadians, and the waves of assault first broke against it, and then, as the German army massed around the fort for the counter-attack, receded for the length of a mile across the open space.

Hand-to-hand struggle at night

The British-Canadian forward line was gradually forced back in a bitter hand-to-hand nocturnal struggle. The fighting front was like a great firework display. Verey pistol lights—"very lights" our men usually called them—magnesium flares, and star-shells illumined the battlefield with blinding bursts of white radiance. The hand-grenades winked and sparkled in bright orange-red patches. Down the breastworks were the jetting flames of machine-guns and rifles, and overhead the screaming shells flowered in deadly splendour upon the sombre midsummer night sky.

Digitized by Google

In the changing splashes of light and shifting breadths of shadow it was impossible to follow the fortunes of the fight. But on one particular portion of the front the din suddenly swelled into an overwhelming volume of sound. The Germans were concentrating howitzers, guns, Maxims, rifles, and hand-bombs on a small section of their lost first line, and they won it back. Some of our troops said that their trench was suddenly wiped out by a rain of bombs, leaving only a handful of men to meet the German rush. Other Territorials maintained that the position could have been held. Naturally, in a confused, nocturnal conflict of this kind, the opinion of the individual fighter is apt to be mistaken; but it seems to be well founded that the line was held to the limit of endurance, and overborne at last by the Germans, owing mainly to their ampler supply of hand-grenades.

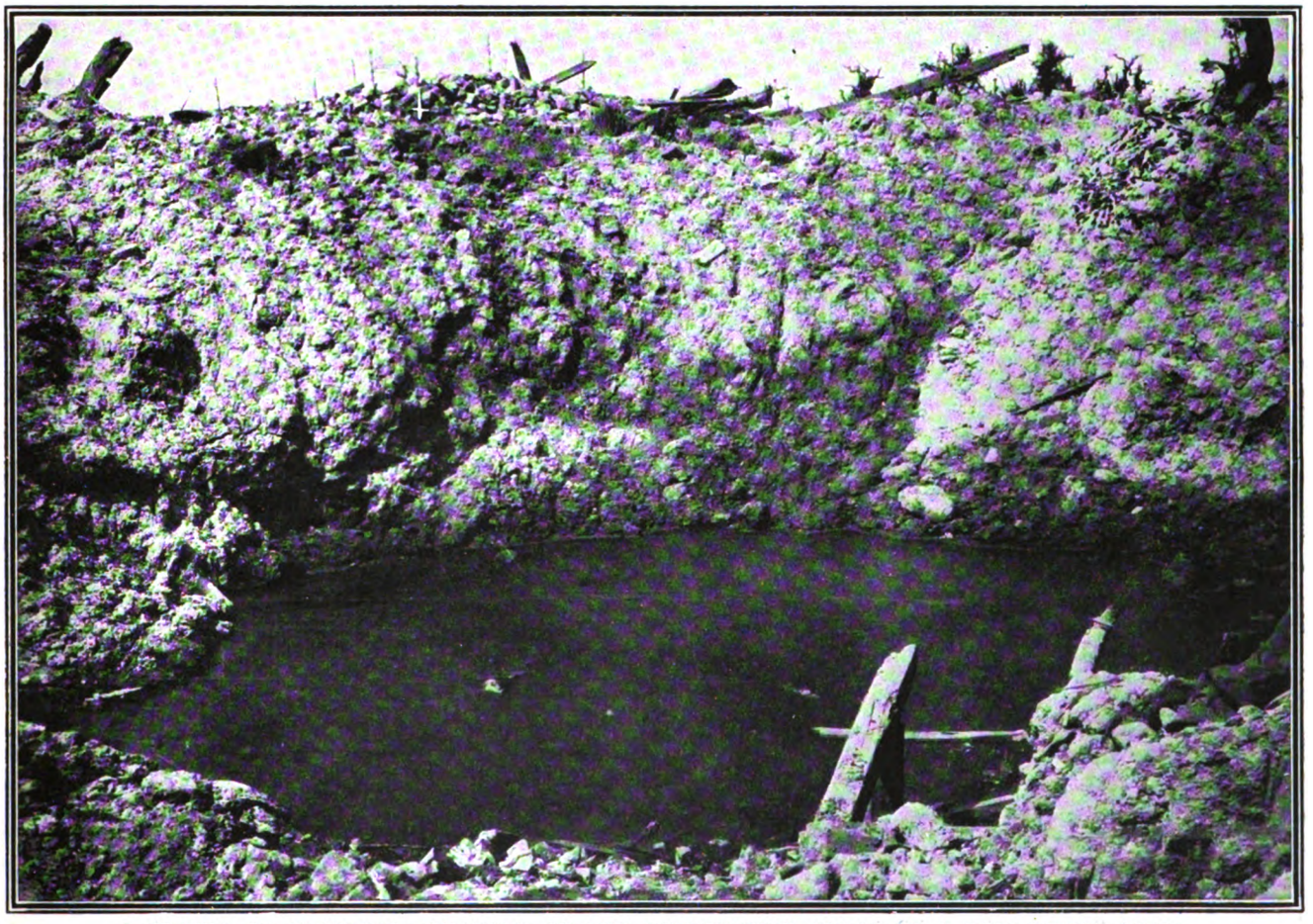
In turn, this superiority in the quantity of hand-grenades was due largely to the advantages under which the Germans fought. Their bombing parties could be continually fed with grenades through their safe, deep, communicating trenches. The British and Canadian bomb supplies, on the other hand, had to be brought across the open zone of fire between the two fronts; and as the artillery on both sides was furiously active, the German gunners and machine-gun crews had much the easier task in stopping our bomb supplies. It is these technical conditions of a struggle which, owing to the precision, range, and power of modern weapons, make for victory more than the most heroic personal bravery often does. The destruction of two of our bomb depots in our fire trench was another contributing factor in the failure to check the enemy's counter-attack.

The enemy bomb supplies

The difference in the positions of the counter-attacking Germans and the hard-pressed British and Canadian forces was clearly appreciated at last by the enemy; for, having pushed our troops out of their own lines, the Germans tried to follow up by a victory the check they had delivered. Flushed with a success due to local conditions, they clambered over their recovered parapets and attempted in turn to storm our first line. Thereby the advantage of position fell to us Our troops had then behind them a network of familiar lines, with communicating trenches, along which supplies and reserves could proceed, secure from any missiles except a chance heavy high-explosive shell or a very luckily-placed shrapnel burst. It was the turn of the foe to face artillery, machine-gun, and rifle fire in the open ground, with our observation officers directing the guns on him by telephone messages. Our heavy pieces began again to pound the enemy's first lines with lyddite, while our light guns swept the zone between the opposing fronts with storms of shrapnel. All the German attacks failed with heavy losses, and as dawn came the movements against our line ceased.

Over-confidence well punished

When the morning mist cleared away, the gunners on both sides resumed the cannonade, each aiming at the trenches of the hostile infantry. Our fire in the afternoon (June 16th) unexpectedly rose into a tremendous volume, for Sir Douglas Haig apparently was not yet willing to submit to a check. He had sent out at Rue d'Ouvert another charging line, including the Irish Liverpools and the Territorials, and selecting a smaller sector for their attack, rushed the German lines through a tempest of shells. But the footing they won was only a precarious one, and the German gunners knocked their own lost trench to pieces



A CRATER IN FLANDERS: EXAMPLE OF THE DEVASTATING FORCE OF A HIGH-POWER SHELL.
The fighting area of Flanders was scarred with huge craters such as that shown above, the effect of shells fired from heavy German guns and known as "Jack Johnsons" and "Black Marias." When our photograph was taken the cavity had been filled with rain-water.

Digitized by Google

by heavy shells and made the position untenable. Again, on June 18th, the 2nd Gordon Highlanders and other Scottish battalions charged at the Rue d'Ouvert position, only to be driven back to their own lines.

There seemed nothing that made for any definite success in all these three furious assaults on June 15th, 16th, and 18th. But though our suffering divisions and their comrades from Canada may not fully have known it at the time, each man of them was a collaborator in victory. They helped to win the French successes at Angres, Souchez, and the Labyrinth, which were announced just when our First Army became again quiescent in its own lines.

Our thrust at Rue d'Ouvert, north of La Bassée, weakened the resistance of the army of the Crown Prince of Bavaria to the thrust simultaneously delivered by the French troops near Angres, south of La Bassée. Between the two thrusting forces of the First British Army and the Tenth French Army, Prince Rupert was reduced to partial impotence. He had to give way either north or south of La Bassée, and as in his judgment it was more important to hold back the British army, which was already perilously close to Lille, he threw his reserves against us, while yielding ground to our French comrades. Thus our local check—it cannot be called a defeat—was fully compensated, from the general standpoint of the Allies, by the victory of the French troops against the common foe.

It had been fairly clear since the action at Rouges Bancs on May 9th that our forces were incapable of breaking the German front with the guns and shells we then possessed. General Foch also had more gradually come to the conclusion that the Tenth French Army, which had quite as large a number of shells as Mackensen's Phalanx used in breaking through the lines of the Third Russian Army on the Dunajec, could not equal this achievement on the Lens front against the army of the Bavarian Crown Prince. The German defences were too strongly constructed, too skilfully organised, and backed by too powerful an artillery to be broken by one sudden, brief, violent blow. Heavy pieces of siege ordnance were needed by the thousand, and melinite shells by tens of millions, in order to carry out completely the scheme of attack first foreshadowed in the spring of 1915 at Les Eparges and Neuve Chapelle. A decisive victory of liberation for Belgium and North-Eastern France was clearly seen to be a problem of speeding up the manufacture of an enormous number of gigantic howitzers and huge high-explosive shells. In factories only were great modern victories organised. The battlefield was merely an annex to the workshop and the chemical works.

Battlefield and workshop

The next important action on the British front, after the Battle of Rue d'Ouvert, was indicative of the progress of German chemistry rather than of the warlike qualities of the later formations of German troops. The affair occurred round the ruined manor-house of Hooge, lying about three miles east of Ypres, on the road to Menin. Hooge had been the headquarters of Sir John French and Sir Douglas Haig in the first Battle of Ypres, and it was from the manor-house that Sir John had watched our line break at Gheluvelt, opening the path to Calais to the Germans, which had, however, been closed again by the glorious heroism of the Worcesters. In the spring of 1915 Hooge again became the critical point in the Ypres defences, for after the great chemical experiment with poison gas in April, the Germans had been able to advance to the manor-house, using the Menin road for a strong, persistent movement, which continually threatened to capture at last the rubbish-heap which had been Ypres.

Hooge and the Ypres defences

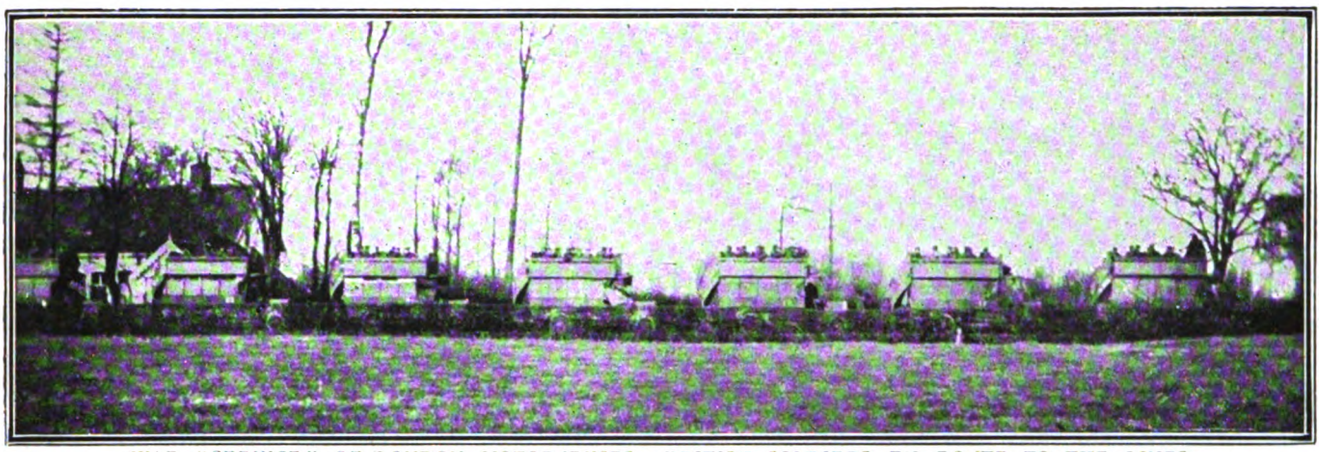
The Duke of Würtemberg, commanding the attacking forces, had apparently become convinced, after his poison-gas victory in April, that chemical methods of making war were the most successful. His crescent of lines about Ypres, running from a point near Pilkem in the north to a point near Hill 60 in the south, remained for months a field of chemical experiments. The grass was turned a ghastly yellow by the bleaching effects of the chlorine gas, while, as some compensation, the trenches were rendered more sanitary by the destruction of insect pests in the rolling, greenish torture fumes. Hurricane fire with poison-gas shells was a great specialty of the Würtemberg command; but the duke used both the cloud and the asphyxiating bombardment so frequently that our soldiers were compelled to perfect themselves in respirator drill, in spite of their natural British tendency to a happy-go-lucky attitude in regard to the means of defeating the scientific Hun.

When our forward trenches were organised for gas attacks, with a respirator handy for every man, and with officers watching day and night for the familiar crawling, green mist, the German commander lost for the time all power to advance. His troops were very fiercely handled, after being caught twice unawares behind a gas cloud by our grimly masked and quite unasphyxiated Second Army; for when it came to a hand-to-hand struggle between the German, who was still half afraid of being stifled by his own gas, and the scientifically protected Briton who was mad with anger by reason of the memories of his gas-tortured comrades, there was not much chance of escape for the German. Our men, besides, had the advantage of surprise.



WITH THE FRENCH ARMY: WOUNDED SOLDIER BEING HELPED BY HIS COMRADES BEHIND THE FIRING-LINE.

Digitized by Google



WAR "SERVICE" OF LONDON MOTOR-'BUSES: BRITISH SOLDIERS EN ROUTE TO THE LINES.

The effect of the asphyxiating shell was harder to dodge than the large, slow, creeping, greenish cloud, for the men were often surprised by the gun-propelled burst of poison fumes before they could put on their respirators. Hill 60 was at last lost in the first week in May by a bombardment of poison shells, swiftly followed by an attack on three sides of the wedge-like mound by German bombing parties. Our troops had to retire to a support trench just below the hill, leaving the German artillery officers the advantage of occupying the jagged crest on the mound as an observation station, from which the German batteries behind the Zandvoord ridge were directed by telephone.

Germans retake Hill 60

Sir Herbert Plumer, it was apparent, decided that Hill 60, which he had first won very cheaply by the easy method of mining through the loose earth of the mound, was not worth recovering yet again by a stubborn effort. It seemed to him that the manor-house and hamlet of Hooge was a more important point of resistance for the army of defence. So from the first week in May to the middle of August Hooge became the principal arena of the contending force. There was no decisive character in the contest. When the British army lost Hooge it did not think of retreating; neither did the German army prepare to withdraw for a mile or so when its foremost troops were thrown out of the village.

The affair was mainly a trial of strength, and the British commander in particular only planned an attack on Hooge when he wished to prevent his opponent from sending reinforcements to other sections of the front, especially to the army of the Crown Prince of Bavaria.

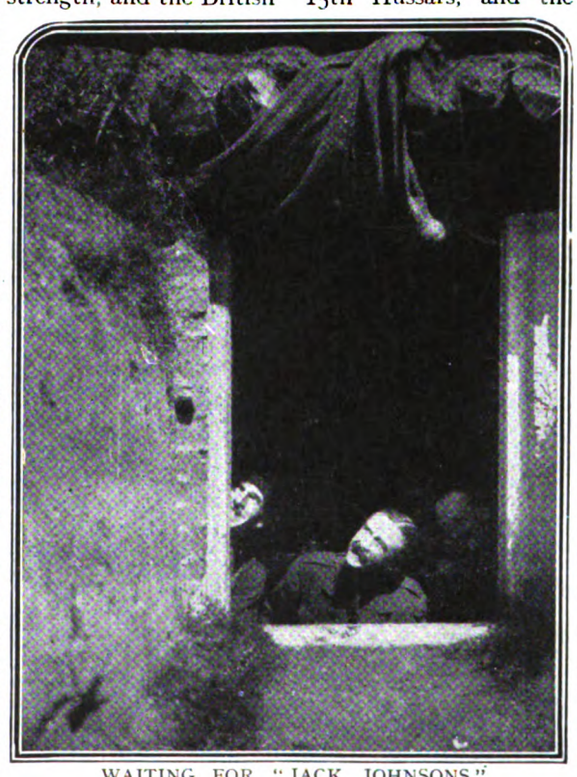
Sometimes Sir Herbert Plumer received an order from General Headquarters to keep the enemy in front of him fully extended, and could not use Hooge for this purpose, because Hooge was in our possession. In these cases, an attack was made at Pilkem, which was another sector where a series of small gains of grounds were won, with tactical advantage that made the hostile commander eager to counter-attack in order to recover the position.

It would be idle, therefore, to pretend that the action at Hooge was of any great importance. In a Continental history of the war both the affairs at Rue d'Ouvert and the contest at Hooge would be mentioned in a couple of lines or a short paragraph. But to us there is a peculiar historic importance in these small local battles, in that they marked the entry into the field of conflict of our national armies. Our splendid professional troops had almost completed their great work of holding the road to Calais until the Territorials had completed their training and the new formations were ready for the fray. As summer came on, Sir John French began to test more severely the fresh troops, who gathered in increasing numbers in our lines.

Like the region round Festubert, Hooge was one of the highly interesting scenes of the gradual change of character in our expanding forces. The finest veterans of the Regular Army fought beside Kitchener's men and the Territorials, and taught the new troops the value of team-work, and handed down to them the noble traditions of the British profession of arms. We shall be able to see the commanding officer playing first for safety in a time of crisis, by using the old first-line battalions as a spear-head, and then we shall watch him acquire more confidence in the new formations, when they have been blooded under his eyes, and launch them at last out to attack in full security that they will carry on. At Hooge in particular there was a continual change of garrison.

Poison-gas cloud five miles long

On May 8th, 1915, the most famous of the new Canadian regiments, Princess Patricia's hard-bitten fighting men, held the chateau and the village. They were succeeded by the 9th Lancers, the 15th Hussars, and the 2nd Camerons, who recovered the position by a splendid charge which has already been described. The cavalry held the lines amid the ruins until May 24th, when the Duke of Würtemberg tried his last and greatest experiment with poison gas.



WAITING FOR "JACK JOHNSONS."
Entrance to a British officers' dug-out in the trenches.

It was a brilliant spring day, with the heat tempered by a light breeze that veered round in the morning towards the north. The enemy had placed an enormous number of gas cylinders opposite our front from Hooge to St. Julien, and during a violent bombardment with gas shells the poisonous cylinders were opened, and a gigantic cloud was sent along the wind against our lines. The cloud was five miles long and forty feet high in places; and it continued to pour over our trenches from three to seven o'clock in the May morning. Then behind the cloud three columns of German infantry swept out to attack, under cover of a heavy fire from all their guns. Our line was broken at Hooge and north of Wieltje. But on the greater part of the front our troops held their ground,

Digitized by Google

and a series of counter-attacks enabled us to recover most of our fire trenches. At Hooge, however, the headquarters of the 9th Lancers had been badly gassed, and though Captain Reynolds and Lieutenant Maclaine of Lochbuie—the latter leading a squadron of the 15th Hussars—helped to save the general situation, we lost the chateau and other useful buildings.

The 3rd Dragoon Guards were given the task of avenging the poisoned Lancers and Hussars and recovering the position.

Gallantry of the 3rd Dragoons

The Dragoons took over our second line of trenches on May 29th, their position lying south of the Menin road, at some distance from the heap of jumbled brickwork representing what had been the picturesque Flemish manor-house. The German gunners apparently were aware of what was intended, for the next day they began a fierce and intense bombardment of our trenches, which they pounded for hours with high-explosive shell, while the German infantry swept the parapets with machine-gun fire and rifle volleys. But though their trenches were blown in, the Dragoons held on until night fell; and then, instead of retiring under the continued bombardment, one company charged at the manor-house just before dawn on May 31st, and with Lieutenant Katanakis leading them, the men bayoneted the Germans out of the ruins and the stables. The Germans then turned every available gun on Hooge, completely battered the village into a rubbish-heap, and knocked what remained of the brickwork of the manor-house into rubble. Lieutenant Katanakis had to withdraw from the manor-house, but he held on close by with his men, and occupied the position again in the evening. All the next day the German gunners furiously continued their work of destruction; but only one small body of hostile infantry tried to reach the ruins where our men had dug themselves in.

The Germans were killed at fifty yards from our position, and then the angry German commander put out all his power to break the gallant Dragoons. All day long on June 2nd our dug-outs, trenches, and lines of communication around Hooge were swept by a hurricane of fire from the massed German howitzers and guns; at times the shells came over at the rate of twenty to the minute. Under cover of this storm of death a force of Germans, dressed in khaki uniforms taken from our dead, charged from the Bellewaarde Lake. They were allowed to reach the manor-house, but there one of our batteries opened on them. They tried to escape into the open, only to be caught by our concealed machine-guns. Back they went into the ruins, and out at the other side. But we had machine-guns there also, and after circling round the trap three times the Germans perished. Only about five of them managed to crawl away, and each of them in all probability was wounded. In the afternoon other attacks were made, but none got within eighty yards of our trenches. The action was one of the finest achievements of the war; and the 3rd Dragoon Guards, on being relieved the next day, were commended by a special order for their magnificent courage and tenacity.

The enemy caught in a trap

Among the relieving troops were some of our finest regular infantry, including the 1st Northumberland Fusiliers, the 1st Wiltshires, the 1st Lincolnshires, the 3rd Worcesters, with the Royal Fusiliers, the Royal Scots Fusiliers, and a fine body of Territorials—the Liverpool





THE RALLY OF INDIA TO THE CALL OF THE BRITISH RAJ: REGIMENT OF INDIAN CAVALRY ON THE MARCH IN NORTHERN FRANCE.

Above: Another view of the British motor-'bus service to the Front: A string of omnibuses carrying soldiers to man the trenches in Flanders.

Digitized by Google



BATTERY OF TRENCH MORTARS.
Interesting view taken on the French front.

Scottish. The number and quality of the men indicated that something was afoot. On June 16th our artillery was, in turn, concentrated round Hooge, and after a long and heavy bombardment our troops leaped out and stormed a thousand yards of the enemy's fire trenches round the manor-house, and penetrated at points into the German second line. The work was done with the bayonet and the bomb; and it was our bombing parties that were mainly responsible for the great success. For instance, three men of the Liverpool Scottish—Corporal Smith, Corporal Bartlett, and Private Short—attacked a trench held by thirty Germans with a machine-gun. They killed all the occupants, captured the gun, and used it in repelling a counter-attack. The German artillery then tried to recover the lost position by smashing it up with high-explosive shell, so that their infantry could safely come out to pick up the fragments. For twenty-four hours the great shells came tumbling into the earthworks, but though our men had to retire from the second German line, they hung on to the thousand yards of fire trench, and beat back the German infantry. It was a notable example of the quality of British troops in a position calling for doggedness and tenacity.

Three heroic Liverpool Scots

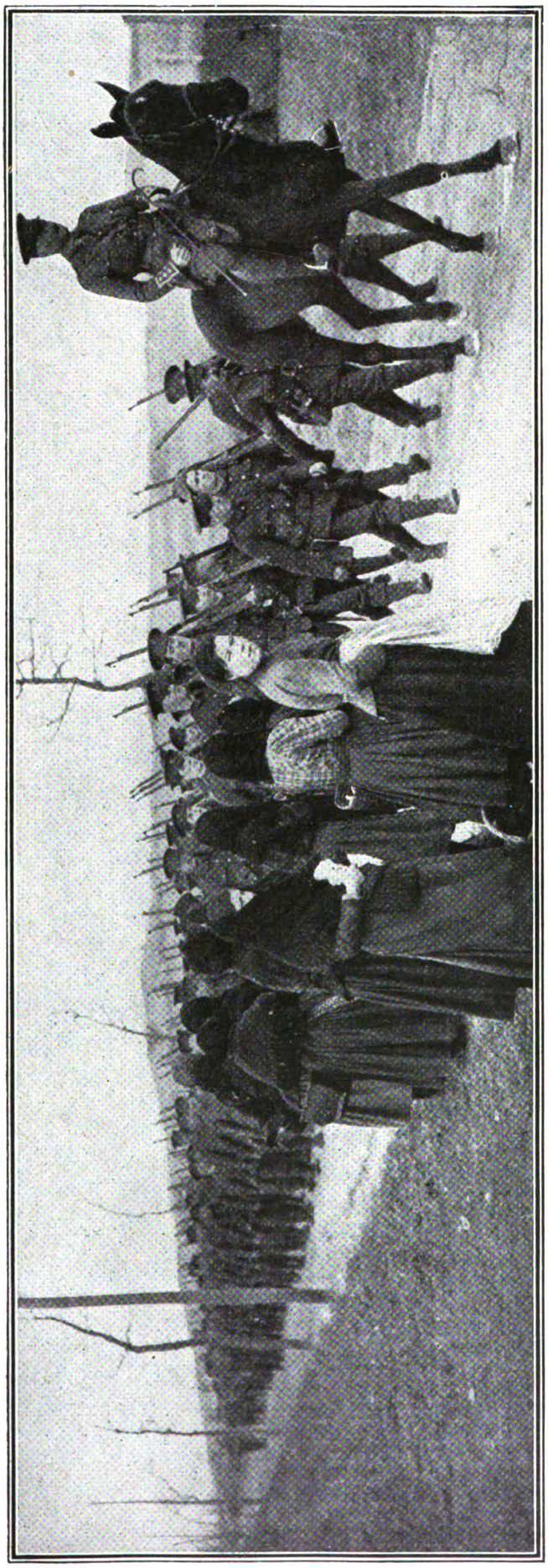
After a prolonged effort the German commander apparently resigned himself to defeat, and the fighting round Ypres shifted to Pilkem, where our troops in the first week of July captured two hundred yards of trench, fourscore prisoners, and three trench mortars. But on July 20th Hooge again became the chief centre of interest, as our engineers exploded a great mine to the west of the manor-house, forming a crater some fifty feet deep and a hundred and fifty feet wide, in which our men established themselves. The Germans tried to capture the crater the following day by a bomb attack, but the bombing parties were shot down. Again, on July 24th, our men shattered another charge by a bombing party. It was then that the Duke of Würtemberg brought his last chemical device into play—the flame-projector. The weapon consisted of a portable tank, filled with inflammable coal-tar material, which was pumped through a nozzle, at the end of which was a lighting device. By means of the pump the flame-jet could be thrown for a distance of about forty yards. A large number of these horrible instruments were brought into the forward German trenches on July 30th. Then the German artillery resumed its hurricane fire, using flame shells filled with the coal-tar preparation, as well as high-explosive shell. When the bombardment was most intense the strange, unexpected, unanswerable torrents of flame from the projectors swept our line. Our burning, tortured troops were helpless against such a form of attack. All they could do was to get out of range of the flame-jets, and in this way we lost our trenches by the crater and the chateau and the village.

The German flame-projector



A FRENCH HERCULES.
Well-known French boxer providing his comrades with a display of physical strength.

Digitized by Google



THE SWELLING KHAKI LINE: FRENCH PEASANT WOMEN WATCHING THE EVER-INCREASING STREAM OF BRITISH TROOPS MOVING TOWARDS THE SCENE OF CONFLICT.

The village lines were, however, recovered in a counter-attack by our infuriated troops, and night fell with the enemy holding only about five hundred yards of our trenches.

No British soldier was likely to rest under even a small success won by the enemy by means of so horrible a weapon as the flame-projector. It was, moreover, necessary to prove to the German infantryman, who already admired, in spite of himself, the superior courage of the British soldier, that flame-projectors were as useless as gas-cylinders in the decisive phase of the struggle. But the task before our troops was a very difficult one. It was no question of leaping out of our trenches and hurling ourselves over some fifty yards of ground into the enemy's lines. We had retired so far in the flame attack that our troops had now to charge over open ground for more than five hundred yards, going uphill most of the way, before they could come to grips with an enemy who knew by the preliminary bombardment what was coming. There was ample space for the Germans to wipe out our advancing lines by shrapnel and machine-gun fire, if ordinary tactics had been employed in the final action at Hooge. Happily some of our guns had gone south to Carency at the end of May to co-operate in the artillery preparations for the Souchez attack. Our gunners had been extremely pleased to find that the French gunners used absolutely rigorous tactics in supporting their infantry advances. Instead of ceasing fire when their infantry closed on the enemy trench, the French gunners continued to place their shells a few yards in front of their own men. The result was that a few Frenchmen were killed by French shells in some cases.

Rigorous artillery tactics

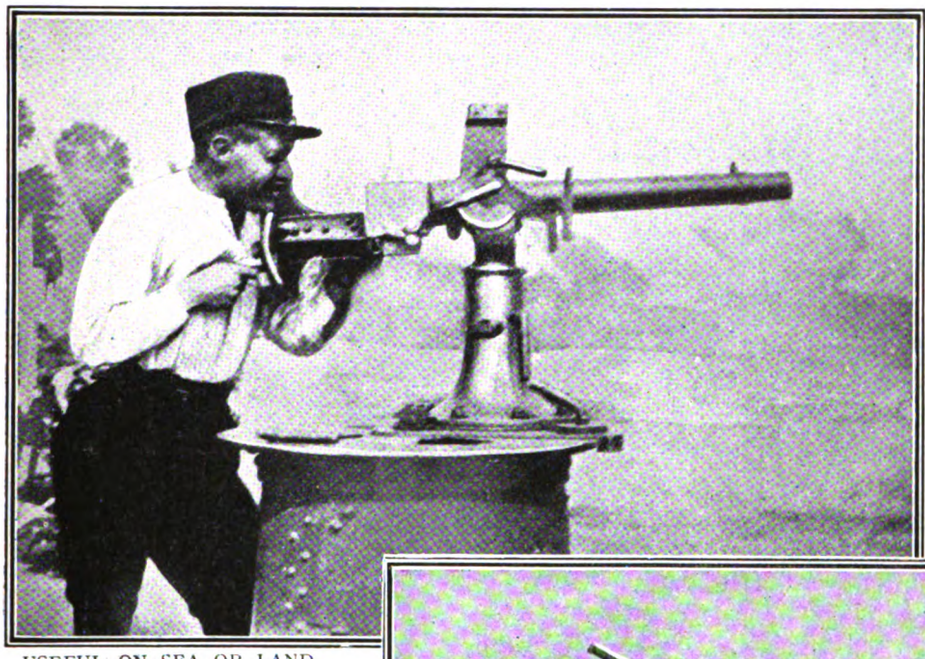
But this accidental loss of life was repaid a hundredfold when the infantry got to work in the German lines. We had lost men at Neuve Chapelle from our own shells, and some of our gunners had, as already explained, taken to leaving a wider interval between our line of shell fire and our moving line of advancing infantry. But any interval was likely to be disastrous at Hooge, and before the action it was carefully explained to the infantry that, by keeping our artillery fire extremely close against the charging line, thousands of lives would be saved at the cost of a few accidents. The men not only grasped the point, but courageously welcomed a closer use of shell fire, and on the morning of August 9th the bombardment opened. It was close on dawn when our massed guns broke out into one of those indescribable, long-throated roars of thunder that tell both friend and foe an infantry attack impends. Sir Herbert Plumer had spent a week in concentrating so extraordinary a number of howitzers and guns that the German batteries were completely overpowered. And as the enemy possessed, in addition to his artillery corps, a large part of the siege train used at Antwerp, which had recently been strengthened by big naval guns and gigantic howitzers removed from the Belgian coast to the ridges around Ypres, it will be seen that our concentration of artillery must indeed have been enormous in order to outclass the enemy's ordnance.

German batteries overpowered

As a matter of fact, the ridge at Hooge, being barely three miles from Ypres, had to be retaken by us, otherwise Ypres itself was in danger of being lost. The German commander therefore expected to be attacked, and bent all his energies to the work of preparing a definite repulse to our forces. But our preparations, despite all the talk about German efficiency in warlike organisation, were of a brutally overwhelming character. On this occasion it was the British war-machine that knocked the enemy off his feet, without giving him a chance of maintaining a man-to-man struggle. After three-quarters of an hour of intense bombardment our troops advanced under our own shell fire in a deliberate and heroic act of self-sacrifice

Digitized by Google

for which they were rewarded when they reached the German trenches. The barbed-wire was completely blown to pieces and the parapet was breached in many places. Scarcely had our last shell exploded, amid the ruins of the manor-house and in the crater formed by our great mine, when our bombing parties clambered through the gaps in the sand-bags. They surprised the Germans as these were still sheltering in their dug-outs waiting for the bombardment to cease. At the same time our machine-guns were rushed up to the edge of the crater, so that when the Germans gave over fighting and tried to escape they were enfiladed by streams of bullets. As a matter of fact, the Germans had little stomach for the fight, so badly had they been shaken by our shell fire, and about a hundred of them gave themselves up in the crater. The sharpest fight of all was in the trenches near the stables, where some three hundred figures in field-grey were bayoneted before their lines were captured. In other places our angry men, anxious to take vengeance upon the foe who used poison gas and flame-projectors, chased the Germans about with the bayonet, crying, with imploring voices: "Stand, and give us the chance of a fight!"



USEFUL ON SEA OR LAND.
Naval gun on a mounting designed for use on an armoured motor-car.

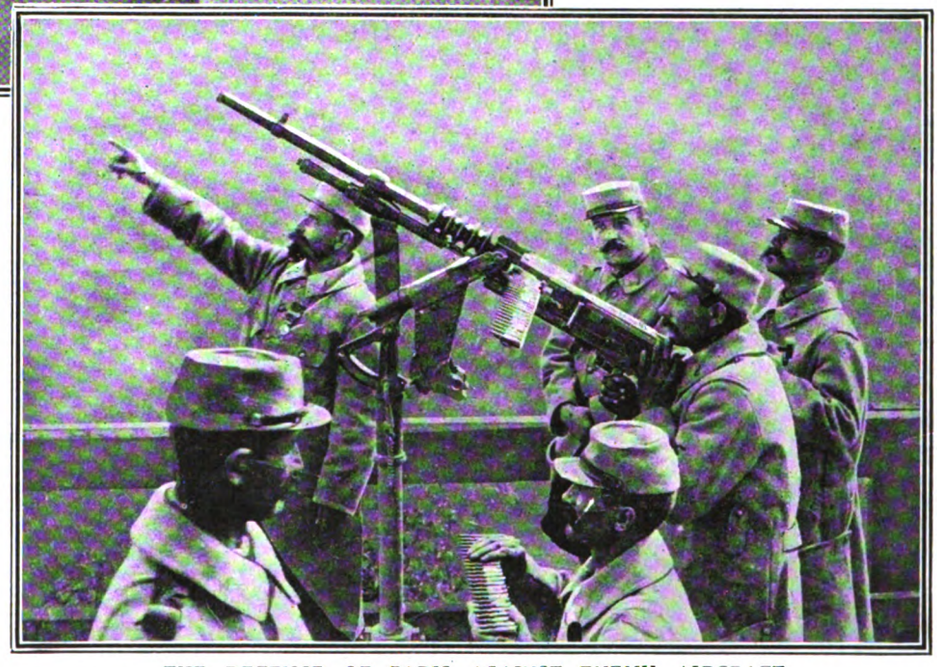
In all, some three thousand Germans were killed, owing to the fact that our attack had taken place at the moment when the enemy had been in the act of changing the units in the trenches. We thus caught two trench-garrison forces between our shell fire and our hand-bombs. Then, before the German batteries could resort to their usual method of trying to destroy their lost position, a large body of our engineers came up with reinforcements, each man carrying either ammunition or sand-bags, shovels or wire. We had nearly six hours in which to consolidate our position, so that when at half-past nine in the morning the Germans opened upon us with heavy shells and continued firing for the rest of the day, the ridge was sufficiently protected to enable it to be held. Only one small bit of trench on the low ground had to be left undefended. On all the high ground our grip only tightened under the enemy's fire.

Three thousand Germans killed

The men would not give up the position they had won, even when the order came to do so. It may be, as they always maintained, that the enemy's fire was so heavy that the messenger was killed. The most extraordinary case was that of Lance-Corporal Smith and his twenty-four men. He occupied the Hooge stables when it was thought for a day that the buildings were empty. It was not until the corporal sent down for more bombs that the colonel of the relieving regiment guessed there was anyone waiting for him in the stables. Hooge was one of the most helpful episodes in the tremendous story of Ypres. It fully restored the confidence of our gunners and the confidence of our infantry in their backing of artillery.

British confidence restored

French's "contemptible little army" was at last getting on a level of both men and equipment with the forces opposed to it. Indeed, in regard both to troops and guns, the British Expeditionary Force began, in the summer of 1915, to grow so formidable that only the magnificent defences of the Germans protected them from defeat. The enemy had about two million men on the western front, which was half a million less than the forces with which he had made his gigantic movement of invasion in the summer of 1914. The German Staff, having all their strength extended against Russia, tried to supply the place of the missing troops in the west by augmenting the machine-guns and the heavy howitzers there, and by using asphyxiating shells in increasing quantities. But the Allies also strenuously increased their howitzer batteries and their accumulations of shells.



THE DEFENCE OF PARIS AGAINST ENEMY AIRCRAFT.
Anti-aircraft gun and its crew. A view taken on high ground on the outskirts of the French capital.

Digitized by Google



BELGIUM'S HERO KING IN KHAKI: KING ALBERT VISITING THE FRENCH FORCES.

In August, 1915, as a return visit to that paid earlier by President Poincaré to the Belgian Army, King Albert spent two days with the French Army. On the occasion of the presentation of colours to new regiments, the French President referred in glowing terms to his Royal guest. "The French Army," he said, "is appreciative and proud of the honour paid to it by the noble sovereign who has given the world an example of inflexible uprightness, and in whom soldierly valour and civic courage are allied. He offers you here the living image of the virtue which those colours ought always to keep constantly before your eyes." Our photograph shows King Albert, with whom are General Joffre and M. Millerand (French Minister of War), about to decorate some French officers. The group includes a number of foreign attachés who witnessed the memorable ceremony. On returning to Flanders King Albert sent the following message to President Poincaré: "The spirit and morale of your brave soldiers filled me with admiration."

Digitized by Google



KING ALBERT AND PRESIDENT POINCARÉ

AT A REVIEW OF FRENCH TROOPS.

CHAPTER LXXX.

THE INCOMPARABLE ACHIEVEMENT OF THE BELGIAN ARMY.

32,000 Belgian Infantrymen left out of 110,000—The Belgian Artillery Worn Out by Constant Use—Belgians Win at last With Odds of Five to One Against Them—The Secret Strategy of the Belgian Staff—Six Weeks' Struggle to Unite With French and British Forces—Ghent and not Antwerp the Critical Point in the First Belgian Campaign—The Real Danger to Belgium was the Advance of the Crown Prince of Bavaria on Lille—King Albert Appeals to Lord Kitchener for Help—Our 7th Division Arrives Too Late at Ghent—Magnificent Rear-Guard Action by the British Troops—How the Victory on the Yser Tempered the Belgian People to the Resilience of Steel—Extraordinary Energy of Reconstruction Displayed by King Albert—The Belgian Army Intervenes in the Second Battle of Ypres—The Secret of the Chateau of Vicogne.

LATE in the summer of 1915 the General Staff of the Belgian Army at last published a mass of detailed information, from which, for the first time, the achievement of Belgium could clearly be appreciated. The mere figures given by the Belgian Staff were gloriously eloquent. Their Army had originally consisted of 93,000 infantrymen, with 102 machine-guns, and 324 field-guns, mainly of 3 in. calibre. By the middle of September, 1914, 18,500 volunteers had received sufficient training of a very hasty kind to enable them to be thrown into the fighting-line. They brought the total number of Belgian bayonets up to about 110,000. Towards the close of the Battle of the Yser there remained only 32,000 Belgian infantrymen, with about a hundred 3 in. guns, for which there was scarcely any ammunition. The other guns were not lost, but their rifling was worn out by incessant firing. Even the remaining hundred guns that were still in action were only capable at the most of firing from half a dozen to a dozen shells each. Moreover, the larger part of the survivors of the Belgian infantrymen at the time had fought and slept in the river trenches for two weeks or more without any kind of relief, and exposed to an incessant bombardment of high-explosive shell from three hundred and fifty German guns and howitzers, strengthened by a large part of the German siege train from Antwerp, composed of 8, 11, and 12 in. howitzers. The opposing German forces numbered 150,000 men, so that they had the odds of almost five to one against the Belgians. Yet the enemy was beaten—beaten in so decisive a manner that, with the help of a reinforcement of French troops, the Belgian Army on the Yser won a year's time in which to reorganise and increase its strength.

It may be doubted whether, from a military point of view, there is anything in the history of the Great War to compare with the deeds of the little Belgian Army; for even the Serbian troops, whose successes in saving their country from repeated invasion were marked by extraordinary heroism, were much more numerous, more experienced in war, and more favoured by the mountainous nature of their country. Belgium had only six divisions of infantry, and one division of cavalry, the latter consisting of 2,500 horsemen and 450 cyclists. The troops, moreover, were arranged without regard to strategy on a purely neutral system; for, with exquisite care for his nation's honour, King Albert placed one division near the coast to repel any British violation of his territory; there were two divisions near Namur, to check any French attempt at invasion; and holding two divisions in reserve near Antwerp, the King sent only his third division towards Liège to withstand the German attack. It may have been quixotic in the circumstances to have adopted so honourably neutral



AT AN OLD FRENCH CHATEAU.
The King of the Belgians and the French President leaving a chateau at which déjeuner was served, on the occasion of King Albert's visit to the French lines in August, 1915.

Digitized by Google



AN UNOFFICIAL VISITOR.
This photograph of an English Red Cross worker visiting the Belgian trenches affords a happy relief from the customary camera-records of that area.

an attitude of defence. On the other hand, the idealism which inspired King Albert was based largely upon the consideration of the future position of his country at the end of the war. Belgium had to show herself ready to defend her neutrality at every point, without any regard to alliances that might be formed in the course of the conflict. As her state of neutrality had been guaranteed by many of the Great Powers, she had to wait for a blow to be struck at her by one of her guarantors, before calling on any other guarantor to assist in her defence.

Thus it came about that, when a host of three hundred thousand Germans advanced on Liège on August 4th, 1914, there was only a single Belgian division ready to oppose them. The Belgian force consisted of the 3rd Division, composed of 18,500 infantrymen and 500 cavalrymen, with 60 field-guns and 24 machine-guns. Against this single division there came seven German army corps with two cavalry divisions. Yet this enormous mass of first-line troops, operating with heavy artillery, had officially to acknowledge a loss of 42,712 men in the struggle in which it at last broke the lines of the Belgian division holding the open spaces between the Liège forts. As a matter of fact, the 3rd Division, as is now made clear by the Staff reports, only fought for two days on a front of about thirty miles along the Meuse between the Dutch frontier and Liège. The battle opened on August 4th, and on August 6th the 3rd Division withdrew westward, reaching the line of the River Gette on August 8th. The Belgian Staff, as it afterwards clearly explained, founded its strategy entirely upon the following principles :

Strategy of the Belgian Staff

1. If the Belgian Army has before it only, equal enemy forces :

(*a*) The enemy must be attacked at the most favourable moment when his positions are too much extended, or when he is temporarily weakened.

2. When the Army is faced by very superior hostile forces :

(*b*) It must maintain itself in as forward a position as possible, on good defensive sites, barring the road to the invader in such a way as to protect the larger part of the country.

(*c*) When thus placed as an advanced guard for the French and British forces, the Belgian Army must wait on its positions, so that its union with these forces can be brought about.

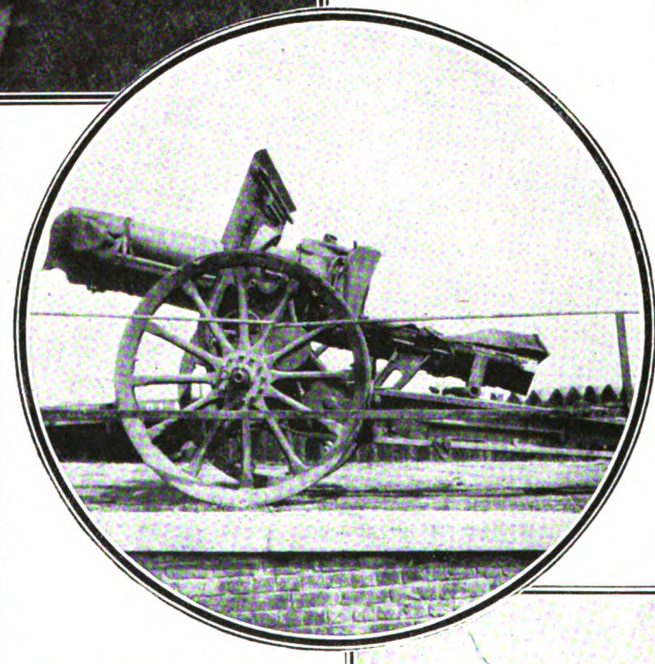
(*d*) If this union cannot be made at the time when the enemy masses arrive, the Belgian Army must not be exposed to certain destruction, leading necessarily to the total loss of territory.

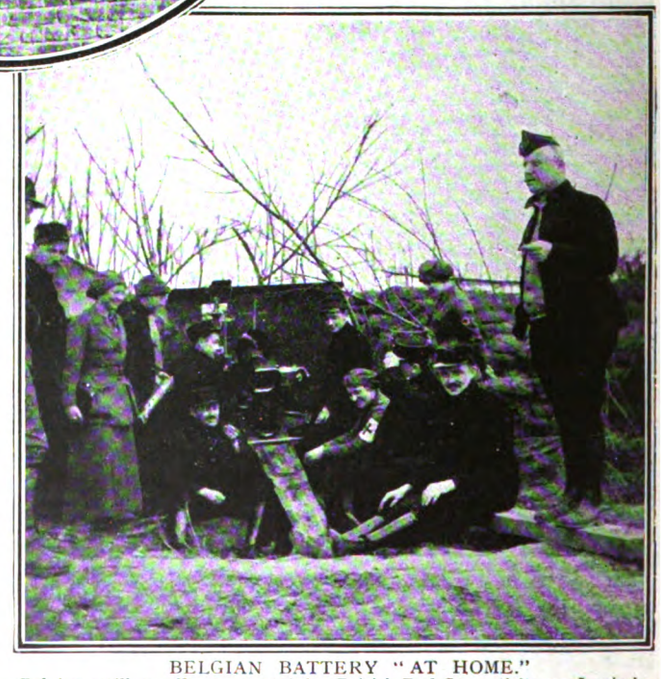
Plans to avoid envelopment

(*e*) Therefore, the Belgian Army, when alone, must avoid a pitched battle with the enemy masses, and escape from any enveloping movement.

(*f*) The Belgian Army, therefore, must always manœuvre so as to hold open a line of retreat, allowing its ultimate union with the French and British forces, in view of a common action with the upholders of the treaty of neutrality.

This statement illumines all the Belgian campaign. From the beginning to the end of the desperate, lonely struggle of the Belgians with the German hosts, their main object was to unite for common action with the French and British armies. As a Belgian officer rather sadly remarked, after watching the first Battle of Ypres : " If only the English had been able to join us at Liège, we should have kept the Germans out permanently. They could never have broken our lines." But





BELGIAN BATTERY " AT HOME."
Belgian artillery officers entertaining British Red Cross visitors. In circle, A large cannon ready to be unshipped for service on the Belgian front.

Digitized by Google



Saluting the colours presented to new French regiments.
King Albert is seen with President Poincaré on his left.





President Poincaré presenting the new colours. In circle:
Reception of King Albert by President Poincaré.



The King of the Belgians addressing the French officers upon whom he was about to bestow decorations.

MORE SOUVENIRS OF THE MEMORABLE VISIT OF KING ALBERT TO THE FRENCH FORCES.

Digitized by Google



BELGIUM'S SHATTERED FANES.
All that was left by German shell fire of the church at Zuydschoote. A fragile wooden cross in the little churchyard survived the hurricane of fire.

the front from the Dutch border to the turn of the Meuse at Liège needed a trench garrison of at least 60,000 men, with large forces behind them in reserve, to stop the gaps. It would have been national suicide for Belgium alone to have attempted to hold her frontier. As soon as it was seen that the invasion was being undertaken by the largest army ever put into the field—an army that swiftly increased to nearly two million men—the overpowered, tiny Belgian force retreated towards its base at Antwerp, fighting only rear-guard actions, in the hope of winning time for a union with the French and British forces.

France, however, had been temporarily paralysed by the vast German turning movement through the Belgian plain. In spite of the construction of a series of strategical railways leading from the Rhine depots to the Belgian frontier, the French Staff seems to have doubted if full use could be made of these, and had concentrated during mobilisation its main forces around Nancy. Precious time was thus lost before the chief masses of the French troops could be swung up towards Belgium. And while the Belgian Army was hopefully holding the river line of the Gette, with the forces against it increasing to half a million, the French armies could not link on strongly with them. So on August 18th a retreat on Antwerp was necessary; for the Belgian Army, composed at the time of only two army corps, found itself in immediate contact with eleven German army corps belonging to the armies of General von Kluck and General von Bülow. The much-desired common action in union with the French and British forces was impossible to realise; and if the Belgians had attempted a pitched battle they would have been cut off from Antwerp and shattered. Therefore, the Belgian Army withdrew into its entrenched camp at Antwerp on August 20th, after resisting the enemy's cavalry and light troops for fifteen days, without having its own fighting strength seriously weakened. Owing entirely to the action of the Belgians, the invading host of Germans did not cross the French frontier until August 24th, which was the twenty-third day of mobilisation in France. Such was the really important result won by the action of the Belgian Army in the first phase of the campaign.

Effect of the Belgian resistance

We have already described at length the incidents of the second phase of the Belgian campaign that ended with the fall of Antwerp. But there are some points on which the report of the Belgian Staff throws an interesting light. The German commander on August 21st installed before Antwerp an army of observation, formed of two army corps of reserves, linked with three divisions based on Liège. The result was that there was at last an equality of force between the Belgian Army and its immediate enemy. The Belgians, therefore, made a fierce sortie to enable them to keep open their line of retreat to the west. Then, when the Battle of the Marne opened on September 7th, 1914, the High German Commander resolved to risk everything in order to strengthen his field armies. He diverted three divisions of the army of observation from Antwerp into France, and supplied their place in Belgium by a division of Marines and two brigades of Landwehr. But the Belgians countered this move by advancing in four divisions against the right wing of the Germans and capturing Aerschot and penetrating into Louvain. The movement alarmed the hostile commander. He marched back one of his divisions to Louvain, and arrested the Ninth German Army Corps

The capture of Aerschot



IN WAR-SWEPT RHEIMS.
Official French photograph of the Rue St. Symphonei, Rheims, showing in the background the famous cathedral, the ruthless bombardment of which by the Teuton artillerists must remain for ever a blot on the German name.

Digitized by Google

of Reserve for two days between France and Belgium, at the moment when Kluck and Bülow's shattered armies were calling for reinforcements and withdrawing their last rear-guards over the Aisne River.

Altogether the Belgians prevented on the three critical days, September 11th, 12th, and 13th, the 6th Division of the Third German Army Corps of Reserve, and the whole of the Ninth German Army Corps of Reserve from fighting against Sir John French's forces and General Maunoury's troops. Thus, to a considerable extent the success on the Aisne of our First Army Corps, under Sir Douglas Haig, was conditioned by the superb and forceful sortie of the Belgian Army. And it was directly for this reason that the German Commander-in-Chief on September 14th ordered all preparations to be made for the reduction of Antwerp by heavy howitzer fire from the great siege train which had been held in reserve for use in Antwerp. After Liège, Namur, and Maubeuge, the Belgian commander and his Staff were well aware that the Antwerp forts would fall in a few days. But they held on to the doomed city in the hope that the French and British forces would at last be able to make the much-desired union, and establish a line of trenches protecting the Belgian coast, and Bruges, Ghent, and Antwerp from the invaders.

A superb and forceful sortie

Contrary to the common opinion, the Belgian commander at the end of September, 1914, had little hope of holding on to Antwerp with his troops alone. His supreme aim was to preserve the means of uniting his army to the French and British forces; and with this view he threw out his troops towards Ghent in order to keep open his line of retreat. At all costs Ghent had to be strongly defended, and as the Belgian Army could not extend in sufficient strength from Antwerp westward, King Albert on October 4th, 1914, sent an urgent appeal to Lord Kitchener for a strong British force to land on the coast and march on Ghent; for the position of the Belgian troops had suddenly become extremely perilous. The German army besieging Antwerp was only of third-rate importance. The most important thing was that the main German armies in France were rapidly extending their left wing and threatening to reach the North Sea, and thus cut the line of retreat for the Belgian troops. Towards the beginning of October the Germans had reached Lille, and at this city they were only thirty-seven and a half miles distant from Nieuport. The Belgian Army, on the other hand, was nearly ninety miles from Nieuport. At the same time a large new German army, formed of newly-trained recruits, and consisting of the units of new formations—the Twenty-second, Twenty-third, Twenty-sixth, and Twenty-seventh Army Corps of Reserve—was advancing into Belgium under the Duke of Würtemberg. This large force, which increased to one hundred and forty battalions, with more than five hundred guns, was designed to occupy the country between Lille and the sea, and make a great sweeping movement past Calais, which would throw back the Franco-British line.

Urgent appeal to Lord Kitchener

The Belgian Staff came to the conclusion that the best place in which to meet this fresh German attack was the line of the Terneuzen Canal running from the Dutch frontier through Ghent, and continued southward towards



AN UNDAMAGED SHRINE.
Despite the ruin wrought all round, this shrine, attached to the tower of the church at Reninghe, escaped unharmed.

against Paris. When the siege opened, the Belgian Staff still aimed at establishing that union with the allied forces which governed all its strategy, and which yet was so distressingly delayed. The British and French public at the time, having their attention entirely concentrated upon the gigantic wrestle between the two main opposing masses, could hardly appreciate the extremely anxious position of the small isolated Belgian force



A VILLAGE IN FLANDERS BROKEN BY THE HUNS.
The little village of Zuydschoote, to the north of Ypres, after bombardment by the Germans.

Digitized by Google

Lille by the upper course of the Scheldt River. Ghent, and not Antwerp, in the first week of October, was the critical point for the long-delayed union of the forces of Belgium, France, and Britain.

Unhappily, neither France nor Britain was yet in a position to co-operate with the foresightful military advisers of King Albert. Our country could only send one division of infantry and another of cavalry towards Ghent; and the cavalry was delayed in its advance by the necessity for pushing back the German forces which were already extending towards the sea.

France, pressed almost to breaking point around Arras, could only send the very small force of 5,000 Marines to co-operate with our single infantry division round Ghent. Both the French and British Staffs were at the time apprehensive of the Germans breaking through on the Arras line and cutting off all the forces—Belgian, British, and French—north of that line.

On the morning of October 9th the bulk of the Belgian Army was arrayed behind the canal running from Ghent to Terneuzen; and a few miles in its rear was another canal—the Schipdonck Canal—which connected southward with the Lys River. The Belgian Staff wished to make a stand on one or the other of these lines, and thus save from invasion a notable part of Flanders and the valuable naval bases on the coast. To do this it was necessary to effect at once the union with the Franco-British forces.

German advance on Ghent

But the nearest French force of importance was fighting between Arras and Lille, fifty miles and more away, and Sir John French's army was only beginning to arrive at St. Omer, nearly seventy miles distant from Ghent. Meanwhile, the besieging German army at Antwerp was rapidly extending westward, and uniting with the large new German army under the command of the Duke of Würtemberg.

The German attack on Ghent had begun on the night of October 6th, when the advanced guards of three regiments of Bavarian cavalry, and a regiment of infantry, with several batteries, opened action at the village of Nazareth, seven and a half miles south-west of Ghent. Four battalions of half-trained Belgian volunteers, with a few Civil Guards and a few French Territorials, held off the Bavarians. Then, on October 8th, a brigade of Breton Marines, under Admiral Ronarc'h, arrived on the scene of battle with a brigade of Belgian troops, and the Germans were pushed back over the Escaut towards Melle. Then at last, on October 9th, the famous 7th Division of the British Army, under General Capper, arrived at Ghent, and the Bavarians withdrew towards Alost.

But it was too late to hold either the Terneuzen or the Schipdonck Canal lines; and on the day on which the British division reached Ghent, King Albert decided to establish his Army in the region of the Yser River.

Cost of the loss of Zeebrugge

The coast was lost, with the important submarine base of Zeebrugge, which was to cost the British Fleet and the British merchant marine many fine vessels; and the Zeppelin menace to London was also augmented by the loss of Flanders. These advantages the German Staff won by the rapidity with which it organised and armed the four new army corps that formed the bulk of the forces under the Duke of Würtemberg. The men had received only two months' training and they were afterwards slaughtered in dreadful masses along the Yser and on the north of Ypres. But by the rapidity with which they had been thrown into the field they certainly won a large stretch of territory, which proved of the highest importance from both a military and a naval point of view.



ZOUAVE KEEPING WATCH IN A BELGIAN TRENCH BY MEANS OF A PERISCOPE.
The periscope had been swathed in canvas as a safeguard against splintering by an enemy's shot.

Our country would have retained a very great advantage if only we had been able at the beginning of October, 1914—two months after the outbreak of hostilities—to have thrown six divisions into Flanders instead of one; for by saving Western Flanders we should have saved our ships from under-water torpedo attacks, directed from a base quite close to our shore.

As it was, the French and the British Staffs despaired of being able to carry out the Belgian plan of entrenching on the canal line at Ghent. General Capper and Admiral Ronarc'h were ordered to retire from Ghent at seven o'clock in the evening of October 10th. But the order could not be carried out; for by a somewhat curious coincidence, which may have been due to the efficacy of the German system of espionage, the German army began a furious attack around Ghent at the moment when the French Marines and British troops were about to retire. The French Marines counter-attacked towards Melle, and threw back the assailants. But the next day, when the Belgians had withdrawn on Bruges, and the French Marines had set out on their southward march, our solitary 7th Division was again assailed round Ghent by the powerful new German army. The battle began at ten o'clock at night on October 11th, and after our troops had thrown back much superior forces of hostile cavalry and infantry, the Germans, as midnight drew on, brought up an overpowering number of guns, and tried to blast aside the small British force which was rear-guarding the Belgian Army.

No despatch has yet been published, after a lapse of twelve months, concerning the operations of the British

Digitized by Google



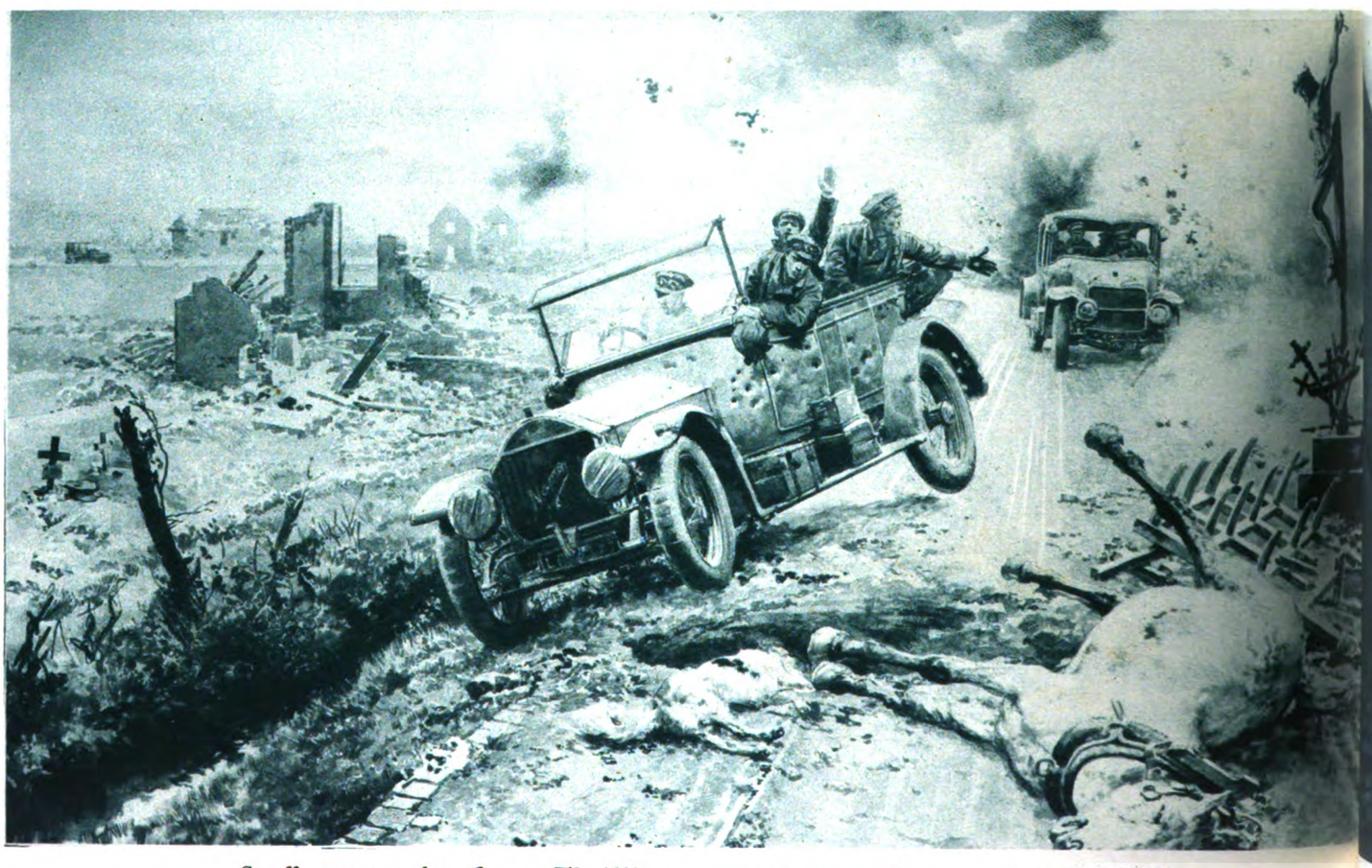
[Lafayette.

Lieut.-General Sir Herbert C. O. Plumer, K.C.B.

Digitized by Google



The pibroch in Northern France: Scottish regiment returning from the trenches.



Staff cars under fire: Thrilling escape from a German "shell hole."

Digitized by Google



After a forced march: Troops arriving at their billets at break of day.



Armoured cars of our Naval Air Squadron assisting hard-pressed British lines at Ypres.

Digitized by Google



Blazing farm buildings in Flanders set alight by German shell fire.

352
Y.

Digitized by Google

division round Ghent. But from French and Belgian sources we learnt that the conduct of the Immortal Seventh during their fighting retreat towards Ypres was one of the most inspiring episodes in our military history. "Their methodical retreat," it is stated in the official account of the campaign of the Belgian Army, "was conducted by the British troops, under the fire of the enemy's artillery and infantry attacks, with the regularity of a parade movement." Meanwhile, under the protection of the screen of Belgian cavalry, engaging in rear-guard actions near the Dutch frontier, while our 7th Division held up the enemy's main forces around Ghent, the Belgian infantry was transported by train towards Nieuport, Thourout, and Dixmude. In spite of the perils of the situation, and the technical difficulties of transport along single-line railways, the Belgian forces on October 12th reached their long-sought goal.

Junction effected at the Yser

After more than ten weeks' fighting, the junction with the Franco-British armies was made at the Yser. The Belgians were much reduced in number and sadly fatigued. The 111,000 trained infantrymen and volunteers had lost more than half their strength, and were represented by 48,000 bayonets. Nearly all the field-guns were still intact; but the single-line railways from Selzaete to Bruges, and from Bruges to Thourout, had barely sufficed to carry the men and guns along the main line of retreat. The huge stores of shells and charges accumulated in Antwerp seem to have been destroyed as they could not be removed. So when the Belgian batteries were established along the Yser, recourse was had to French charges. These proved unsuitable to the Belgian guns, and owing to the wear on the rifling and the increasing lack of shells, most of the Belgian guns became for the time unusable.

Yet the fact that the little outworn army had at last won, on the edge of its native land, the long-desired union with the French and British forces, filled the men and their leaders with heroic confidence. This was finely expressed in a proclamation which King Albert made to his troops when they reached the Yser line.



WITH THE BELGIAN ARMY.
A machine-gun in position in the second line.

"Soldiers,—It is now more than two months that you have been fighting for the most just of causes—for your homes and for your national independence. You have held back the invading hosts, have undergone three sieges, conducted several sorties, and effected without losses a long retreat down a narrow corridor. Hitherto you have been isolated in the immense struggle. But now you find yourselves by the side of the valiant French and British Armies. It behoves you, by the tenacity and the bravery of which you have given so many proofs, to sustain the reputation of our arms. It is a matter of our national honour. Soldiers, face the future with confidence, and struggle on courageously. In the position in which I shall now set you, look only at what is in front of you, and treat as a traitor to our country anyone who shall think of retreating when no order has been given. The moment has come when, with the help of our powerful Allies, we must drive from the soil of our beloved Motherland the enemy who has invaded it, in scorn of his engagements and of the sacred rights of a free people.—ALBERT.

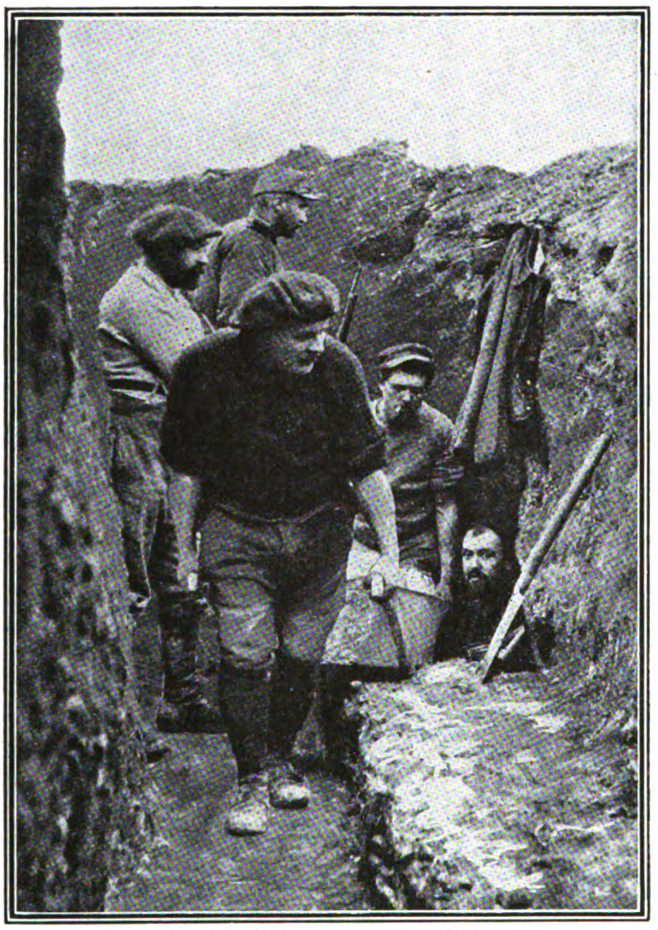
These words clearly indicated to the outworn, half-shattered Belgian Army that its hour of extreme ordeal had arrived. No further retreat was possible. Yet, on October 15th, when the defence of the Yser line was organised, the French front solidly extended only as far as La Bassée. Between La Bassée and Dunkirk the Belgians at the time were supported only by two divisions of French Territorials—middle-aged men with but little military training—one brigade of French Marines, and the 7th Infantry Division, with the 3rd Cavalry Division, of the British Army. Sir John French's men were still engaged in moving from the Aisne to Flanders. While awaiting the arrival of our three army corps, King Albert arrayed his troops on a long and very thin line from the seashore at Nieuport to the village of Zuydschoote, six miles north of Ypres. There were thus only 53,000 men, including the brigade of French Marines attached to the Belgian Army, holding some thirty miles of winding front, in a flat, marshy country, where the enemy had a clear field for artillery fire, and where by reason of the watery nature of the soil the trenches of the defending troops could not be dug deep enough to protect them from shrapnel. The proper number of troops for a system of trenches on a thirty-mile front is—at the rate of two to a yard—about a hundred thousand. But the Belgians could only hold the line with one man to the yard, even on difficult river salients, where the enemy was able to attack from three sides at once, in dense masses of infantry, under cover of the fire of hundreds of guns.

The situation, when the Duke of Würtemberg brought up a hundred and fifty thousand men and began to drive in the Belgian outposts on October 17th, was more than critical; it was a nightmare. General Joffre asked the Belgian Staff if their troops could hold out just for two days. But in the event this period of desperate resistance was much exceeded; for the first French reinforcements, consisting of a single division, the 42nd, did not reach the Belgian front until October 23rd. The next day the Ninth French Army Corps arrived, but had to help the British army at Ypres, as our men there were weakening. Then, when the Sixteenth French Army Corps arrived in Flanders on October 31st, they were also needed at Ypres.

Instead of resisting forty-eight hours, as General Joffre demanded, many of the Belgian troops had to bide for twelve days and twelve nights in a shallow trench, under a hurricane of shells of all sizes, mitigated only by squalls of machine-gun fire. We have already described the chief incidents in the fearful struggle along the Yser, but the figures used by the Belgian Staff were more eloquent than any description in words. The Belgian losses on the Yser were 18,000 men. They fell mostly upon the 48,000 infantrymen. Thus three men out of every eight entrenched along the river and the network of dykes behind it were put out of action. And terrible as was the

Twelve days' fearful struggle

Digitized by Google



THE WARFARE UNDERGROUND.
French sappers carrying away earth dug from a mine gallery leading to the German trenches.

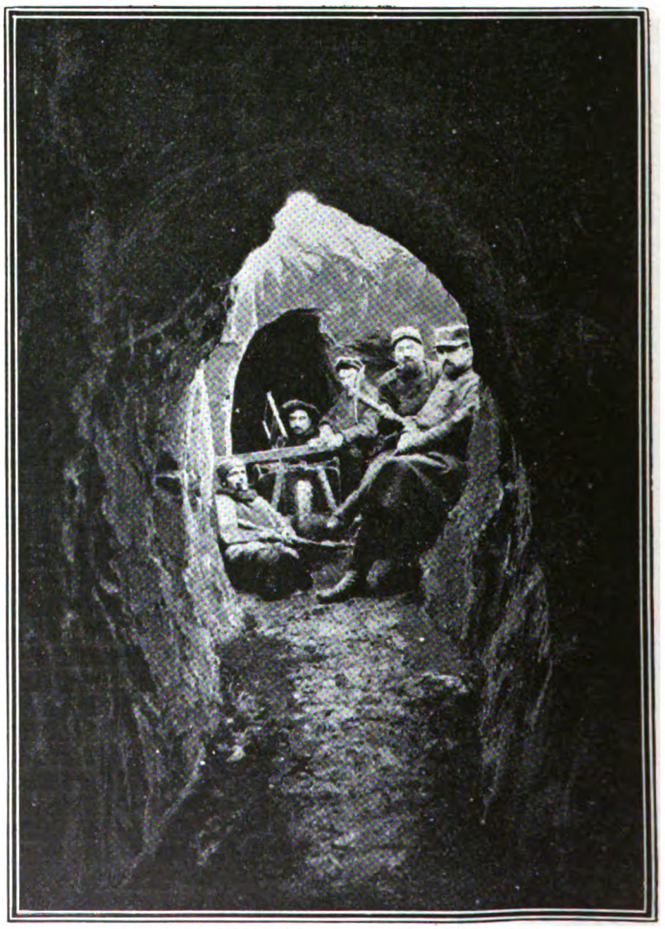
proportion of dead and wounded to the living survivors, when the struggle ended in a decisive victory for the defending forces on October 30th there was something that made still more for demoralisation among the Belgians. This was utter exhaustion of both mind and body. The troops did not come fresh into the fight; they were weary and dispirited by the terrific bombardment they had endured at Antwerp and by the hasty retreat they had been forced to make from a city they had regarded as impregnable. And scarcely had they entrenched along the Yser when the German siege-guns again began to pound them, while the artillery corps of another large army fearfully increased the volume of shell fire. To all this was added the nerve-shaking horror of the knowledge that the light batteries of their own guns were all rapidly wearing out of action. Who could now blame the Belgians had they at last broken on the Yser and let the Würtemberg army advance on Calais and turn first the British and then the French lines? But they did not break. Superhuman as was the task set them they held out, and a single division of French troops with the guns of the British squadron firing over the coast was sufficient reinforcement to enable them to win one of the most decisive victories in the history of civilisation.

Glorious stand before Furnes

Both Britons and Frenchmen should be ready eagerly to admit that the Battle of Ypres was a fine thing, and the Battle of Arras a fine thing, but that the Battle of the Yser was much finer. The French held at Arras the most important gate to Calais, for if the Arras line had been broken, both the Belgian and the British lines would have been cut. From a strategical point of view neither Ypres nor the Yser was as vital a region of defence as the Arras. It was the long and intense German pressure on Arras which prevented the union of the Franco-British forces with the Belgian Army at either Antwerp or Ghent. But despite all these military considerations, the stand made by the Belgian Army in front of Furnes was an achievement of sublime personal prowess, to which there is no parallel in modern history. We must go back to the defence of Leyden, which led to the establishment of the national independence of the Dutch, in order to find anything to match the exploits of the remnant of Belgium's troops.

In the last small nook of their Motherland these scanty survivors of one of the smallest armies in the world withstood and defeated the fully-deployed power of the greatest military empire of ancient or modern times, which employed hundreds of pieces of artillery of a power hitherto unknown in warfare. Even in point of date our defence of Ypres was secondary to the defence of the Yser: for it was after the Duke of Würtemberg failed, in the presence of the Kaiser, to break the Belgian front that he moved a large part of his men and guns against the British force, which would then have been broken but for the arrival of a French army corps. It is not surprising that Britain and France threw back the Germans. France was, after all, one of the great military Powers of the world, and had already gained a resounding victory over her foes. Britain also was a powerful fighting machine, which, besides holding the seas, started the war with some 800,000 troops, including a small professional Army of extraordinarily fine quality, officered by men who had already proved themselves in a long and difficult war. But Belgium had maintained in peace time a very small force, that was scarcely

Feat unparalleled in modern history



SAPPERS ENJOYING A WELCOME REST.
The arduous character of the work accomplished by French sappers may be gauged by this remarkable photograph showing the rocky nature of the soil through which the passage had been hewn.

Digitized by Google

more than a militia. She was caught just when she was beginning a far-reaching scheme of reorganisation, when everything was upset and nothing was progressing. She lacked entirely heavy field-artillery, and the number of her machine-guns was quite inadequate. Each German battalion, by reason of its Maxim equipment, could produce double the fire power of a Belgian battalion, and the German heavy artillery corps clean outranged and overweighted the light Belgian field-guns. Everything was against Belgium, and the decisive Belgian victory on the Yser is an immortal example of the triumph of spiritual forces over a highly intellectualised organisation of all the means of material strength.

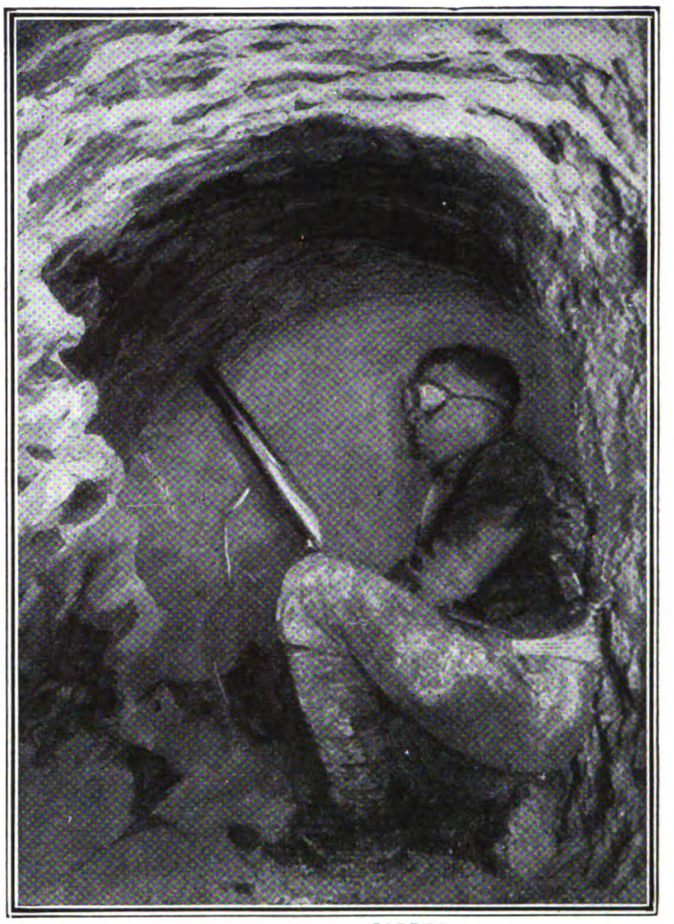
Results of the Belgian victory

The results of the Belgian victory were very important. A pulse of fierce and desperate patriotism shook the souls of millions of apparently conquered people, from Ostend to Liège and the Ardennes. Shackled though they were under the foot of the invader, who had burnt their villages, massacred women, children, and old men, and destroyed some of the finest of their ancient monuments, the thrill of indomitable hope spread to them from the Yser. As they were losing all hope in God or man, a whisper of voices ran through the country, and the spirit of the oppressed population was suddenly tempered to the resilience of steel. There is a story that a merchant of Ghent was sitting at the beginning of November, 1914, in his favourite café, which was then crowded with German officers. The Fleming sat by himself, neglecting all the advances for a friendly talk made by the domineering conquerors. One German officer grew angry at the isolated attitude of the Fleming. He brought a chair to the table, placed his mug of beer down, and said, "Come, you must drink with me. It is useless to repine at the fortunes of war. We have annexed Belgium, and you and I are fellow-countrymen."



PREPARING A MINE.

Another view of the perilous and exhausting work of the sapper. The men are shown beginning work on a mine channel destined, should fortune serve, to be the means of reaching and blowing up a German trench.



SAPPER VERSUS SAPPER.

French sapper listening for the approach of German sappers and in readiness to destroy their design by a counter-explosion.

"I am glad to hear it," said the Fleming; "for now that we are fellow-countrymen, we can talk with each other freely, can't we? What do you think of the hiding we received last month on the Yser? It was pretty bad for us, wasn't it?"

The German officer took his beer away, and the Fleming resumed his ironic solitary position as an interested student of the manners of his conquerors. About a million and a half Belgians in the occupied territories refused to work for the invaders. Many of them would have been starved into insurrection, and then shot down in multitudes, but for the good offices of Mr. Hoover, the noble American organiser of the Belgian Relief Fund, who organised a magnificent system for feeding the desperate yet invincible irreconcilables. The German garrison troops erected wire entanglements all along the Dutch frontier with armed posts at short intervals, in order to prevent the oppressed population from escaping into Holland. The German Governor of Belgium, General von Bissing, was especially anxious to keep every Belgian of military age under his strict and harsh dominion. But by many strange and adventurous ways the young fighting men of the almost conquered nation slipped out through Holland, and swelled the force gathered behind Furnes under the command of their King. The romantic fact that there were still a few square miles of free Belgium exercised strongly and deeply the imagination of the people. Tens of thousands of oldish artisans also evaded the German lines of imprisonment, and quite an important system of war industries, run entirely by Belgian intelligence and Belgian labour,

German garrison's harsh oppression

Digitized by Google

began to strengthen the increasing army. The training camps spread far into France, until it was reckoned that there were a quarter of a million young Flemings and Walloons holding the lines behind the flooded river, or drilling and exercising under the command of King Albert.

The outworn guns were retubed, hundreds of new light cannon and heavy pieces were provided, new gun-sections and airmen were trained to co-operate in target practice, and the old scheme first formulated by King Leopold for the organisation of a Belgian Army of 350,000 men, which in the ordinary course would not have been realised until 1918, was carried out in a remarkable way late in the summer of 1915 by a King without a kingdom, a Government without a people, and a commander without any national financial resources. Of course, Great Britain and France were at hand to provide monetary help and maintain the national credit of the Belgian nation. But the outcome of all the assistance generously offered would have been insignificant in comparison with the results actually obtained if King Albert and his men had not risen to the occasion. The

Reconstruction and development



FOR BURNING THE CLOTHES OF ENEMY DEAD.
An open-air destructor used for burning the clothes of enemy dead and thereby limiting the risk of disease spreading among the troops.

energy of reconstruction and development displayed in the tiny fragment of free Belgium was as extraordinary as the effort of heroism by which the line of dunes and patch of marshland around Furnes had been held.

Owing to the smallness of the territory, the Belgian Government was compelled to scatter. The chiefs of the administration went into exile, while the Royal commander, moving amid his troops with a soul more indomitable than that with which Wilhelm the Second travelled about his vast empire, guarded the barrier of the Yser. The legislative power being suspended, the administrative function continued to be exercised. Many of the Ministers, with their staffs, were installed at Sainte Adresse. Others divided their work and had offices part in Belgium and part in France. The Minister of Railways, whose employees continued to remain on strike in the territory occupied by the invader, had little to do. The Minister of the Colonies worked from London, the Ministry of Agriculture remained in Brussels.

In virtue of international agreements, the Belgian functionaries in the occupied territories were to be paid for carrying on their necessary labours out of the taxes collected from the people. This was done in Brussels, where the Germans were watched by the representatives of neutral Powers, but in the small towns the officers of the State had often to support themselves as best they could. Nevertheless, the maintenance of justice, the civil courts, and the municipal and parish business went on in the invaded kingdom. With the noble aim of remedying the financial difficulties caused in the Belgian communes by the requisition of the conquerors and by the diminution of revenues, many well-to-do refugees forwarded their rates and taxes through the curious little parish of Baarle-Duc, that forms an enclave in Dutch territory.

Meanwhile the Belgian Government, cut off from its sources of national revenue, and driven from Brussels to Antwerp, from Antwerp to Ostend, and from Ostend to Furnes and Dunkirk, set to work to retrieve the position. Borrowing from Britain and France, it lost not a day in getting to work. Its task was heavy and manifold. On the little morsel of free land it was necessary to raise up a new army, the six old divisions which opened the campaign having almost ended by perishing on the banks of the Yser. Most of the machine-guns had been broken up or buried by the huge German shells, and the field-guns, as we have seen, had been worn out. It was necessary, therefore, to provide a new artillery for the new armies, and especially to create a heavier and more powerful arm that could silence the great German siege-howitzers and naval guns.

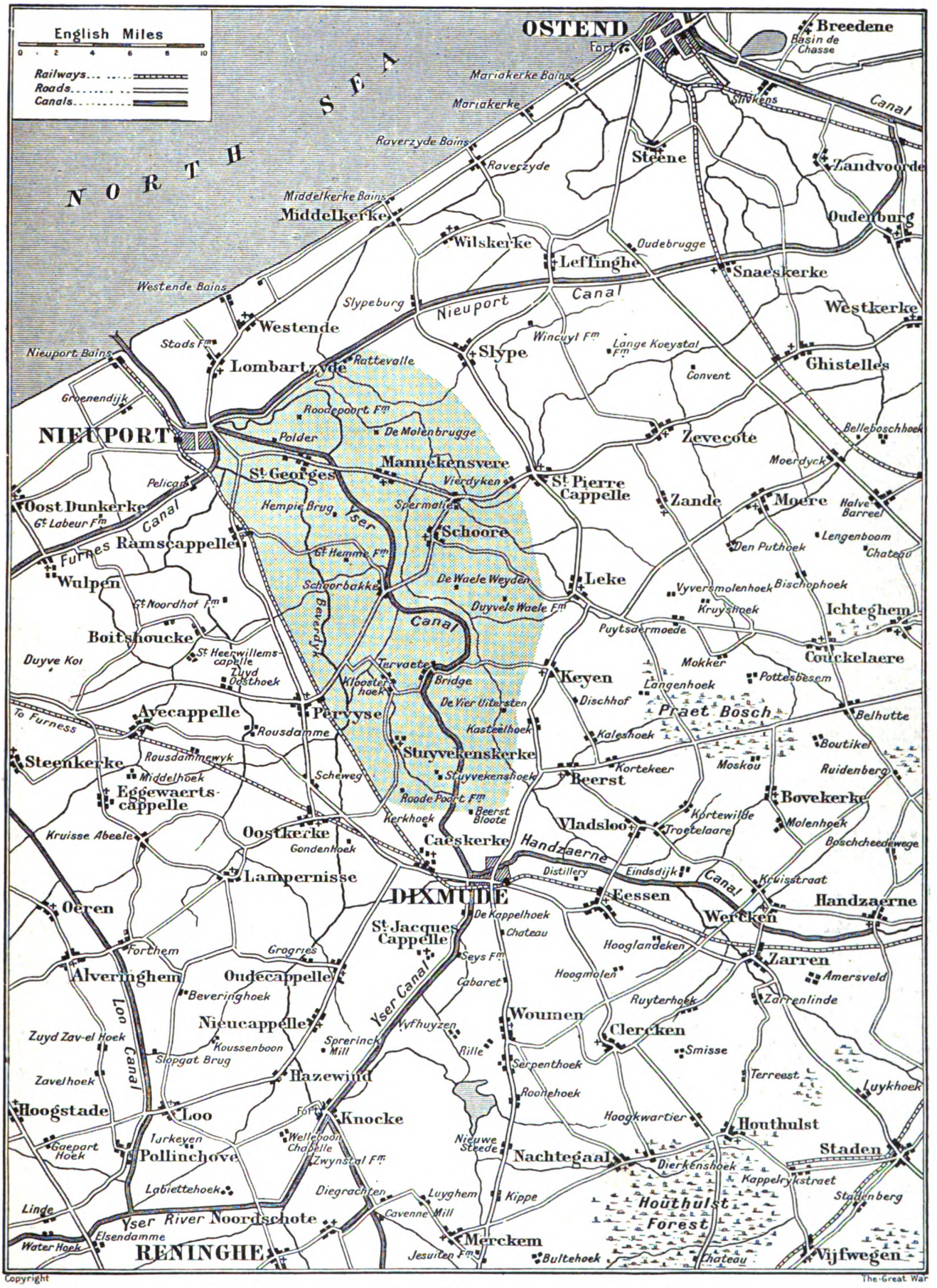
There was also urgent need to organise the revictualling services. Winter was, at the time, approaching, and the men were fighting in marshlands below the level of the sea, in the midst of an immense inundation. The rigour of the winter campaign, in trenches half filled with freezing swamp water, was alone sufficient to destroy the remaining Belgian troops if great care were not taken of them. They were all wearing summer clothing.

Their cotton rags had to be replaced by warm, woollen underclothing, and thick cloth uniforms, and their outworn shoes by heavily nailed waterproof boots. They needed a huge mass of new war material — hand-grenades and bombs, bullet-proof shields for trench firing-holes, periscopes, telescopic rifle sights, machine-gun belts, and aerial torpedoes. Then for the wounded were needed new medical corps, and the creation of national ambulances.

There was also a troublesome problem in connection with the civil population of free Belgium. It is said that when our troops, under Sir John French, began to make their famous converging movements through the lovely emerald prairies that stretched around Ypres, the British Staff began to settle the dispute between militarism and agriculture in a very practical way. Each farmer was asked what price he put on his buildings and lands. Usually he put the price very high, and he was well satisfied, in the circumstances, with the German guns thundering close by, to take half the money he had demanded. The Belgian General Staff wished to follow the same course of buying out the farmers of the Furnes commune. But when the Belgian officers made the attempt, there arrived such piteous supplications at the little villa sheltering the most unhappy of monarchs, that King Albert, who, with Queen Elizabeth at his side, had witnessed on the road from Antwerp to Furnes the agony of the fugitives of Belgium,

Militarism v. agriculture

Digitized by Google



Copyright The Great War

MAP SHOWING THE POSITIONS DEFENDED BY THE BELGIAN ARMY AFTER ITS JUNCTION WITH THE BRITISH AND FRENCH FORCES AT THE YSER.

The shaded ground to the north of Dixmude indicates the area covered by the inundations.

Digitized by Google

declared firmly that he would not allow the last of his subjects to be removed from their homes. Then, on the little patch of unconquered territory, already well peopled in times of peace, a multitude of refugees was added to the great military element. In the low, damp buildings, surrounded by meadows, soaked by innumerable dykes and waterways, a large new population slept on the straw of the stables and in the musty cellars, where infants in hundreds died almost as soon as they were born. A grave pestilence was feared, especially as cholera of a peculiar kind —cholera born of germs introduced with murderous intent by the Germans from the fields of pestilence in Galicia—began to appear in the Belgian trenches.

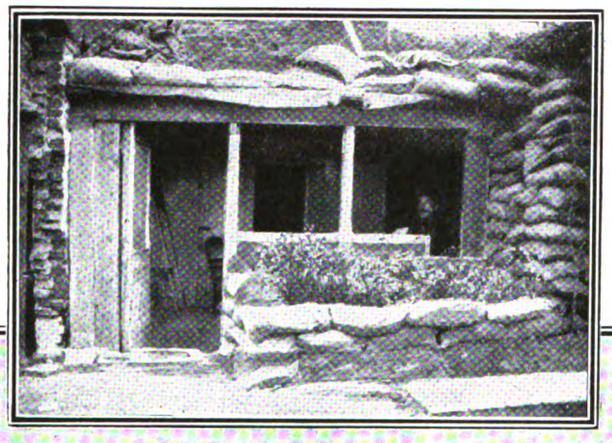
Piteous plight of the refugees

The situation became extremely critical. At this moment of peril the enemy airmen completed their reconnaissances of all that remained of unconquered Belgium, and from the distant German batteries of heavy howitzers and long-range guns a storm of bombs swept the country. It fell on the farms, on the mills, on the carts passing down the farm tracks, on the villages, on Furnes. There were many wounded women, children, and non-combatant men. But the Teutonic essay at terrorising the civil population of the last two unconquered communes increased instead of diminished the military strength of free Belgium. Certainly the cruel bombardment produced a panic among the peasantry. There ensued another migration of the far-travelled fugitives, some of whom had come by stages from the Liège district. The country as far as the French frontier was almost emptied of ordinary life, and the little realm of liberty between Furnes and Ypres became a military camp over which incessantly played the guns of Germany.

Yet though the fugitives fled still farther, the native peasantry of Furnes-Ambacht remained till death, rooted in their soil. Quiet, placid, old-fashioned Flemings, dwelling in a rich agricultural land which simply continued to exist without any industrial activities or sudden changes, they preferred to die rather than leave. They constructed dug-outs beneath their farms, and furnished their caves with the ruins of their furniture. There they slept at night, and at daytime, when the German artillery fire was not intense, they went about their ordinary agricultural work around their shell-battered farms. All of them were oldish men, often with married daughters and granddaughters living with them; for all men of military age were either in the trenches, or training at Havre or some other Belgian camp in France.

Stolid heroism of the peasantry

The answer made by the young men of Belgium to King Albert's call to the Colours was glorious. From the remote villages of Wallonia, and from the equally inaccessible homesteads of Flanders, the Belgian lads stole over the frontiers, risking their lives many times and often facing





FRENCH ARTILLERY OFFICER OBSERVING THE GERMAN LINES.

Above: Belgian officers' quarters in Flanders. A "bomb-proof" erected under cover of a shell-broken farmstead.

Digitized by Google



FRENCH SCHOOL OF EXPERIMENTAL ANTI-GAS WARFARE.
In 1915, after the German introduction of poisonous gases as a means of warfare, the French established a regular course of anti-gas training. Our photograph shows soldiers furnished with protective masks descending to an underground chamber filled with poison-gas.

greater dangers than they would have to meet in the trenches.

It would be inadvisable at the time of writing to hint at the great adventures of multitudes of boyish recruits, for the German authorities were still eagerly seeking for clues to the means of escape from the system of national imprisonment which they were trying to enforce. After the war there will be many strange, exciting tales to tell of the manner in which King Albert's men came through great and manifold dangers to arm in France for the recovery of their heroic, suffering country.

The rally to the Colours

But while there was being built up on the southern bank of the Yser the youngest and most ardent of armies, work of reorganisation of equal importance was being carried out in another direction. The Belgian Government perceived as quickly as the French Government that in this factory-made war the military industrial activities of a people made for victory even more than the courage and skill of the troops in the field. In order to throw as small a burden as possible upon her labouring Allies, tiny free Belgium quickly created a great war plant of remarkable character out of material partly brought from England and partly saved from its own resources. Old factories were transformed into arsenals for the arming of the gunners and infantrymen; powder-works were set up, and in one foundry, organised with great rapidity and practical genius, the outworn Belgian field-guns, which had already sent forth each three thousand shells, were so splendidly repaired as to be able to shoot another three thousand times at the enemy.

The Belgian Government fashioned the cadres of its new camps of instruction, installed provisioning bases,



THE RETURN FROM THE GAS CHAMBER.
Army doctor examining a man on his return from the poison-gas chamber. The rubber bag in front of the masked soldier contained oxygen which the wearer was able to turn on by means of a tap.

sent buying commissions to the principal centres of production in allied and neutral States, built huge magazines for stores for half a million men, food, clothing, war and medical material.

Then, in order to connect the depots and the magazines of bread, petrol, hay, ammunition, and equipment with the field bases along the front, the Belgian Staff built a private network of railways out of the old material of their national lines, with their old national railwaymen to work the traffic. A little bit of France had to be taken over to connect the intense activity of the Furnes region with some of the large neighbouring Channel ports, and farther to the south Havre tended to

Belgium's amazing renaissance

Digitized by Google



IN A CAPTURED GERMAN TRENCH.
French soldiers, wearing shrapnel-proof helmets, in a German trench near Arras a few minutes after its capture. The parapet of the trench bears striking testimony to the effects of the preceding bombardment.

become for the time a Belgian city, in the same way as Dieppe and Rouen acquired a transient British character. France, with the best grace in the world, shrunk a little to make more room for the marvellous and sublime remnant of a small European State which showed such incomparable powers of recovery. Belgium, reduced to the two arrondissements of Furnes and Ypres, was but one-ninth the size of her proper territory. The sixty-two remaining parishes were for the most part only churches that had lost their towers, roofless walls, and cavern block-houses. When a newspaper seller went the round of the camp, crying the name of his paper, "The Motherland," the troops lustily used at first to reply, "Yes, in sand-bags!" It seemed to them there was just enough of their native soil left to build breastworks out of it along the last strip of dyked, marshy pastures.

"The Motherland in sand-bags"

But the jesting vein of the Belgian soldier was but a veil to his deep feelings, like the humour of the Briton when he is in trouble, and the ironic shafts of wit with which the Frenchman laughs at fate. Deep waters move silently, and there were no hymns of hate sung in the Belgian trenches. But when the heavy batteries arrived, and the retubed field-guns came again fully into action, both the veteran and the fresh infantryman began to show, in fierce little skirmishes along the flooded river line, what a furnace of passion burnt in their hearts. The Belgian forces had their most important position between Nieuport and Nieuport Bains, for it was by this seaside town that the sluice-gates of the Beverdyk were worked to control the flooding of the polders with sea-water. Had the enemy at any time reached the sluice-gates he would have been master of the situation, for the region of the Yser could have been drained by raising the sluices when it was ebb-tide in the North Sea. It was only the flood-tide that produced the inundation, and to maintain the great lake-like stretch of water between the invading and defending forces it was necessary to keep the dyke gates down when the tide ran out from Nieuport beach.

The first task of the Belgian Commander-in-Chief was to strengthen his lines round Nieuport, so as to make sure of forestalling any surprise concentration of enemy force for an attack on the key position. After the Germans had definitely been defeated, the Belgian troops and their French reinforcements began to advance slowly upward near the coast. On November 3rd, 1914, the Belgian patrols reached Lombaertzyde, and the next day the 7th Regiment of the Line carried the town. But their artillery was too weak to enable them to hold on, and they drew back at night to their bridge-head of Nieuport. On November 8th the Belgian trenches were thrown out within two hundred yards of Lombaertzyde, and in the middle of December parts of the 2nd and 4th Division, with a French force under General de Mitry, took the town and extended to the sea on the left and the village of St. Georges on the right.

At the same time the other Belgian divisions fought their way forward, under a continual bombardment of hostile artillery, along the narrow tongues of dry land stretching across the flooded river. Islanded farms, converted by the Germans into machine-gun forts, were captured, and at the end of the year the enemy possessed on the left bank of the Yser only some listening posts and observation stations lost in the inundated plain.

In January, 1915, the French Moroccan troops and the Belgians began to enlarge the northern bridge-head by the Yser at Nieuport and attack the intricate German redoubt known as the Great Dune. The enemy answered this movement by a splendid engineering effort, and dug drainage canals from the region of inundation to the coast, by which much of the sea-water was carried off. To prevent the tide being admitted again down the Beverdyk, the mightiest of German pieces of artillery, the huge 17 in. howitzers, were brought up against Nieuport with a view to shattering the sluice-gates south of the ruined town. At the same time another army corps was sent towards the Yser front to help in forcing the Belgian lines across the increasing breadth of drying ground.

At first there was only a continual succession of advanced post engagements, in which parties of thirty or forty men fiercely pressed against each other over the narrow passages, with the artillery on either side playing on the hostile trenches and machine-gun forts. But the Belgians were gathering strength, and took to opening their dyke gates to assist the drying winds of spring and the efforts of the German engineers. And when at the beginning of March, 1915, paths of advance began to appear in the waste of waters, it was the Belgians who unexpectedly worked themselves forward at Dixmude and the bend

The new army begins to move

Digitized by Google



Lighting the fuse of a battery of trench-mortars. French infantry "bombardiers" about to fire these new weapons under the watchful eye of their captain.



Two of the trench-mortars fired; two about to be fired. The projectiles were launched from cases of unexploded German shells adapted for the purpose by the readily inventive mind of our French allies.

DEVELOPMENT OF TRENCH WARFARE: A NOVEL "BATTERY" IN ACTION.

Digitized by Google

of the Yser, and won more bridge-heads on the northern bank of the river. Then in the middle of March the watch-dogs of the Yser gained a fine strategical advantage by a fierce leap upon Oudstuyvenskerke, on the Schoorbakke road, and from this point they were able to drive the enemy back until they conquered a position which made impossible any German movement against the Dixmude bridge-head.

There was no violent dramatic onset in great force by the Belgian Army. Neither the state of the ground nor the tremendous artillery power of the enemy allowed any attempt of a decisive sort to break through the Germans' extreme northern wing. But there was throughout the spring and summer of 1915 a steady, well-designed pressure upon the hostile lines, which the opposing commander vainly tried to check by increasing the number of his heavy howitzers and naval guns. The fine military qualities of the Belgian troops and the scientific methods of their leaders were subtly displayed in Joffre-like strokes at all points of tactical importance, the seizure of which compelled the enemy to make continual costly efforts to regain the lost places of vantage.

Enemy's lost points of vantage

Meanwhile the war of positions enabled the brigadier-generals to induct their new formations into the practical business of modern warfare, so that each body of fresh troops completed, at comparatively little self-sacrifice, their training under the fire of the hugest pieces of ordnance in existence, and learnt to face the nerve-racking bombardment with cool heads and steady hands. They were blooded to war in their little strip of free country in a way in which no other recruits could be so confidently employed. At first they had only to hold the old cobbled roads that stood above the flood, and with these communications guarded by trench after trench, with a sweeping gun fire behind them, no surprises by the dispirited Germans were practicable. The Germans, it is true, did not remain wholly upon the defensive. They came out on rafts with machine-guns, and ingeniously attempted therewith to get enfilading streams of fire upon the Belgians' positions. But the Belgian sniper then got his great opportunity, and picked off the machine-gun crews with a few rapid shots.

The Belgian sniper's opportunity

When at last the water turned into mud, and the ground separating many of the Belgian and German trenches became firm enough to bear a rush of men, the defenders of the Yser manifested an aggressiveness which must have sadly disappointed the hostile commander. His laboriously constructed drainage canals turned to the profit of his daring opponents. A new German army was needed on the river line to enable him to recover the initiative, but as this army did not appear, the Belgians continued to maintain an ascendancy.



TO THE ETERNAL GLORY OF FRANCE AND TO THE HEROES WHO FELL IN HER DEFENCE.
Monument erected at Barcy to the heroes of the army of Paris who fell on the battlefield of l'Ourcq in September, 1914. Soldiers arranging wreaths sent by the French Government and the municipal authorities for the dedication ceremony.

Digitized by Google



PICTURESQUE VILLAGE CONSTRUCTED BY FRENCH ARTILLERYMEN ON THE AISNE.

Many of the artillerymen quartered in the Department of the Aisne were natives of the marshy district known as the Landes, in part of the old south-west province of Gascony. They brought with them to Northern France the methods of house construction characteristic of their native district.

Towards the end of April, 1915, when Hindenburg came to the western theatre of war, and the first great gas attack was launched, the inundation of the Yser region was still sufficient to daunt the Germans from using their new troops on the Nieuport-Dixmude line. Nevertheless, the Belgians played a gallant and important part in the second Battle of Ypres. They held a stretch of the Ypres Canal south of Dixmude, joining with the French division, which in turn connected with the Canadian division. When the Zouaves and the African troops were driven back by the cloud of poison gas, the Belgians came down from the north to their help, while the Canadians and British troops assisted in holding the line southward of the great unexpected break.

Steenstraate and Hetsas struggle

It was the Belgian gunners who bombarded the poisoners out of Lizerne on April 27th, and the Belgian infantry charged with the Zouaves in the counter-attack by which the important village was recovered. Six German guns were captured, and the Belgians and their comrades swept forward towards Hetsas and threw the enemy out of his first line of trenches.

The conflict along the canal between Hetsas and Steenstraate raged as long and as furiously as the struggle in front of Ypres. From the point of view of the German commander, a successful advance across the allied line to the north of Ypres would have been an even more decisive achievement than a direct drive into Ypres. If the Belgians and French had given way, the positions of the Second British Army would have been turned. But there was no giving way. For three weeks hand-to-hand fighting went on between Steenstraate and Hetsas, while the Germans tried to draw off the Belgian gunners and infantrymen from the defence of Ypres by furiously attacking the edge of the Belgian line at Nieuport. But the Belgians were more numerous and better armed than in the days when they first held all the Yser line from the sea to Ypres. They held on to Nieuport with one army corps, advanced on Dixmude with another, and splendidly helped the Zouaves in carrying the German bridge-heads on the western bank of the canal above Ypres. The bridge-heads were defended by machine-gun forts, with powerful artillery sweeping the approaches, but redoubt after redoubt fell in the middle of May, and the allied line was made secure.

At one point between Dixmude and Ypres the Germans brought all their weight to bear on the Belgians. The Teutonic artillery swept the opposing trenches with shells filled with poison gas, and after the green fumes had apparently done their work, the masked German infantry came forward to bayonet the suffocating men and capture their guns. But the Belgians laid with their faces to the earth, getting draughts of inspirable air from the ground, while the heavy fumes from the exploding shells were impelled above them. They met the Germans at close range with machine-gun fire and annihilated all the leading companies.

Germans met at close range

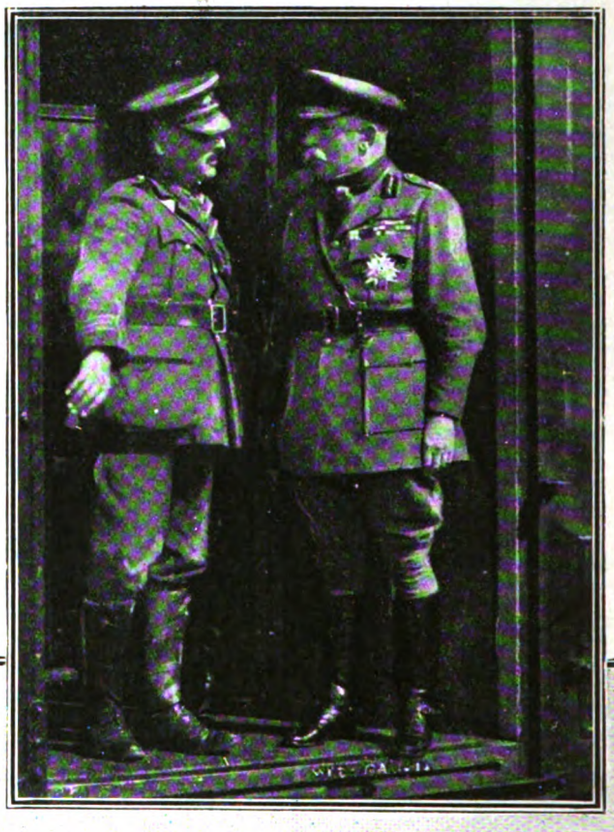
When, however, the canal line was won and firmly held, the Belgian troops, working on the left of the French division, could make but little further progress eastward; for opposite them was the Forest of Houthulst, from which a park of concealed hostile batteries, including many powerful pieces, kept up a severe cannonade. So a deadlock was established at this point; but the tenacity of the Belgians, who dug themselves into trenches with bomb-proof chambers, enabled both the French and British

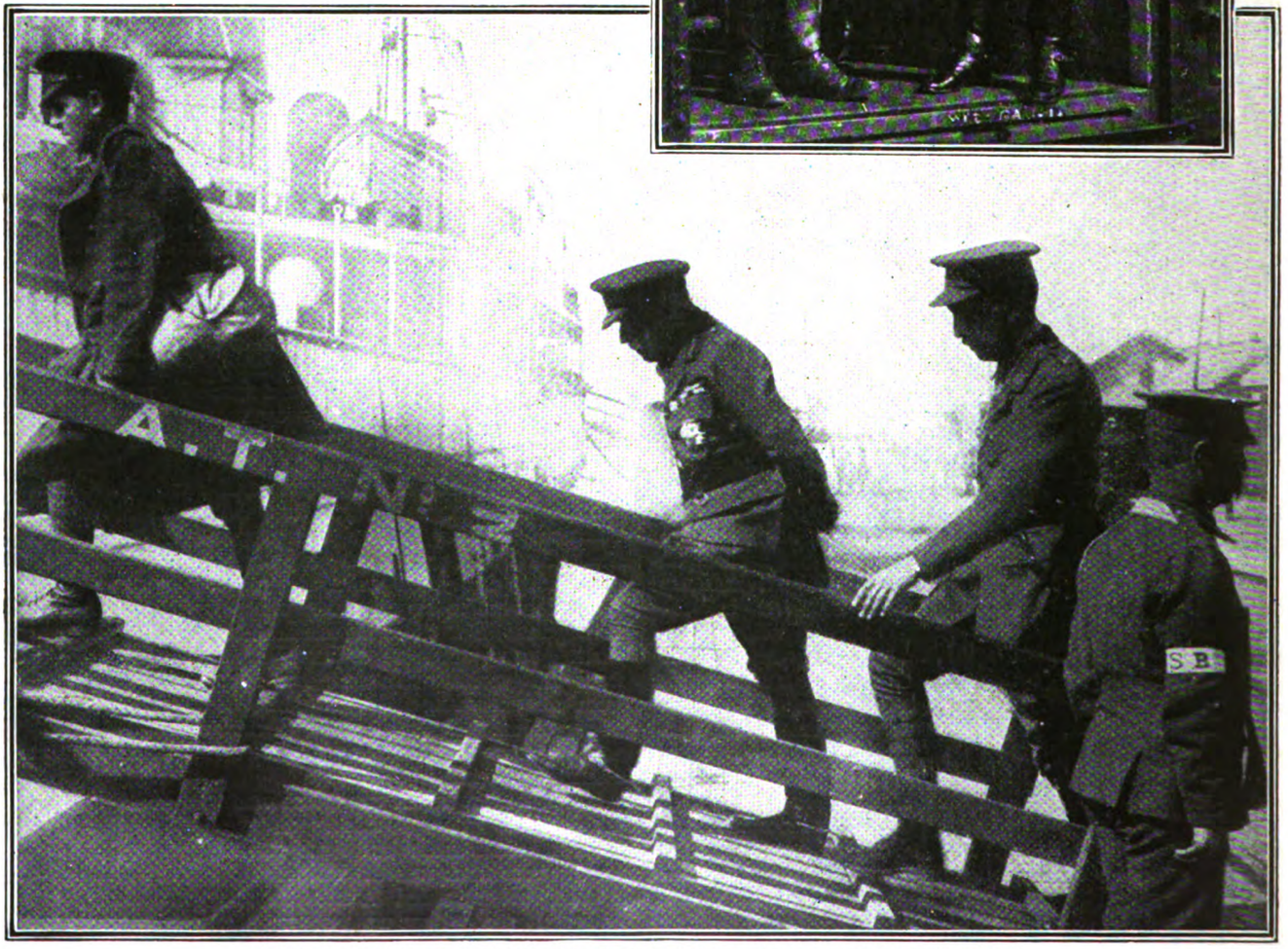
Digitized by Google

soldiers to swing forward farther south and rout the Germans from their trenches at Pilkem. Altogether the Belgians assisted greatly in enabling both the French and the British to recover from the loss of ground in the first great poison-gas attack.

After this brilliant affair, the Belgian Army resumed its comparatively quiet work of holding its Yser defences, and increasing its numbers and its war machinery. Desultory fighting of course continued all along the front, where the German forces were kept employed by a series of little engagements in which they never gained any advantage. There were favourite spots for testing the strength and ingenuity of both armies, and as the brick-stacks of La Bassée figured continually in the British reports, so the Chateau de Vicogne regularly occurred in the Belgian communiqués. The chateau was an ancient, picturesque manor-house used as a farmhouse, and lying on the road to Stuyvenskerke; the Germans occupied it, and the Belgians attacked it since November, 1914. The garrison was severely cut up by a furious bombardment of the Belgian guns, but in spite of this early success, the attacking parties could not win the chateau, though they fought for it for many months. The Germans left only a few observers in the ruined manor-house, but placed machine-guns in every window and on the roof. There was little but these machines of slaughter exposed to the Belgian gun fire, but whenever the Belgian infantry advanced to the assault they found the guns manned, and were beaten back. Night attacks and attacks in sea mists were as fruitless as sudden charges made in daylight. But after nearly ten months of repulses, an adventurous and keen-eyed Belgian scout discovered the secret of the chateau. There were electric wires running from the ruins to the principal German lines, and the observer in the manor-house rang a number of bells for reinforcements when he saw an attack was impending. When the wires were at last cut, toward the end of August, 1915, the Chateau de Vicogne was captured with great ease.

Keen-eyed Belgian scout's discovery

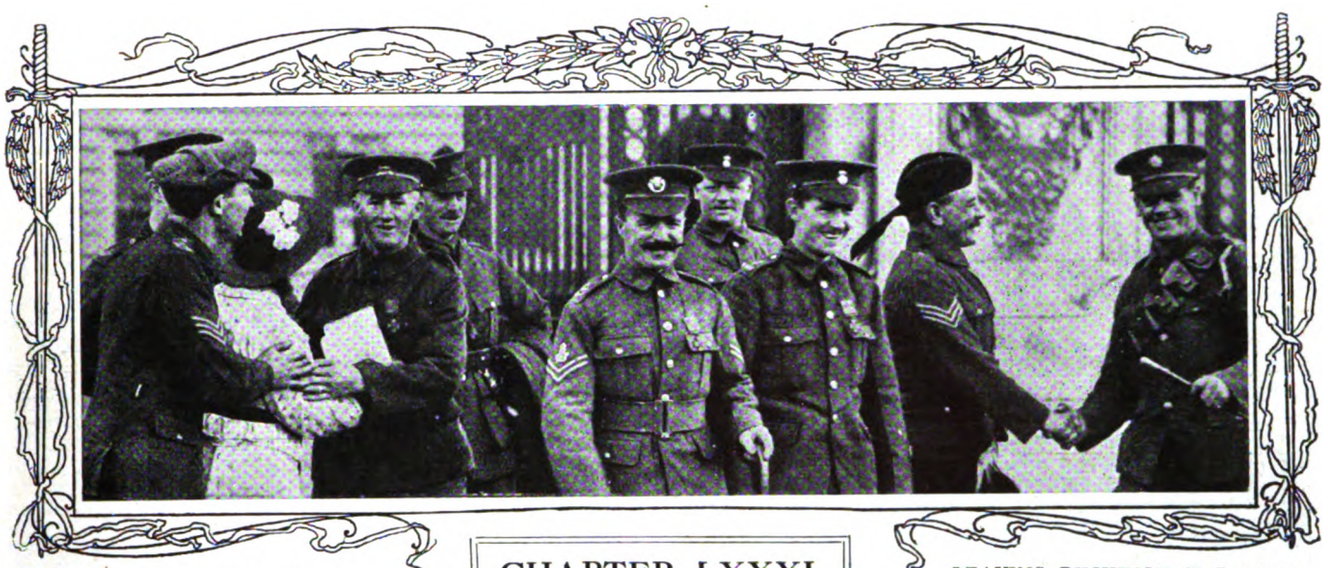




FIELD-MARSHAL SIR JOHN FRENCH VISITING THE BRITISH WOUNDED.

The British Commander-in-Chief walking along the gangway on to a British hospital ship to inspect **the wounded. In the smaller photograph Sir** John French is seen on board a hospital train.

Digitized by Google



NEWLY-DECORATED V.C.'s

LEAVING BUCKINGHAM PALACE.

CHAPTER LXXXI.

"FOR VALOUR": HEROES OF THE VICTORIA CROSS IN THE FIRST YEAR OF THE WAR.

The History of the Victoria Cross—Its Value—V.C.'s Won During the Great War—Naval V.C.'s—Submarines at Work—Rhodes-Moorhouse and Warneford—Military V.C.'s Classified—Doctors as V.C's—V.C.'s Won at Mons—Acts of Gallantry in the Retreat—The Artillery at Nery—Heroes on the Aisne—The Eleven V.C.'s of Ypres—The First Indian V.C.—The Indians at Festubert—O'Leary's Feat—The Battle of Neuve Chapelle—The East Surreys on "Hill 60"—Canadian V.C.'s—Warner and Lynn Face the Poison Gas—V.C.'s Won at Fromelles—Mariner's Gallant Deed—The Londoners at Givenchy—V.C.'s Won in Gallipoli—Our Attitude to our Heroes.

"There is an honour, likewise, which may be ranked among the greatest, which happeneth rarely; that is, of such that sacrifice themselves to death or danger for the good of their country."—BACON.

AS is fitting in services which have behind them a long and terrible renown, there are many honours open to the men of the British Navy and Army; but among these honours one stands out conspicuously as the most coveted distinction which soldiers and sailors, officers and men alike, can win. Needless to say, we refer to the Victoria Cross.

The Victoria Cross has not the value which comes with years—the kind of value, for instance, which makes the Order of the Garter so coveted a distinction—for it was only instituted in January, 1856, during the progress of the Crimean War. It is given, as the simple words inscribed on it say, "For Valour," which must be shown by some signal act of heroism or devotion in the presence of the enemy. It is intended to reward, not ordinary courage, but the merit of conspicuous bravery, and the man who wins it has passed the supreme and final test to which heroes are subjected.

The value of the cross is increased by the fact that it is not given at all freely or indiscriminately. From 1856 to the outbreak of the Great War, a period of fifty-eight years, less than five hundred and fifty men received it, and during that time our soldiers were fighting in every quarter of the world; for, more than any other service, our Army is entitled to claim the Latin line which asks the rhetorical question on which lands has our blood not been shed, and which Mr. Fortescue has aptly chosen as the motto for his "History of the British Army." There was first the Crimean War, then the Indian Mutiny, with its deeds of incredible heroism, and then fighting in China, Abyssinia, Canada, and Ashanti. In 1879 there were wars against the Zulus and the Afghans, in 1881 against the Boers, and in 1882 there was the first of our several campaigns in Egypt. Add to these the endless struggles on the Indian frontier, the advances into tropical Africa, the expeditions into Burma, and finally the Boer War of 1899-1902. A long list of fights, thousands of brave deeds done, and yet less than five hundred and fifty Victoria Crosses awarded. No wonder that we think a great deal of a V.C., for although many have deserved it and have not received it, yet it is certain that those few who have won it have given ample proofs of their valour, and that no words can properly describe their deeds of daring. Rightly we recognise that the honour bestowed upon them is among the greatest given to mortal men; for, as Bacon says in the words at the head of this chapter, they sacrifice themselves to death or danger for the good of their country. They are in spirit kinsmen of the three hundred Spartans who fell at Thermopylæ, and of the Swiss who died at Morgarten.



MICHAEL O'LEARY AT HOME.
Characteristic photograph of the gallant Irish Guardsman taken near his home in Co. Cork when he was in the Old Country on leave.

The cross itself is a bronze Maltese one, an inch and a half across. In the centre is the Royal crest, the lion and the crown, and below it a scroll on which are the

Digitized by Google

words, " For Valour." It is suspended from a bronze bar, on the back of which is engraved the name, rank, and corps of the recipient. The ribbon is red for the Army and blue for the Navy. Money can add nothing to an honour of this kind, but every non-commissioned holder of the cross is entitled to a pension of £10 a year.

As we have already said, the cross, unlike some other distinctions—the Distinguished Service Order, for instance—can be won by soldiers and sailors, officers and privates alike. The official words are that it is open to " every grade and rank of all branches of his Majesty's forces, British and Colonial." Until 1911, Indian soldiers were not eligible for it, as they had their own Order of Merit; but since then they have been on an equality with their brothers-in-arms in this respect.



HOW CORPORAL ANGUS, V.C., CAME HOME FROM THE WAR.

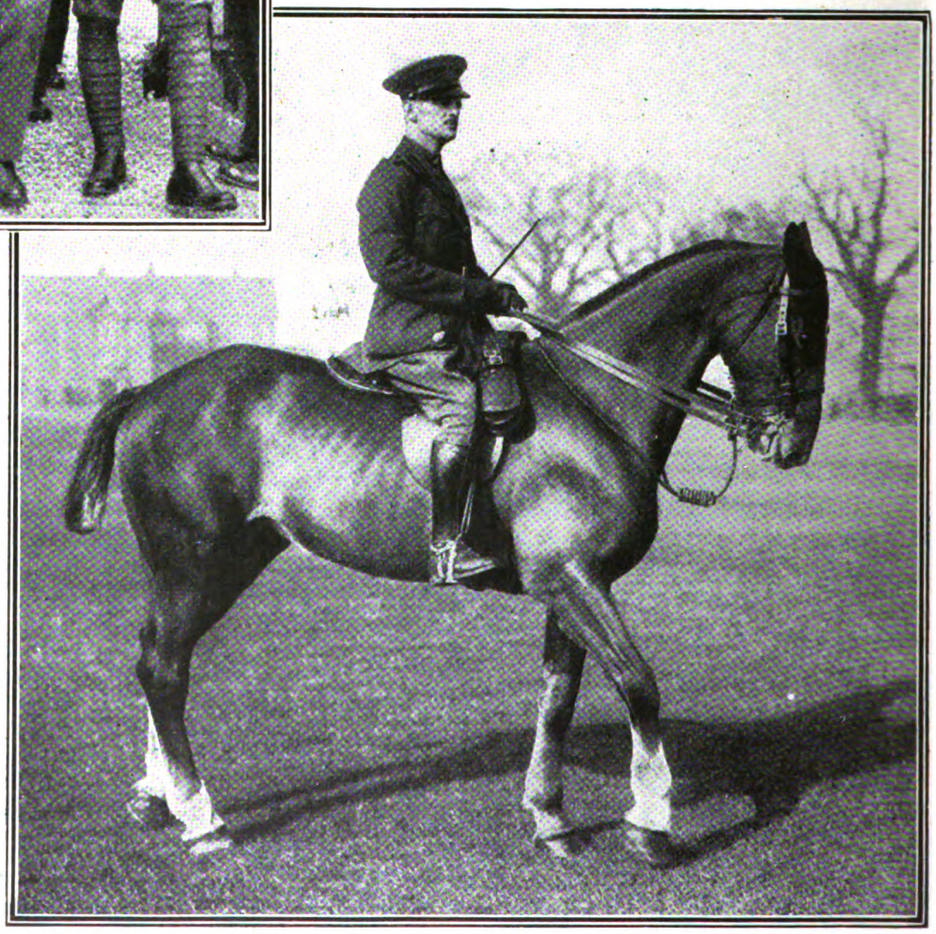
Corporal Angus, 8th Highland Light Infantry, walking to his home at Carluke. Lord Newlands is on his right, and on his left is Lieut. Martin, in saving whose life at Givenchy Angus (then a lance-corporal) received no fewer than forty wounds.

During the first year of the Great War, the period between August 4th, 1914, and August 4th, 1915, the Victoria Cross was given to eighty-two officers and men. It is not easy to say how many men were fighting at one time or other during the twelve months, but as our casualties for the year were something like 400,000, it cannot have been much less than 1,500,000. If so, it was gained by about one man in every 18,000 or 20,000. Really a few more crosses were won during the year, but as they were not announced until after August 4th, 1915, they do not come within the scope of this chapter. Moreover, they do not affect the broad conclusion that extraordinary gallantry and devotion are necessary to win the honour, and that it is bestowed most sparingly.

It may be well, first of all, to examine the list of the eighty-two recipients of the cross in some detail. In the first place we should say that seventy-six went to the Army, four to the Navy, and two to the Royal Flying Corps, although many of us are inclined to agree with the private's remark that every one of our airmen deserved one. However, this may also be said about a great number of soldiers and sailors, and we may be quite sure that the eighty-two names under consideration are by no means the only ones who earned the Victoria Cross for valour " in the presence of the enemy " during the first year of the Great War.

The landing at Dar-es-Salaam

The Navy is the senior Service, so we will first of all deal with the four naval officers who won the V.C. The first was Commander H. P. Ritchie, of H.M.S. Goliath, who was a member of the naval force which was operating off the coast of German East Africa in the autumn of 1914. In August Dar-es-Salaam, the German capital, had been bombarded, and later it was again visited by British warships. In November a landing-party was sent ashore for the purpose of searching the place and demolishing certain buildings, a dangerous operation, in view of the fact that Germans were lurking about. Commander Ritchie led this party, and while superintending the work of his men he was severely wounded, not once but several times. However, he kept to his duties, " inspiring all by his example," until in about twenty minutes he received his eighth wound and became unconscious. On April 10th, 1915, he was awarded the V.C.



LIEUT. (AFTERWARDS CAPTAIN) J. H. S. DIMMER, V.C., 2ND KING'S ROYAL RIFLE CORPS.

At Klein Zillebeke Lieut. Dimmer served his machine-gun until he had been shot five times—three times by shrapnel and twice by bullets. He continued at his post till his gun was destroyed.

Digitized by Google

V.C.'s WON IN THE WAR.



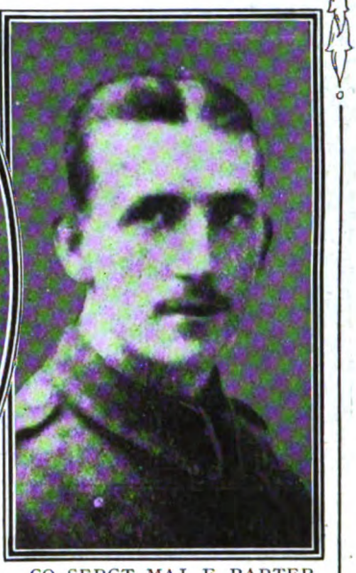
LANCE-CORPL. W. ANGUS, 8th Highland Light Infantry. Severely wounded at Givenchy.



PTE. ABRAHAM ACTON, 2nd Border Regt. Displayed great gallantry at Rouges Bancs.



PTE. EDWARD BARBER, 1st Grenadier Guards. Won his V.C. at Neuve Chapelle.



CO.-SERGT.-MAJ. F. BARTER. Royal Welsh Fusiliers. A leading figure at Festubert.



LCE.-SERGT. W. BELCHER, L.R.B. Heroically defended an important position near St. Julien.



DRUMMER S. J. BENT, 1st East Lancashire Regt. Saved a position near Le Gheir.



LIEUT.-COM. E. C. BOYLE, R.N. Sank two Turkish gunboats and transport near Gallipoli.



LIEUT. W. L. BRODIE, 2nd Highland Light Infantry. Headed a charge near Becelaere.



PTE. W. BUCKINGHAM, 2nd Leicesters. Rescued and aided wounded under heavy fire at Neuve Chapelle.



SERGT.-MAJOR H. DANIELS, 2nd Rifle Brigade. A Neuve Chapelle hero. Afterwards promoted to a lieutenancy.



DARWAN SING NEGI, Naik, 1st 39th Garhwal Rifles. Displayed great gallantry under fire near Festubert.



JEMADAR MIR DAST, I.O.M., 57th Wilde's Rifles. Exhibited great bravery in the fighting around Ypres.

Digitized by Google



L.-CPL. F. W. DOBSON, V.C., 2nd Coldstream Guards. Won V.C. at Chavanne.

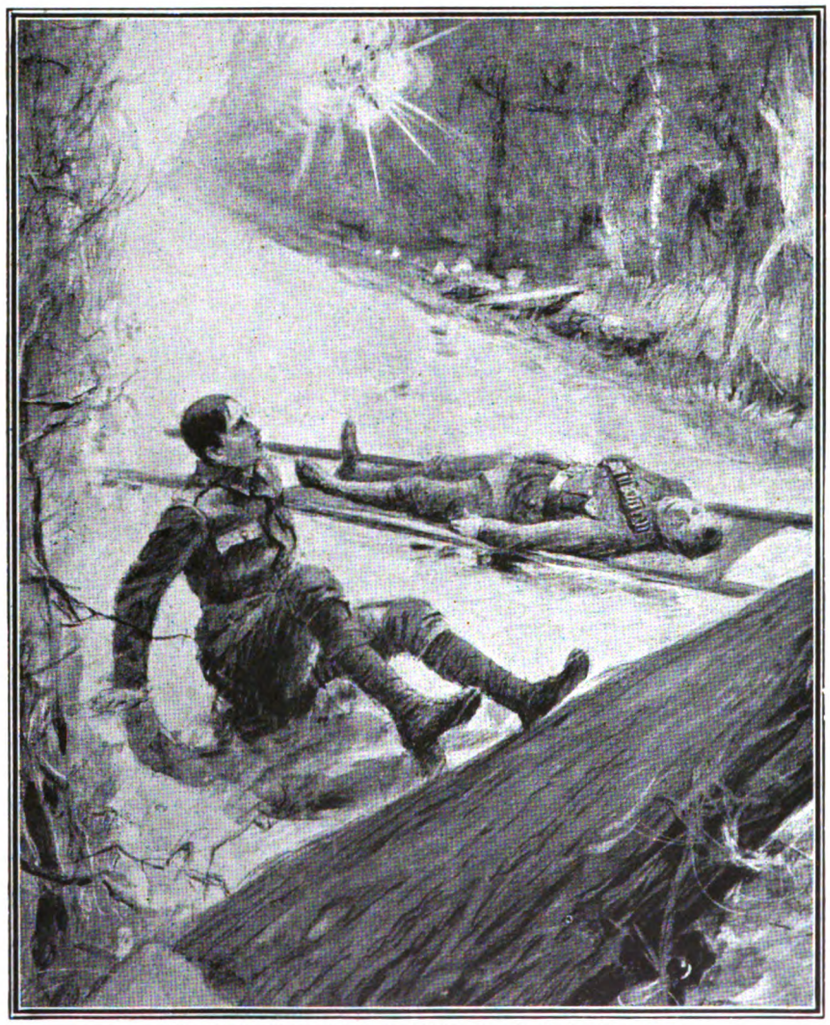
LIEUT. M. J. DEASE, V.C., 4th Royal Fusiliers. A hero of Mons. Died of wounds.

DRIVER J. H. C. DRAIN, V.C., 37th Batt. R.F.A. Saved guns at Le Cateau.

L.-CPL. E. DWYER, V.C., 1st East Surrey. Displayed great gallantry at Hill 60.

LIEUT. F. A. DE PASS, V.C. 34th Poona Horse. Died nobly near Festubert.

The other three naval V.C.'s were all won by the commanders of submarines in the Dardanelles and the Sea of Marmora. On December 13th, 1914, before the land attack on the Turkish positions was undertaken, Lieutenant N. D. Holbrook, in command of the B11, entered the Dardanelles, and notwithstanding the very difficult current, dived his vessel under five rows of mines and torpedoed the Turkish battleship Messudiyeh. More difficult still, he brought back his boat in safety, although he was attacked by gun fire and torpedo-boats, which compelled him on one occasion to remain submerged for nine hours. To such a man nothing is impossible.



GALLANT EFFORT TO SAVE LIFE UNDER FIRE.

Rifleman Matthews, 1st Rifle Brigade, with another man went out under fire to bring in a wounded comrade, whom three others had to leave, the enemy's fire being so hot. Matthews and his chum, when they reached their man, found he was dead. Matthews was then hit, and with his companion escaped with difficulty into the adjacent wood.

Holbrook's feat was a pioneer one, and it found emulators after our army had landed in Gallipoli. On April 27th, Lieutenant-Commander E. C. Boyle, in charge of the E14, took his submarine beneath the Turkish mine-fields in the Dardanelles and entered the Sea of Marmora. There, or in the Strait, he sank two Turkish gunboats and one large military transport, in spite of the difficulties arising from strong currents, and "of the continual neighbourhood of hostile patrols, and of the hourly danger of attack from the enemy."

The third of these naval heroes was Lieutenant-Commander Martin E. Nasmith, who, a little later, took a submarine into the Sea of Marmora. Like Boyle's, his bag was a big one, for he destroyed one large Turkish gunboat, two transports, one ammunition ship, and three storeships, in addition to driving one storeship ashore. He did this "in the face of great danger," and, moreover, after he had safely passed the most difficult part of his homeward journey, he returned again to torpedo a transport.

Our submarines in Turkish waters

The valour of these three sailors and the men under their command undoubtedly struck terror into the hearts of the people of Constantinople, and helped Sir Ian Hamilton's army by hindering supplies and reinforcements from reaching the Turks; and incidentally they showed what our seamen could and would do if the Germans were ever hazardous enough to attempt the invasion of this country. Only give our sailors a chance, and they would win as many V.C.'s as our soldiers have done.

A mournful interest belongs to the two airmen who won the Victoria Cross during the year, for both Rhodes-Moorhouse and Warneford are dead. Both were

Digitized by Google



L.-CPL. D. FINLAY, V.C., 2nd Black Watch. A hero of Rue du Bois. L.-CPL. W. FULLER, V.C., 2nd Welsh Regt. Rescued wounded officer at Chivy. L.-CPL. W. D. FULLER, V.C., 1st Grenadier Guards. A hero of Neuve Chapelle. PTE. S. F. GODLEY, V.C., 4th Royal Fusiliers. Won the V.C. at Mons. CAPT. F. O. GRENFELL, V.C., 9th Lancers. Helped to save guns near Doubon.

heroes of no ordinary kind, and both names are worthy to be placed beside those of the great Britons of the past—Sidney and Drake, Havelock and Outram, Gordon and Roberts.

On April 26th, 1915, Second-Lieut. W. B. Rhodes-Moorhouse flew to Courtrai and dropped bombs on the railway line there. In this there was nothing very exceptional, for other airmen had done the same; but on the return journey he was mortally wounded. In spite of his wounds he flew to his destination, thirty-five miles away, made a perfect landing, drew up and handed in his report, and then on the next day died in hospital. "Eye-Witness," in describing this deed, implied clearly that if he had thought more of himself and less of saving his machine and finishing his work, he might have descended earlier and saved his life. On May 22nd the Victoria Cross was bestowed upon him—or rather upon his memory.

Zeppelin wrecked in mid-air

The second airman was Flight-Sub.-Lieut. R. A. J. Warneford, who, on June 7th, 1915, performed the unparalleled feat of destroying single-handed one of Germany's raiding Zeppelins. It appears that Warneford was flying along when he sighted the monster, somewhere on the coast of Flanders, possibly returning from its heroic task of throwing bombs upon unprotected women and children. He pursued it to Ghent, and having risen above it he dropped his bombs, and, moreover, dropped them accurately. A violent explosion followed and the Zeppelin was quickly blazing from end to end. The concussion was so great that Warneford's aeroplane was overturned and the engine stopped, but he managed to right it and dropped down to earth to take stock of the position. Although he was in the enemy's country, he flew away unobserved in about a quarter of an hour and reached his base safely.

This was a wonderful feat, the most wonderful deed of bravery and skill accomplished in the first year of the war. The nerve required to drop bombs accurately at a height of 6,000 feet and to recover from the shock of the explosion is as wonderful as the courage which inspired one man in a tiny monoplane to attack a gigantic airship, and the skill which enabled him to avoid its fire, and finally to send it, one huge cinder, hurtling to the ground. By telegram the King congratulated Warneford and



HOW LANCE-CORPORAL HOLMES WON THE V.C.

At Le Cateau Lance-Corporal Holmes, of the 2nd Yorkshire Light Infantry, carried a wounded man out of the trenches under heavy fire. To do this he had to divest himself of his equipment. Later, the gallant corporal assisted to drive a gun out of action by taking the place of a driver who had been wounded.

Digitized by Google



SERGEANT J. RIPLEY AND SERGEANT-MAJOR F. BARTER, AFTER BEING DECORATED BY THE KING.
Sergeant Ripley, V.C., of the 1st Black Watch, was a corporal when he won the V.C. for conspicuous gallantry when leading a section at Rue du Bois, where he was badly wounded. Sergeant-Major Frederick Barter, V.C., 1st Royal Welsh Fusiliers, gallantly led a party of volunteers against a German position near Festubert, when three enemy officers and over one hundred men were captured.

bestowed upon him the V.C., while General Joffre recommended him for the Cross of the Legion of Honour. On June 11th the former distinction was announced in the "London Gazette," but six days later Warneford—the only living airman wearing the V.C.—was killed while on a practice flight in Paris. His body was brought to England and thousands, who a few weeks before had never heard the hero's name, paid their respects to it on its journey to the tomb.

A special place even among brave men belongs to the five who gained the Victoria Cross under the new conditions of modern warfare—in the air and in the sea.

Britons equal to new warfare

In a strange and unknown element, amid a loneliness quite as terrible as that of which Coleridge speaks in "The Ancient Mariner," in charge of vessels filled with all the new and awful mechanism of death, they went gaily forward, with the simple object of doing their duty to their country. They discharged their tasks, and more than that, they proved that Britons were equal to the demands of the new warfare, demands which tax brain and body, nerve and muscle, as they were never taxed before.

We must now turn to the deeds of the soldiers who won the Victoria Cross, and these seventy-six are, after all, the staple of our story. The six naval and flying men were all officers, but among the military ones, non-commissioned officers and men were in the majority, and almost every rank was represented. Of the seventy-six soldiers, twenty-six were officers and fifty non-commissioned officers and men. Among the officers the list is headed by a lieutenant-colonel—the heroic Doughty-Wylie. Two majors—Alexander, of the Artillery, and Yate, of the Yorkshire Light Infantry—are on this roll of honour, and so are nine captains. Ten lieutenants, three second-lieutenants, and one jemadar complete the twenty-six. In addition to the jemadar, two of the lieutenants belonged to the Indian Army.

Seventy-six soldier V.C.'s

Among the fifty non-commissioned officers and men, three were sergeant-majors, two sergeants, six corporals, eleven lance-corporals, one colour-sergeant, and seventeen privates. The remaining ten consisted of a lance-sergeant, a bombardier, a bandsman, two drivers in the Artillery, two drummers—Kenny and Bent—and three Indian soldiers—a naik, a rifleman, and a sepoy

The seventy-six may be divided in several ways, but perhaps the most interesting is to apportion them among the various corps and regiments. As one would expect, the largest number belonged to the infantry of the Line, the officers and men upon whom the brunt of the fighting falls. Thirty-eight out of the seventy-six, or exactly



CONGRATULATING THE FIRST V.C. OF THE WAR.
Lance-Corporal Charles Alfred Jarvis, 57th Field Company, Royal Engineers, won his V.C. at Jemappes on August 23rd, 1914, in working for one and a half hours under heavy fire in full view of the enemy, and in successfully firing charges for the demolition of a bridge. He had a great reception on the occasion of his homecoming at Chelmsford in July, 1915.

one-half, were in this class, and with the five Guardsmen, they made a total of forty-three for the Regular infantry. Of the remainder eight belonged to the Artillery, five to the Engineers, and two—Grenfell, of the 9th Lancers, and Garforth, of the 15th Hussars—to the cavalry. Eighteen remain to be accounted for, and of these six belonged to the Indian Army, three to the Canadian, and one to the Australian contingent. The Canadians were Scrimger, Hall, and Fisher, and the Australian was Jacka. The remaining eight were two members of Sir Ian Hamilton's

Digitized by Google

Staff—Doughty-Wylie and Walford—two members of the medical corps, and last, but by no means the least noteworthy, four members of the Territorial Force. Of these three—Woolley, Belcher, and Keyworth—belonged to the London Regiment, a fine record for a young unit.

Of the infantry, the Highland Light Infantry holds the proud record of having won three Victoria Crosses during the first year of the Great War, the three recipients being Lieut. Brodie and Private George Wilson, of the 2nd Battalion, and Lance-Corporal W. Angus, of the 8th, a Territorial one.



Several famous regiments can claim two Victoria Crosses during the period. Among these are the Gordon Highlanders—Lieut. Brooke and Drummer Kenny, both of the 2nd Battalion, and the Black Watch—Ripley, of the 1st Battalion, and Finlay, of the 2nd. The Royal Fusiliers—Lieut. Dease and Private Godley, of the 4th Battalion—and the East Surreys—Lieut. Roupell and Lance-Corporal Dwyer, of the 1st Battalion—belonging to the metropolitan area, and the King's Royal Rifle Corps—Dimmer and Mariner, both of the 2nd Battalion—and the Rifle Brigade—Daniels and Noble, both of the 2nd Battalion—belonging to the South of England, show that the Scottish regiments have no monopoly of these honours. Other parts of the country are represented in the list by the Manchesters—Leach and Hogan, of the 2nd Battalion—the Sherwood Foresters—Rivers and Upton, of the 1st Battalion—the Yorkshire Light Infantry—Yate and Holmes, of the 2nd Battalion—and the Border Regiment—Acton and Smith, of the 2nd Battalion.

Sixteen other regiments had each one of our V.C.'s in their ranks. These included the Welsh Regiment, the Royal Welsh Fusiliers, the Royal Irish Fusiliers, the Cameron Highlanders, the Cameronians, and the Royal Scots. The remaining ten are English: Lancashire Fusiliers and East Lancashires, Leicesters and Lincolns, Hampshires and Bedfords, Liverpools and South Staffordshires, Yorkshires and Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry. Of the five Guardsmen who won the cross two—Barber and Fuller—belonged to the Grenadiers, and one each to the Coldstreams (Dobson), the Scots (Mackenzie), and the Irish Guards (O'Leary).

Famous regiments' new laurels

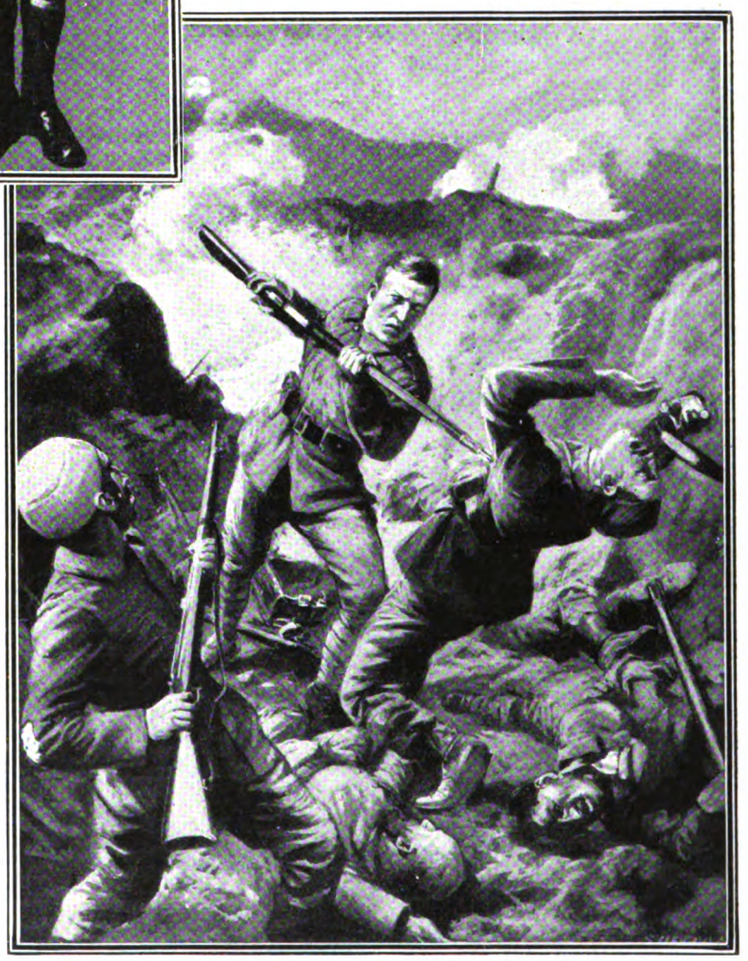
Of the eight artillerymen who won the cross three—Alexander, Bradbury, and Reynolds—were commissioned officers, and five were not. The famous L Battery of the Royal Horse Artillery had three of these heroes in its ranks—Captain Bradbury, Nelson, and Dorrell, and the remaining five belonged to the Royal Field Artillery—Captain Reynolds, Luke, and Drain to the 37th Battery, Major Alexander to the 119th, and Bombardier Harlock to the 113th. The five Engineers were all officers, save one—Lance-Corporal Jarvis. The four officers were Captains Theodore Wright and W. H. Johnston, and Lieutenants Philip Neave and C. G. Martin, D.S.O.

Among the heroes of the field of battle our doctors occupy no mean place, and during the year two members of the Royal Army Medical Corps, commonly known by its initials as the R.A.M.C., won the V.C., these being Captain H. S. Ranken and Lieut. A. M. Leake. The latter deserves a very special mention, for he won the Victoria Cross on two occasions. During the Boer War, on February 8th, 1902, Lieut. Leake was shot while assisting a wounded officer, an action which was rewarded by the V.C., so when he won it again in 1914 he was granted a clasp to it. This honour was unique, at least during the first year of the Great War. In addition to these two, one of the three Canadian V.C.'s.—Captain F. A. C. Scrimger—was a medical man, so this service should rightly count three. Of the seventy-six Victoria Crosses won by soldiers, seventy-two were gained in Flanders and the remaining four in Gallipoli.

"The British forces were engaged all day on Sunday and after dark with the enemy in the neighbourhood of Mons." This short but deeply interesting message, issued on the afternoon of Monday, August 24th, 1914, showed that the British Army, after an absence of a hundred years, was again fighting over the scenes of many of its former glories, and it was not long before officers and men began to show their traditional valour. On the very first day of actual fighting four Victoria Crosses were won.

Four V.C.'s won in a day

On that August Sunday afternoon the Germans were advancing in great force against the



AN AUSTRALIAN V.C. WHO ACCOUNTED FOR SEVEN TURKS.
On May 19–20th, 1915, at a point known as Courtney's Post, on the Gallipoli Peninsula, a British trench was violently attacked by the Turks. When his four comrades had been killed or wounded, Lance-Corporal Albert Jacka, 14th Australian Infantry, found himself attacked by seven sturdy Ottomans. Jacka, defending himself single-handed, disposed of five of his assailants by rifle fire and two with the bayonet. Inset is a portrait of the heroic Australian, a native of Wedderburn (Victoria).

Digitized by Google



GALLANT YOUNG HIGHLANDER'S HEROIC DEATH NEAR HOOGE.

During a difficult and thrilling charge near the famous Hooge Chateau a party of bombers led by Lieut. T. Barrie Erskine, 4th Argyll and Sutherland Highlanders (attached to the 1st Gordons), came to a dug-out in which some Germans were barricaded and refused to surrender. Despite a fierce cross-fire, Lieut. Erskine seized a pick, and started to hew a way into the dug-out. In doing this he was mortally wounded. The gallant young officer, who had already received the Military Cross, was recommended for the D.S.O., and gazetted to a captaincy.

canal which runs from Mons to Condé, and along which our troops were stationed. To prevent them from crossing, our engineers were ordered to blow up the bridges, and while preparing one of these for destruction, Captain Theodore Wright was wounded in the head. However, he stuck to his task, and after the first fuse had failed to act, he prepared another, which was instrumental in bringing down the bridge. Hard by, at Jemappes, Lance-Corporal C. A. Jarvis was working at a similar task. For an hour and a half, in full view of the enemy and under heavy fire, he continued to prepare charges, and at last he was rewarded by seeing the bridge shattered. On November 17th the Victoria Cross was awarded to these two engineers, but by that time Wright was dead, killed while adding to his laurels. At Vailly, on September 14th, he assisted a brigade of cavalry to cross the Aisne by a pontoon bridge, and was there mortally wounded while helping some wounded men into shelter.

Engineers hold up the enemy

To return to the fighting at Mons. About St. Ghislain, somewhat to the west of Mons, the 4th Battalion of the Royal Fusiliers was posted, its duty, or part of it, being to hold the approaches to one of the bridges which cross the canal. At that spot were some machine-guns in charge of Lieut. M. J. Dease, who, although badly wounded two or three times, continued to direct their fire. He did this until all his men had been shot, and later he himself died from his injuries. Dease was assisted by Private S. F. Godley, who stuck to his work for two hours after he had been wounded, and in November the V.C. was awarded to the two. On this same day a fifth cross was partly won.

At Harmignies, Corporal C. E. Garforth, of the 15th Hussars, volunteered to cut some wire under fire, and in this way he enabled his squadron to escape. His deed was noted, and so was the fact that a little later, at Dammartin, he carried a wounded man out of action. Finally, on September 3rd, Garforth saved the life of a sergeant, whose horse had been shot, by his coolness in opening fire on the enemy and so giving his comrade a chance to escape. For these gallant acts the King gave him the Victoria Cross on November 17th, the day on which the first awards for valour during the Great War were made.

On Monday the 24th the British Army was retreating from Mons, and high courage was more than ever necessary. Near Andregnies the 9th Lancers were ordered to charge the advancing German infantry, in order to assist the 5th Division, which was hard pressed by the enemy. The Lancers rode on, only to find themselves held up by barbed-wire and a target for the German guns. They lost heavily, and the remnant of the regiment found shelter under a railway embankment, Captain F. O. Grenfell being the senior officer left, and he somewhat severely wounded. In the same refuge were some gunners belonging to 119th Field Battery, which had been put out of the action and abandoned. Grenfell determined to save the guns, and called upon the Lancers and the gunners to assist him, and after having at the greatest risk discovered for them a way into safety, he and his men rushed out. Under heavy fire they pushed the guns into safety, for the horses had all been shot, and for this act of daring Grenfell received the V.C. Some months later, on May 24th, 1915, he was killed, while his Lancers were doing duty as dismounted men in the trenches.

Capt. Grenfell saves the guns

This same 119th Field Battery, which was commanded by Major E. W. Alexander, had already distinguished itself on the 24th. It was stationed near Elonges, and although attacked by an enormous force of Germans, the guns were saved, being pulled out of danger

Digitized by Google

V.C.'s WON IN THE WAR.



BOM. E. G. HARLOCK, (later Sergt.), 113th Batt. R.F.A. With Lieut. Leach recovered trench near Festubert.



LIEUT. N. D. HOLBROOK, R.N. Commander submarine B11. Torpedoed the Messudiyeh in the Dardanelles.



LCE.-CPL. F. W. HOLMES, 2nd Yorks Light Infantry. Won the V.C. for gallantry at Le Cateau.



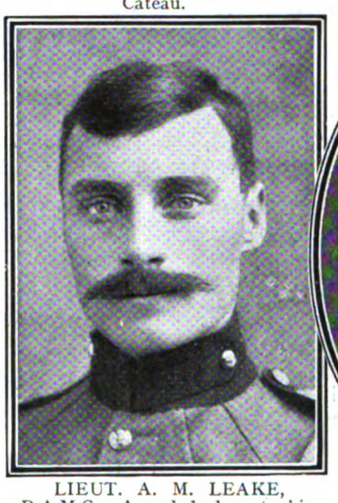
LCE.-CPL. L. J. KEYWORTH, 24th London Regt. Displayed great heroism in fierce encounter at Givenchy.



DRUMMER W. KENNY, 2nd Gordon Highlanders. Saved guns and effected rescues of wounded near Ypres.



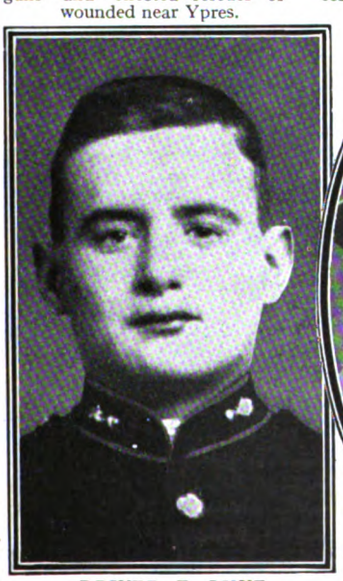
SEPOY KHUDADAD, 129th Baluchis. Won the V.C. for great bravery in action at Hollebeke.



LIEUT. A. M. LEAKE, R.A.M.C. Awarded clasp to his V.C. for his heroism near Zonnebeke.



2ND-LIEUT. J. LEACH, 2nd Manchesters. With Sergt. Hogan recovered a trench near Festubert.



DRIVER F. LUKE, 37th Batt. R.F.A. With Driver Drain saved guns at Le Cateau.



PTE. JOHN LYNN, 2nd Lancashire Fusiliers. Gave his life for his comrades near Ypres.



PTE. W. MARINER, 2nd K.R.R.C. Single-handed, silenced enemy gun near Cambrin.



PTE. HENRY MAY, 1st Scottish Rifles. Won his V.C. near La Boutillerie.

Digitized by Google



BRITISH OFFICER GIVES HIS LIFE TO SAVE THAT OF A WOUNDED ENEMY.

Above is depicted one of the bravest deeds of the war. The act of self-sacrificing heroism belongs to the autumn of 1914. Some Germans attacked a British trench, and were repulsed with heavy loss. Retiring, they took with them all but one of their wounded, whom they overlooked. A comrade came into the open to rescue him, but fell under a score of British bullets. The British officer gave the order to cease fire. Then he himself advanced to the rescue of the wounded German, but was struck by several German bullets. Then the German officer ordered his men to cease fire. The British officer carried the wounded man to the German trenches, where he saluted and handed him over to his friends. Saluting in turn, the German officer sprang from his trench, took off his own Iron Cross and pinned it on the breast of his brave enemy. The British officer gained his own lines, but died from his wounds ere he could receive the Victoria Cross for which he was recommended.

by hand by the major and three of his men. The work of this battery greatly assisted the retirement of the 5th Division, enabling it to be carried out without serious loss. Major Alexander, who had handled his battery against overwhelming odds with conspicuous success, somewhat later rescued a wounded man under heavy fire. He was given the V.C. on February 18th, but before that date he had been made a lieutenant-colonel.

The 25th passed away, and then came the 26th, which Sir John French described as "the most critical day of all," the day of Le Cateau and Landrecies. At 3.30 in the afternoon, to avoid complete annihilation, the Second Army Corps, under Sir Horace Smith-Dorrien, commenced to retreat, after having fought a fierce rearguard action at Le Cateau in order to enable the First Corps to get safely away. This movement was covered by the artillery, which held up the German advance as long as possible. On one occasion the enemy got to within a hundred yards of two guns of the 37th Field Battery, but at enormous risk Captain Douglas Reynolds, aided by two volunteers—Drivers J. H. C. Drain and F. Luke—rushed up with two teams of horses and, although under heavy fire, managed to drag one gun away. In November the three were awarded the V.C. It should be added that on September 9th, at Pisseloup, Captain Reynolds performed another act of gallantry. There our men were advancing, although a hostile battery was keeping some of them back. Reynolds discovered its position by creeping up near to it, and then turned his guns on the battery and silenced it. Six days later this officer was severely wounded.

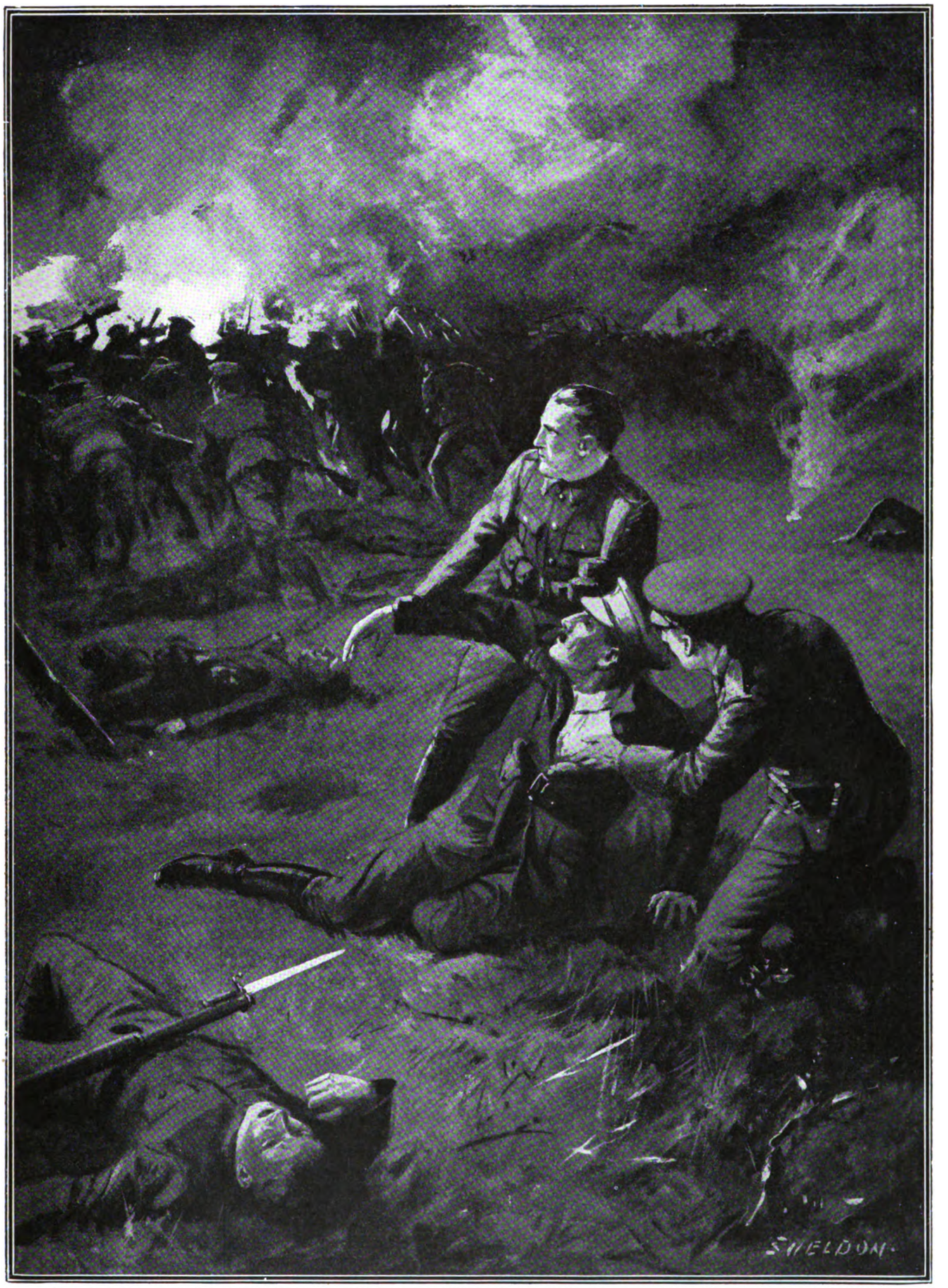
Captain Reynolds' acts of gallantry

Of the two Divisions, the 3rd and the 5th, which composed Smith-Dorrien's corps, the 5th was the last to leave its position, and among its units was the 2nd Battalion of the Yorkshire Light Infantry. Two companies of this battalion remained in the hastily-dug trenches at Le Cateau on the 26th, when practically everyone else had got away, and at length all the officers, save one, had been killed or wounded, all the ammunition expended, and only nineteen men were left. The single unwounded officer was Major C. A. L. Yate, and forming up the nineteen survivors he led them against the enemy. It was a supreme act of gallantry, but perfectly hopeless. Yate was severely wounded and was taken prisoner by the Germans. Happily, it was stated later that he had not died of his wounds, as was at first reported. During this battle Lance-Corporal F. W. Holmes, of the same regiment, carried a wounded man out of the trenches under heavy fire, and later assisted to drive a gun out of action by taking the place of a wounded driver. Like Major Yate, he received the V.C. on November 25th.

Heroism at Le Cateau

After the 26th the first fury of the German attack had spent itself, but there was a good deal of hard fighting before the French and the British turned upon their pursuers and drove them back from the gates of Paris. On September 1st, for instance, when the L Battery of the Royal Horse Artillery was resting at Nery, it was surprised by a big hostile force, and before the guns could be brought into action three of them had been destroyed. However, the other three opened fire upon the superior batteries of the enemy, but soon two of them had been silenced, and only forty men of the two hundred attached to the battery remained. Under Captain E. K. Bradbury the gunners continued to serve the one sound gun, and when he had been wounded, Sergeant-Major G. T. Dorrell and Sergeant D. Nelson kept up the fire until all the ammunition was gone, although only six hundred yards away the Germans were pouring in a concentrated fire from guns and machine-guns. In the nick of time a body of British cavalry and infantry arrived on the scene, and the battery, or what remained of it, was saved. Captain Bradbury, who died of his wounds,

Digitized by Google



AN ECHO FROM NEUVE CHAPELLE: BRITISH OFFICER'S PRIDE IN HIS REGIMENT.

The moving incident which our artist has chosen for the subject of the above picture belongs to the thrilling story of Neuve Chapelle. It throws a ray of light on one out of hundreds of instances of British heroism and endurance during the battle referred to, and we should have been in ignorance of it but for a line or two of reference in a soldier's letter home. The soldier tells how one of his officers, though mortally wounded, refused to be taken from the field. "Prop me up," he said, "that I may see my regiment go forward."

Digitized by Google

was given the V.C. on November 25th, for his "gallantry and ability in organising the defence of L Battery against heavy odds," and the two non-commissioned officers received the same honour on the 17th, and were also promoted to commissioned rank. Like Captain Bradbury, Sergeant Nelson was severely wounded, but happily he recovered, although he had stuck to the guns after having been ordered to retire into safety.

Two brigades saved by one man

On September 13th the Allies, having won the Battle of the Marne, began the crossing of the Aisne in pursuit of the retiring Germans. At Missy two British brigades, the 11th and the 15th, had got across the river, though their position was very precarious, and but for the exertions of one man they would have been compelled to retire. This man was Captain W. H. Johnston, R.E., who worked with his own hands two rafts across the river, taking back thereon the wounded, and returning with ammunition for the harassed brigades. He did this throughout the whole day, and was deservedly awarded the Victoria Cross on November 25th. Some time later Captain Johnston was killed.



NON-COMMISSIONED OFFICERS AND MEN OF THE KING'S LIVERPOOL REGIMENT IN THE TRENCHES AFTER THE ADVANCE AT FESTUBERT, JUNE, 1915.

This Battle of the Aisne extended over a wide front, and on the 14th three more Victoria Crosses were won. On the right of the British line, forming part of the 1st Division, was the 2nd Battalion of the Welsh Regiment, and one of its captains, Mark Haggard, took a prominent part in leading the men forward. At length he fell mortally wounded, and seeing this, Private William Fuller rushed forward for about a hundred yards, and under a heavy fire carried Haggard into safety. Fuller, by then a lance-corporal, received the V.C. on November 23rd.

Not far from the Welsh Regiment, in the same 1st Division, were the Cameron Highlanders, and a similar service was performed for an officer of this battalion by Private Ross Tollerton. The bravery and devotion of this soldier were, as the official announcement said, "most conspicuous." While carrying the wounded officer into safety, Tollerton himself was wounded in the head and hand, but nevertheless he returned to the firing-line and remained with the battalion until it retired. But this was not all. He then returned to where the wounded officer was lying, and stayed beside him for three days until the two were rescued. The name of Ross Tollerton is not perhaps so well known to the general public as are the names of several other winners of the V.C., but there is hardly one who earned the honour more daringly or more fully. Some months later, on April 19th, Tollerton received the V.C.

At Verneuil, a little to the left of the Welsh Regiment, the line was held by the 2nd Battalion of the Highland Light Infantry, and in its ranks was a certain Private George Wilson. With a comrade Wilson crept forward to silence a hostile machine-gun, and after the comrade had been killed he went on alone. He reached the gun, shot the officer and the six men who were working it, and then captured it. He received the V.C. on December 5th.

On the 15th this engagement on the Aisne continued, and near Vendresse the 113th Field Battery was shelling the Germans, and was being heavily shelled in return. One of its bombardiers, E. G. Harlock, being injured, went away and had his wound dressed, and then returned to lay his gun. A second time the same thing happened, and a second time the bombardier went back from the dressing station to his work. He was made a sergeant, and received the V.C. on November 25th.

The Battle of the Aisne went on for four weeks, and after the first encounters the combatants betook themselves to trenches. At Hautvesnes, on September 19th, Captain H. S. Ranken, of the R.A.M.C., showed conspicuous courage in attending to the wounded when under rifle and shrapnel fire, and on the following day his leg and thigh were shattered while at work. Even after this severe injury he kept to his task, but the strain was too much for him, and another V.C. hero died of his wounds without knowing of the honour conferred upon him by the King on November 17th.

The last V.C. earned during the Battle of the Aisne fell to Lance-Corporal F. W. Dobson, of the 2nd Battalion Coldstream Guards. At Chavanne, on September 28th, Dobson distinguished himself by his "conspicuous gallantry" in bringing into cover on two occasions, under heavy fire, wounded men who were lying exposed in the open. He received the V.C. on December 9th.

At length the Battle of the Aisne came to an end, and the British army took up its position on the Yser, where it remained throughout the winter. On October 22nd the first Battle of Ypres was raging, and the Germans were making their great effort to hack their way through to Calais. Near La Boutillerie there was sharp fighting, and the Cameronians, also called the Scottish Rifles, were suffering severely. Private Henry May volunteered to go forward and save a wounded man; he made an attempt, but the heavy fire killed the injured soldier before his rescuer could reach him. Later in the day May carried a wounded officer into safety, traversing with his burden three hundred yards under very severe fire. On April 19th the V.C. was conferred upon him.

Drummer saves machine-guns

The next day, October 23rd, William Kenny, a drummer in the 2nd Battalion of the Gordon Highlanders, won his V.C. He was not a fighting man, so he was employed to carry urgent messages, and on numerous occasions he took these "under very dangerous circumstances over fire-swept ground." But this was not enough for the heroic drummer. Twice he saved the battalion's machine-guns by carrying them out of action, and no less than five times, "under

Digitized by Google



Lce.-Corpl. Tombs saves four comrades.



Drummer Bent's gallantry under fire.



Private Lynn's "most conspicuous bravery."



Lieut. Smyth's terrible journey with bombs.

Digitized by Google



Lieut. Leach and Sergeant Hogan recapturing a trench from the Germans.

Digitized by Google



How Sergeant O'Leary "practically captured the enemy's position by himself."

Digitized by Google



The first V.C. ever won by a Territorial: Second-Lieut. G. H. Woolley's heroic defence of "Hill 60" with a handful of men.

Digitized by Google

heavy fire in the most fearless manner," did he rescue wounded men. When super-V.C.'s are awarded to supermen, Drummer Kenny should figure in the list.

During this same Battle of Ypres the Germans, on October 29th, made a specially severe attack on Sir Douglas Haig's corps at Gheluvelt, and this was momentarily successful, some of our trenches being lost. However, Lieut. J. A. O. Brooke, an officer of the 2nd Gordons, kept cool and fearless, and under heavy fire, both from rifles and machine-guns, led two attacks on the German position, regaining one of the lost trenches "at a very critical moment." The gallant officer was killed, but a fine memorial to him remains in the announcement which conferred upon him the Victoria Cross. "By his marked coolness and promptitude on this occasion," it says, "Lieut. Brooke prevented the enemy from breaking through our line, at a time when a general counter-attack could not have been organised." The two Gordons, lieutenant and drummer, one alive and the other dead, were among those who received the V.C. on February 18th.

Away on the British right there was, on this same October day, heavy fighting around Festubert, where the Second Corps was stationed. Here, as a Ypres, a strong German attack was successful in capturing some trenches held by the 5th Division, and two attempts made by our men to recover them failed. Thereupon an officer, Second-Lieut. James Leach, and a sergeant, John Hogan, of the 2nd Battalion of the Manchester Regiment, voluntarily decided in the afternoon to make an effort to recover their lost trench. Working steadily from traverse to traverse, at length they reached it, and once there they killed eight of its German defenders, wounded two, and took sixteen prisoners. Thus the trench again became British property, and on December 22nd Leach and Hogan received the V.C.

Towards the end of October the Indian Army Corps took its place in the line of battle, and on the 31st the V.C. was won by one of its members—a sepoy called Khudadad, of the 129th Duke of Connaught's Own Baluchis. The Baluchis were at Hollebeke, and the sepoy was one of the men who were working the battalion's two machine-guns. One of these was put out of action by a shell, and the British officer in charge of the detachment was wounded, but Khudadad, although wounded himself, worked away at his gun until the five men with him had all been killed. The first award of the V.C. to an Indian soldier for valour during the Great War was granted to Khudadad on December 7th.

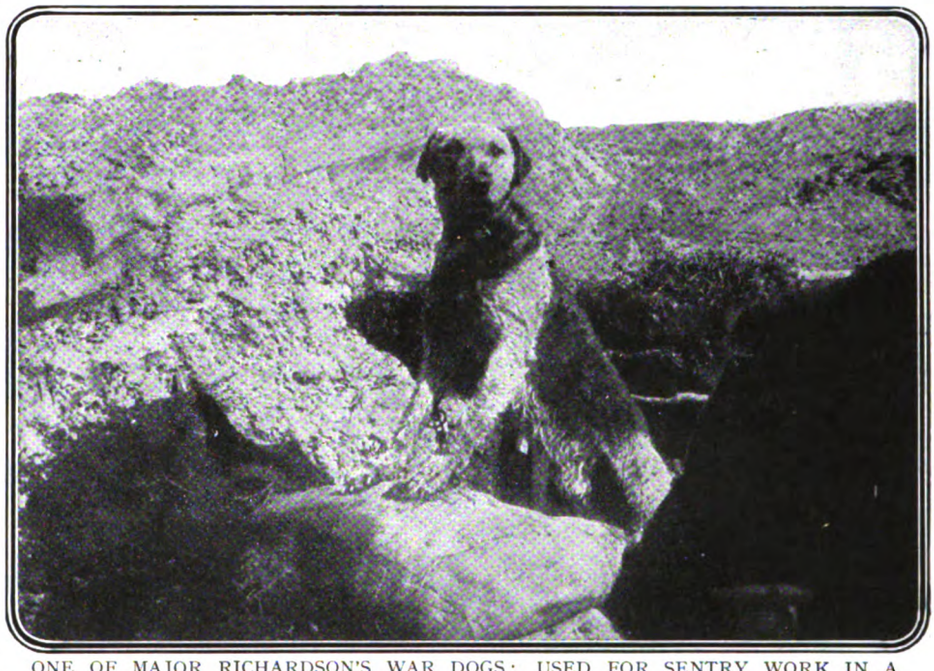
First Indian V.C. in the war

Near Hollebeke is Le Gheir, where the East Lancashires were making a desperate stand against the innumerable hordes of Germans who came day after day to the attack, and there Drummer Kenny found a rival. On the night of November 1st, perhaps the most critical time in this critical battle, a certain detachment of the East Lancashires lost all its officers. Realising the situation, Drummer Spencer John Bent took command and, as we were told, "with great presence of mind and coolness succeeded in holding the position." But, like Kenny, Bent was not satisfied with one act of heroism. Previously, on October 22nd and 24th, he had distinguished himself by bringing up ammunition under a heavy shell and rifle fire, and later, on November 3rd, he carried into cover some wounded men who were lying exposed in the open. Drums may not be necessary in a modern army, but no army can have too many drummers like Bent and Kenny. Bent's V.C. was dated December 9th, 1914.

It was at the same time and in the same neighbourhood that Lieutenant A. M. Leake, of the R.A.M.C., won the V.C. for the second time. Here we may be allowed to quote the official words. He won it for "most conspicuous bravery and devotion to duty throughout the campaign, especially during the period October 29th to November 8th, 1914, near Zonnebeke, in rescuing, while exposed to constant fire, a large number of the wounded who were lying close to the enemy's trenches." As the cross could not be given twice to the same man, Lieutenant Leake was granted a clasp to it on February 18th, 1915.

Double honours for R.A.M.C. captain

We have not yet done with the Battle of Ypres. On November 7th it was still raging, and on that day, at Zillebeke, the 1st Battalion of the South Staffordshires did splendid service in capturing a German trench. The attack, or at least one attack, was led by Captain J. F. Vallentin, who was shot down, and on rising to continue on his forward way was immediately killed. But his gallantry was not thrown away, because "the capture of the enemy's trenches, which followed, was in a great measure due to the confidence which the men had in their captain, arising from his many previous acts of great bravery and ability." On February 18th Vallentin's memory was honoured by the grant of the V.C.



ONE OF MAJOR RICHARDSON'S WAR DOGS: USED FOR SENTRY WORK IN A FRONT-LINE TRENCH IN FLANDERS.

On November 11th the German Emperor made a supreme effort to break the British line. The Prussian Guard, the corps d'élite of his Army, was ordered up and sent forward to perform a feat which its comrades had failed to do. In one or two places it succeeded, but, as a whole, the attack was a failure, and this was due, among others, to Lieutenant W. L. Brodie, of the 2nd Battalion of the Highland Light Infantry. Heading a charge, Brodie and his men bayoneted several of the enemy who had occupied a portion of our trenches and recovered some lost ground. A dangerous situation was relieved, and, as a result of Brodie's promptitude, eighty of the enemy were killed and fifty-one taken prisoners. The two V.C.'s in this fine battalion—Brodie and George Wilson—were fitting comrades.

Digitized by Google



A COMPANY OF "GOUMIERS" (FRENCH AFRICAN CAVALRY), WATERING THEIR HORSES AT A RUNNING STREAM.

Among many tragic scenes, campaigning sometimes presents, by way of a relief, picturesque impressions which might have been composed at leisure by a great artist to please the eye. Witness the scene above. The atmosphere of peace and repose is curiously imbued with a feeling of force and strength. These proud African horsemen, watering their steeds, saturated in sweat, belonged to a squadron of "Goumiers," as the men belonging to the French native African cavalry are popularly known, who had just returned from a long and costly reconnaissance.

Digitized by Google



[*From a painting by G. Hillyard Swinstead, R.I.*

LIEUT. CYRIL GORDON MARTIN, V.C., D.S.O.

Lieut. Martin, 56th Field Coy., R.E., at Le Cateau on August 26th, 1914, held with his section a post from which the infantry had been driven, and remained there under fierce fire until relieved. He was wounded, and won the D.S.O. He won his V.C. at Spanbroek Molen, on March 12th, 1915, when in command of a grenade-throwing party of six rank and file. Although wounded early in the action, he led his party into the enemy's trenches and held back the German reinforcements for nearly two and a half hours, until the evacuation of the trench was ordered.

In the neighbourhood of Ypres the Germans continued their assault, although not perhaps with the fury of the one on the 11th. On the 12th they attacked our position at Klein Zillebeke, where Lieutenant J. H. S. Dimmer, of the 2nd Battalion King's Royal Rifle Corps, was working a machine-gun. Although he was hit no less than five times, Dimmer stuck to his post until his gun was destroyed. Very quickly, on November 19th, he was awarded the V.C., the last of the eleven earned during the great Battle of Ypres. A finer eleven never fought or played upon any field.

A valorous Rifleman

During the trench warfare which followed the first Battle of Ypres the V.C. was won by a bandsman, T. E. Rendle, of the 1st Battalion of the Duke of Cornwall's Light Infantry. Serving, as bandsmen usually do on the field of battle, as a stretcher-bearer, Rendle, on November 20th, showed conspicuous bravery near Wulverghem in attending to the wounded under very heavy shell and rifle fire. In addition, he rescued some men from trenches in which they had been buried by the fire from the German heavy howitzers having blown the parapet upon them. Rendle was awarded the cross on January 11th.

On November 23rd the Germans made a determined attack upon some trenches near Festubert held by the Indian corps. A counter-attack was organised during the night of the 23rd, and in this the 39th Garhwal Riflemen, from the northern hills, took a leading part. They cleared the enemy from some of our trenches, and in this work a naik, Darwan Sing Negi, was prominent. Although wounded in two places in the head, and also in the arm, he was one of the first to push round each successive traverse, and he did this in the face of severe fire from bombs and rifles at the closest range. On December 7th, the same day as the sepoy Khudadad, he was awarded the V.C.

The Indians at Festubert

On the 24th the Indians and the Germans continued their struggle for the trenches, and Lieutenant F. A. de Pass, of the 34th (Prince Albert Victor's Own) Poona Horse, entered a German sap and, in spite of the enemy's bombs, managed to destroy a traverse. He then rescued, under heavy fire, a wounded man who was lying exposed in the open, and still later on the same day he made a second attempt to take the sap, which had been recaptured by the Germans.



MAJOR C. A. L. YATE, V.C., IN THE HANDS OF THE ENEMY.

He commanded one of the two companies of the 2nd Yorkshire Light Infantry that remained to the end in the trenches at Le Cateau on August 26th, 1914, and, when all other officers were killed or wounded, and the ammunition was exhausted, led his nineteen survivors against the enemy in a charge in which he was severely wounded. He was picked up by the enemy. Happily, it was stated later that he had not died of his wounds, as was at first reported.

Digitized by Google

V.C.'s WON IN THE WAR.



PTE. J. MACKENZIE, 2nd Scots Guards. Won V.C. at Rouges Bancs. Killed.



2ND-LT. G. R. DALLAS MOOR, 3rd Hants. Saved dangerous situation on Gallipoli.



2ND-LT. RHODES-MOORHOUSE, Special reserve R.F.C. Fatally wounded near Courtrai.



LIEUT.-COM. M. E. NASMITH, R.N. Torpedoed Turkish ships in Sea of Marmora.



LIEUT. P. NEAME, R.E. Displayed conspicuous bravery near Neuve Chapelle.

While engaged in this deed he was killed, and his name appeared in the "London Gazette" of February 18th among the recipients of the Victoria Cross.

On December 14th the 2nd Battalion of the Royal Scots assisted some French troops in attacking a German position, and was successful in getting on to the edge of a hill called Petit Bois. Here Private Henry H. Robson of this regiment showed "most conspicuous bravery" in leaving his trench under a very heavy fire and rescuing a wounded non-commissioned officer. Subsequently he tried to save another wounded man, persevering in his attempts until two wounds had rendered him helpless.

Five days later, on December 19th, there was more fierce fighting in the neighbourhood of Neuve Chapelle and Festubert. Near the former place Lieutenant Philip Neame, of the Royal Engineers, was helping to rescue the wounded men. He managed to keep back the enemy, who were firing their rifles and throwing bombs, until he had carried into safety all the wounded men who could be moved.

Gallant rescues at Neuve Chapelle

Not far away, at Rouges Bancs, Private J. Mackenzie, of the 2nd Battalion of the Scots Guards, was doing similar work. On one occasion a party of stretcher-bearers attempted in vain to reach a wounded man. Seeing this, Mackenzie went forward under a heavy fire and carried him back from the very front of the German trenches. A second time on that same day he attempted to perform a like act of gallantry, but on this occasion he was unfortunately killed. The names of Robson, Neame, and



SERGT. D. NELSON, L Batt. R.H.A. (later 2nd-Lieut.). A hero of Nery.



ACTING-CORPL. C. R. NOBLE, 2nd Rifle Brigade. Died of wounds at Neuve Chapelle.



CAPT. H. S. RANKEN, R.A.M.C. Died of wounds received at Hautvesnes.



BANDSMAN T. E. RENDLE, 1st Duke of Cornwall's L.I. Distinguished at Wulverghem.

Digitized by Google

V.C.'s WON IN THE WAR.



COM. H. P. RITCHIE, R.N. Won his V.C. at Dar-es-Salaam, East Africa.



PTE. J. RIVERS, 1st Sherwood Foresters. Another hero of Neuve Chapelle.



PTE. H. H. ROBSON, 2nd Royal Scots. Effected gallant rescue near Kemmel.



CAPT. F. A. C. SCRIMGER, Canadian A.M.S. Rendered gallant services near Ypres.

Mackenzie were among those upon whom the V.C. was bestowed on February 18th.

At Rouges Bancs, two days later (December 21st), there were other gallant rescues, and the V.C. was won by two privates—Abraham Acton and James Smith—of the 2nd Battalion of the Border Regiment. First of all, the two went voluntarily from their trench and rescued a wounded man who had been lying exposed near the German trenches for three whole days, and later they went out a second time and brought another wounded man into safety. The pair were under fire for an hour, but both returned safely. Their honour was dated February 18th, 1915.

Michael O'Leary's great feat

The first V.C. won during 1915 was gained by Lance-Corporal Michael O'Leary, of the Irish Guards, for one of the most remarkable feats performed during the whole war. It was at Cuinchy, on February 1st, when O'Leary was one of a party moving forward to storm the German barricades. When near the enemy he rushed to the front and himself killed five Germans who were holding the first barricade, and then went forward to the second one, which was about sixty yards distant. There he killed three of the enemy and took two others prisoners. This is what the official announcement said on February 18th: "Lance-Corporal O'Leary thus practically captured the enemy's position by himself, and prevented the rest of the attacking party from being fired upon." A volume could add nothing to this simple statement of fact. In September O'Leary was given a commission in the Northumberland Fusiliers.

One of the big battles of the Great War was fought



LIEUT. J. G. SMYTH, 15th Ludhiana Sikhs. Brought up bombs under fire at Festubert.



PTE. R. TOLLERTON, 1st Cameron Highlanders. Won his V.C. at the Aisne.



CAPT. J. F. VALLENTIN, 1st South Staffs. Killed while leading at Zillebeke.

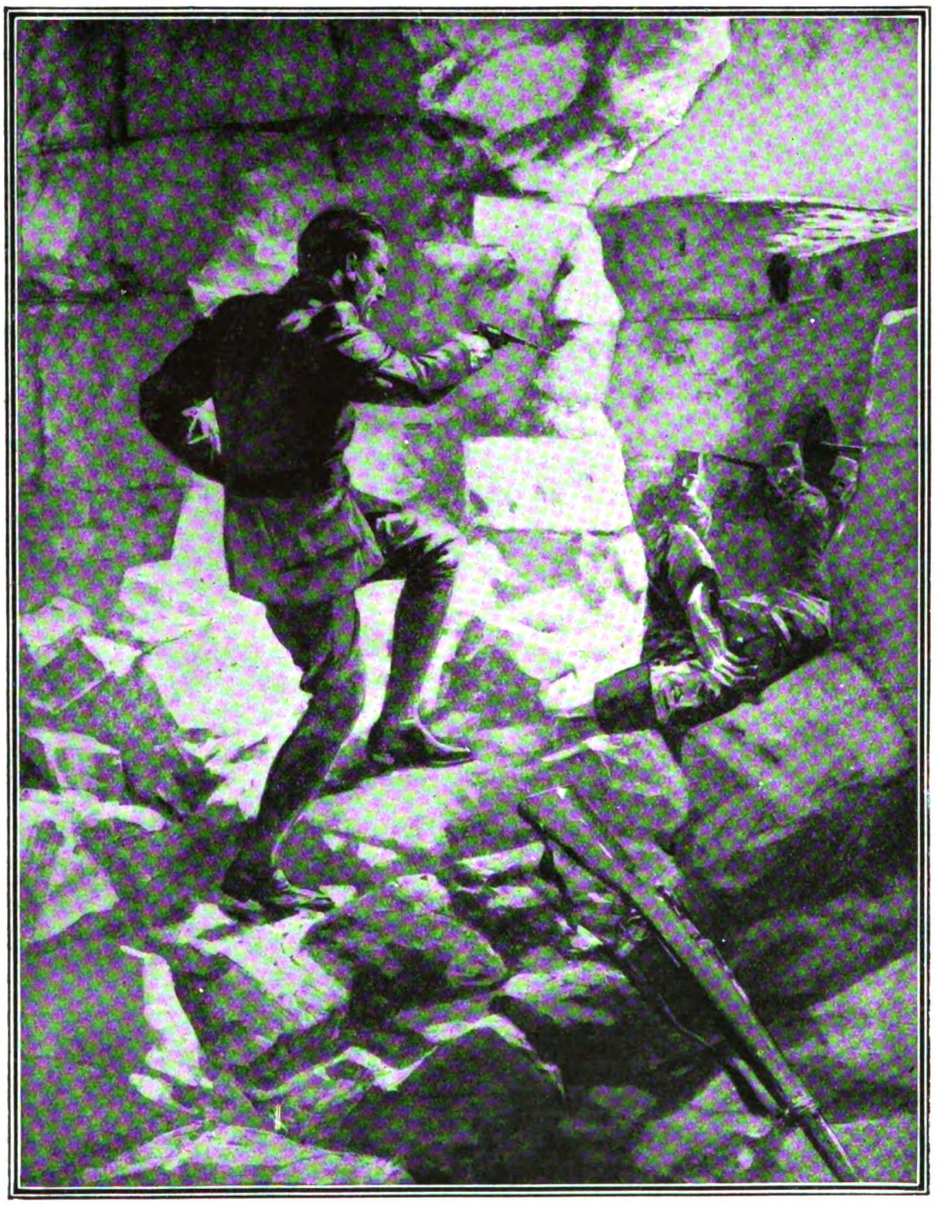


CAPT. G. N. WALFORD, R.A. One of the heroes of Seddul Bahr.



SUB-LIEUT. WARNEFORD, R.N.A.S. Destroyed a Zeppelin in mid-air.

Digitized by Google



AN EPISODE IN THE CAMPAIGN ON GALLIPOLI.
Daring British officer attacking a Gallipoli fort single-handed. Shooting down some of the gunners with his revolver, he caused the Turkish fire to slacken sufficiently for the Dublins to rush in and capture the stronghold.

at Neuve Chapelle on March 10th, 11th, and 12th, 1915, and there nine Victoria Crosses were gained. The first was won by an Indian, Rifleman Gobar Sing Negi, like his namesake, a soldier in the ranks of the 39th Garhwal Rifles. During the attack on the German position which opened the battle on the 10th, Negi was one of a party which, armed with bayonets and bombs, entered the enemy's main trench. He was the first man to go round each traverse, and was instrumental in driving back the Germans until they were forced to surrender. During the battle he was unfortunately killed, but on April 28th he received a posthumous V.C.

Grenadiers rival heroes of Dumas

So much for the 10th, but the fighting on the 12th was fiercer still, and nowhere more so than around Pietre Mill, where were the 1st Battalion of the Grenadier Guards. There Lance-Corporal W. D. Fuller and Private Edward Barber of that regiment showed "most conspicuous bravery." In one place Fuller, seeing a party of the enemy trying to escape along a communication trench, ran towards them and, although quite alone, killed the leading man by throwing a bomb. After this the remainder, some fifty in number, finding it impossible to escape, surrendered to him.

Barber performed a similar feat in another part of the field. He ran quickly in front of the company to which he belonged and threw his bombs upon the enemy so successfully that "a very great number" of them lost no time in surrendering to him. When the rest of the party came up to Barber they found him quite alone and unsupported with the Germans surrendering all around him. If a novelist had depicted these two scenes, we should have admired his imagination, but not his knowledge of life. However, truth is still stranger than fiction. Barber and Fuller were honoured together on April 19th.

The throwing of bombs was a feature of this battle at Neuve Chapelle, and Private Jacob Rivers, of the 1st Battalion of the Sherwood Foresters, was one who used them to some purpose on March 12th. On the flank of an advanced company of his battalion, a large number of the enemy were massed, and seeing this, Rivers, on his own initiative, crept to within a few yards of them and hurled bombs on them. This action compelled them to retire, and consequently relieved the situation. A second time on the same day Rivers went out to perform the feat, and a second time he forced the enemy to withdraw, but on this occasion he was himself killed.

On the same day Corporal William Anderson, of the 2nd Battalion the Yorkshire Regiment, prevented "by his prompt and determined action" what might otherwise have become a serious situation. He did this by leading three men with bombs against a large party of the enemy who had entered our trenches. First throwing his own bombs, Anderson then seized and hurled those in the possession of his three companions who had all been wounded. He followed up this attack by firing his rifle with the utmost rapidity at the invading Germans, who, although he was quite alone, did not wait to dispute with him. On May 22nd his name appeared in the "London Gazette" as a recipient of the V.C.

Doughty deeds with bombs

Something similar was the exploit by which Lieutenant Cyril G. Martin, D.S.O., of the Royal Engineers, won his V.C. He was in command of six men who formed a party for throwing bombs, and early in the action he had been wounded. In spite of this, however, he led his little detachment into the German trenches and remained there, holding back the enemy's reinforcements, until he was ordered to abandon the captured trench. He had been in it for two and a half hours. Martin was one of the band honoured on April 19th.

On the afternoon of March 12th the 2nd Battalion of the

Digitized by Google

Rifle Brigade was sent forward against some German trenches. Unflinchingly they advanced until they found themselves stopped by wire entanglements and shot down by machine-guns. At this moment two volunteers, Sergeant-Major Harry Daniels and Corporal Cecil R. Noble, rushed forward and cut the wire, thus allowing the battalion to make further progress. Both were wounded while engaged in this hazardous occupation, and later Noble died of his wounds. The following September Sergeant-Major Daniels received a commission.

The ninth of the crosses won at Neuve Chapelle was gained by Private William Buckingham, of the 2nd Battalion Leicestershire Regiment. The words in which the award was made on April 28th are few but fine. "For conspicuous acts of bravery and devotion to duty in rescuing and rendering aid to the wounded while exposed to heavy fire, especially at Neuve Chapelle on March 10th and 12th, 1915." April 28th was also the date on which Daniels and Noble received this coveted distinction.

The chief incidents on the western front during April were the fight for "Hill 60" and the first use of asphyxiating gases by the Germans against the Canadian lines. Before these events, however, Private Robert Morrow, of the 1st Battalion Royal Irish Fusiliers, won the Victoria Cross for "most conspicuous bravery." Near Messines on April 12th he rescued and carried to comparative safety several men who had been buried under the debris of trenches wrecked by shell fire. He did this, we were told when the award was made on May 22nd, "on his own initiative and under very heavy fire."



A POST OF DANGER IN THE FIRE CONTROL.

British artillery observation officer watching the effect of shell fire and telephoning results to the battery commander. It would be difficult to exaggerate the importance of this perilous work, which is taken up, usually at a moment's notice, in some ruined building, as shown in our picture, just in the rear of the infantry firing-line.

On "Hill 60" three Victoria Crosses were won, two of them by members of the 1st Battalion of the East Surreys. In a front trench on the hill, Lieutenant G. R. P. Roupell was in command of a company which was under severe fire during the whole day (April 20th). He was wounded in several places, but he remained at his post, and led forward his men to beat back a strong German attack. This success gave the company a brief respite, so Roupell went away and had his wounds hurriedly dressed, but insisted on returning to the front where he and his company were again under heavy fire. As evening drew on the men became fewer and fewer, and the possibility of being driven out became greater, so the lieutenant went back to the battalion headquarters to explain the position, and then brought up reinforcements, "passing backwards and forwards over ground swept by heavy fire." With the assistance of these new men he held the position during the night, and in the morning his company was replaced by another. His heroic deed was thus praised in the "Gazette" of June 23rd: "This young officer was one of the few survivors of his company, and showed a magnificent example of courage, devotion, and tenacity, which undoubtedly inspired his men to hold out to the end."

V.C.'s won on "Hill 60"

During the same encounter one of the East Surrey trenches was heavily attacked by bomb-throwers. In this predicament Lance-Corporal Edward Dwyer climbed out on to the parapet, and although met with a hail of bombs at close quarters, managed to drive away the attackers by the effective use of his own weapons of the same kind. This deed alone was sufficient to win for him the V.C., but earlier in the same day Dwyer had displayed great gallantry in leaving his trench under heavy shell fire in order to bandage his wounded comrades. In September he received a commission in the Northumberland Fusiliers.

First Territorial V.C.

The third V.C. won on "Hill 60" was a memorable one, for it was the first ever won by a Territorial. The recipient was Second-Lieutenant G. H. Woolley, of the 9th Battalion of the London Regiment, the one better known as Queen Victoria's Rifles. During the night of the 20th Woolley was the only officer on a certain part of the hill, and of those under him very few were left. Nevertheless, he and they resisted all attacks made on their trench, the

Digitized by Google

lieutenant throwing bombs and encouraging his men through the darkness of that terrible night until they were relieved. During all this time a regular hail of bombs, shells, and shot from machine-guns fell upon the trench and its defenders. Woolley and Dwyer received the V.C. on May 22nd.

It was three days later, on the 23rd, that the Canadians were attacked near Ypres, and here they won three V.C.'s. Near St. Julien a battery was retreating and was in danger of capture when Lance-Corporal Frederick Fisher, realising the gravity of the situation, hurried forward with his machine-gun and under heavy fire made it possible for the battery to get safely away. In doing this he lost four of his men, but having obtained four more he went again into the firing-line to perform another action of great gallantry. This was to take his machine-gun forward in order to cover the advance of a supporting force, but in doing so the brave lance-corporal was killed.

Three gallant Canadians

On the following day, the 24th, a wounded man was lying about fifteen yards from a trench in the neighbourhood of Ypres. He was heard calling aloud for help, and a Canadian colour-sergeant, Frederick William Hall, tried, with the help of two comrades, to reach him. The enemy, however, was pouring in a heavy enfilading fire, and the attempt failed, the two assistants being wounded. Undeterred, however, Hall tried a second time to rescue the wounded man, and was in the very act of lifting him up when he himself fell mortally wounded in the head. In very truth he gave his life for another.

During this heavy fighting, a Canadian doctor, Captain Francis A. C. Scrimger, the medical officer attached to the 14th Battalion of the Royal Montreal Regiment, was conspicuous in rendering services to the wounded, as between April 22nd and 25th, so we were told, he "displayed continuously day and night the greatest devotion to his duty among the wounded at the front." But this was not all. On the afternoon of the 25th he was in charge of an advanced dressing station in some farm buildings near Ypres.

The buildings were being heavily shelled, and it was necessary to remove the wounded therefrom. This was directed by Captain Scrimger, who himself carried a severely wounded officer out of a stable. After a time, unable to reach a place of safety, he found it impossible to carry the officer any farther, so he remained with him, both being under fire, until help arrived. The three Canadians were awarded the V.C. on June 23rd, but Scrimger alone was alive to wear it.

During this same spell of fighting around Ypres the V.C. was won by an Indian native officer, Jemadar Mir Dast, who was attached to the 57th Wilde's Rifles, and who had already earned the Indian Order of Merit. On April 26th he led his platoon with great gallantry during a German attack, and afterwards, when all the British officers had been put out of action, he collected various parties of the regiment and kept them together under his command until they were ordered to retire. Later in the day the jemadar displayed remarkable courage in helping to carry eight British and Indian officers into safety, while exposed to very heavy fire. Truly our Indian soldiers have justified their tardy admission to places on our highest scroll of fame.

The knowledge that the Germans were using poisonous gases only spurred our men, if possible, to greater heroism, and at the beginning of May two V.C.'s were won by Englishmen in the face of this new and barbarous weapon of war. On the 1st a trench near "Hill 60" had just been vacated by our men as a consequence of a gas attack, when Private Edward Warner, of the 1st Battalion of the Bedfordshires, entered it alone in order to prevent the enemy from seizing it. Reinforcements were sent forward to help him, but owing to the gas they could not reach the trench, so Warner himself came out to them, and under his guidance they managed to reach it. By this time the hero was completely exhausted, and shortly afterwards he died from the effects of gas poisoning. However, his bravery had saved the trench, for it was held until the German attack ceased.

On the next day Private John Lynn, of the 2nd Battalion of the Lancashire Fusiliers, won for himself an immortal name for "most conspicuous bravery" near Ypres. When the Germans were advancing behind their waves of poisonous gas, Lynn, although almost overcome by the awful fumes, worked his machine-gun with very great effect against them. At length he was unable to see them, owing to the nearing clouds of gas, so he moved his gun to a higher place on the parapet, and poured a still more effective fire upon them. This heroic action eventually checked the enemy's advance, and, as we were officially told, "the great courage displayed by this soldier had a fine effect on his comrades in the very trying circumstances." Lynn's superhuman courage cost him his life, for on the next day he died from the effects of gas poisoning. Over his tomb Napier's immortal words should be inscribed: "No man died that night with more glory—yet many died and there was much glory." On June 29th the memories of Warner and Lynn—fitting companions in death—were honoured by the grant of the Victoria Cross.

Lancashire Fusilier's self-sacrifice

On May 9th the British forces delivered a successful



PTE. G. WILSON, V.C.
2nd Highland Light Infantry. Captured a hostile machine-gun near Verneuil.

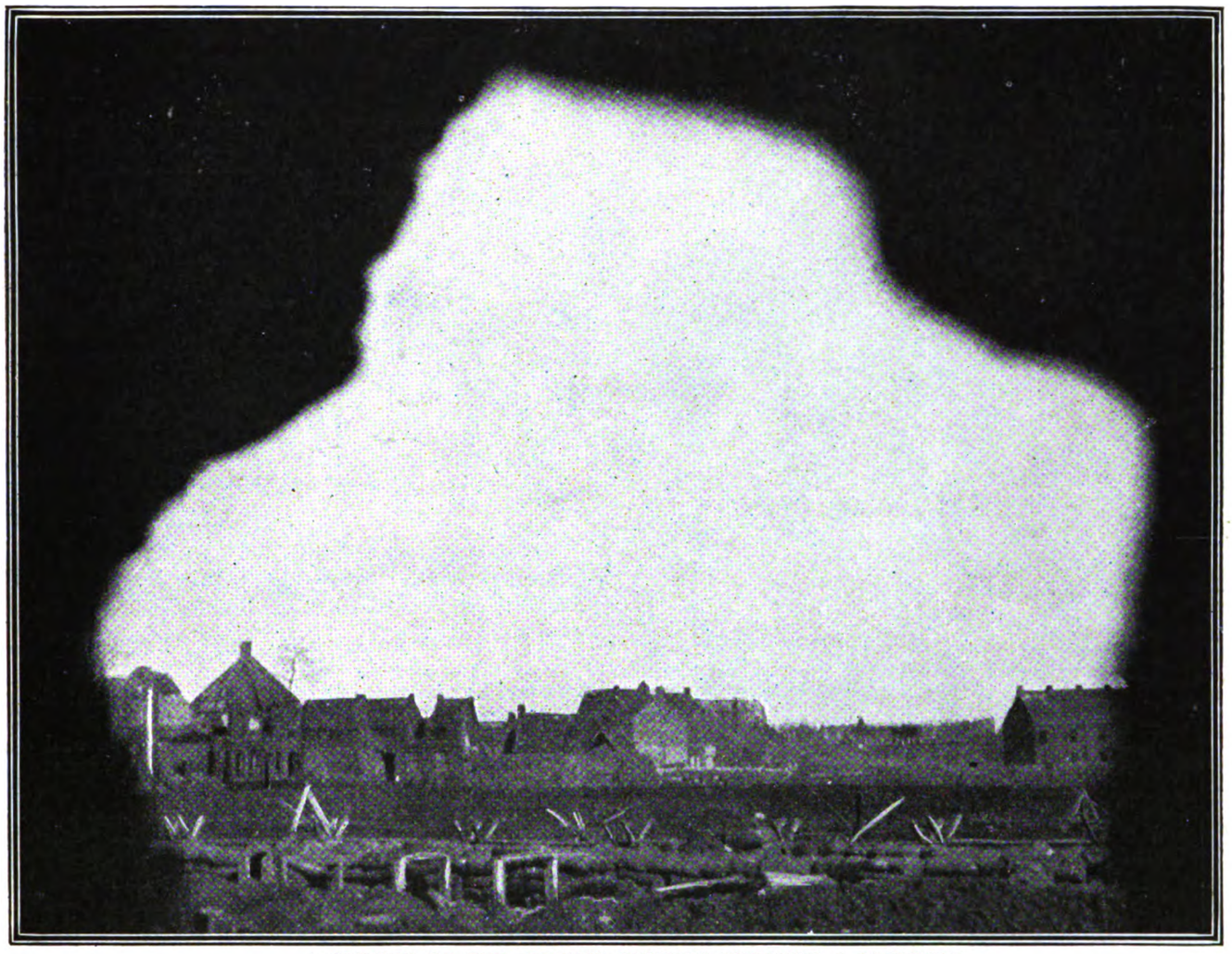


COL. DOUGHTY-WYLIE, V.C.
C.M.G., C.B. Killed with Capt. Walford in attack at Seddul Bahr.



CAPT. T. WRIGHT. V.C.
R.E. Displayed conspicuous gallantry at Mons and Vailly.

Digitized by Google



A GLIMPSE OF THE ENEMY'S POSITION THROUGH A LOOPHOLE.

Striking photograph, taken through a loophole in a British trench, showing German position a few yards distant. The enemy's earthworks, sand-bags, and wire entanglements can be seen plainly, while buildings wrecked by artillery fire are observable in the background.

attack on the German position near Fromelles, and on that day four Victoria Crosses were won. A prominent place in the assault was assigned to a regiment which has a record second to none in the British Army—the famous Black Watch, or Royal Highlanders. The Black Watch attacked the enemy near Rue du Bois, and there Corporal John Ripley was leading a section on the right of a platoon. Of the whole battalion he was the first man to mount the German parapet, and, standing there exposed to fire, he pointed out to the others the ways through the gaps made by our artillery in the wire entanglements. This done, Ripley led his section through a breach in the parapet to the second line of trenches, and having reached his objective he set to work to make the position secure. Aided by a few men, seven or eight, he blocked up both flanks, arranged a good position for firing, and continued to defend the captured trench until all his men had fallen and he himself had been badly wounded in the head.

About the same time Lance-Corporal David Finlay of the same regiment was leading forward a bombing party of twelve men, and he did this with the greatest gallantry until ten of them had fallen. Then Finlay showed the stuff of which he was made. He ordered the two survivors to crawl back into safety, but he himself went forward to the assistance of a wounded man, and carried him for a hundred yards under heavy fire, eventually placing him under cover. He did this, it is hardly necessary to say, quite regardless of his own personal safety.

Heroes of the Black Watch

Near Rouges Bancs the 2nd Battalion of the Lincolnshire Regiment was playing a part in this attack, and there Corporal Charles Sharpe was—unknowingly, of course—emulating Ripley. Being in charge of a party sent forward to capture a portion of a German trench, he was the first to reach it. Once there he threw his bombs with great determination and effect, and in a short time he had cleared all the Germans from a trench fifty yards long. In the end all his men had fallen, but four others came forward to assist Sharpe, and the five made another successful attack on the enemy, using their bombs with such vigour that they captured this time a trench, not fifty, but two hundred and fifty yards long.

Trench taken by five men

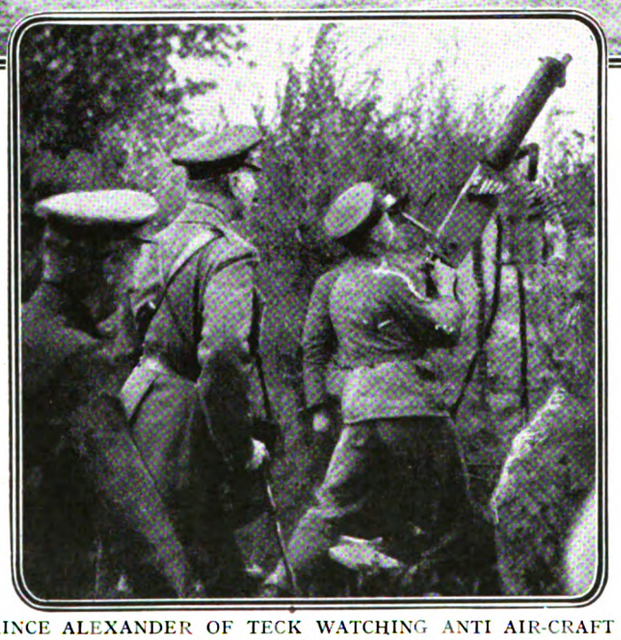
In the same neighbourhood, near Rouges Bancs, was the 1st Battalion of the Sherwood Foresters, and there Corporal James Upton of that regiment spent the day in attending to the wounded. As the official account says: "During the whole of this day Corporal Upton displayed the greatest courage in rescuing the wounded while exposed to very heavy rifle and artillery fire, going close to the enemy's parapet regardless of his own personal safety." One man was killed by a shell while in his arms. Moreover, when Upton was not actually engaged in this hazardous duty, he was at work bandaging and dressing the serious cases in front of our parapet, and doing this when exposed to the enemy's fire. Ripley, Finlay, Sharpe, and Upton were among the ten heroes who received the V.C. on June 29th.

The next V.C. was earned by a Territorial, like Woolley, a member of the London Regiment, but not in the same battalion, for Lance-Sergeant Douglas W. Belcher belonged to the 5th—the London Rifle Brigade. On the morning of May 13th Belcher was in charge of an advanced breast-work near St. Julien. This was bombarded fiercely and continuously by the Germans, and was frequently blown in. Near by some troops had been withdrawn owing to the

Digitized by Google



BRITISH CAVALRY EXERCISING ON THE SEA-SWEPT SAND-DUNES OF FLANDERS.



PRINCE ALEXANDER OF TECK WATCHING ANTI AIR-CRAFT GUN IN THE BELGIAN LINES.

heavy fire, but Belcher and a few men decided that they would remain and hold the position. This they did, Belcher's "skill and great gallantry" being the soul of the defence, for whenever he saw the enemy, who were only about two hundred yards away, collecting for an attack, he opened a rapid fire upon him. This was a very valuable piece of work, for it is practically certain that the bold front shown by Belcher "prevented the enemy breaking through on the Wieltje road, and averted an attack on the flank of one of our divisions."

Welsh Fusiliers' great capture

On May 15th the British had a success near Festubert, and on the 16th several battalions, among them the 1st Royal Welsh Fusiliers, were holding some captured trenches and portions of trenches. In one of these portions was Sergeant-Major Frederick Barter, of the Fusiliers, and he called for volunteers from among his company to enable him to extend our line. Eight men responded, and under Barter's lead they attacked the German position with bombs, and captured three German officers and one hundred and two men, as well as five hundred yards of their trenches. After this feat Barter found and cut eleven of the enemy's mine leads, situated about twenty yards from each other. Like several others, this non-commissioned officer may be said to have earned the V.C. twice.

Two days later a lieutenant in the Indian Army won the V.C. near the same place. Some bombs were badly needed at a spot within twenty yards of the German position, and two parties attempted to carry them thither, but failed. Whereupon Lieutenant John G. Smyth, of the 15th Ludhiana Sikhs, with a bombing party of ten men, volunteered for this duty. The ground over which they had to go was "exceptionally dangerous," and on the way eight of the ten were either killed or wounded. However, Smyth and the remaining two struggled on,



STURDY SONS OF THE MAPLE LEAF FILLING SAND-BAGS FOR THE TRENCHES DURING A LULL IN THE FIGHTING.

Digitized by Google

exposed to the fire of howitzers, machine-guns, and rifles, and at length, having swum a stream, they brought ninety-six bombs to those who needed them. Smyth and Barter were both awarded the V.C. on June 29th.

Perilous work in a thunderstorm

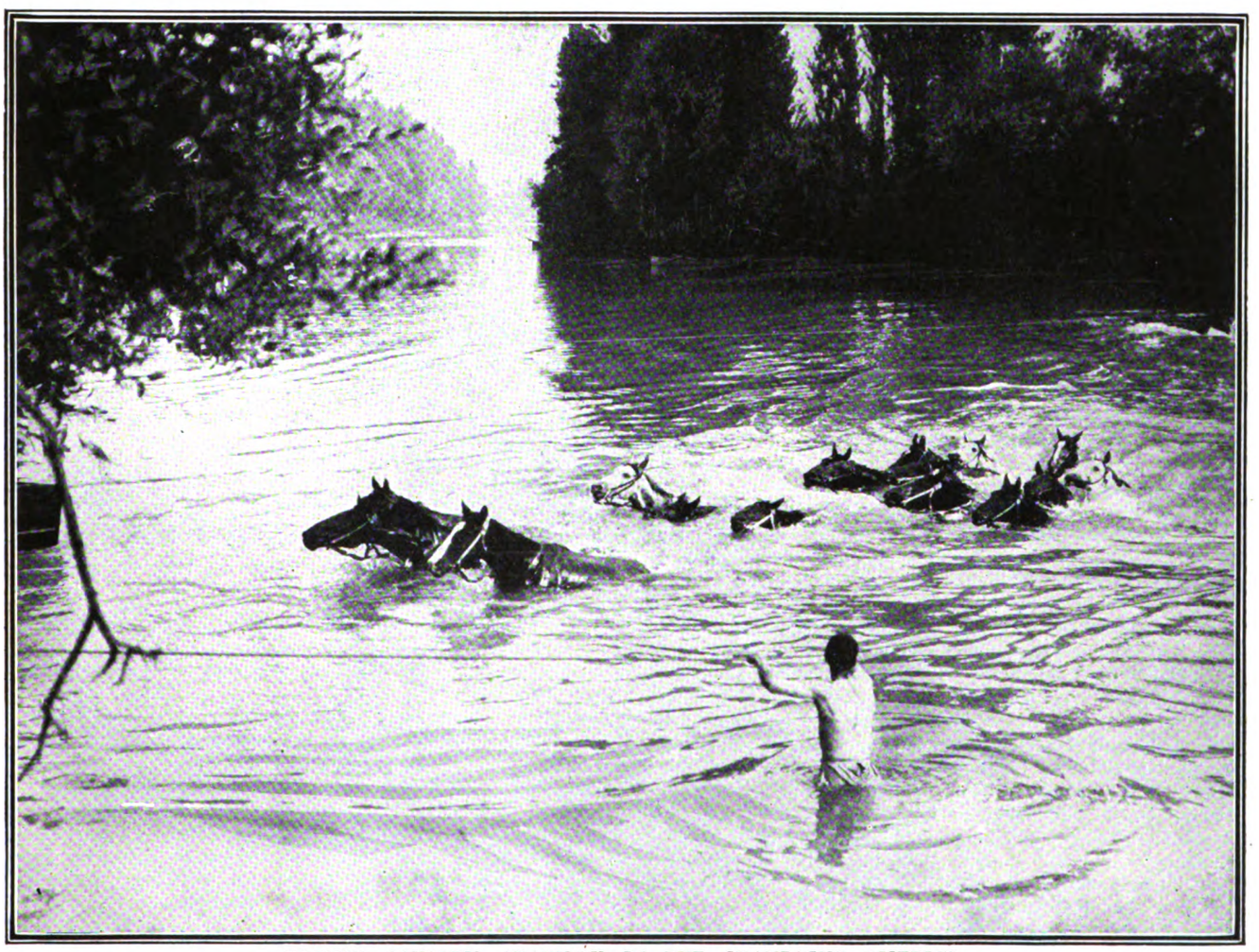
On May 22nd there occurred the gallant deed by which Private William Mariner, of the 2nd Battalion the King's Royal Rifle Corps, won the Victoria Cross. A German machine-gun had been damaging our parapets and hindering our working parties, and Mariner decided to put an end to the annoyance. Accordingly at night, while a violent thunderstorm was raging, he crept out of his trench, through the German wire entanglements, and at length reached the emplacement of the gun. He then climbed on to the top of the German parapet, and threw a bomb under the roof of the gun emplacement. Some groaning and running away followed, while Mariner waited in silence.

About fifteen minutes later some of the Germans returned, and were greeted with another bomb, thrown into the other side of the emplacement, for Mariner had climbed over there and had thrown the bomb with his left hand. While the Germans fired into the darkness, Mariner lay quite still; but at length, after an hour had elapsed, the excitement died down, and he was able to crawl back to his trench, having been out alone on this work for an hour and a half. As showing his total indifference to danger, Mariner had requested a sergeant to open fire on the enemy's trenches as soon as ever he had thrown his bombs. On June 23rd Mariner received the V.C.

Mariner's feat deserves to rank with those of O'Leary and George Wilson as one of the outstanding deeds of the Great War, and so does the next on our list. On the night of May 25th the 24th Battalion of the London Regiment, the Queen's, made a successful attack on the German position at Givenchy, and there one of its lance-corporals, Leonard James Keyworth, won for that regiment, and for the Territorial Force in general, a third Victoria Cross. It was in this wise. After the assault, seventy-five men of the battalion attempted to follow up their success by a bomb attack, and a very fierce encounter took place between them and the Germans, who were only a few yards away. The nature of the fight is shown by the fact that fifty-eight of the seventy-five Londoners were either killed or wounded. Now for a simple statement of fact: "During this very fierce encounter Lance-Corporal Keyworth stood fully exposed for two hours on the top of the enemy's parapet, and threw about a hundred and fifty bombs among the Germans, who were only a few yards away." The words "for two hours" and "fully exposed" tell their own story. On July 3rd the V.C. was awarded to Keyworth.

Fourth V.C. for Territorials

Two more Victoria Crosses complete the seventy-two won in Flanders, and both these were gained for saving life. On June 12th, 1915, Lance-Corporal William Angus, of the 8th Battalion of the Highland Light Infantry, one composed of Territorials from Lanarkshire, was, like Keyworth, at Givenchy. Seeing a wounded officer lying within a few yards of the enemy's position, he voluntarily left his trench and rescued him in spite of very heavy fire from bombs and rifles. He had no chance whatever,



FRENCH CAVALRY AT WORK IN THE CHAMPAGNE DISTRICT.
A remarkable and picturesque view of the cavalry of our gallant French allies fording a river in the Champagne country.

Digitized by Google

we were told, of escaping the enemy's fire when undertaking this very gallant action, and while rescuing the officer he sustained about forty wounds from bombs, some of them being very serious. Angus was one of the ten honoured on June 29th.

On June 16th another lance-corporal, Joseph Tombs, of the 1st Battalion the Liverpool Regiment, called also the King's, was near Rue du Bois, where Britons have performed so many gallant deeds. On his own initiative he crawled out of his trench repeatedly, and under a very severe fire from heavy guns and machine-guns, he rescued four wounded men who were lying about a hundred yards from our trenches. One of these rescues was especially noteworthy, for Tombs dragged the man back to safety by means of a rifle-sling placed round his own neck and the man's body. This heroism and devotion undoubtedly



MICHAEL O'LEARY'S HOME AT MACROOM.

saved his life, for he had been wounded so severely that without immediate attention he would have died.

This ends for the present our tale of heroism in France and Flanders. Seventy-two Victoria Crosses were given, but who can say how many were earned? Many more, we are quite sure. But these—the official ones—which we have here recorded, make up a story of courage and devotion which may perhaps have been equalled, but can never have been surpassed, since man the fighter first emerged from "the dark and backward abysm of time."

Towards the end of April, 1915, Great Britain and France became involved in a second great campaign, the attack on the Gallipoli Peninsula, and before August 4th, 1915, four Victoria Crosses had been awarded for gallantry there, and this was merely a beginning.

The first two were gained on that terrible and unforgettable day, April 26th, 1915, when the British troops made good their landing on the almost impregnable Gallipoli Peninsula; for, as was truly said, by all the precepts of war our men ought never to have got ashore at all. On one of the beaches were a few survivors of the Royal Dublin Fusiliers, Royal Munster Fusiliers, and Hampshires, who had got ashore, but at a frightful cost. Nearly all the senior officers had been killed and wounded, including the general, but with the remnants of the brigade were Lieut.-Col. C. H. M. Doughty-Wylie, C.M.G., C.B., of the Headquarters Staff, and Captain G. N. Walford, a brigade-major of the Royal Artillery, and these two realised that something must be done. Accordingly they organised and led an attack on the hill above the beach, whereon was the village of Seddul Bahr. The Turkish position was very strongly held, was entrenched, and was defended by concealed guns. Nevertheless, the attack succeeded completely, for not only was the village taken, but so were the Old Castle and Hill 141 beyond it. This was mainly due to the initiative, skill, and great gallantry of these two officers, both of whom were killed in the moment of victory.

V.C.'s won in Gallipoli

In this Gallipoli campaign the Australians took no small part, and it is not surprising that one of them, Lance-Corporal Albert Jacka, of the 14th Battalion of Infantry, early gained there a Victoria Cross. It was for most conspicuous bravery on the night of May 19th-20th, at "Courtney's Post." It seems that Jacka and four other men were holding a portion of a trench when they were heavily attacked and the four were either killed or wounded. Seven Turks then rushed into the trench, but they had not reckoned on Jacka. At once he attacked them and killed the whole seven, shooting down five with his rifle and finishing off the remaining two with the bayonet.

Corporal Jacka's deed of heroism

On July 24th the gallant Australian received the V.C.

In the force which invaded the Gallipoli Peninsula was the 3rd (Special Reserve) Battalion of the Hampshire Regiment, and in this was a young officer, Second-Lieutenant G. R. Dallas Moor, who had only joined the Army in October, 1914. On June 5th, 1915, he was in some fighting to the south of Krithia, when he noticed that a detachment on his left, having lost all its officers, was falling back before a heavy Turkish attack, and so was endangering the safety of the whole line. Promptly realising this, Moor dashed after the retiring men, pulled them up, and then led them



MR. AND MRS. O'LEARY, FATHER AND MOTHER OF MICHAEL O'LEARY, V.C.

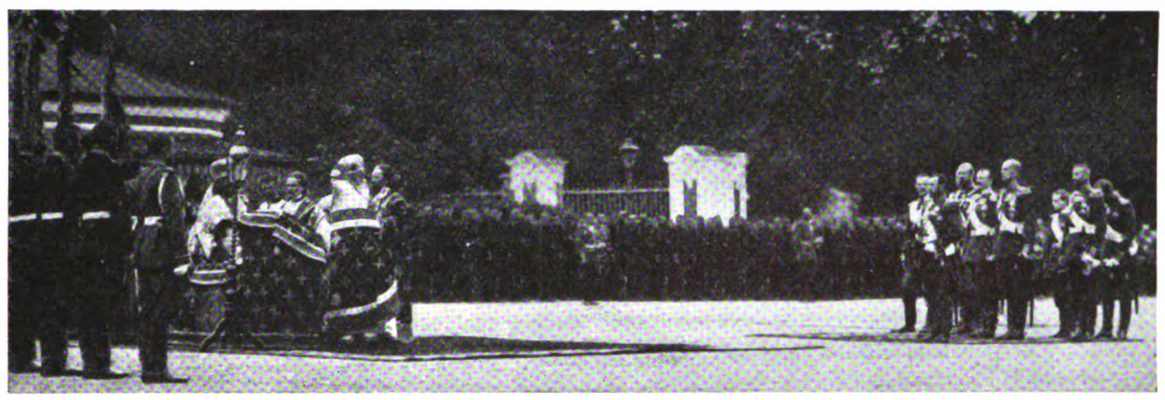
forward and recaptured the lost trench. By his personal bravery and presence of mind he saved a dangerous situation, for which service he was awarded the Victoria Cross on July 24th.

We have seen how eighty-two men won the Victoria Cross; but what about the brave men who helped them, and the other brave men whose deeds of heroism were unnoticed? In most cases their names are unknown.

To thank them and be grateful to them is our simple duty, but we will refrain from praising them. They do not need it. Words can add nothing to the honour they have won. Better it is to take our farewell of them in the spirit of the words which Sir Henry Newbolt has applied to Nelson and his men:

"Lover of England, stand awhile and gaze,
With faithful heart and lips refrained from praise."

Digitized by Google



MILITARY FÊTE DAY AT PETERHOF.

CHAPTER LXXXII.

AN INSIDE VIEW OF RUSSIA IN WAR TIME.

By John Foster Fraser, Author of "Russia To-day," "The Real Siberia," etc.

The Glow of Religious Sentiment over the Whole of Muscovy—The Tsar Crushes the Vodka Peril—Germany Calculates on Revolutionary Trouble, but the Unprecedented Patriotism of all Parties Preserves Russian Union—A War Waged Not by the Russian Government but by the Russian People—Development of Public Opinion Puts Down Official Profiteers—Attitude of the Baltic Province Russians—"Russia for the Russians"—The Fire of Animus against the Germans—How the War Affected Industrial Russia—Neutrals and the Rush for Contracts—Supplies Held Up by Lack of Communications—Warsaw Before its Evacuation—Caring for the Refugees from Galicia—The Imperial Family and Hospital Work—Affection for the Tsar—Russia and Her Allies.

NOTWITHSTANDING the reverses to which her giant Army was subjected, Holy Russia never questioned the result of the war.

France remained animated by a splendid chivalry, and Britain was determined at whatever cost to defend her Empire. It was, however, not so much the spirit of nationality which bound the one hundred and sixty million people of Russia together as a deep-seated abiding belief that their holy country could never be subject to an alien Power.

You have to understand the religious sentiment which permeates the whole of Muscovy to appreciate how the Russians felt in regard to the conflict which was waged on her frontiers. She had her set-backs. Millions of her sons yielded their lives, but the end had to be—the Russian mind was incapable of thinking otherwise — a victory for Holy Russia.

It is this state of thought which made Russia in war time so incomprehensible to the foreigner. The people were moody and emotional, poetical rather than practical, and while bad news depressed them, good news never elated them. They took victories as a matter of course, because they knew they were to come. The Russians are in many ways the most charming people on the earth. They have the simplicity of children. Their hospitality is unbounded. A Russian will go out of his way, and spend much more than the condition of his purse justifies, to give the visitor a good time. He knows perfectly well that men of other countries look upon him as something of a savage, with a considerable tincture of wild Tartar blood in his veins. He is aware that, compared with other lands, he is backward; but he modestly reminds you that Russia, as a great people, has been in existence for not much more than one hundred years.

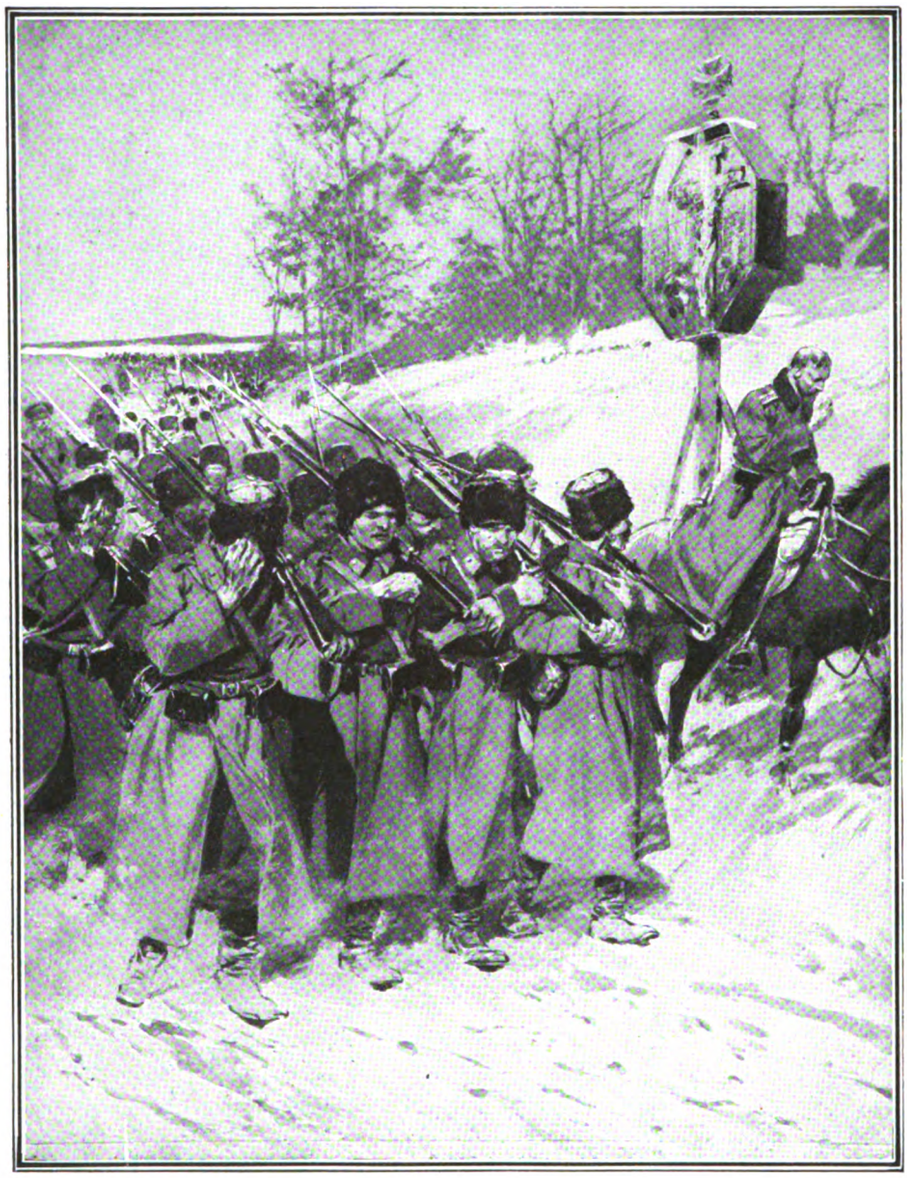


THE TSAR AND THE GRAND DUKE NICHOLAS AT THE FRONT.

In September, 1915, the Tsar placed himself in supreme command of his Army and Navy, and the Grand Duke Nicholas, whose fighting retreat had wrested admiration even from the foe, was appointed "Viceroy of the Caucasus and Commander-in-Chief of the valiant Caucasian Army."

Yet with all its hindrances, the Russian Empire has widened and extended until the dawn of the twentieth century found it the greatest cohesive nation on the earth. Indeed, it had grown so much, and drawn within its territory so many people of other races, that it may be said to have become fenced around with non-Russian speaking Russians. It was its size, its majesty, which filled the imaginative Russian with the conviction that it had a mighty destiny,

Digitized by Google



THE SWORD OF FAITH: RUSSIAN SOLDIERS MAKING THE SIGN OF THE CROSS AS THEY PASS A WAYSIDE SHRINE.

From the outset of the war the soldiers of the Tsar, by the spirit in which they entered into the conflict with the neo-paganism of Germany, gave a new and deeper meaning to the term "Holy Russia." As they marched to the front their path was marked by many a wayside shrine or cross, and as the troops passed by, each man invariably made the sign of the cross and murmured a prayer.

not to be interfered with by the incursions of German soldiery. We heard a great deal about the numberless millions of men which Russia could put into the field. From the cold regions below Archangel, from the warm lands in the region of the Caucasus, from the prairies beyond the Volga, and from the illimitable stretches of Siberia the Russian was called to arms. He responded, not because he had a thirst to slay Germans, but because he felt it his duty to defend Holy Russia.

The hymn before battle

Frenchmen and Englishmen proceeded to war laughing and with gay songs upon their lips. Russian soldiers never do that. They go to their church and humbly pray before their ikons, the sacred pictures of their particular saints; they stand with bowed head while the picturesque and long-haired priests sprinkle holy water upon them, and then, singing hymns, they march to their fate, never letting go of the faith that whatever may befall them individually, Holy Russia must be triumphant.

I was in Russia during a considerable part of the first year of the war. The thing that impressed me most of all was the calm confidence of the people. In Petrograd, in Moscow, the ancient capital, in all the great cities, life progressed much as it did in normal times. Business was conducted in the ordinary way. All the entertainments, the theatres, and the pleasure gardens were in full swing. It was only by witnessing hymn-singing battalions of soldiers marching through the streets, or coming across groups of pale-faced wounded fellows hobbling along, that one was reminded that a great war was in progress.

When the alarm was first sounded, the Russian authorities had a mighty difficulty to face. They remembered that during the Russo-Japanese War the efficiency of their men was much impaired by drunkenness. The principal beverage in the country was vodka, a fiery spirit mostly made from rye, the manufacture of which was a Government monopoly, and the effect of which was direful.

Germany calculated that the mobilisation of the Russian troops would be a slow and laborious process. The belief which prevailed in Berlin was, on the outbreak of hostilities, that first a swift blow should be levelled against France, and when France was in the dust, it would be time enough for the hordes of the Kaiser to sweep round and reckon with the soldiers of the Tsar.

But the Emperor William forgot the power of the Emperor Nicholas. The Tsar of All the Russias is the Little White Father to his people. Whatever order he issues is not in the nature of a law, but is a religious ordinance which must be obeyed. Therefore, swiftly grasping the necessity for action, the Emperor Nicholas issued his famous ukase, proclaiming that the Government manufacture of vodka should cease, so that the work of the Army should not be retarded by the drunkenness of the soldiers.

Scotching the vodka peril

It is generally accepted that the Russian was a drunkard—as a matter of fact, the most drunken person in Europe. This is quite a mistake. The country where the least amount per head of the population in Europe is expended on alcohol is Norway. The country which comes next is Russia. Per head of the population, the Russian, in normal times, spends 18s. a year on drink, while in England the amount spent each year per head of the population is 66s. The difference is that, whereas in England the money is disbursed chiefly on so innocuous a beverage as beer, practically all the money in Russia was spent on this fierce vodka spirit, which did tremendous harm physically, morally, and industrially to the subjects of the Tsar.

Digitized by Google

Forbidding the State manufacture of vodka did two things. It lopped off a revenue of £67,000,000 a year which went into the Imperial Exchequer, and it shut off the supply to the ordinary civilian. Freedom was given to the Zemstvos (local assemblies) and the municipalities to follow up the action of the Tsar in what way they pleased. With few exceptions, all the authorities throughout the realm, from Archangel to Tiflis and from Moscow to Vladivostok, prohibited the sale and consumption of alcohol in any form. Not only was vodka removed, but the police put seals on cellars, and prevented the consumption of brandy, of wines, and of beer.

Obeying the "Little Father's" edict

Within a few days the whole of Russia, which had been a byword to the world, became teetotal. In a constitutionally governed country such a thing would have been impossible. It was only by the exercise of autocracy that such a revolution could be effected in the land of the Tsar. Because the original command came from the Little White Father, the Russians accepted it without question.

It is not, however, to be assumed that even in these days men with money could not obtain wine and spirits by subterranean means. They could. But, speaking in a broad and general sense, it may be said that after the issue of the ukase ninety-nine per cent. of the people of Russia never touched a drop of alcohol. Drunkards, of course, were distressed, and had recourse to methylated spirit and other beverages. But that means of ministering to the appetite was checked, because even methylated spirit could not be procured except through complicated formalities, which practically put it out of the reach of the former toper.

The thing to be taken notice of is that, without demur, Russia fell in with the new condition of things. Temptation being removed, the artisans of the towns and the moujiks of the steppes, unable to dispose of their earnings as they did formerly, found themselves in possession of more money than ever they had before. They were able to spend it on better food, on giving better clothing to their children, in providing themselves with healthy amusements; and so, although in Russia the cost of living was materially increased in consequence of the war, the people were in every sense much better off than they were formerly.

The soldiers responded to the call of their monarch with greater alacrity than they would have been able to do if they had fuddled their brains in the vodka taverns. The speed with which Russia was able to mobilise was a marvel to the world. In the early weeks of the struggle, when the German armies were engaged in their first great attempt to sweep through the North of France and gain possession of Paris, it was the action of the Russian troops in the north-east, rushing into Prussia, until at one time there was a belief that nothing could restrain them from reaching Berlin, that caused the Kaiser to slacken the pressure on the western front. He required German troops to proceed and contest the progress of the Russians in the north-east.

Not only that, but the abstinence of the nation had a beneficial effect industrially. I have never placed the Russian workman high as an artisan; but the point is not to be missed that his efficiency was increased by at least fifteen — some people say twenty-five—per cent. owing to his inability to reach the vodka bottle.

Russian artisan's efficiency increased



THE EMPRESS OF RUSSIA AND THE GRAND DUCHESSES OLGA AND TATIANA AS NURSES IN THE HOSPITAL AT TSARKÖE-SELO.

The Tsaritza—Alexandra-Feodorovna—is seen in the centre of the group. The Empress' eldest daughter, the Grand Duchess Olga, is on the left of the picture, while a younger daughter, the Grand Duchess Tatiana, is on the right. They attended almost daily at the hospital at Tsarköe-Selo, about fifteen miles south of Petrograd, where two of the Russian Imperial Palaces are situated.

Digitized by Google



WITH THE RUSSIAN TROOPS IN POLAND: SOLDIERS ENJOYING THEIR TEA IN THE OPEN.

Another great change which the war produced in Russia was the development of public opinion. It is not necessary to remind readers that in old days public opinion, such as it is understood in England, was non-existent in the dominions of the Tsar. The Government was paternal, it was autocratic, it watched over and cared for the people. Those who were irritable under constant surveillance, who hungered for a different condition of government than that which existed, and who gave vent to their views by joining in revolutionary movements, were harshly—and no doubt in many cases cruelly—treated.

One of the things which the German Government calculated upon was that, with Russia at war, the various revolutionary parties would endeavour to upset the existing régime, produce internal trouble, and so make Russia all the easier prey to Germany.

Now, for the first time within knowledge, the war was not waged by the Russian Government, but by the Russian people. The war of 1903 between Russia and Japan was regarded by the majority of the Russian people as a dispute between the Government and Japan. When Japan was able to overthrow Russia, the Russians themselves did not feel that their national dignity had been lowered. They accepted that a blow had been struck at the Government. The present war was from its outset different from that. Instead of the struggle on the frontiers providing the revolutionary party with a chance to push their propaganda into effect, it completely obliterated all political dissension throughout the whole of the Tsar's realms, in precisely the same way as political differences were sunk throughout the British Empire.

Patriotism of all parties

Doubtless many of the advanced thinkers looked to a change, for what they considered to be the better in the administration of affairs, when the war should be over. For the time being, however, the revolutionaries—the men who had been nurtured on Western ideas, who resented autocracy as out of date, and desired their country to be administered on lines akin to those which we have in England—were just as true and as loyal to their Emperor as were men who had spent their lives within the precincts of the Court. Men who were exiled because of their opinions voluntarily returned to Russia, risking imprisonment, but eager to be of some service to their Motherland.

Such loyalty, which I believe the Russian Government never contemplated, had its effect in another direction. The grip of autocratic administration was slackened. There was a revolution in progress in Russia, but it was all to the good. Men discussed what was happening in the world, and in Russia particularly, with a freedom which twenty months previously would have been impossible. Newspapers criticised Ministers in a manner which, if attempted a little while back, would have landed them in the Fortress of Peter and Paul, or have sent them on a long visit to Siberia. Public meetings were held, especially in Moscow. What was happening in the war was debated with as much freedom as in England itself. While at concerts, I heard songs loudly applauded,

Freedom of public debate

and with the police standing by, which would have meant the arrest of the singers, if not of the audience, but a couple of years before.

Russia had some incompetent Ministers. The public knew they were incompetent; they said so in conversation in the cafés; they said so at public meetings. Writers said so in newspaper articles. And the consequence was that a number of these inefficient highly-placed personages were removed.

The war gave birth to healthy public opinion in Russia. I cannot but believe that it will continue after the war, if no steps should be taken to prevent it. And, if it does not run wild—for it is not to be forgotten that the Russians are an emotional and easily led race—it will be for the permanent well-being of the body politic.

During the first year of the war there was a remarkable development of public consciousness that action should be taken—violent, if necessary—to remove the black spots which disfigured the national escutcheon. Nothing pained the high-minded Russian in the past more than the knowledge that in public as well as in commercial life Russia had done what honourable men could not defend. Everyone was aware that little business was transacted without someone taking what he would have called a "commission," but which others would have described as a bribe. Of course, there were officials actua ed by as worthy motives as those in any land, and whose hands were clean. But in the past every Russian shrugged his shoulders and was ready to admit that the accomplishment of services was

Digitized by Google



SERVING AN AMBUSCADED GUN AT AN IMPORTANT POINT ON THE RUSSIAN FRONT IN POLAND.

slow, chiefly because there was someone who needed a little—and occasionally a very large—stimulus to do his duty.

In what is called corruption, Russia is no worse than some other lands which consider themselves enlightened; but the practice of men receiving payment to do their duty was far too prevalent. In great Government contracts there were officials who wanted their commission from the manufacturer before the documents were allowed to go forward to the Minister to sign them. Right down to the humble policeman, badly paid, the same practice was usual. In most ordinary business transactions, the straightforward deal was generally held up by someone who wanted to know what his commission was to be before the negotiations advanced to completion.

Campaign against "commissions"

That was the state of things before the war. It was the state of things at the beginning of the war. The public, however, soon became acquainted with the fact that even the supply of munitions and war material of all sorts, so necessary for the equipment of the Army, were being retarded in delivery because of the pernicious practice of delay until the commission was arranged.

Then there swept through the nation a feeling of resentment, followed by a vociferous declaration that this sort of proceeding must cease. It would be idle to say that the frank indignation of the populace was the means of purifying public life. The point, however, I am making is that the Russians, who had been in the habit of acquiescing or explaining that the receiving of a reward by an official was an old custom, hard to remove, no longer defended it. It was vehemently denounced. There came forth a zealous belief that Russia was hampering herself by allowing such conditions to continue. There was clamour that certain prominent men, who were supposed to have exploited the necessities of their country to their own advantage, should be shot. The Government took the principal manufacturers into counsel, and all Government contracts had to pass through a special committee, thus preventing the "go-between" from lining his own pockets.

Everywhere I went I came across a vigorous campaign against the old practice. Officials in Russia were not too well paid. The defence often put forward for the niggardly pittance that was handed to them was that they could easily find other means to secure recompense for their labours.

The war not only stirred up the sentiment of the nation, but it moved men's minds to think of the future. One of the consequences of this was to create an ideal Russia in the popular imagination, where officials would be well paid for their labours, and where there would be purity in public life and fair dealing between men, so that the country, instead of being pointed at by other peoples, would be accepted as a model.

Thus it is to be seen that the conflict was not only one waged to overthrow the Germans. It was one between old habits and new ambitions, with the thought ever at the back of men's minds that not only would the unhappy days end by the repulsion of the invaders from Muscovite territory, but in the regeneration of Russia itself.

Another great change which was evolved during the first twelve months of the war was Russia's attitude toward other nations. Easy-going and poetical, visionary and religious, more given to theorising than to working, the Russian people awakened to the fact that in modern matters, commerce particularly, she had slipped under the domination of other races. It was the break with Germany which caused her to appreciate how dependent she had allowed herself to be upon neighbouring countries, particularly Germany.

Now it is to be remembered that a considerable section of Russian territory is comprised in what are known as the Baltic Provinces, where the people are not Slav, like the mass of the rest of the nation, but rather Teutonic in origin, with a part of the population speaking German as their usual tongue. It is not for me to dispute the loyalty of these Baltic Province Russians. But they have always regarded themselves as superior to the ordinary Russians; which, let it be admitted, they are in commerce and in manufacturing. For while the Slav is a dreamer, the Teuton is a practical man. With a German origin and bearing German names, it is not to be wondered at that many of these people had sympathy with the great progressive neighbouring country of Germany.

Baltic Province Russians

The Baltic Province Russians showed business aptitude. Travelling into the interior, establishing commercial concerns, finding that the needs of the country in manufactured

Digitized by Google

articles could not be supplied by the Russians, they let Germany make good the deficiency. For a generation Russia was subjected to a much more drastic invasion than that which took place during 1915. It was a commercial invasion, which percolated throughout the land until it may be said that, from a trading point of view, Russia was but a colony of Germany. More than half the manufactured goods which went into Russia from abroad came from



GENERAL IVANOFF.
In the great Russian rally on the eastern front in September, 1915, General Ivanoff's army captured 70,000 prisoners, 70 guns, and 200 machine-guns.

Germany. A vast proportion of the principal shops in the great cities carried German names. Official life was permeated by German-speaking Russians. So even in Government departments it was no unusual thing to find employees of the State conversing between themselves in the German language.

Beyond this, the war had not been in progress many weeks before the Russians became dimly aware—and ultimately glaringly aware—that subterranean endeavours were being made to swing public opinion in favour of Germany. Stories got about, no doubt ill-founded, that even in the highest circle Germanic influences were at work.

The war compelled Russia to examine her own condition. She was alarmed. She heard rumours that there was a peace party in Russia, and that it was chiefly composed of people of German origin. She found her ears filled with scornful references to France and to Great Britain, and she discovered that the instigators were men with German names. There was a shortage of manufactured goods. There was not a household which was not brought to a realisation how great had been the hold on Russia by Germany.

"Russia for the Russians"

It required no agitation to rouse the Russian people to a decision that too long had she been subservient to another Power, which had been exploiting them. Accordingly, there flamed into existence a movement which may be described as "Russia for the Russians." The questions were asked: Why should Russia purchase so much from Germany? Why could not Russia make more of the necessaries of life than she did? What was wrong with the skill of Russian working men that they did not produce a multitude of useful articles for themselves instead of paying Germany for them?

The asking of these questions led to a speedy decision. Russia must wake up, must cease her old-time stupor, must adapt herself to modern manufacturing conditions, must develop her own illimitable resources, must advance in industry without reliance upon other lands, and thus demonstrate to the world that she was not encompassed with a sort of semi-Oriental indolence, but was quick, alert, adaptive, and capable of taking her place alongside any of the Western nations.

That Russia will, within the lifetime of any of us, carry her present desires to the goal she has in vision is not to be accepted; but the war jogged the national liver, it stirred the latent national feeling, and caused Russia to take stock of her own potentialities and capabilities with the purpose of utilising them to the advantage of her own people.

Hatred toward the Germans

What animated Russia most against the enemy was not so much the invasion of her territory as the bitterness engendered by the fear that Germany might impose her own commercial conditions upon Russia to the retardment of Russian industries. The firm determination to do more

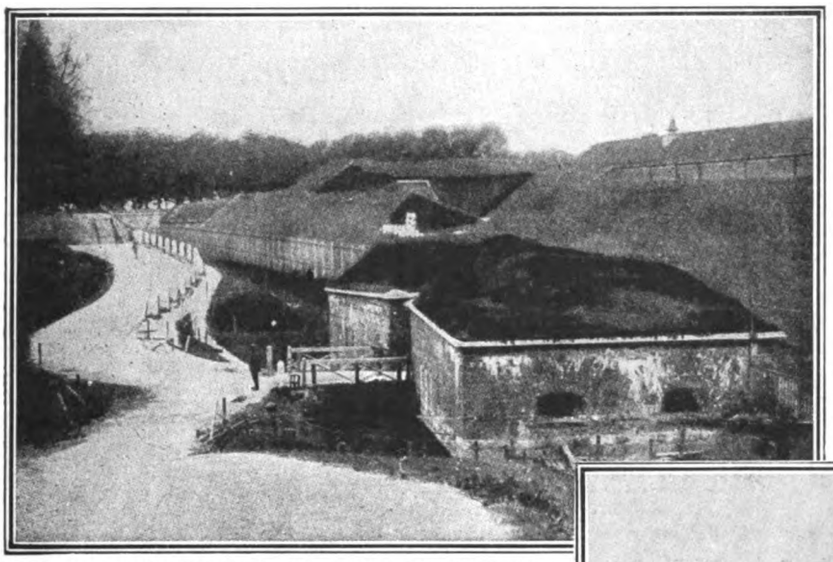


GENERAL PETROFF.
President of the Commission of Inquiry which was appointed in the summer of 1915 to inquire into the supply of Russian munitions.

for herself, and accept less from the foreigner, was one of the direct results of the war.

Hatred towards the Germans developed to such an extent that the German tongue, although it had previously been the commercial language of the country, was prohibited. No one was allowed to talk German over the telephone; there were notices hung over the receivers

Digitized by Google

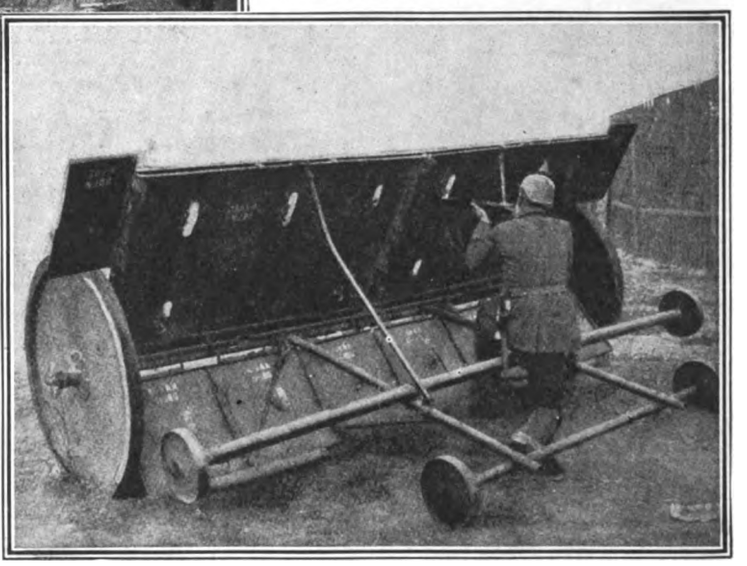


LINE OF TRENCHES IN THE BREASTWORK OF FORT 7 OF THE KOVNO DEFENCES.

threatening terrible punishments if such a thing were attempted. Hotels which had German names had to quickly change the description. In the big hotels of Petrograd, Moscow, and elsewhere, it was customary for notices to be hung up in three or four different languages for the instruction of visitors; but in every case German was obliterated. If anyone was heard speaking this language, there was a hue-and-cry, and frequently the offender was maltreated at the hands of an infuriated mob. Many people could not differentiate between German and English, and quite a number of cases came to my notice of both English men and English women being insulted because over-ardent and patriotic Muscovites imagined they were speaking German. I myself was molested in a tramcar one morning, because I happened to be speaking English with a friend. Indeed, it is difficult to realise the intensity of the hatred toward Germany which grew up and increased in volume during the war.

Hue-and-cry against foreigners

I was witness of an explosion of public wrath in Moscow.



TRANSPORTABLE MAILED PROTECTOR FOR RIFLEMEN—TAKEN FROM THE RUSSIANS BY THE GERMANS.

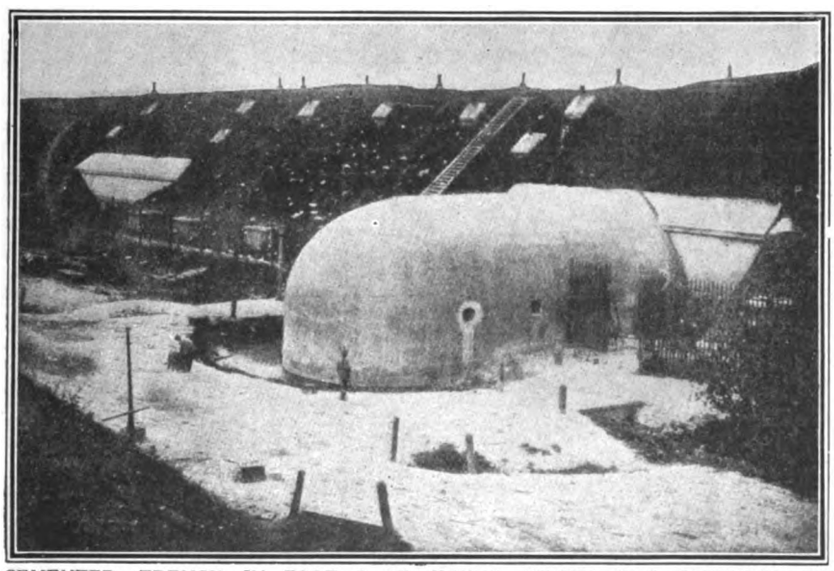
As already mentioned, most of the huge emporiums, though legitimately Russian, were conducted by men who, to their misfortune, bore German names. The folk of Moscow, always more vehement in their patriotism than the cosmopolitan population of Petrograd, frequently demonstrated against suspects of any kind being allowed to remain in the city, and conceived the idea that while the shops pretended to be Russian, they were in fact German.

With the breaking of a few windows, a riot commenced. Shops, dozens of them, were gutted; millions of roubles' worth of goods were cast into the streets, and appropriated or destroyed. Great clothing stores were reduced to ruins; valuable furniture was smashed to atoms; bookshops had their contents completely spoilt, and from the upper windows of music warehouses grand pianos were hurled into the thoroughfares, and there their demolition was completed.

Under the new law, the wine and spirit vaults were under lock and key, and sealed; but the mob broke in and took possession of enormous quantities of liquor, and in one cellar where barrels of wine were broken open, there was a flood four feet deep, and at least a dozen men, overcome by the fumes, were drowned. Russians with German names, but whose families had been in the country for at least a century, men whose sons were actually fighting in the Russian Army, were chased by the crowd, caught, and some of them subjected to the most cruel deaths. The police apparently did nothing to check the disorder, not even when a number of the shops were set on fire. The best explanation is that the police seem to have regarded it to be their duty not to interfere with a patriotic demonstration.

Fire of animus in Moscow

For two days the rioting continued. Many were the lives that were sacrificed. It is right to say, however, that the Governor-General of the city, who was



CEMENTED TRENCH IN FORT 8 AT KOVNO, WHICH WAS CAPTURED BY THE GERMANS ON AUGUST 16-17TH, 1915.

Digitized by Google



THE TSAR AND HIS "VALIANT CAUCASIANS."
Emperor of Russia inspecting the Army of the Caucasus, which inflicted a heavy defeat on the Turks in January, 1915.

on a sick-bed when he heard of the outrages, sent soldiers into the disturbed districts. A few volleys into the crowd, killing between thirty and forty people, brought a quick cessation of the trouble. There was a Government inquiry, with the result that the chiefs of the police were removed from their offices. I mention this particular case as evidence of how swiftly the fire of animus flamed against the obnoxious Teutons.

It was a little singular that, while the passions of the people could scarcely be restrained against the Germans, comparatively little dislike was displayed toward the Austrians. It was my lot to see many prisoners marched through the streets. While the German soldiers were execrated, and they responded with sullen, scornful looks, a kindly sympathy was extended to the Austrian prisoners. The Germans marched along, black-browed and resentful; but the Austrians generally seemed merry, and exchanged chaffing remarks with the spectators. Most of the Germans were transferred to Siberia; but the majority of the Austrians were drafted into farming districts, where their labour could be utilised in tilling the land.

At Moscow there was little on the surface to suggest that the country was at war. Business proceeded as usual.

War and industrial life

It was only by seeing long ambulance trains at the railway-stations, by coming across long processions of wounded in the streets, by seeing the parade-ground within the Kremlin constantly occupied by troops under drill, and the little groups of open-mouthed spectators before the guns which had been captured from the enemy, that one was reminded of what was happening in the history of the world.

A little investigation soon revealed that the nation was under the strain of war. There was a shortage of men's labour, so that in many occupations women had to be employed. A number of female tram-conductors were engaged. Then, owing to the check put upon the importation of manufactured articles, not only was there a scarcity, but prices considerably increased. Food rose to something approaching famine prices, and once or twice to my personal knowledge there was a distinct shortage of beef. This, however, was due not to lack of herds in Russia, but to the Government commandeering so many head of cattle in order to provide beef for the soldiers, who, in their peasant occupations during peace time, could rarely afford such a luxury.



ARMENIANS WHO FOUGHT THE TURKS NEAR VAN.
In the early part of October, 1915, the Turks were defeated by Russian troops near Van, which had been heroically defended by Armenian volunteers, some of whom are seen in our photograph with captured Turkish guns.

I saw much of the Russian Army, and although it was short of many things, the commissariat department was efficient and the transport effective. No soldiers in this dreadful struggle were better fed or better clad than the troops of the Tsar.

It was very much the same in Petrograd, the official capital of the country. Hotel prices are always high in Russia; but they were never so high as during war time. One of the reasons was that the proprietors, deprived of their profits because of the stoppage in the sale of wines, endeavoured to recoup themselves by increasing the prices of everything else.

Russia caught unawares

Russia, while possessing so enormous an Army, had been rather unpractical in her preparations for the great, inevitable bout between herself and Germany. In many respects she was caught unawares. Germany knew how ill-provisioned she was in munitions. Russia on her part had been casual in taking notice of what the long years of warlike preparation in Germany really meant.

Many of the absolute essentials for war could not be

Digitized by Google



Before Van could be relieved by the Russian forces it was splendidly defended by the inhabitants, a number of whom, under the command of a Russian officer, are here seen in the trenches





Armenians digging trenches outside the town of Van, in Asia Minor.



Van, in Asia Minor, was threatened with extinction by Kurds and Turks, and but for the determined resistance of the native Armenians the population would have been massacred. In the left-hand photograph some defenders are seen in the trenches outside the town, which was occupied by Russian troops from the Caucasus in May, 1915. At foot, on the right, is a group of the men who defended Van against the Turks and Kurds.

RUSSIAN INVASION OF ASIA MINOR. THE DEFENCE AND OCCUPATION OF VAN.

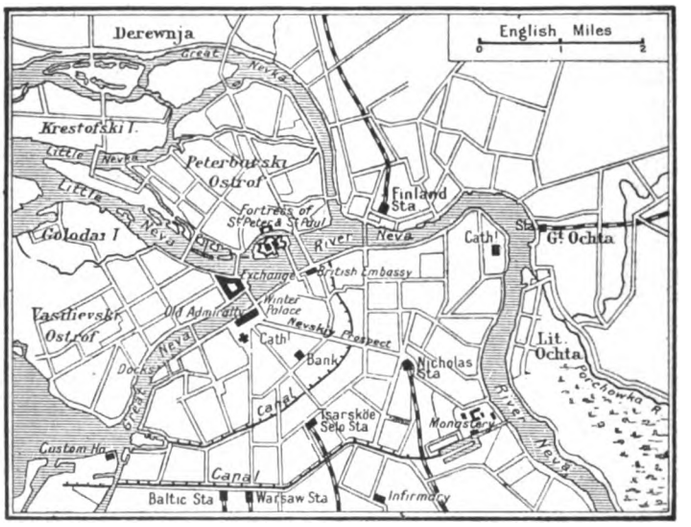
Digitized by Google

provided in Russia to equip a fair proportion of her soldiery. She had to seek supplies from abroad. The German market was shut off, and France and Britain were much too busy preparing for their own requirements to offer much assistance to Russia, though they did help in many ways.

The result was that the representatives of big manufacturing concerns in neutral countries descended upon Petrograd in considerable numbers. They were mostly Swedes and Americans. One of the biggest hotels in Petrograd was crowded with Americans who were seeking to secure contracts with the Russian Government. Many of them did. The difficult point was the delivery. War goods could enter Russia without much hindrance by means of the "back door," that is to say they could be landed at Port Arthur or Vladivostok, and brought into the country through Siberia. That, however, was a long and difficult route. The quickest ways were by Archangel and Odessa; but the gateway to Odessa through the Dardanelles had not been forced by the French and British Allies, and an entrance by way of the White Sea was hampered by the Arctic ice, which enclosed Archangel for several months of the year. It was this difficulty of getting absolutely necessary supplies from allied and neutral countries which had much to do with the compulsory retirement of the Russian troops. They were brave enough; but bravery without shells and general munitions did not count for a great deal.

Neutrals and contracts

However, there was great confidence in the ability of the British and French warships and soldiers to knock a way through the Dardanelles, clear the passage of the Bosphorus, and thus provide an open route from the outer world to Odessa. As a preliminary to this, the chiefs of the principal trading firms went to Odessa, furnished offices, and laid the train not only for supplying the soldiers with requisites from England and America, but also for providing the civilian population with goods, which these countries could supply, and for which the people were in need.



PLAN OF PETROGRAD, SHOWING DELTA OF THE NEVA.

Russia was hard put to it to obtain supplies from abroad. During the dark days of winter, the only means through which she could receive help from Britain and France was by way of Sweden. The population of Sweden was not particularly enthusiastic over the cause of the Allies. It could not be said that Sweden put facilities in the way of communication. Sweden had long been under the intellectual spell of Germany, and, while the folk of this part of Scandinavia did not look with a fond eye upon the manner in which German goods were flooding the country, they had, according to their point of view, less to fear from Germany than from Russia, because the Swedes had long nursed a dread that if ever Russia had the power, she would cut a way from Finland across the northern parts of Sweden and Norway, and create for herself a port on the North Sea.

The Swedish attitude was not dictated by any resentment toward Great Britain, although the Swedish trading classes did not like ships being held up by the British Admiralty on the ground that the cargoes, while destined for Sweden, were really intended for Germany.

It was perfectly natural that Sweden should not wish to incur the enmity of Germany. Therefore it can be easily understood that, when she provided the only route between France, Britain, and Russia, her authorities did not go out of their way to help in the conveyance of goods to the enemy of Germany.

I travelled that route—across the North Sea from Newcastle to Bergen, thence to Stockholm, then due north to the real "land of the midnight sun," and to the very edge of Lapland, round the top of the Gulf of Bothnia, and so across the Swedish frontier into Finland and down to Petrograd—a journey occupying eight days.

There was only a single line to the north of Sweden. There was no railway communication with Finland. The Russians laid a temporary line on the frozen earth to a place opposite Karungi, on the Swedish side of the Tornea River; but when this fell into disuse owing to the spring thaw, it was necessary to convey all goods by vehicle a distance of some twenty miles along the frontier, and then ferry across the Tornea River to a point where the Finnish railway could be touched.

Taking goods into Russia by this means in bulk was an impossibility. The Swedes themselves made a very close examination to prevent the transit of medical supplies. The only plan by which articles from France and England could be sent to Russia was through the agency of the parcels post. Thus it was that millions of small packages travelled by means of that circuitous route. I saw train-loads upon trainloads of parcels taking sections of small machinery into the country, where they could be put together. All this was very hampering and most expensive, and will convey to the mind of the British reader to what a pass our Russian ally was put.

But with the coming of spring, although the Karungi route was still available, large articles, such as machinery, had to be taken into Russia by way of the White Sea and Archangel. As soon as the ice broke, fleets of merchant ships made their way to Russia's northern port, although many of them were impeded, or prevented altogether, by the enemy submarines, which were on the watch at the mouth of the White Sea.

The single line from Archangel to the south was in process of being doubled. It was over these metals that Russia got most of her supplies during the summer of 1915. Ordinary merchandise had practically to be ignored, the railway was requisitioned by the military authorities. Mountains of goods were stacked on the quay-sides at Archangel, exposed to damage by reason of the tempestuous weather. Traders also suffered to a considerable extent. The Manufacturers' Association of Moscow, however, did what was best in the circumstances—sent representatives to Archangel, and by the utilisation of the waterways in that part of the world were able to forward much merchandise, though the delay was great. With the prospect of a famine in particular articles, several representatives of the principal Moscow firms made research throughout the Empire, particularly in towns where trade had come to a standstill, and were able to purchase from the retailers many of their goods, and forward them to Moscow and to Petrograd.

Difficulties of goods traffic

Digitized by Google

The war, instead of reducing the populations of the great cities, increased them. The wealthier classes, who had been in the habit of travelling abroad, principally to German spas, remained at home. They did not even go to Yalta, the beautiful watering-place in the Crimea; nor did many of them take up their abode on their country estates. They were anxious to keep in touch with what was happening in the great drama. They remained in the capital, or took up their residence in Moscow, Kieff, Jaroslav, and other centres. There was a great inflow of refugees from Poland and from the south-western districts of the country.



GENERAL VIEW OF THE CITY OF MOSCOW.
It is popularly said that Petrograd is the brain and Moscow the heart of Russia.

For months Warsaw, the capital of Poland, was a hustling military centre. Most of the troops intended to fight the Germans in the north-eastern theatre were sent that way. Endless processions of regiments marched through the streets, unarmed in many cases, for the soldiers were to receive their rifles at the front; which meant that they were to get their weapons from brother soldiers who were wounded, or to have them passed on from men who were dead.

Hotels were packed with Russian officers. Though the boom of the guns could be heard, and German aeroplanes frequently flew over the city, life proceeded gaily enough. There was little news of what was taking place at the fighting-line, except that the return of enormous convoys of wounded men indicated that the resistance to the invaders had been stubborn. Weeks before the actual evacuation took place, there were indications of what was going to happen. The treasury was removed; the wives of officials were provided with permits to leave; British residents were given the hint they had better clear out. So matters proceeded until within the last few days, when there was a rush of people making their escape before the enemy entered the city. Never was railway traffic so congested. Civilians had to be content with travelling under disagreeable conditions in cattle trucks. The journey from Warsaw to Moscow took over two days. Thus Moscow had a larger population than in normal times.

Warsaw before its evacuation

It was the same down at Kieff, the Holy City of Russia. Refugees from the region of Galicia all made for this town. Thousands of them came without any possessions except the clothing in which they stood. It says much for the warm-heartedness of the Russians that, although there was little organisation, kindness and hospitality to the unfortunate were abounding, and for fifty miles around there was scarcely a house which did not shelter and care for some family which had been obliged to fly before the invaders. Thus the big towns were well filled, and although prices rose abnormally, trade was brisk.

The refugees from Galicia

There were periods when the Russians were depressed. They knew of the sacrifices which they were making, and there was little opportunity for them to learn what their Allies were doing. They became somewhat critical. They recalled how, when the French and British were being pressed by the Germans on the western front in the autumn of 1914, the Russians put up a vigorous attack in the north-east in order to draw off some of that pressure, and they asked the question why, when they were being pressed in Poland and Galicia, the French and British Armies did not act vigorously in order to withdraw some of the German pressure on the Russian front? They mourned that the passage of the Dardanelles had not been forced. They grieved that the ammunition which they expected from their Allies was prevented from being delivered. Still,



THE NEVSKY PROSPECT, PETROGRAD.
The principal thoroughfare of the Russian capital. A broad and stately boulevard and one of the handsomest avenues in Europe.

Digitized by Google

though depressed, they were determined. Always at the back of their thoughts was the conviction that, whatever might be the mishaps, they were temporary, and that the foe must ultimately be decimated or repulsed.

No better proof of the spirit which animated the nation could be found than the way in which the whole of the civilian population recognised what was incumbent upon it. Slowly—for the Russian is incapable of doing things quickly—munition factories were organised, and the people set about producing war material for their troops. Frequently there was such a shortage that the soldiers were obliged to retire long distances before the superior equipment of the Germans. In time that trouble was surmounted. Within their capabilities, not so great as those of England, all the factories of Russia were engaged in turning out munitions of war.

It has been said, and rightly, that the people of Russia, the civilian population, did more than the Government itself. The Government attended to all military matters, the arming and the provisioning of the troops. Everything else was left to organisations and private individuals. For instance, the whole of the nursing of the wounded was left to the Red Cross Society and Russia's innumerable benevolent institutions. The Russian Red Cross Society had been active for many years, because within the scope of its operations was the improvement of the housing of the poorer classes, as well as the care of the sick.

Activity in hospital work

Practically all the ladies of the better classes engaged in hospital work. Each province, every Zemstvo, and every municipality had not only to look after the injured, but also to make provision for the dependents of the fighting men. Representatives of all the local authorities met, and schemes were drawn up whereby each district could do its share in caring for the maimed or sick. Some municipalities could accept a thousand men; others were only able to look after fifty men. Above this, all private individuals with houses of any size set apart either the whole dwelling or a certain number of rooms, and undertook at their own charge to minister to the wants of the poor fellows. The consequence of all this was that the wounded and the poor were looked after as a result of municipal or private philanthropy.

You could not take a walk in any of the main streets of the big towns, or drive through any of the villages, without constantly seeing the Red Cross flag, indicating the existence of a hospital, great or small. Of course, some of these hospitals were much better equipped than others. But within their means, all sections of the community gave freely. What Russia accomplished in looking after the sufferers should be remembered for all time by those who are disposed to criticise what takes place in the land of the Tsar. The Dowager-Empress was at the head of the Red Cross Society, while the Empress herself and her daughters, the Grand Duchesses Olga and Tatiana, not only made comforts for the wounded, but gave the lead to other ladies by taking their share in hospital nursing.

Affection for the Tsar

The love of Russia accentuated affection for the Little White Father. His Majesty ultimately took command of the Russian Army, but long before then he had shown solicitude for his soldiers by travelling to the seat of war, and by visiting the Cossack soldiers who were fighting below the Caucasus. He went to arsenals, and witnessed the manufacture of implements of war; he paid informal and quite unostentatious visits to hospitals—arriving often in a simple carriage, and attended by a single aide-de-camp—moving amongst the wounded, talking to them, and addressing the humblest private as "Brother."

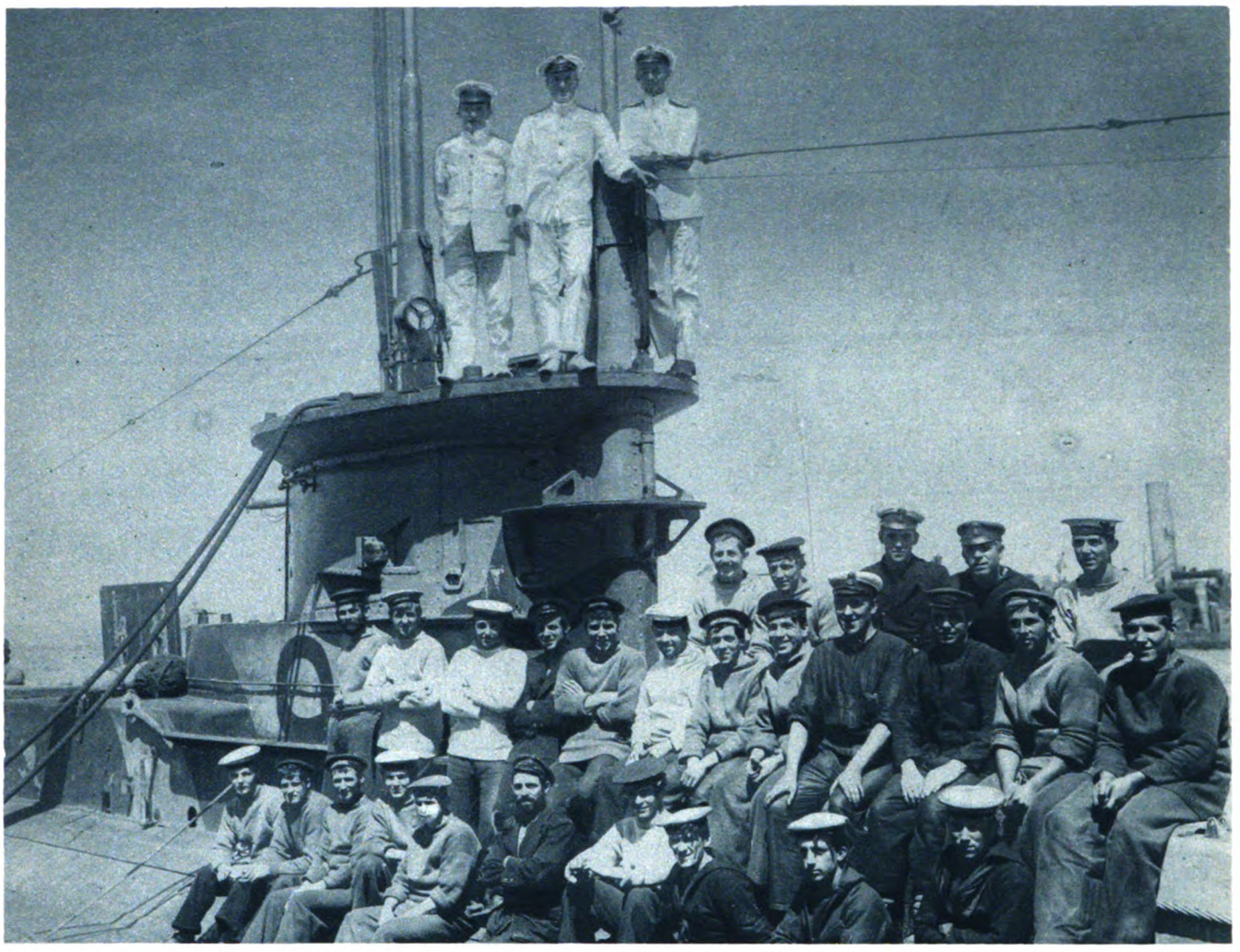
All of which goes to demonstrate not only how Russia faced her ordeals, but how the war changed her aspect upon the world in general, and stiffened her in the determination that in the future she would be more worthy of her ideals.

Russia came to appreciate the good qualities of her Allies. For two generations she had had unstinted admiration of British institutions. It would be idle to contend that she could ever graft these on to her Constitution, or adapt them to the peculiar Slav temperament. The war, however, brought the whole body of the Russian people to know more about the British Empire than ever they did before. They were happy in the knowledge that the people of Great Britain were getting a better understanding of Russia, were dropping the old story-book conception of it as a land of bleakness and cruelty, and were coming to realise that, with innumerable drawbacks, it had many phases of life from which other nations might learn much.

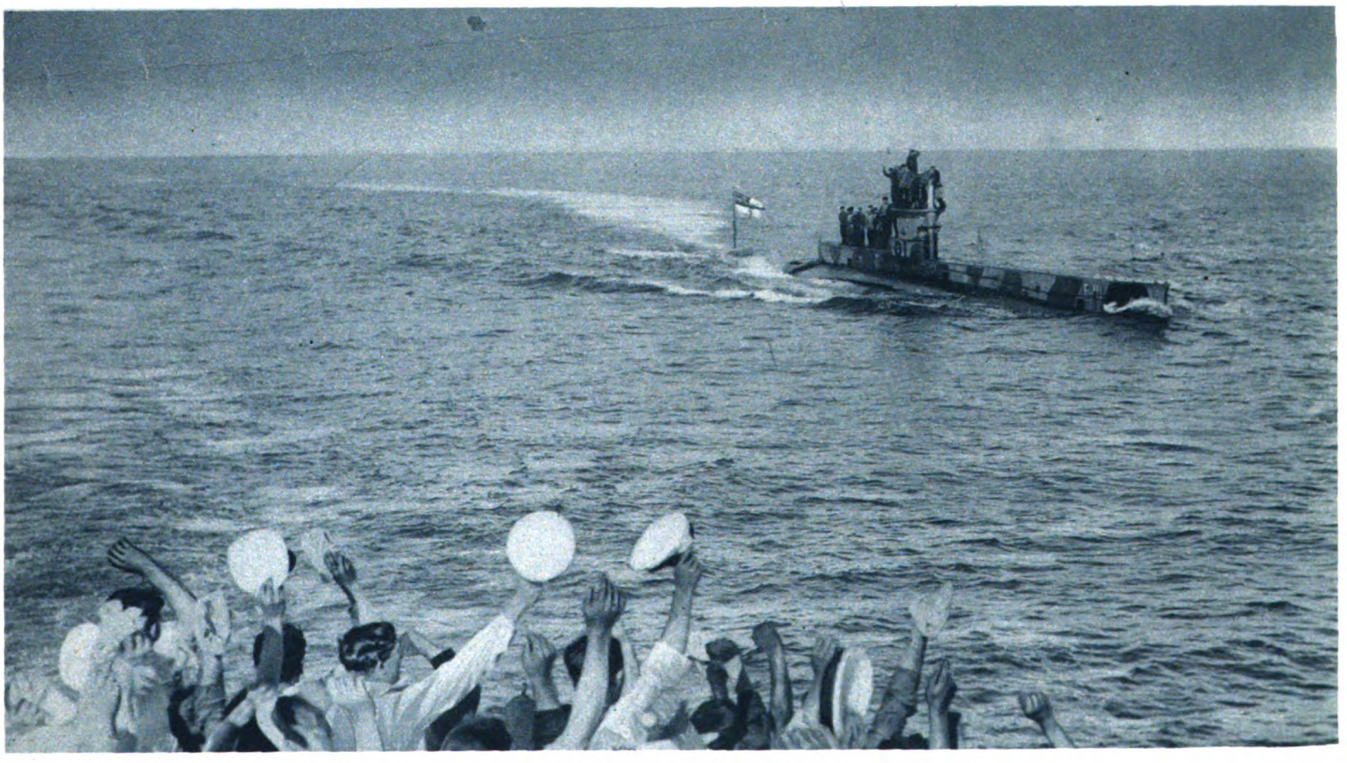


A BODY OF STALWART COSSACKS, WHOSE TRADITIONAL INTREPIDITY PROVED ALL BUT UNAVAILING WHILE RUSSIA LACKED GUNS TO PIT AGAINST THE COLOSSAL ORDNANCE OF THE TEUTON FOE.

Digitized by Google



The crew of H.M. submarine E11.



Cheering the E11 on its return from the Dardanelles.

Digitized by Google



On Gallipoli: Welcome capture of supplies for the British commissariat.



Sturdy Turkish prisoners under escort on Gallipoli Peninsula.

Digitized by Google



Ammunition train bringing up food for the guns.



Filtered water, stored in cans and old petrol tins, for the troops on Gallipoli.

Digitized by Google



Bringing up supplies: Animated scene after the British landing at Suvla Bay.



A gully in Gallipoli: British troops returning from the trenches.

Digitized by Google



BRITISH SUPPLY COLUMN WITH NATIVE GUIDES.

CHAPTER LXXXIII.

THE HEROIC STRUGGLE ON GALLIPOLI PENINSULA AND THE SUVLA BAY BATTLES.

Extraordinary Revelation in Sir Ian Hamilton's Despatch—Dardanelles Operations Muddled by Lack of Order in Embarking Troops—Siege Warfare Begins with a Night Adventure by the Gurkhas—How the French Troops Battled for Haricot Redoubt—Heroism of the Lancashire Territorials—Enver Pasha Tries to Teach Liman Von Sanders and Essad Pasha the Art of Victory—The Men of Anzac Wipe Out Enver's New Army—The Immortal Charge of the Australian Light Horse—New Zealanders and Indian Brigade make a Wonderful Night March—Gurkhas Storm Q Hill and Reach the Mountain Crest—The Decisive Hour in the Dardanelles Campaign—Why the Great Scheme of Operations Failed of Victory—New British Army Lands in Suvla Bay and Advances for Two and a Half Miles—The Irish Division Carries Chocolate Hill—The Collapse at Anafarta Ridge—The Zone of Flame that Checked the British Advance—The Irishmen Take Dublin Hill, and the Suvla Bay Army Connects with Anzac—Magnificent Charge by the Yeomanry Division—Capture of a Commanding Point in Anafarta Valley.

FROM the first despatch of Sir Ian Hamilton, published on July 6th, 1915, it looked as though the naval operations in the Dardanelles had been planned without consulting him. The commander of the Mediterranean Expeditionary Force left London with his Staff on March 13th, and arrived at the island of Tenedos about mid-day on March 17th. He was just in time to witness the series of naval disasters in the Strait on March 18th, and he says he came to the "reluctant deduction that the co-operation of the whole of the force under my command would be required to enable the fleet effectively to force the Dardanelles."

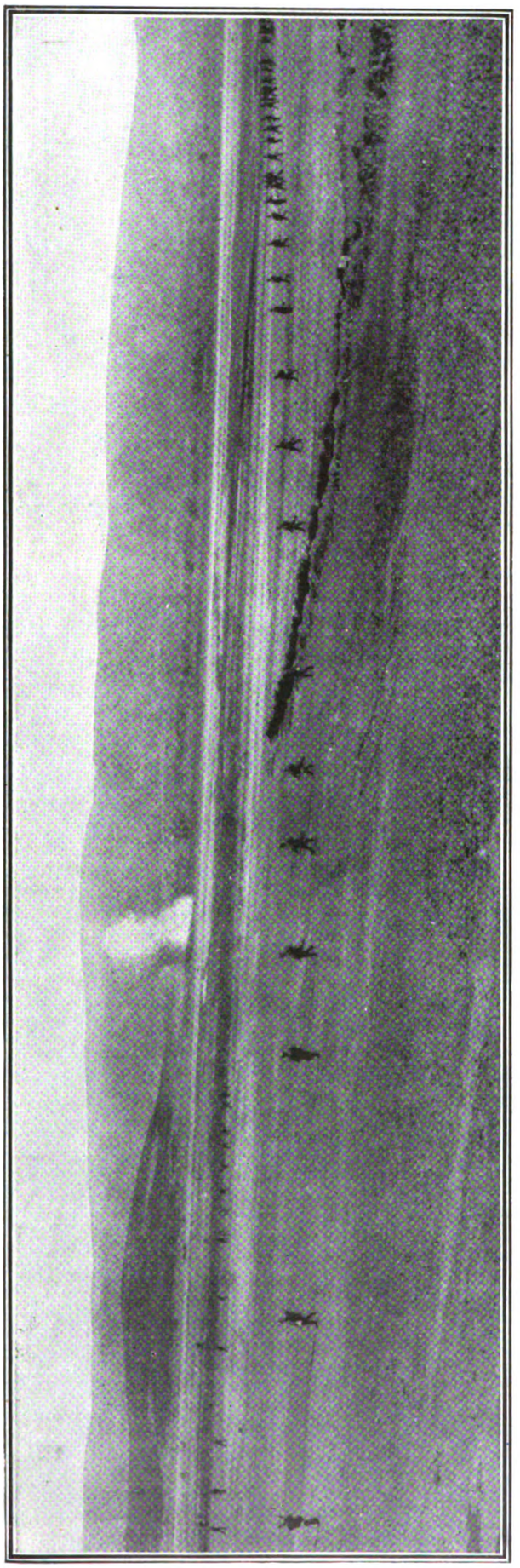
Then followed a surprising revelation by the gallant general. His troops, he stated, had already been brought to the scene of action, and were crowded in troopships by the island of Mudros. But they could not be disembarked for a surprise attack on the Gallipoli Peninsula at a time when the Turkish defences were incomplete, for Sir Ian Hamilton went on to say: "Before doing anything else, I had to redistribute the troops on the transports to suit the order of their disembarkation. The bulk of the forces at my disposal had, perforce, been embarked without its having been possible to pay due attention to the operation upon which I now proposed that they should be launched. Owing to lack of facilities at Mudros, redistribution in that harbour was out of the question. Therefore, I ordered all the transports, except those of the Australian Infantry Brigade and the details encamped at Lemnos island, to the Egyptian ports. On March 24th I myself, with the General Staff, proceeded to Alexandria, where I remained until April 7th, working out the allocation of troops to transports in minutest detail as a prelude to the forthcoming disembarkation."



SIR IAN HAMILTON AND GENERAL GOURAUD.
A meeting at Seddul Bahr on June 28th, 1915. General Hamilton brought news of a success at Krithia. Two days later General Gouraud was grievously wounded.

There was thus a delay of over a month before the troopships returned to the Turkish coast, and by then all the extremely valuable element of surprise in the military operations had vanished. A great decisive opportunity had been lost owing to the want of proper order in placing the troops in the transports in the early part of the month of March. Sir Ian Hamilton's use in this connection of the strange word "perforce" seemed to show that some Government plan, abruptly conceived and ordered to be carried out hurriedly, was the cause of the troops being put in transports in such a way that they could not be disembarked on the Gallipoli Peninsula. It further appeared from the

Digitized by Google



THE CAMPAIGN ON GALLIPOLI: LONG LINES OF INFANTRY ADVANCING ACROSS SALT LAKE TO ATTACK ANAFARTA.

passages cited from Sir Ian's despatch that he did not expect to use the whole of his troops in helping the fleet to force the Dardanelles. Some other military operations in the Mediterranean area were intended, and it was with reluctance that the British commander came to the conclusion that Gallipoli alone would be his field of action.

Apparently we have to go back to the Walcheren Expedition to find a parallel to the circumstances in which the Dardanelles campaign was conceived. For, though the Crimean War was sadly muddled, the mistakes there do not seem to have been so serious as were those which the British, Australasian, and Indian troops were asked to retrieve along the gateway between the Mediterranean and the Black Sea. Sir Ian Hamilton was a commander of experience, and he was admirably served by subordinate officers like Generals Sir W. R. Birdwood and Hunter-Weston, of whom it is sufficient to say that they were worthy of the men they led into action. The heroism of the troops was marvellous, and solely by their indomitable tenacity they won a narrow footing along the cliffs below the mountain fortresses, from which the Germans and Turks continued to sweep every landing-place with shell fire.

Leaders worthy of their men

But after a footing had been won below Krithia and north of Gaba Tepe, the attacking forces could make no further progress of importance. There mustered at first scarcely two army corps of them, including the 29th Division, the Australian and New Zealand Expeditionary Force, the Naval Division, an Indian Brigade, and a French division composed of Zouaves, African troops, and some white battalions. After the losses of the landing battles, Sir Ian Hamilton must have had less than 35,000 bayonets immediately at hand for the desperate work of a thrusting attack at the seat of power of the Ottoman Empire, which could draw upon half a million or more men for the defence of the road to Constantinople. As a matter of fact, the Turco-German commanders concentrated all their principal armies on the defence of the Dardanelles. The campaign against Egypt was discontinued, and the attack on Russia across the Caucasus was reduced to an unimportant defensive battle. Even the comparatively small Indo-British army advancing along the Euphrates up towards Bagdad was only opposed by a single weak Turkish army corps. All the main military resources of one of the greatest warrior races in the world were organised by capable German officers and set in a series of almost impregnable mountain defences, in order to safeguard the channel forts, which prevented the allied fleet from forcing the waterway to victory.

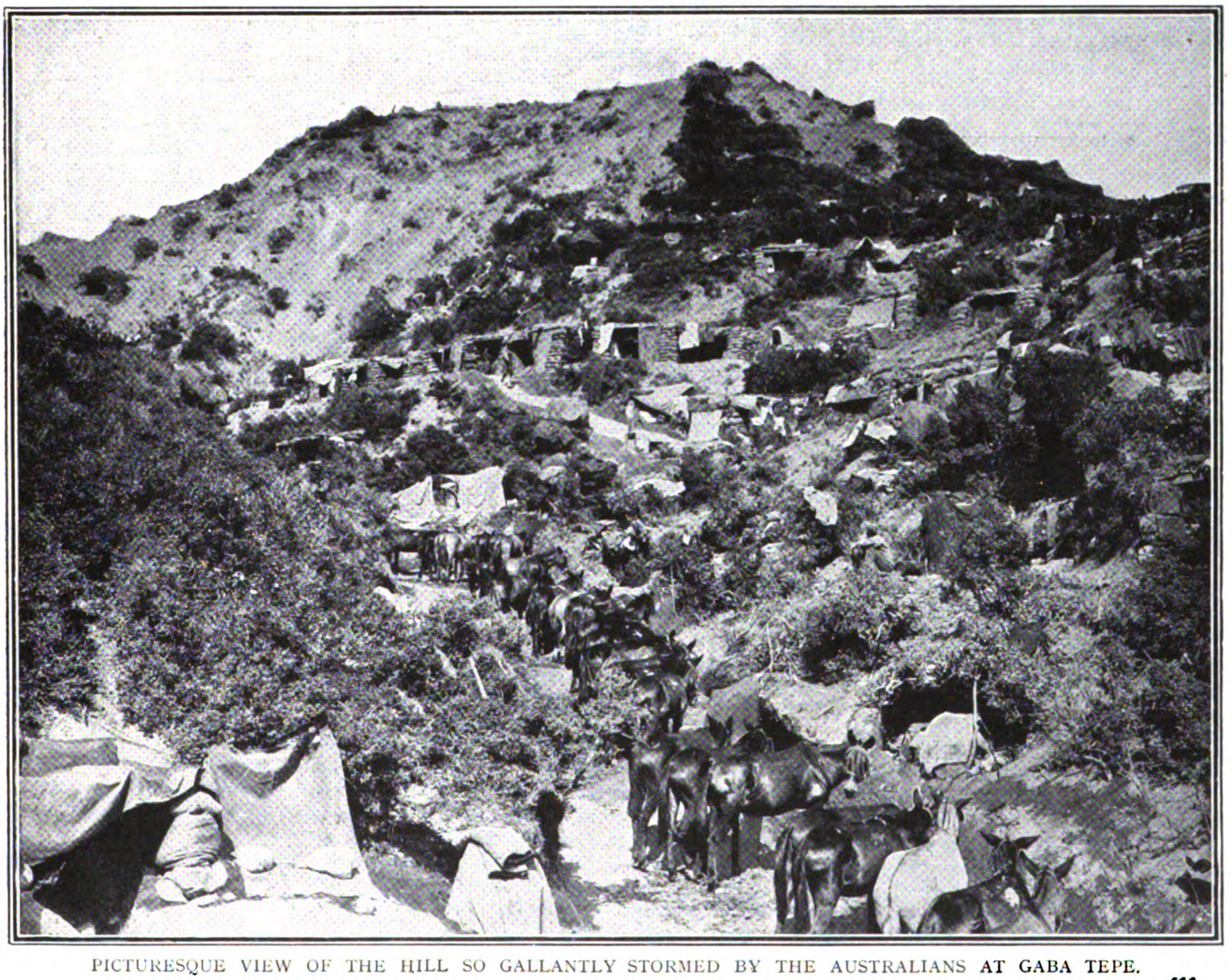
There were never less than 150,000 Turkish soldiers, with thousands of German engineers and artillerymen, holding the entrenched heights between Achi Baba and Sari Bair. It mattered little if our men put more than their number of foes out of action. New Turkish armies poured down the mainland track to Gallipoli, or were carried across the Sea of Marmora in transports. No wonder our advance was slow and our casualty lists terribly heavy. Everything was against our men. The enemy was deeply entrenched on one of the finest lines of natural fortifications in the world, with guns and howitzers commanding every site occupied by our troops. The enemy could bring most of his provisions and supplies up by road at night, with little or no interference from the fire of our ships, and a huge flotilla of small sailing vessels, plying across the Sea of Marmora greatly assisted in the provisioning of the defending army. There was scarcely any water in that part of the mountainous Peninsula occupied by the attacking troops. Even their machine-guns at times became unworkable through want of water in the jackets to keep the barrels cool. Everything necessary for existence had also to be brought to the

Everything against our men

Digitized by Google

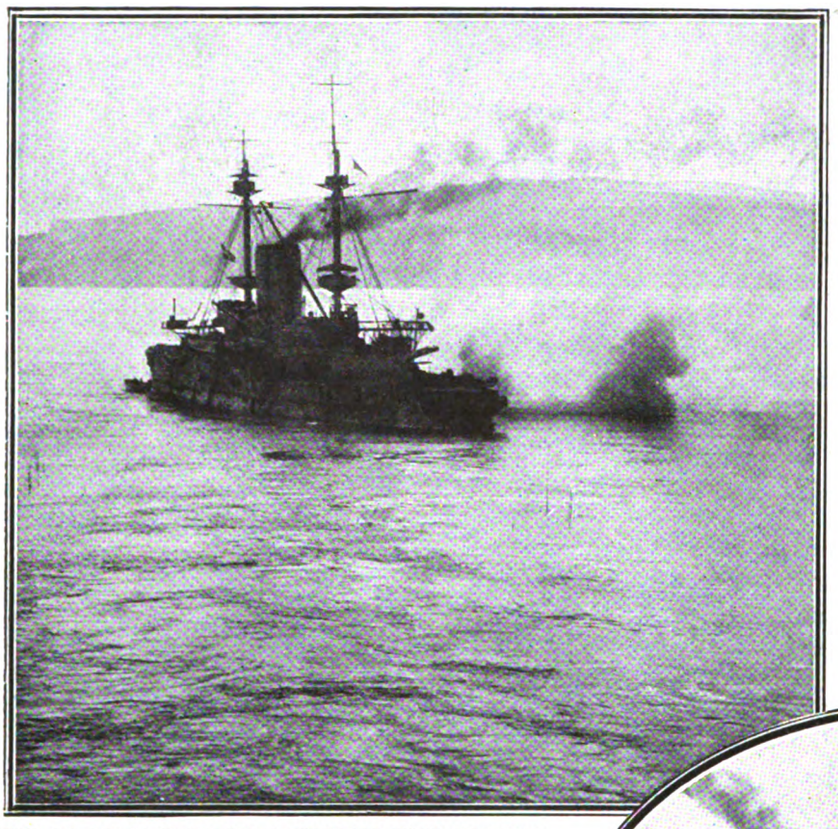


THE TERRACED AND SAND-BAGGED DUG-OUTS OF THE INTREPID AUSTRALIAN TROOPS AT GABA TEPE.



PICTURESQUE VIEW OF THE HILL SO GALLANTLY STORMED BY THE AUSTRALIANS AT GABA TEPE.

Digitized by Google



SHELLS FROM TURKISH BATTERIES FALLING NEAR H.M.S. ALBION.

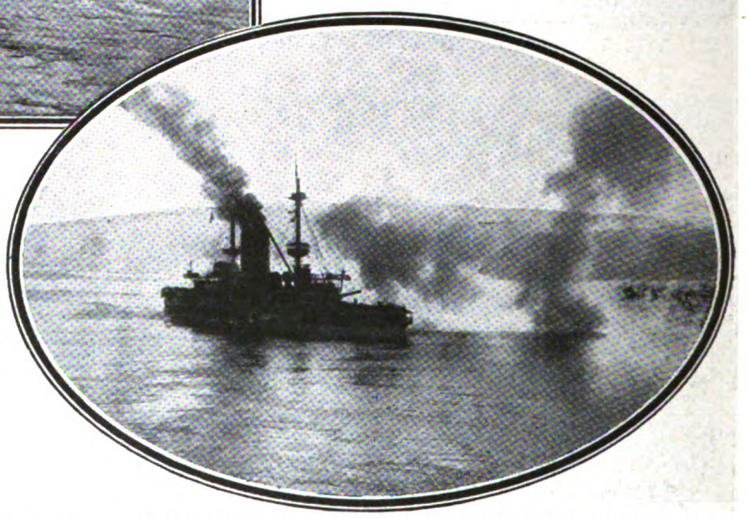
When the Albion went aground in the Dardanelles, the Turks opened fire on her from the land batteries, and two shells are seen exploding in the water between the shore and the battleship.

bombarded beaches, and thence carried laboriously by hand through narrow communication trenches to the men in the firing-line. As summer came on, the white troops were almost prostrated by the tropical heat, and plagued by a monstrous number of flies. It became at last a feat of great ingenuity to swallow food without eating live flies also. The Anzacs, as the men of the Australian and New Zealand Army Corps were called, reverted to a state of picturesque savagery. They left off all their clothes, except for one garment around their loins, and their bare bodies were baked to a Red Indian colour, so that they looked at last, by reason of their state of nature and their magnificent physique, more terrifying barbarians than the Turks opposed to them.

The magnificent Anzacs

In any other age than ours, the Dardanelles Expedition would have collapsed in the summer through an outbreak of deadly pestilence. For those great disease carriers, flies and vermin, filled our trenches, the flies feeding on the corpses left between the lines. Happily, since the South African War, Sir Almroth Wright and his pupils had made great advances in the science of preventive medicine, and for both enteric and cholera they had devised vaccination treatments, which greatly reduced the mortality from these two dreadful battle pestilences. The reversion of the Anzacs to a state of nudity was an excellent protection against the chief vermin-borne diseases, and it was combined with a system of disinfecting the clothes of all the troops, which also removed at intervals the agents of pestilence. The water was filtered and boiled, and the troops supplied with an abundance of good food. In fact, the Army Service Corps rather overdid the food supply; for in the heat of the tropical summer, when the soldiers wanted light food—such as rice, tapioca, and sago—they were still bombarded with boxes of bully beef. There were times when they rolled the beef tins into the sea in order to avoid eating the meat, but the indefatigable and unchangeable director of food supplies in the Dardanelles went on throwing ton upon ton of bully beef at the troops. He was, it was jestingly said, almost as much of an annoyance as the German artillery-man on the Asiatic side of the Strait, who worked the mobile howitzer batteries which enfiladed our lines.

We have seen that at the end of April, 1915, the allied troops in the southern end of the Peninsula had forced their way forward for some five hundred yards from their landing-places. By this time both sides showed signs of exhaustion, but Sir Ian Hamilton resolutely judged that the troops who could first summon up spirit to make another attack would win some hundreds of yards of ground. And as his own force was crowded together under gun fire in a very narrow space, he determined to be the first to strike out. He therefore brought the 2nd



H.M.S. ALBION REPLYING TO THE FIRE FROM THE TURKISH BATTERIES.

While the task of refloating the Albion was proceeding the Albion's gunners replied vigorously to the enemy's fire. Her big guns had just fired when the above photograph was taken.

Australian and New Zealand Infantry Brigades down from the Sari Bair region, and rearranged the 29th Division into four brigades, composed of the 87th and 88th Brigades, the Lancashire Territorial Brigade, and the 29th Indian Infantry Brigade. Then with the remnant of his forces he formed a new composite division, which he used as a general reserve, after reinforcing the French division with the 2nd Naval Brigade.

The 29th Division went into action at 11 a.m. on May 6th, when it moved out leftward, on the south-east side of Krithia. Half an hour afterwards the French force on the right also advanced along the lower slopes of the river ridge of the Kereves Dere. The combined operation, however, made little progress. The British troops were held up outside a pine wood, which the enemy had transformed into a machine-gun redoubt; and the French also were checked by a terrible fire from a strong fieldwork after reaching the crest of the ridge. The following morning the Lancashire

Combined operation held up

Digitized by Google



THE ROYAL NAVAL DIVISION ON GALLIPOLI.
General Sir Ian Hamilton leaving after inspecting the Royal Naval Division, which is seen in the background.

Territorials charged gallantly up the slope towards Krithia. They were caught by the German machine-guns; but as they retired, another Territorial force, the Queen's Edinburgh Rifles, took the pine wood by a magnificent rush. Besides dislodging the machine-gun parties, they brought down Turkish snipers working from wooden platforms on the trees, and thus cleared the way for the general advance. But just as all seemed to be going well, and the Inniskilling Fusiliers came up to maintain our hold on the pine wood, the Turks, by a gallant charge, won back this clump of trees in our centre. Nevertheless, the Inniskillings went on and captured three enemy trenches, till in the afternoon all the advance was again held up by an enfilading fire from hostile machine-guns hidden on a ridge between the gully running towards Krithia and the sea. The operation looked like ending in a stalemate; but neither General Hunter-Weston, one of the greatest thrusters in our Army, nor Sir Ian Hamilton, a man with all the fighting temperament of the Highlander, would submit to the check. The commander threw in all his reserves, and ordered a general advance; and despite their weariness and their heavy losses, the men rose with a will, and in a great bayonet charge recaptured the pine wood and advanced nearly all their line some three hundred yards.

Great charge at Krithia



THE BRITISH COMMANDER-IN-CHIEF GOING ASHORE.
General Sir Ian Hamilton and General Braithwaite being rowed ashore in a boat from a warship.

The troops were quite worn out, but Sir Ian Hamilton kept most of them working when darkness fell at the task of consolidating their new position. His airmen had told him that the enemy were receiving reinforcements, and he was resolved to make one more push before the new hostile forces got into position. At half-past ten the next morning (May 7th) he flung out the New Zealand Brigade, and won another two hundred yards in front of the pine trees. Then at half-past four in the afternoon he threw the 2nd Australian Brigade into his front, and sent his whole line forward against Krithia. The sparkle of the bayonets could be seen through the smoke of shells from the ships'

Digitized by Google

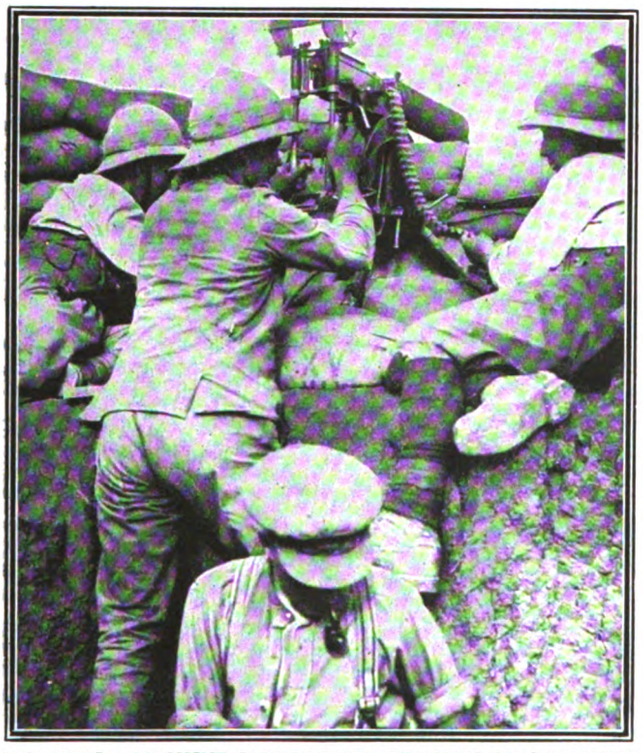
guns and heavy artillery, as the attacking troops went forward in a long line stretching right across the Peninsula. The Senegalese sharpshooters were broken by the storm of heavy shells from the ridge by Kereves Dere. But the black troops were rallied by their officers, and sent forward in another rush, supported by a small column of French soldiers. Their figures were seen outlined against the sky on the crest of their ridge just as darkness fell and veiled all the battlefield.

When morning came, Sir Ian Hamilton found that the French had captured the machine-gun redoubt on the ridge, and had entrenched in front of Zimmerman Farm.

Footing gained below Achi Baba

On the right of the British line the 87th Brigade, fighting in the darkness, had taken another two hundred yards of ground; while the Australian Brigade, though swept by shrapnel, machine-gun, and rifle fire, extended our front for another four hundred yards.

The gain of ground in the three days' battle was only six hundred yards on the right, and four hundred yards on the left-centre. It does not look much on the map, but



WORKING A MACHINE-GUN IN THE TRENCHES ON GALLIPOLI.

in practice it meant life instead of death, for it gave the allied troops just living room on the tip of the Peninsula, enabling them to scatter sufficiently in bivouacs in a network of narrow ditches, to avoid annihilation from the high-placed enemy batteries. Sir Ian Hamilton confesses that it was only on May 10th, 1915, that he felt that his footing below Achi Baba was fairly secure.

General Liman von Sanders, the descendant of an Englishman named Sanders, showed an instant appreciation of the advantages won by the attacking troops. He made a furious attempt in the night to drive the allied line back; but after a desperate hand-to-hand conflict, the French and British retained all their newly-won position. For the first time for eighteen days and nights the half-shattered but indomitable 29th Division was able to have an ordinary sleep. It was a sleep disturbed by shells, as the men were only drawn back to the dug-outs near the beach, while the newly-arrived 42nd Division took their places in the firing-trench. But even a dug-out with howitzer shell interludes was a place of peace and repose after the adventures of the preceding three weeks.

By this time the weary attacking troops had exhausted all opportunities of surprise and initiative. The enemy was well aware of their numbers and dispositions, and as our men were in possession of the Turks' first line of defence, no more battles in the open were possible. All further advances had to be conducted by the method of siege warfare, in which the ground was very gradually won by local efforts, after slow, methodical preparation. Sir Ian Hamilton prepared this change of tactics by arranging all his artillery under a central fire control, so that all the heavy pieces and most of the light pieces could be switched together by telephone for an intensive bombardment of a short section of the hostile front. The guns of the fleet were similarly placed under a central control by means of wireless stations, and the machine-guns were set in carefully chosen redoubts to strengthen the system of trenches.

Meanwhile the officer commanding the 6th Gurkhas had begun on his own initiative the new method of advancing by local efforts. Between Krithia and the open sea there was a deep, picturesque river bed, known on the map as the Saghir Dere, and known in the camp as Gully Ravine, and crowned seaward by a steep bluff. Below the bluff was Y Beach, where some of the troops had fought their first landing battle. Since then the enemy had transformed the bluff into a powerful fortress, from which a number of machine-guns had continually broken up the left wing of our attacks. To assail the fortified cliff across the gully was madness, but the mountaineers of Nepal worked their way along the shore, and then started in the darkness to crawl up the steep height on their hands and knees. They reached the top, but failed to surprise the enemy, who beat them back with a sweeping fire. The enterprising Gurkhas, however, had shown the way in which the bluff could be captured, and the next day Major-General H. V. Fox, commanding the 29th Indian Infantry Brigade, devised plans for a concerted attack. This was carried out in the evening of May 12th, when the Manchester Brigade made a feint of a storming attack on the right of the enemy's position. The guns of H.M.S. Dublin and H.M.S. Talbot opened fire seaward on the Turkish trenches, while the guns and howitzers of one of the British divisions kept up a heavy shell fire from the land. Evening deepened into night, and the great bluff flamed with bursting shell that kept the Turks below their parapets. Then again in the darkness a double company of Gurkhas crept along the shore, and scaling the cliff, carried the position with a rush. They were followed by their machine-gun section, and another double company of their battalion, and when dawn broke the conquered position had been connected with our main line, advancing our left flank by nearly five hundred yards.

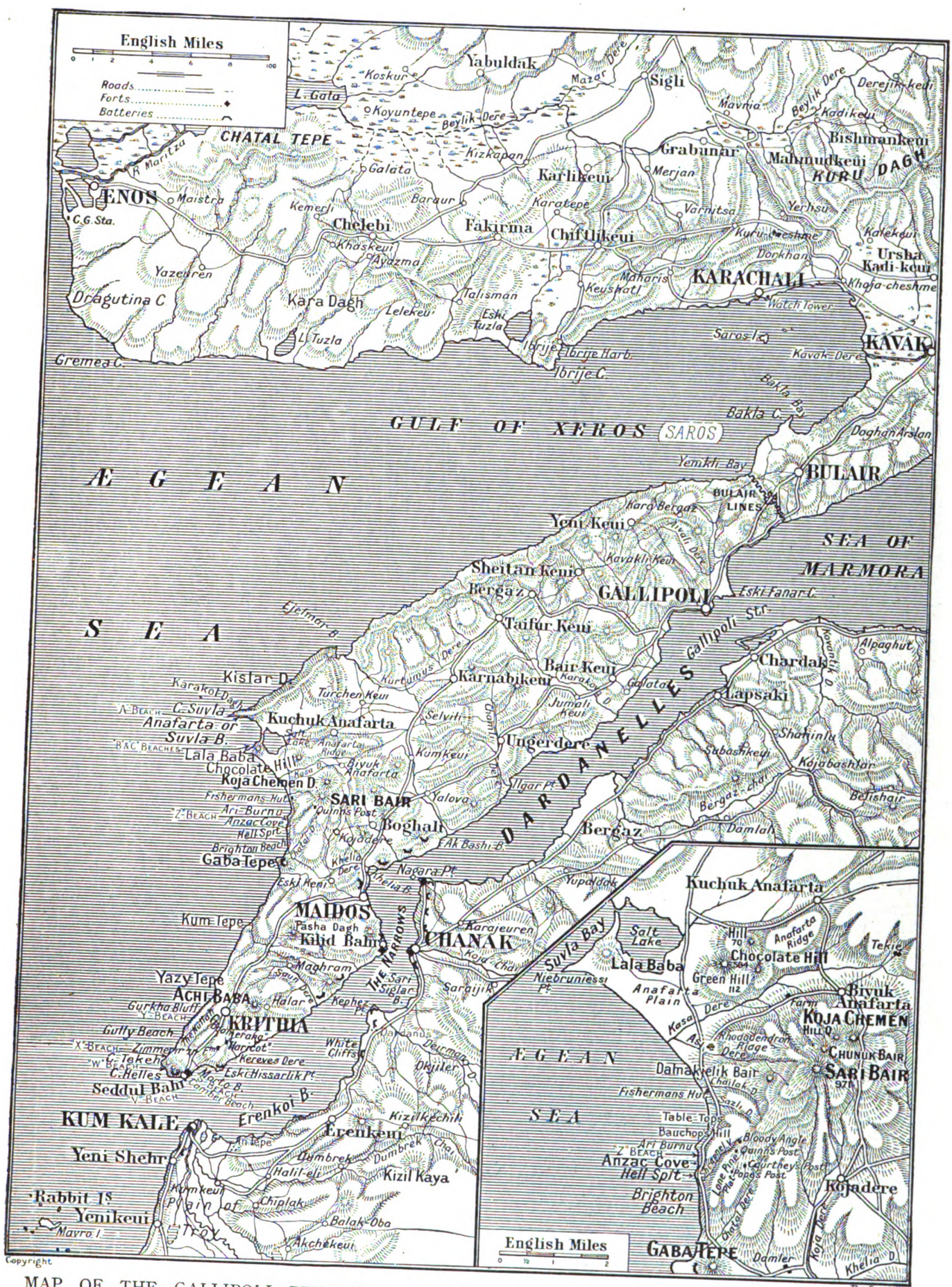
Nothing of much importance was done for another fortnight. During this time the hardest work fell on the sappers, who tried to work up within rushing distance of the enemy's second line by means of winding saps from which the troops could debouch. On May 25th the Royal Naval Division and the 42nd Division were able to entrench a hundred yards nearer the Turks, and four days afterwards the entire British line was helped onward by means of engineers' work. At the same time the French force also progressed and captured a machine-gun redoubt on the ridge going down to the Kereves Ravine.

German submarines intervene

But all this slow movement of approach against the hostile mountain fortress was suddenly complicated by a series of terrifying naval disasters. Some German submarines worked down to the Dardanelles in the third week in May, and all our naval dispositions and transport work were abruptly checked.

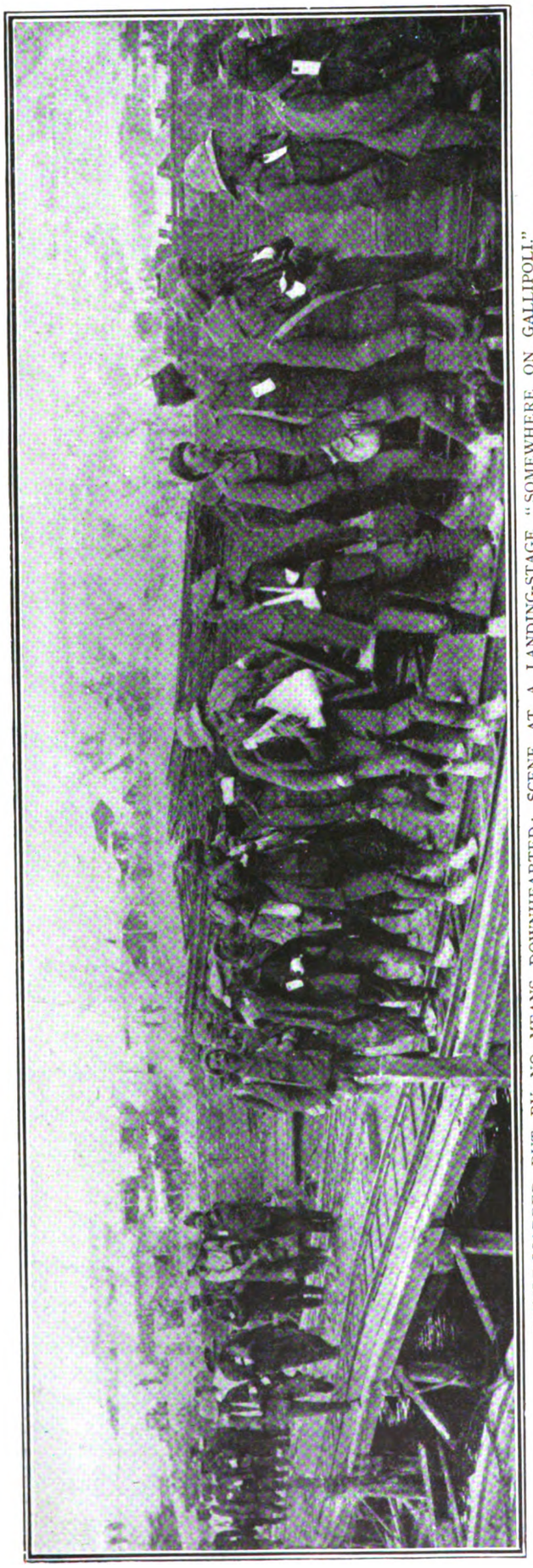
We had already lost the Goliath, a useful old battleship, by a destroyer attack delivered by a very enterprising German naval officer. This disaster only entailed greater watchfulness on the part of our scouts; but the torpedoing of H.M.S. Triumph on May 26th, and the torpedoing of

Digitized by Google



MAP OF THE GALLIPOLI PENINSULA SHOWING THE VARIOUS LANDING-PLACES, WITH ENLARGED INSET OF THE SARI BAIR REGION.

Digitized by Google



BATTLE-SCARRED BUT BY NO MEANS DOWNHEARTED: SCENE AT A LANDING-STAGE "SOMEWHERE ON GALLIPOLI." Officers and men are seen walking side by side, each bearing on his more or less tattered tunic a label setting forth the particulars of his wounds. The terse inscription on the reverse of this official photograph is as follows: "The Dardanelles operations: Wounded British soldiers about to embark for the hospital ship."

H.M.S. Majestic on May 27th, were blows so serious that some of our own public even thought that the Dardanelles campaign was suddenly about to end in collapse. The outlook was indeed very serious. The large steamers which had been supplying the troops with food and ammunition could no longer be safely used, and it seemed at first as if the Germans and Austrians had only to send half a dozen more large underwater craft to the Dardanelles in order to maroon the troops we had landed on the Gallipoli Peninsula. It was a situation to test to the uttermost the ability of the British sailor; but by fine ingenuity and inventiveness he saved the army which he had put ashore with such remarkable skill. All the transports were sent into Mudros Bay, where there was only a narrow channel to guard. Men, stores, guns, and horses were henceforth conveyed across forty miles of water from Mudros to the Peninsula in mine-sweepers and other small, shallow vessels, which did not lie deep enough in the water for a torpedo to strike them at the ordinary depth. Then the large warships, whose guns were very useful, and sometimes of vital value in the military operations, were sheltered near the shore by means of submarine defences, while our destroyers and patrol boats tracked the hostile underwater craft and assailed them in various ways.

Meeting the new menace

During the first phase of the submarine menace, when it remained doubtful if disaster was not impending, the conduct of Sir Ian Hamilton clearly showed what kind of man he was. He at once planned a general attack on the Turkish position. Like all great Scottish Highlanders, danger inspired him to furious effort instead of in any way dismaying him. He was ably seconded by the former commanding officer of the 29th Division, Lieut.-General A. G. Hunter-Weston, who had been promoted to the command of the 8th Army Corps. Hunter-Weston was a man of the calibre of Douglas Haig, a warrior of genius, capable of wielding a great army through his remarkable combination of vehemence and tenacity. He was Sir Ian Hamilton's right-hand man in the southern part of the Gallipoli Peninsula, as Sir W. R. Birdwood was the soul of Anzac. The French Expeditionary Force, brought up to two divisions, with its sphere of action round Kereves Dere, was also controlled by a notable fighting man, the tall, bearded "Lion of the Argonne," General Gouraud. Gouraud had come from the Argonne to replace General d'Amade, one of the conquerors of Morocco, who had fought in France during the retreat from Mons on the right of Sir John French's army. General d'Amade had been wounded during the attack on the Kereves bluff, and he left Gallipoli on May 14th, when the 2nd French Division arrived under General Bailloud, with General Gouraud as Commander-in-Chief.

Almost every night the Turks assailed the allied line, hoping, no doubt, to find that the attacking troops were weakening under the submarine menace. But our positions remained intact, and Sir Ian Hamilton on June 3rd, 1915, made his first deliberate assault on the Achi Baba fortifications. For his line of battle he deployed the 29th Division on his left, the 42nd (East Lancashire) Division in his centre, with the Naval Division linking on with the French Army Corps. General Hunter-Weston, directing the British troops on a front of four thousand yards, had about 17,000 men in the firing-line, with 7,000 men in reserve. The action began on the morning of June 4th with a preliminary bombardment which lasted for more than three hours, after which our troops moved out to attack, and then scurried back to their trenches. This was a little stratagem on the part of General Hunter-Weston to draw the fire of the enemy's artillery and machine-guns. The device was successful, and amid a heavy fire from the enemy's batteries and trenches, our artillery renewed its bombardment with increasing intensity, being able to mark more exactly the hostile targets.

Hunter-Weston's ruse de guerre

Digitized by Google



GETTING READY TO MEET THE TURK: FRENCH INFANTRY PRACTISING AN ADVANCE.
Some of our Gallic allies putting in a final course of training near Mudros, on the island of Lemnos, which was ceded to Greece by Turkey after the war of 1912-13.



HOW THE GALLANT ANZACS, "STRIPPED FOR THE FRAY," WORKED THE GUNS ON GALLIPOLI.
This remarkable photograph was secured during a fierce artillery duel on the Gallipoli Peninsula at considerable risk to the man with the camera.

Digitized by Google



TURKISH PRISONERS UNDER GUARD BEHIND THEIR OWN BARBED-WIRE AT SEDDUL BAHR.



GROUP OF ANATOLIANS RECRUITED BY TURKS AT ISMID FOR THE CAMPAIGN ON GALLIPOLI.

Precisely at noon our gunners lengthened their fire, and the entire British line charged with fixed bayonets. Both the French divisions stormed forward at the same time, so that the glittering line of bayonets sparkled right across the Peninsula from the open sea to the closed Strait.

The Lancashire Territorials and the new recruits of the Anson, Howe, and Hood Battalions of the Naval Division did extremely well. They captured the first Turkish line in front of them in from five to fifteen minutes, and then burst through the second Turkish line in another fierce, swift spurt. In less than half an hour from the time when they leaped from the trenches, the men of the East Lancashire Division and the Naval Division had penetrated a third of a mile in the enemy's front, and were consolidating the conquered ground in a cool, workmanlike way. The 29th Division was less fortunate, as its left wing was held up by a wire entanglement, so sited as to have escaped damage from our shells. It was an Indian brigade that was checked in this manner, and though a company of the 6th Gurkhas, the heroes of Gurkha Bluff, battered their way into the Turkish works, they had to be withdrawn with the rest of the brigade in order to avoid being cut off.

Naval Division's brilliant work

While a fresh attack was being organised, the French corps on our right got also into difficulties. The 1st French Division carried the opposing enemy trench, while the 2nd Division stormed in a magnificent spring the strong Turkish redoubt on the Kereves Ridge, known as the Haricot. But the French left wing, acting on the right flank of our Royal Naval Division, was unable to gain any ground, and this led to a disaster. In the afternoon the Turks, pouring out through the series of communication trenches, delivered a massed counter-attack on the Haricot Redoubt, while their guns prepared the way for them with a storm of shrapnel and high-explosive shell. The French lost the redoubt and fell back, and in so doing completely uncovered the right flank of our Naval Division. The men of the 2nd Naval Brigade were enfiladed and forced to retire with heavy losses from the position they had captured, and the Collingwood Battalion, which had gone forward in support, was almost completely destroyed.

Turks' deadly counter-attack

It looked as though the Turks were about to roll up the whole of our line, for when the Naval Brigade was compelled to retreat across the open, sloping fields under a terrible fire, the exposed flank of the Manchester Brigade was in turn caught by Turkish and German machine-guns, and swept by volleys of rifle fire, and then hammered by hostile bombing-parties. But the Manchester men—nearly all of them Territorials—fought with bulldog courage to hold what they had won. There were places in which one Lancashire man resisted every force that the enemy could bring to bear upon him. Company-Sergeant-Major Hay, having captured single-handed a redoubt near

Digitized by Google

Krithia, held it for ten hours with four men until he was relieved. Company-Sergeant-Major Alister killed eight Turks and cleared a trench. But probably the best fighter of all was Private Richardson, who fought on alone in a trench south of Krithia for nearly twenty-four hours, and beat back every hostile assault.

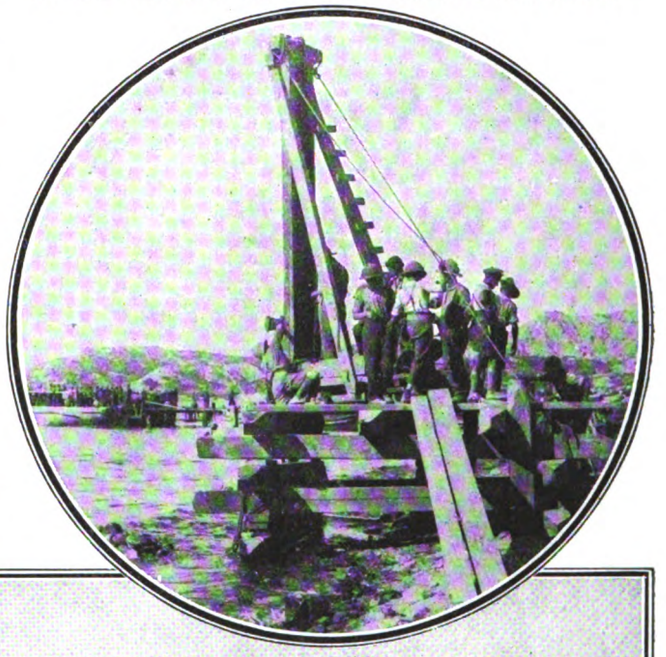
The fighting around Krithia in the afternoon of June 4th, 1915, was a matter upon which every Territorial can look back with deep pride. The Manchester Brigade equalled the finest exploits of the old Regular Army. They answered the attack on their flank by throwing back their right wing; and such was their desperate courage that Sir Ian Hamilton could not bear to let them retire. Their position was one of extreme peril, for they were surrounded on two sides, and the Turks were making a sustained and furious effort to drive across the salient and cut off the brigade. So the British Commander-in-Chief formed up the Naval Division, and asked General Gouraud to co-operate in making an attack that should advance the right of our line, and connect and protect the flank of the Manchester men. But the French corps was itself still in great difficulties. Twice the attack was postponed at the request of General Gouraud, and at half-past six in the evening he reported that the pressure of the Turkish masses against him was so heavy that he could not advance.

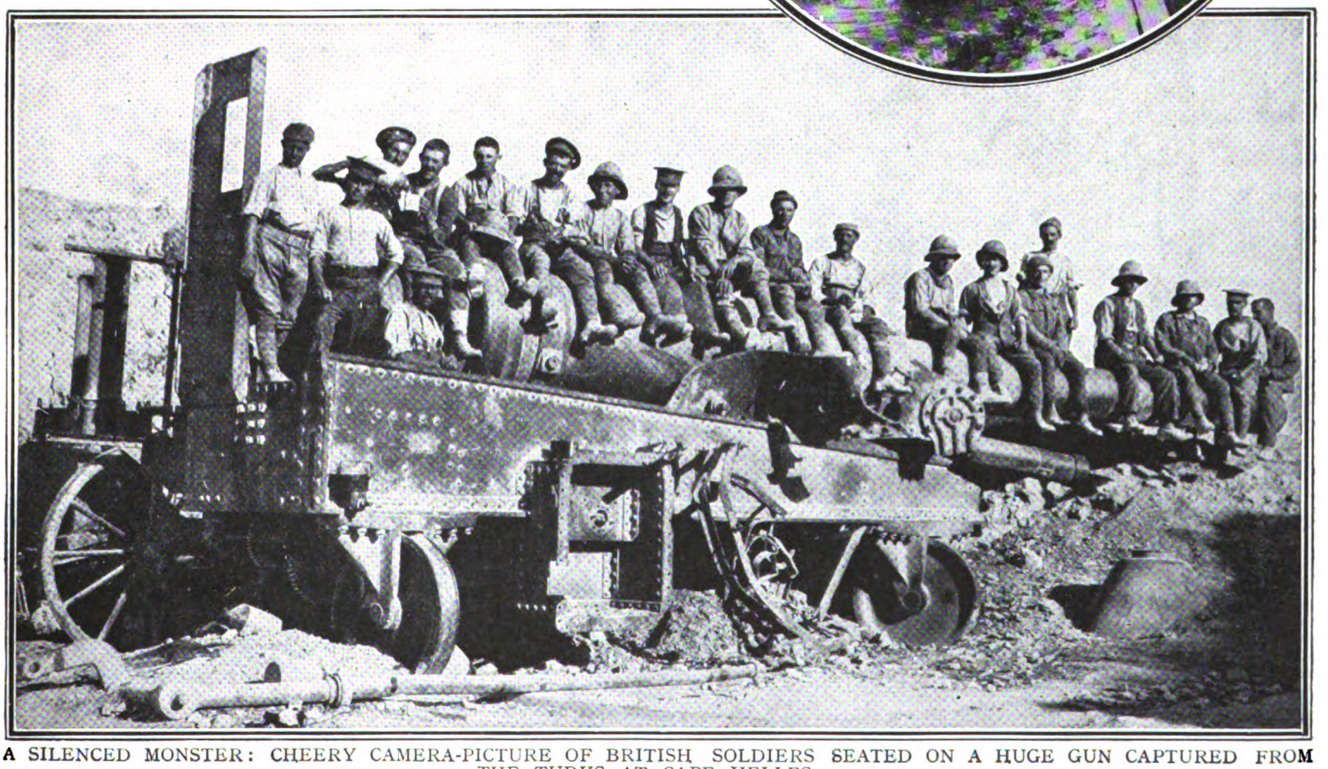
Manchesters' great exploit

Nothing remained but to withdraw the Manchester men from the second Turkish line which they were holding to the first Turkish line. The troops were very angry, and some of them desired to stay on and die rather than give up any of the ground they had won. But after much persuasion all the East Lancashire Division was extricated from the second line of captured trenches, and placed back in the Turkish firing-line, which they had won in five minutes at the beginning of their attack. The net result of the day's operations was an advance on a depth of two hundred to four hundred yards, along a front of nearly three miles. It was less than had been hoped for, but it was still a very considerable gain. Not only was there a substantial and very useful extension of ground, but the Turks were so severely punished that, though flushed with the victory of regaining their second line, they had not enough spirit



IN THE ENEMY'S TRENCHES: TURKISH PRISONERS





A SILENCED MONSTER: CHEERY CAMERA-PICTURE OF BRITISH SOLDIERS SEATED ON A HUGE GUN CAPTURED FROM THE TURKS AT CAPE HELLES.
In circle: Pile-driving on one of the beaches of the Gallipoli Peninsula.

Digitized by Google

left to attempt a counter-attack to recover their firing-trenches and forward machine-gun redoubts. Four hundred prisoners were taken, including five German officers, who were the remnant of a machine-gun party from the Goeben. Most of the captures were made by the Lancashire Territorials, whose capable divisional commander was Major-General W. Douglas.

Throughout the month of June the opposing fronts clashed in incessant local attacks and counter-attacks. Many deeds of fine daring and skill were done, such as that which Sergeant Friend, of the 1st Border Regiment, carried out near Krithia on June 9th. At the head of a small party he took a trench at the point of the bayonet and then shattered with hand-bombs the squads of Turks that tried to recover the position. Every battalion on the Gallipoli Peninsula will be able to fill a book with the tale of its adventures during the wearing trench warfare in the broken, mountainous, arid, barren tongue of land which cut off Russia from her western Allies, and prevented the trade in munitions and wheat to the Black Sea ports.

Here we can only mention some of the larger gains made by the allied troops. General Gouraud was not the kind of man to rest under the loss of the Haricot Redoubt. This maze of trenches and communicating saps, with its machine-gun emplacements, commanded the top of the ravine of Kereves Dere, and threw a deadly enfilading fire along the allied front. It had to be captured. So at dawn on June 21st the French commander launched both of his divisions against the Kereves ridge. The 1st Division, forming the right wing, stormed through a Turkish advanced trench, only to be counter-attacked and driven out; for the German engineers had arranged a fanwork of saps by which the Turks could advance safely through shell fire and continually reinforce the fighting-line. Meanwhile the 2nd Division had driven through two Turkish lines and recaptured the Haricot fort. When their comrades on the right retired, the Turks took the victors of the Haricot position on their flank, and got them in a position similar to that in which the Manchester Brigade had been caught. But the French would not give up their Haricot conquest, and while they were hanging on desperately, General Gouraud sent his 1st Division up again in assault after assault. Just as the sky was shading over at evening, some of the latest recruits of the French Army, striplings of the new drafts, fought their way up the ridge with the impassioned courage of youth, and in ten minutes captured six hundred yards of the enemy's trenches. There were Zouaves and men of the Foreign Legion in the two victorious battalions, but these veterans were the first to praise the lads of the 1915 class. All the night the Turks counter-attacked, and their violent efforts to return into the Haricot Redoubt did not cease till June 23rd, by which time some seven thousand of them lay dead or wounded in front of the French firing-line. The French losses were heavy, amounting to two thousand five hundred men, but they had gained a very important position, and had annihilated the best part of a Turkish division.

Important French gain

Turkish division cut up

After this blow against the Turkish left on the ridge overlooking the Strait, it was the turn of Lieutenant-General Hunter-Weston to hammer at the enemy's right on the cliff overlooking the open sea. The Turks had all along held with great tenacity to the coast, where their position was one of extraordinary strength, owing to the deep ravine running between Krithia and the sea.



"OFFICE" OF THE COMMANDANT OF THE ADVANCED BASE AT SUVLA BAY.

British officers are seen resting under an awning of sand-bags, with which this unconventional "office" had been protected. Overhead, soldiers are passing on to duty along an improvised bridge.

Digitized by Google



"VIVE LA FRANCE!" ENTHUSIASTIC FRENCH TROOPS ON THEIR WAY TO THE DARDANELLES.

Near the shore the Turks had a formidable system of five lines, prolonged inland by two trenches. The ravine, the famous Gully Ravine, stretching inland in the neighbourhood of Gurkha Bluff and twisting in a north-eastern trend between overhanging hills, was two hundred feet high in places, and covered with thick green undergrowth. There was good water in the ravine, which increased its value. Therefore the Turks held to it with all their might. General Hunter-Weston drew up a scheme of attack, the feature of which was a peculiar pivoting movement, and he put it into action on the morning of June 28th. His design was to hold the enemy at a spot about a mile from the coast, and, on this pivoting point, swing his left flank upwards and through the Turkish positions.

The movement began by the Border Regiment rushing a redoubt known as the Boomerang, when the wire entanglements had been smashed by a brief, intense burst of gun fire. A few minutes afterwards the 87th Brigade stormed three lines of Turkish trenches, while the Royal Scots advanced and took the two trenches in front of them. Then, as this first British wave spread out and flattened over the conquered ground, the 86th Brigade, led by the 2nd Royal Welsh Fusiliers, pushed through the three lines captured by their comrades and bayoneted the Turks out of their last two lines of trenches. It took scarcely more than half an hour for the two brigades—all veterans of the indomitable 29th Division—to carry all the five Turkish lines, and their swift hammer-stroke was consummated by the success of the Indian Brigade, which secured a spur running into the sea from the rearmost Turkish trench. The gully, with its solid hedge of barbed-wire was not attacked until the high ground on either side was won. Then the barbed fence was left uninjured, to hold back the Turks in the ravine, who were hurled down and trapped by their own defences. Altogether the enemy was driven back along the coast for a thousand yards, enabling our left flank to be firmly based high up the coast, and preventing any enfilading fire against our centre. The importance of the advance was seen by the way in which Ali Riza Pasha, the commander at Achi Baba, and his superior Giaour commander, Liman von Sanders, regarded it. For many nights and days they launched the Turkish infantry from Achi Baba in heavy counter-attacks, until the best part of another Turkish division was vainly destroyed.



GENERAL SARRAIL.

Commander-in-Chief of the French Army in the Near East. Organised the brilliant defence of the Verdun sector at the time of the Battle of the Marne. Succeeded General Gouraud at the Dardanelles in August, 1915, when that gallant officer was seriously wounded.

Enver Pasha became angry at the fruitless results of all the efforts made by the German Commander-in-Chief and the local Turkish pashas. The very violent Young Turk, who was busy arranging for the slaughter of the entire Armenian nation in a manner unknown to the world since the days of the Assyrians, apparently thought that the Christian general in Gallipoli was too sparing of the lives of Turkish soldiers. Enver Pasha had risen to power by a ferocious energy of will which made him a very formidable fighter of the old Turkish school. He was ready to surpass Hindenburg in using up cannon fodder to gain a single tactical point; and on June 29th he made an attempt to overwhelm the attacking troops by weight and pressure of numbers, and to fling them into the sea. Coming into the Peninsula at the head of large reinforcements, he delivered

Digitized by Google

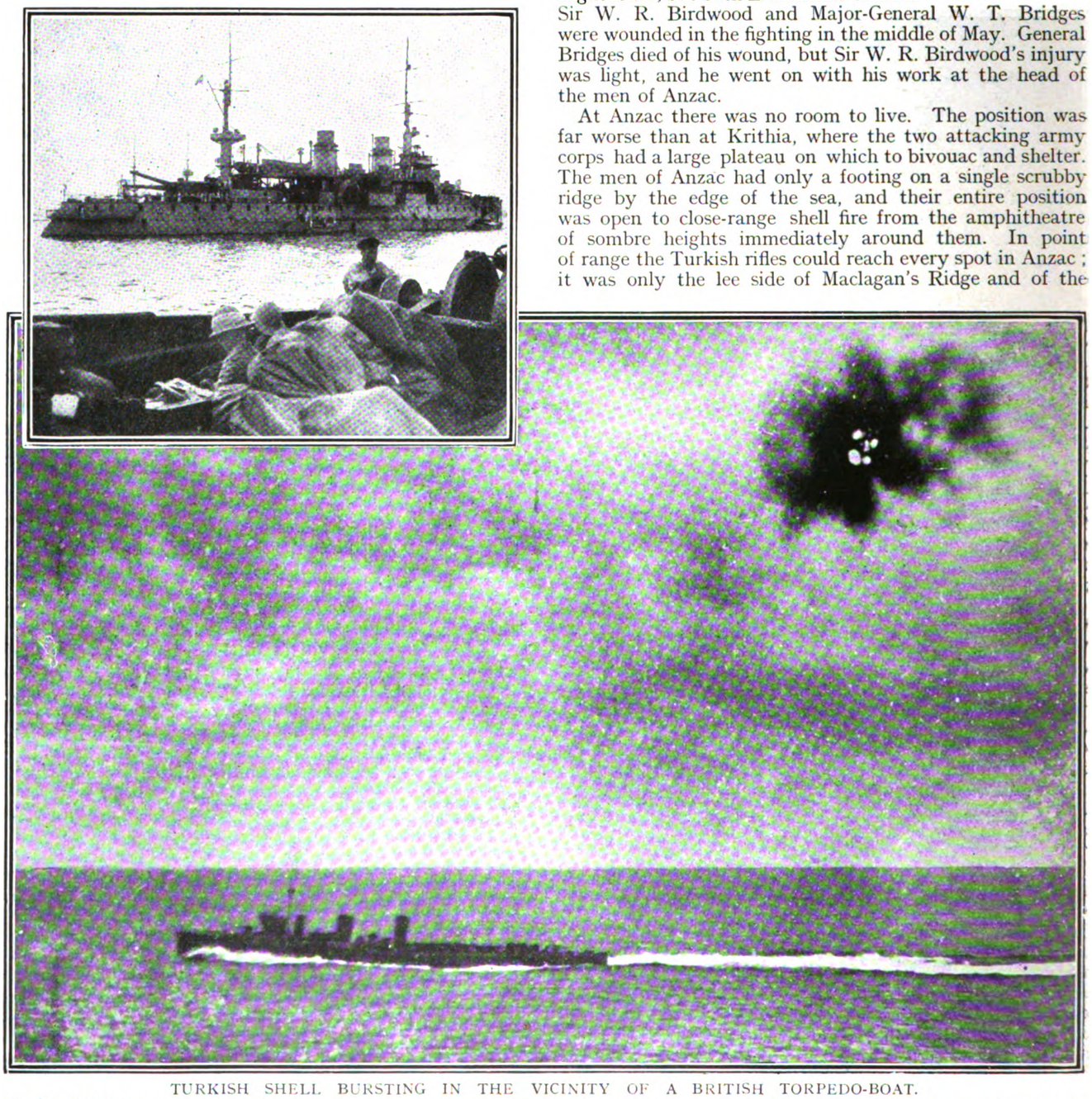
his first blow on the Australian and New Zealand Army Corps. He did not, however, deliver a second blow in the south, as he had designed. The men of Anzac taught him a lesson that made him sympathise at last with the position of Liman von Sanders, Ali Riza Pasha, and Essad Pasha.

Anzacs' offensive defensive

The Australasians were perched upon the cliff below Sari Bair, where their immediate purpose was to hold up as large an enemy force as possible, thus lessening the pressure on the Eighth Army Corps and the French Army Corps along the Krithia front. They also kept open the gateway to the vitals of the Turkish positions along the Strait, but the British commander designed this rather as a demonstration than a serious line of attack. As Sir Ian Hamilton remarked in his despatch, the Australians and New Zealanders were not able to fulfil the part allotted to them and play second fiddle to their comrades round Krithia. Their dare-devil spirit would not let them rest on the defensive, and from the moment they landed they protected themselves by attacking and continuing to attack. Their position round Anzac Cove was a rough semicircle, with a radius of about 1,100 yards. The farthest point was Quinn's Post, consisting of ledges on the brink of a precipice, falling for two hundred feet almost plumb to the valley below. The Turkish line was only a few feet away, and, by a surprise attack, an enemy brigade captured some of the fire trenches on the ledge on May 10th. But the Australians sold the ground dearly, as was discovered later from the diary of a Turkish officer. He wrote that the Turkish losses round Quinn's Post on the day in question were six hundred killed and two thousand wounded. Compared with these figures, an unsuccessful sortie by the Australians at Quinn's Post, which resulted in seventy casualties, was a slight affair, but both Lieutenant-General Sir W. R. Birdwood and Major-General W. T. Bridges were wounded in the fighting in the middle of May. General Bridges died of his wound, but Sir W. R. Birdwood's injury was light, and he went on with his work at the head of the men of Anzac.

Two Generals wounded

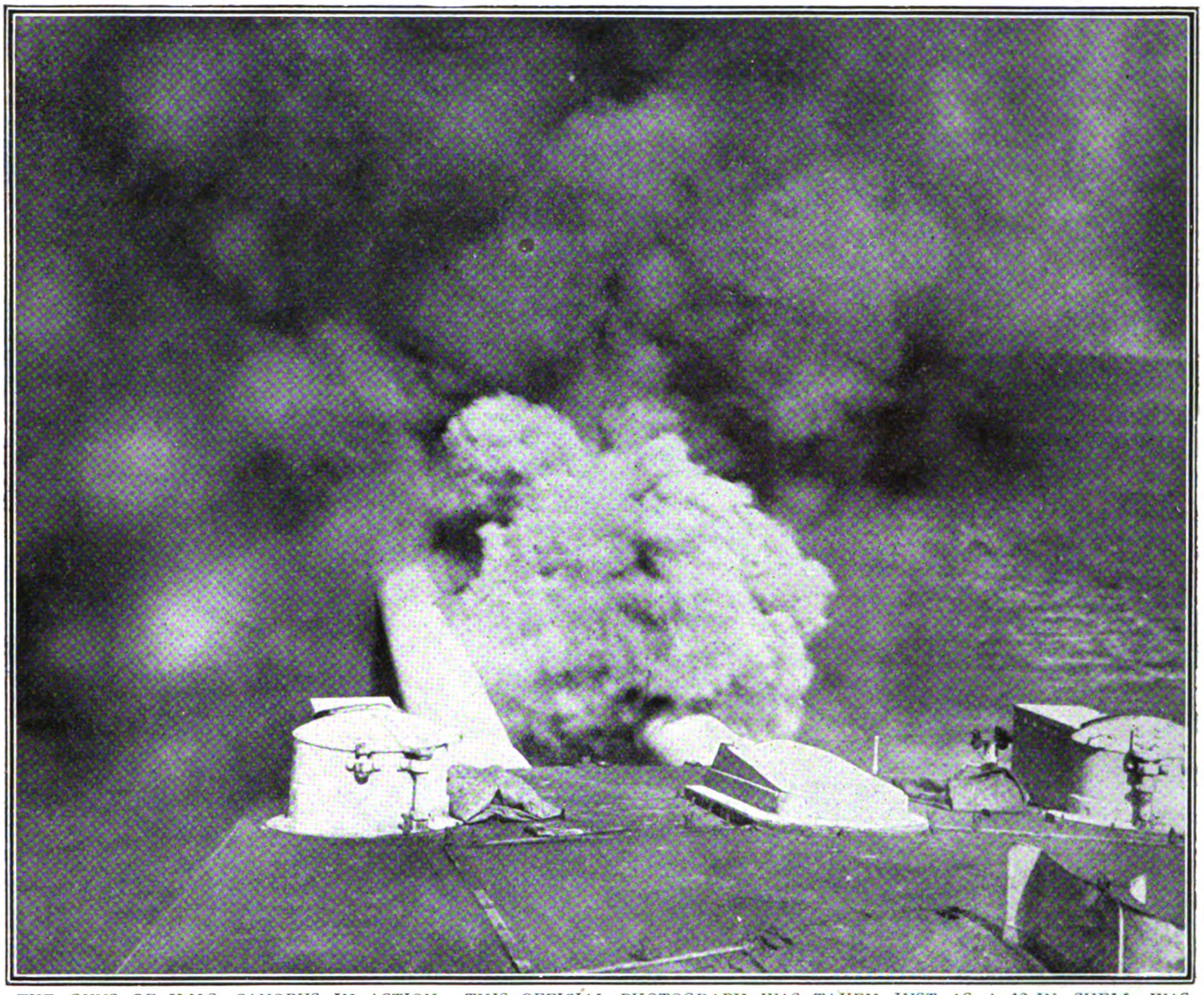
At Anzac there was no room to live. The position was far worse than at Krithia, where the two attacking army corps had a large plateau on which to bivouac and shelter. The men of Anzac had only a footing on a single scrubby ridge by the edge of the sea, and their entire position was open to close-range shell fire from the amphitheatre of sombre heights immediately around them. In point of range the Turkish rifles could reach every spot in Anzac; it was only the lee side of Maclagan's Ridge and of the



TURKISH SHELL BURSTING IN THE VICINITY OF A BRITISH TORPEDO-BOAT.

The missile fell between the torpedo-boat and a transport, happily without doing any harm to either. The smaller view is of a French warship in the Dardanelles.

Digitized by Google



THE GUNS OF H.M.S. CANOPUS IN ACTION. THIS OFFICIAL PHOTOGRAPH WAS TAKEN JUST AS A 12 IN. SHELL WAS ON ITS WAY TO THE TURKISH BATTERIES ON SHORE.

neighbouring lower fall of cliff by the water's edge that saved the men from direct fire. The enemy's howitzer batteries could pitch their shells everywhere in Anzac, and the Turkish and German guns, operating on the mountains, had an easy plunging fire on nearly all the trenches. As many as 1,400 shells an hour fell at times on Anzac, the calibre of the projectiles ranging from 11 in. high-explosive to 3 in. field shrapnel.

Gun fire, however, could not dislodge the southern pioneer races of the British Empire, so on May 18th General Liman von Sanders came to Sari Bair and used 30,000 troops in an attempt to close the gateway to the Narrows. After a heavy bombardment, lasting twenty hours, the German Commander-in-Chief launched, before dawn on May 19th, a great infantry attack against the left flank and centre of Anzac. Six waves of Turkish infantry were broken by the New Zealanders and Australians by sunrise, and the men on the right flank at Quinn's Post and Courtney's Post, both south-west of the main masses of Sari Bair, also repulsed furious attacks on our right flank.

Great enemy attack broken

Then at five o'clock in the morning, when the air cleared, a large additional number of enemy guns, of 12 in. and 9·2 in. calibre, intensified the cannonade, and after four and a half hours of fighting the Turkish infantry on our right flank began to press hard against Courtney's and Quinn's Posts. This vehement attack, however, was so severely handled by the Australians on our right that the column swung away and tried to advance towards the left. But again it was caught by our machine-gun fire and gusts of shrapnel, and the Turks at last drew back beyond Quinn's Post at eleven o'clock in the morning, and gave way in their crowded trenches under the searching fire from our artillery.

The men of Anzac had only a hundred killed and five hundred wounded, while, plainly visible in front of their trenches, were thousands of dead Turks. They had put out of action at least half the assaulting force, and a few days afterwards the Turks asked for a suspension of arms to remove their dead. Sir W. R. Birdwood was not the kind of man to be tricked in this manner. He ordered all his trenches to be strongly manned by way of preparing for the truce, and laid his guns, each with a large store of shrapnel, on the field of slaughter.

Treachery well punished

On the night of May 20th the Turkish stretcher-bearers advanced to collect their dead and wounded, and behind the ambulance men was a line of disarmed soldiers who came forward with upheld arms. Our searchlights played on the extraordinary spectacle, and suddenly the stretcher-bearers drew back; the men who wished to surrender fell flat, all the Turkish artillery opened a furious cannonade, and after several feints the Turkish infantry charged once more on Quinn's Post. But none of them reached it; a curtain of shrapnel descended in front of the Australian position, and no Turk got alive through the rain of death. In the morning the local Turkish commander on Sari Bair, Essad Pasha, renewed the negotiations for the burial of his dead, and in daylight on May 24th some 3,000 Turkish corpses were buried near or removed from the Anzac front, in order

Digitized by Google



BRITISH SUBMARINE E 5 IN THE HANDS OF THE ENEMY: A STRIKING WAR PHOTOGRAPH FROM THE TURKISH SIDE.

While attempting a difficult reconnaissance of the Kephez mine-field in the Dardanelles on the morning of April 18th, 1915, the E15 (Lieut.-Commander Theodore Stuart Brodie) ran ashore on Kephez Point. According to Turkish official accounts, the captain and two others were killed and seven wounded by fire from the shore batteries, but three officers and twenty-one of the crew were rescued and made prisoners of war, the wounded being taken to hospital. The stranded vessel was afterwards torpedoed and rendered useless through a most gallant night exploit by two picket-boats from H.M.S. Majestic and Triumph.

Digitized by Google

to improve the sanitary condition of the ground between the opposing armies.

Fighting went on in the neighbourhood of Quinn's Post for the next five weeks, and then, on the night of June 29th, Enver Pasha arrived at Sari Bair, and endeavoured to show Liman von Sanders and Essad Pasha the way to deal with the men of Anzac. Enver was quite up to date in his artillery tactics. His gunners carefully studied the range of our trenches in daylight, and at the unusual hour of midnight they illuminated the mountain-sides and the trenches of Anzac by a sudden bombardment of overwhelming intensity in the Neuve Chapelle and Gorlice manner. Every gun or howitzer was worked as quickly as possible for an hour and a half, and all the Turkish trenches were tipped with darts of flame from the rifles of the infantry, and with the steadier blazes of the machine-guns.

Enver's expensive impetuosity

Only twelve hours before, during General Hunter-Weston's drive along Gully Ravine, near Krithia, the enemy batteries on Achi Baba had seemed to be short of ammunition; but it was patent that, at Sari Bair at least, Enver Pasha had hurried from Constantinople with large fresh supplies of shells and charges, in addition to his reinforcement of thirty more battalions of new troops. Yet the unexpected bombardment at Anzac did not produce on our well-constructed deep trenches and dug-outs the effect intended. The defect of Enver was that he acted on hearsay, and had none of the practical experience of the man whom he admired. It was Mackensen, with his Grand Phalanx effects, whom the fantastically brutal Young Turk wished to imitate. But he did not control at Sari Bair 2,000 or more guns, he had not 3,000,000 shells accumulated by his batteries, and, moreover, the men of Anzac, with their superb physique and ingenious minds, had been working like navvies of genius for more than two months, making their trenches, communicating ditches, and shelters into a great fortress system.

Enver, merely working on theory in the flame-shot darkness of the tongue of mountain land, packed his troops in German fashion in dense columns and launched them at the New Zealanders and Australians after ninety minutes of blindly vigorous gun fire. The outcome of the Young Turk's generalship, by which he had boasted beforehand that he would sweep all the British into the sea, must have produced a sense of ironic satisfaction in the hearts of Liman von Sanders and Essad Pasha. For each heavy column of Turks was shattered before it reached the Anzac trenches. First the troops under Major-General Sir A. J. Godley knocked a great column to pieces simply by musketry and machine-gun fire. All our guns were laid on their targets, but they did not come at once into operation, as Sir W. R. Birdwood wanted to encourage the enemy to come on and be killed, instead of frightening him away before the battle was fully joined.

It was not until the grand Turkish attack was launched, on a wide, deep front, against both our centre and our left, that our artillerymen gave Enver a striking lesson in the art of stopping infantry. Under the ghostly radiance of our searchlights, the dense formations of Turkish troops were splashed with shrapnel, bursting in starry radiance above their heads, and mowed down in swathes by the sweeping fire of machine-guns, leaving just broken, staggering lines of men to be felled singly by the riflemen of Australia and New Zealand. The conflict scarcely lasted an hour, and by half-past two in the morning of June 30th none of Enver's men remained in the open ground between the trenches. Out at sea our destroyers had caught them with an enfilading fire; our heavy howitzers had torn great holes in the columns, while our field-guns swept the charging multitudes with direct fire.

The Turk displayed remarkable bravery of a characteristically apathetic kind. He came on, tall and vigorous, with fixed bayonet, apparently quite indifferent to death. On the other hand, little or no organised use was made of this personal attitude of courage of the enemy private. There was no science in the leadership of the company officers. Before each attack the battalions were massed under cover of some rising ground or shrub; but when the mass emerged for the bayonet charge against our position, it seemed more a mediæval swarm of fighting men than a modern military machine. No regular formation was apparent, and no telling manœuvre under fire produced any surprise effect. The men advanced rather slowly, with nothing of the enthusiasm of a dervish charge, and when the mass swayed to one side, the swerving was merely a mob movement along the line of least resistance.

This was not the way in which the Ottoman advanced of old from Asia Minor into the Balkans, overthrowing the Byzantine Empire, conquering Hungary, and laying siege to Vienna. The individual Turk, and in particular the Anatolian peasant and the Mussulman of Macedonia, still proved himself a first-class fighting man. At times he quite enjoyed a man-to-man tussle with the bayonet,



TYPE OF SENEGALESE SOLDIERS WHO FOUGHT WITH THE FRENCH TROOPS IN THE DARDANELLES CAMPAIGN.

having a sturdy build of body that enabled him to stand up to the tall cattlemen and sheep-farmers of Australasia. There were one or two Turkish giants who put up a magnificent fight. The Turk was also a good man with the hand-bomb, which is a weapon that requires nerve and presence of mind in the men who constantly use it. None of our troops despised their opponents. On the contrary, they were often loud in praise of the gallantry of their foes. It was lack of food that had made the Turk seem but a vanishing ghost of himself when the three Bulgarian armies closed upon him in 1912. Even then he had held up the Bulgarians along the Chatalja lines, and in the security of the German-constructed trenches of the Gallipoli Peninsula, in 1915, he became still more formidable.

Fighting qualities of the Turks

Owing to poor training and bad officering, he could not manœuvre efficiently in the open field; but trench warfare, with its sense of security and stability of position, suited the fatalistic temperament of the Turk, and enabled him to display his individual fighting power and laborious energy. He sapped well, like most peasants accustomed from boyhood to the use of the spade, and being guided in his work by brilliant and experienced German engineers, he made the utmost of the tremendous natural advantages he

Digitized by Google

possessed on mountain slopes, with an almost impregnable line of communication behind him.

In front of Krithia and Achi Baba the laborious Turk constructed by the end of June the finest modern fortress in existence. It was a network of trenches and earthwork forts, all protected by barbed-wire, and linked by saps and communication trenches. No infantry could storm the position, because all the works and all the approaches, including the embarkation beaches, were swept by a cross-fire of artillery from the commanding heights of Achi Baba and from mobile batteries working near In Tepe, on the Asiatic shore, close to the buried ruins of Troy.

Sir Ian Hamilton had not sufficient men or sufficient heavy howitzers and high-explosive shell to tear through the lines around Achi Baba. Still less did he possess, in the region dominated by the higher peak of Sari Bair, the means of forcing his way across the five miles of broken rock and dense shrub to the forts guarding the Narrows. His position for the time was one of stalemate, in a case where stalemate meant defeat, and such a defeat as would shake the prestige of British rule in certain parts of the world at a critical moment in our history. Britain, as the greatest of Mohammedan Powers, had chosen to make a diversion from the decisive field of battle with the Germans, and measure in a land campaign a small part of her military forces against the main armies of the chief independent Mohammedan empire in which the Caliphate resided. We had entered upon this tremendously important, and yet only secondary conflict, with a view to accelerating the forward sweeping movement which Russia was making at the time. Meanwhile, Russia had spent all the energy of her spring, and had been thrown back and hammered out of position after position, so that all her power of offensive was destroyed for a considerable time to come. The army which she had intended to land north of Constantinople to co-operate in the allied attack upon the waterway between the Mediterranean and the Black Sea, was unable to carry out its part of the enveloping movement. King Constantine had decided against any participation by Greece in the campaign. Sir Ian Hamilton was left, after three months of fierce, incessant fighting, with a small wasted army, nominally consisting of three army corps, in a desperate, exposed position at the foot of two scientifically-fortified heights, and surrounded by a sea subjected to violent gales likely at times to interrupt communications with the shore.

A position of stalemate

Larger force asked for

Sir Ian Hamilton asked for a larger force, and the Dardanelles Committee in Downing Street managed at last to arrange for the despatch of modest reinforcements, which would arrive at Mudros base by about the middle of August. In the meantime the British commander had to keep the enemy in check, and so daunt him by constant attacks as to reduce him to a defensive attitude. In spite of lack of science and skill in Enver Pasha, the brute had the sound instinct of the born fighter. He was a better leader than Nazim Pasha, whom he had assassinated, and his feeling in the matter of the general strategy on the Gallipoli Peninsula was correct. Had he had his way, he would have continually fought us, using up Turkish recruits in ghastly multitudes, with the aim of driving us into the sea. It was the right method, though he tried it in person in a clumsy way. But fortunately for the Allies, the German commander and his Turkish subordinates preferred the prudent and more economical plan

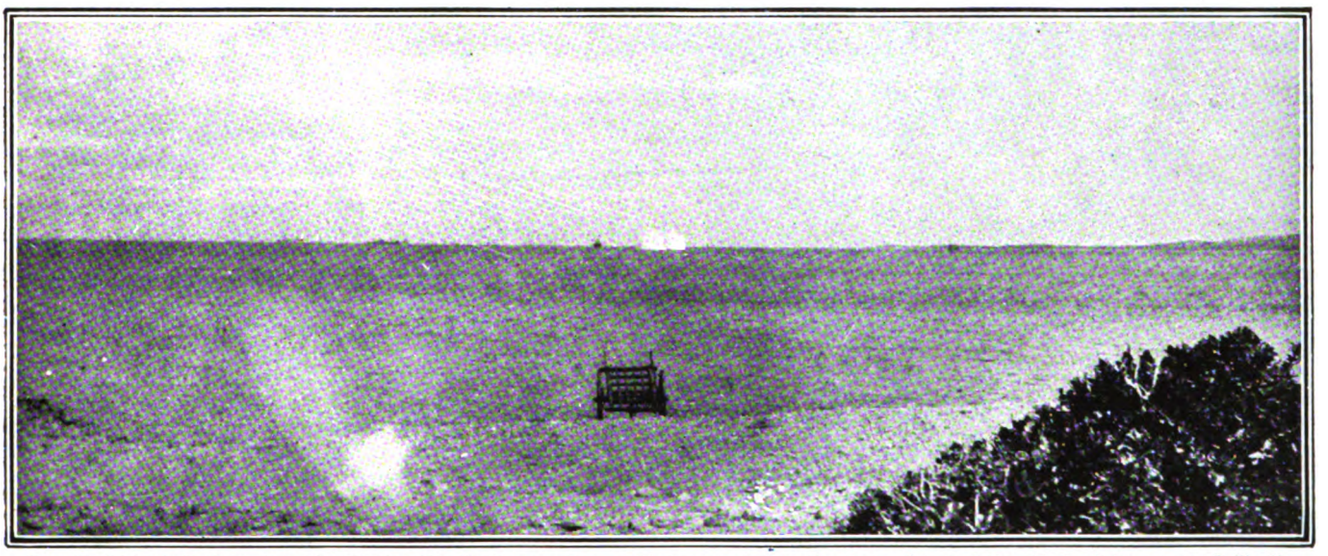


ON THE QUAY AT ALEXANDRIA: PREPARATIONS FOR EMBARKATION.
The transport B.7 and other vessels are seen in the background, while kits and other military impedimenta are being collected by the quayside, in readiness for shipment to the Dardanelles.

Digitized by Google



Turkish shells bursting among the New Zealanders while the gallant Anzacs were resting behind the trenches on Walker's Ridge.

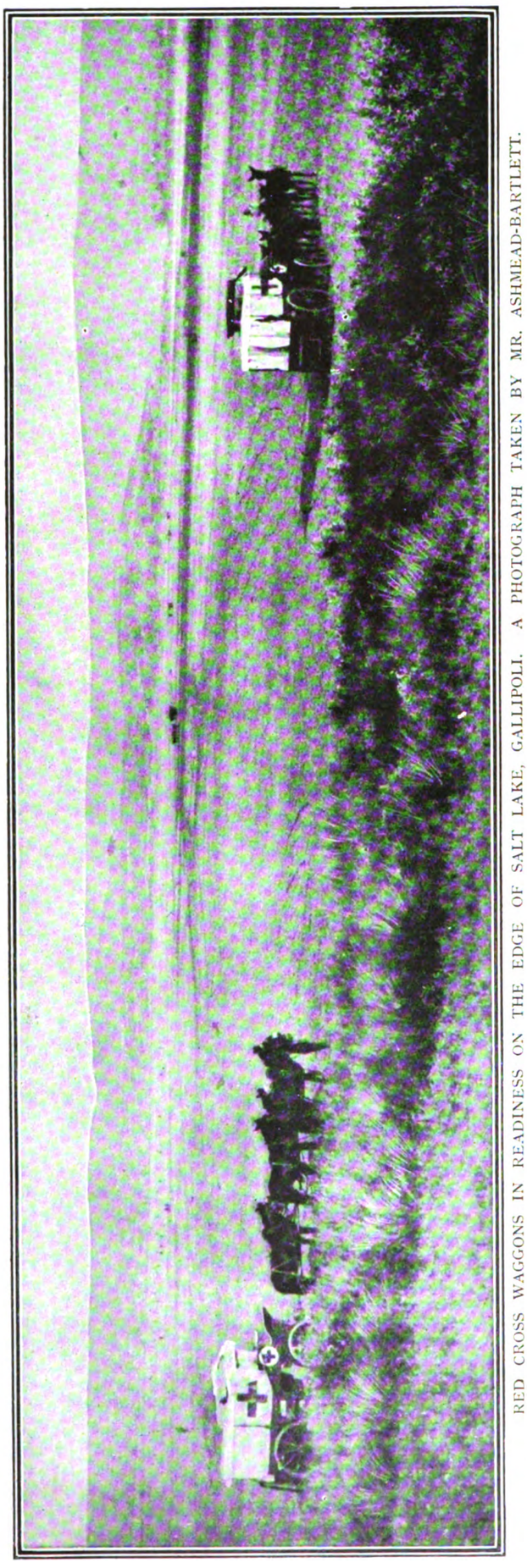


Two Turkish shells fired from the Dardanelles Strait over the positions occupied by the Australian and New Zealand troops on Gallipoli.



Picturesque view of the dug-outs occupied by men of the Indian Mountain Battery on Gallipoli.

Digitized by Google



RED CROSS WAGGONS IN READINESS ON THE EDGE OF SALT LAKE, GALLIPOLI. A PHOTOGRAPH TAKEN BY MR. ASHMEAD-BARTLETT.

of remaining entrenched in a defensive attitude, and letting the British, Australasian, and French troops run the expense of the offensive movements. And as Enver Pasha had failed badly in his own experiment at Anzac, he could not make out a clear case for his instinctive bias towards incessant attack.

While the Turco-German command was debating and hesitating, General Gouraud with the French Army Corps made another leap forward. After the advance on Kereves Dere on June 21st, the enemy had counter-attacked in a desperate fashion day and night for a week, winning only a transient footing between two of the lost trenches. The Turks, who recaptured the lines by a violent night assault, were surrounded at daybreak and either slain or taken prisoners. All the hostile effort to recover the ground slackened completely by June 30th, and at this sign of weakening in his foes, General Gouraud struck out again.

General Gouraud badly wounded

At early morn on June 30th the French left wing charged under cover of massed gun fire and stormed a subterranean fortress at the head of Kereves Dere, known as the Quadrilateral. It consisted of seven deeply-cut lines, connected by shrapnel-proof communications and defended by machine-guns. Some platoons of the Colonial infantry swept over their objective in the vehemence of their movement, and drove some hundreds of yards beyond it. They were encircled, but they fought their way back to the Quadrilateral with but slight loss. In the afternoon came the inevitable Turkish counter-attack against their lost redoubt, but despite the large mass of troops employed by the enemy commander, he won back no ground, and his forces were so severely punished that the customary nocturnal counter-attack was not delivered.

In the evening, however, the allied forces suffered a serious disaster; for General Gouraud was badly injured in both legs by a shell as he came out of his quarters to speak to some of the wounded conquerors of the Quadrilateral. The general had won the high admiration of both French and British troops. He was a noble brother-in-arms to Major-General Paris, the commander of the Naval Division that connected with the left French wing, and to Lieut.-General Hunter-Weston, who directed the operations round Krithia. Sir Ian Hamilton was profoundly perturbed by the serious injuries to the hero of the Argonne battles, who had become, by reason of his driving power and ingenuity in attack, a main pillar of the allied operations. When General Gouraud returned to France, sadly disabled, General Joffre picked out another first-rate commander, General Sarrail, the defender of Verdun, to lead the French Corps in Gallipoli. But, in the meantime, fate again proved unkind to the British Commander-in-Chief, for Lieut.-General Hunter-Weston was incapacitated by illness, and compelled to relinquish the command of the Eighth Army Corps.

In the Turkish camp, where the leaders were sheltered behind the great hills, there were few or no disasters to the directing centres of the armies, such as occurred among the British and French headquarters at both Anzac and Krithia. But the losses among the Turkish regiments were tremendous, and this led to fierce dissensions among the Turkish and German Staffs. Enver Pasha in turn censured both his Moslem and Giaour military chiefs in the Peninsula, and at the beginning of July, 1915, he made in person another attempt to fulfil his threat to drive the invading forces into the sea. Leaving the invincible men of Anzac to Essad Pasha, Enver went to the south of the Peninsula with ten thousand new levies from Asia, and a great banner was hoisted on Achi Baba to announce his arrival. The local general was still opposed to any attempt to recover the lost ground, and wanted merely to strengthen the trenches and await the next Franco-British advance.

Turco-German dissensions

But Enver Pasha would not allow any delay. In his hands were all the threads of Turco-German intrigue in

Digitized by Google



WATCHING AN ATTACK ON SEDDUL BAHR.
Officers on the look-out in a French trench.

the Balkans, and he badly needed a victory in order to induce Bulgaria to mobilise against Serbia, and open the munitioning route between Berlin and Vienna and Constantinople. The Turks had more men than they could arm, and their supplies of shells and smokeless powder were none too large. The Rumanians were inclined to block the way, and only the Bulgarians were open to a Turco-German alliance. King Ferdinand was convinced that he had nothing to fear from Russia, and he was beginning to think that the Franco-British operations in the Dardanelles region would be sufficiently ineffective to leave him free to use his Army, in connection with a large Teutonic force from the Danube, to win the definite mastery of the Balkans. But the old, shrewd, cynical, plotting Coburger of Sofia wanted to feel absolutely certain of success before he launched his thunderbolt. His previous resounding failure against Serbia and Greece in 1913 made him extremely cautious. He was afraid that the Franco-British expedition might achieve enough success to impress the Greek people, or induce the British and French Governments to make another landing near Karachali, and threaten the Turkish railway line running from Constantinople through Sofia, and thence connecting with the Teutonic Empire.

Gallipoli and the Balkans

Enver Pasha, therefore, had to show King Ferdinand that the attacking forces in the Gallipoli Peninsula could be driven back with such heavy losses as would maim Britain and France in at least their secondary field of war. The Young Turk delivered his attack from Achi Baba on the night of July 4th, 1915. There was the customary artillery preparation by the batteries on the European and Asiatic shores of the Dardanelles. Fire was opened on the first lines of the British and French troops, and curtained off the support trenches with a rain of shrapnel. The men of Anzac were also kept occupied by a furious bombardment, in which a ship of the Barbarossa class stationed in the Narrows assisted. The battle began about three o'clock in the morning of July 5th, and a squadron of German aeroplanes, with a black Prussian cross marked on their grey ground, joined in the attack by bomb-dropping. But despite this luxury in the preparatory means of



FRENCH STAFF OFFICERS IN A ROCK SHELTER.
Three Chiefs of the General Headquarters Staff of the French Army taking part in the Dardanelles operations.

shaking the allied line, the infantry charges that followed were strangely feeble.

There was a desultoriness and a slackness about the Turkish soldiers which were very remarkable. When the men left their trenches and surged forward against the British and French lines, they certainly held together with their old fatalistic stoicism. But in no section did they display the driving power and valour they had shown in previous combats. Possibly it was the raw new Asiatic levies who were thrown out to be slaughtered in the hope of wearing our men down. The German Staff, it will be remembered, adopted a similar method round Ypres in October, 1914, when they sacrificed the lives of tens of thousands of inexperienced half-trained recruits, with a view to tiring out our men and enabling their veteran soldiers, held in reserve, to advance at last against the fatigued and sleepy defenders of the British trenches. But, in the event, as it was at Ypres so it was in the Chersonese of Thrace.

Raw levies sent to slaughter

Digitized by Google

Modern weapons of destruction. however, in the hands of steady, skilled men had quickened and facilitated the work of wholesale slaughter. The half-trained masses had scarcely any military value whatever against the scientific methods employed by steady veteran troops. The inexperienced Turkish levies were allowed to approach the British and French trenches, and were shot down almost at point-blank range. Very few of them were able to retire. The chief attack was made at the point where our Naval Division connected with the French Corps

Some fifty Turks gained a footing in one trench, only to be destroyed. The 29th Division wiped out their enemies by musketry and machine-gun fire, and along Gully Ravine, where the Turks massed in great force, they were broken by our naval guns and infantry volleys. By noon the battle ended. Not a single allied position had been seriously menaced, but the Turks lay in swathes in front of our lines. Our casualties were very light, being mainly due to a few Turkish high-explosive shells bursting exactly in the trenches. In the evening a large squadron of allied seaplanes circled above Krithia, in spite of the strong wind, and darted over the Strait to the town of Chanak, on the Asiatic shore. There the Germans had built their aerodrome, and the structure was bombed and set on fire as an answer to the bombing sally made by the German airmen early in the morning.



A HAPPY INTERLUDE.

A camera-picture that affords a happy relief to the tragic story of Gallipoli. Midshipmen on shore leave off for an afternoon's picnic.

The British submarine factor

By this time our submarines, having crept safely through the mine-fields in the Narrows, and established themselves firmly in the Sea of Marmora, began to exert an important effect upon the course of operations; for they seriously restricted the transport of troops from the Asiatic coast, and took to shelling the convoys and columns winding down along the road near the shore. Then on Monday, July 12th, Sir Ian Hamilton, pursuing his design to daunt the enemy, delivered another furious assault on the lines round Achi Baba. Our men had invented a new instrument of attack, consisting of an armoured motor-car, with iron hooks attached to short chains. The plan was for a number of these cars to dart towards the wire entanglements of the Turks and fling the great hooks over the obstacle, and then drive back at full speed, while using the guns against the troops defending the trenches. It was calculated that large gaps could thus be made in the hedges of metal thorns more quickly than the entanglements could be broken with shrapnel by field-guns.

Great assault round Achi Baba

The attack began in the usual way with a terrific bombardment, but, instead of throwing the shells all along the hostile front, the central fire control massed the fire on the enemy's centre, where a Territorial brigade flung out and, smashing through two of the enemy's lines, just reached the third Turkish position. Then the advanced troops were forced back, and as we failed to establish a connection with the French on our right, there was severe hand-to-hand fighting on the exposed flank. Meanwhile the French also stormed two strongly-fortified lines near Kereves Dere, and the combined attack drove the Turks on Achi Baba to a depth of some four hundred yards.

Naturally the Turkish commander concentrated for an attempt to win back the lost ground. As, however, his reserves came up the communicating trenches with their supplies of hand-bombs, our 29th Division rushed into action at an unexpected point. On the left of our front, just by the Achi Baba gully, the Turks had built a powerful rectangular redoubt, perched on the edge of the ravine, down which machine-guns were concealed. At four o'clock in the afternoon, when trench warfare was raging furiously on the centre and the right wing, all our available guns were suddenly turned on the Achi Baba nullah earthworks. Hundreds of high-explosive shells burst into trenches and saps, throwing up masses of earth, sand-bags, and wooden beams. The Turks scurried down the communicating trenches, but our gunners lengthened their fuses and smote the enemy's reserve positions, while a battleship pitched 12 in. shells on the Turkish observation station on the summit of Achi Baba, with the aim of upsetting Ali Riza Pasha's arrangements for directing the operation.

As the smoke was lifting from the battered nullah redoubt, a British brigade charged forward, and the enemy's batteries, which had silently been waiting for this movement, tried to counter it by smashing up the redoubt with shrapnel and explosive shell. The ground about the ravine steamed like an active volcano, but our men leapt through the tornado of death, and capturing the position, found what shelter they could in the twice-battered trenches. There was a considerable number of Turks taking shelter in dug-outs amid the earthworks, and so bravely did they stand their ground, with steel and hand-grenades, that it looked for a moment as if they would keep the position. But the Scotsmen who had made the charge continued their work with the bayonet, and after an underground fight of an hour and a half, all the works were captured.

Our artillery contributed greatly to this success. Throughout the furious combat, it maintained so thick a curtain of shrapnel that the Turkish reserves could not get into the fight. In this manner another four hundred yards of ground was won. In the night the Turks sought in all ways to avoid the anger of Enver Pasha by retrieving their defeat. Orders had been given that officers would be shot if they withdrew from a trench before losing their last man. The Turkish brigadier-generals varied their efforts to counter-attack. Some launched their infantry in bayonet charges, all of which were beaten back; others sent their men creeping up through the low scrub and the saps with girdles of bombs. These bombing parties were the most formidable of the assailants, and at the point where our right wing had advanced too far and got out of touch with the French left, a section of the trenches was recaptured by the Turkish bomb-throwers. But some French gunners swung up their "75's," and, using melinite shell, cleared a path for one of our Naval Brigades, and these keen young land seamen hacked their way into

Digitized by Google



FINE CAMERA-PICTURE OF A BRITISH TORPEDO-BOAT DESTROYER IN DARDANELLES WATERS.



KEEPING FIT FOR WORK ON SHORE: GENERAL BIRDWOOD, "THE SOUL OF ANZAC," TAKING A DIP IN THE SEA OFF GALLIPOLI.

Digitized by Google

the midst of the bomb-throwers and slew them. In order to further occupy the enemy the French general suddenly thrust out his extreme right wing, and made the important tactical gain of all the ground right down to the mouth of the River Kereves Dere, where it runs into the sea.

The Allies' only gain

During these operations the French Corps took two hundred prisoners, and the British Corps two hundred and twenty-two. All these small local successes, however, together with the increasing activity of our submarines, did not have any important effect upon the general position. The loss of men in the Turkish camp was enormous, and throughout the Ottoman Empire recruits of the 1910 class had to be called out to meet the extraordinary wastage. But the enemy's main works of defence, which protected the forts along the Dardanelles, were as strong as they had been three months before. In fact, their strength had been increased. The only gain to the Allies was that the Turks' ammunition was being exhausted by the heavy fighting, and the contraband trade in munitions through Rumania and Bulgaria was partly checked by the action of the Rumanian Government. It looked as though we should win through owing to the fact that Turkey was an empire of semi-barbaric peasants, whose leaders had lacked the initiative and the intelligence necessary to found the highly-developed technical industries needed in every country that wished to sustain a long war. A thousand or two skilled German workmen came with their machine tools from Essen to Constantinople to make shells for the defending forces in Gallipoli, but their production was not sufficient to solve the problem of munitions.

It was then that the German Staff altered its main plan of warfare for the third time. It had first aimed at a decisive disruption of the Triple Entente by a swift, overwhelming victory in France. When the French Republican armies proved too strong, Russia was selected as the theatre for the great decision, and at the end of July, 1915, the mighty conflict was still proceeding between the main forces of the Teutonic Empire and the elusive, retreating armies of Russia. It was not at the time clearly apparent what the outcome would be, and in our own country there was some apprehension that, if the Russian resistance seriously weakened, the German Staff would swing a million soldiers westward, and with this huge reinforcement seek again for a decision in France.



A FLAG OF TRUCE.

Camera record of a dramatic incident during the fighting on Gallipoli. The blindfolded Turk was the bearer of a request for a truce in which his people might bury their dead. The photograph was taken as he was being led by a British officer through the Australian lines. The officer had for the time being taken charge of the flag of truce.

But such was not the German scheme. Like Napoleon I., before Sidney Smith dispelled his dream at the Siege of St. Jean d'Acre, the German Emperor had been seduced by a vision of Oriental Imperialism. For many years he had openly displayed an inclination to become the military leader of Islam, and after the Armenian massacres, when the rest of Christendom drew in horror and indignation away from the Turk, the crowned histrionic freethinker, who modelled his conduct upon that of his ancestor, Frederick the Great, journeyed to Constantinople and offered himself as Lord Protector to Abdul Hamid II., the author of both the Bulgarian atrocities and the Armenian massacres. Soon after this Oriental expedition, as has been related in a previous chapter, the German Emperor began to intrigue against British interests in the Persian Gulf, and arranged to link Hamburg to Bagdad and the gulf by a railway system along which the Imperial power of Germany should develop

When Turkey began to weaken against the Franco-British forces, through lack of munitions, the German Emperor suddenly came to the conclusion that he would seek neither east nor west for a final decision in the war, but strike south through Serbia, with a view to fighting for the empire of the world directly with Great Britain. Turkey suddenly became the critical field of the Great War, for the main design of the German Emperor, after establishing direct railway communication with Constantinople through Belgrade and Sofia, was to employ the immense industrial resources of Germany and Austria-Hungary in arming the entire population of the Ottoman Empire, and then conquer Egypt, Tripoli, Tunis, Algeria, Morocco, and the Persian Gulf. If by that time the British Empire were not ready to make peace, there would follow an advance upon India, along the overland route discovered by Alexander the Great. Whispers already ran from mosque to mosque that the German Emperor was ready to adopt the faith of Mohammed, and become another Sword of God for the

The Kaiser and Islam

Digitized by Google









[Elliott & Fry.

Lieut.-General Sir W. R. Birdwood, K.C.S.I., C.B., C.I.E., D.S.O., described by Sir Ian Hamilton as "the soul of Anzac." Below: The Marquis of Tullibardine in the trenches on Gallipoli.

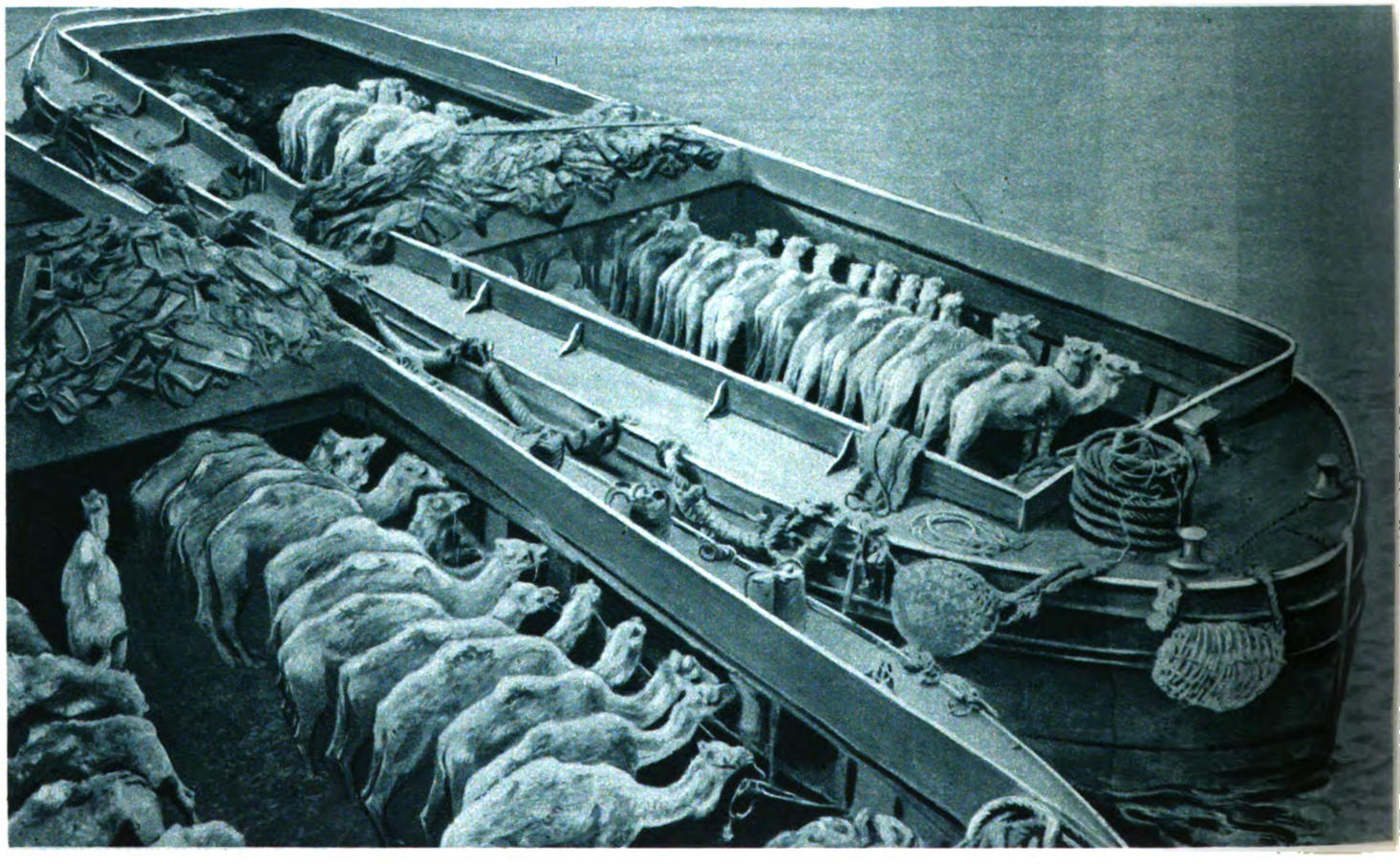
Lord Granard in the trenches. Below: Major-General W. P. Braithwaite, C.B., "the best Chief of the General Staff," wrote Sir Ian Hamilton, "it has ever been my fortune to encounter in war."

Prominent members of the British fighting force in the Dardanelles.

Digitized by Google

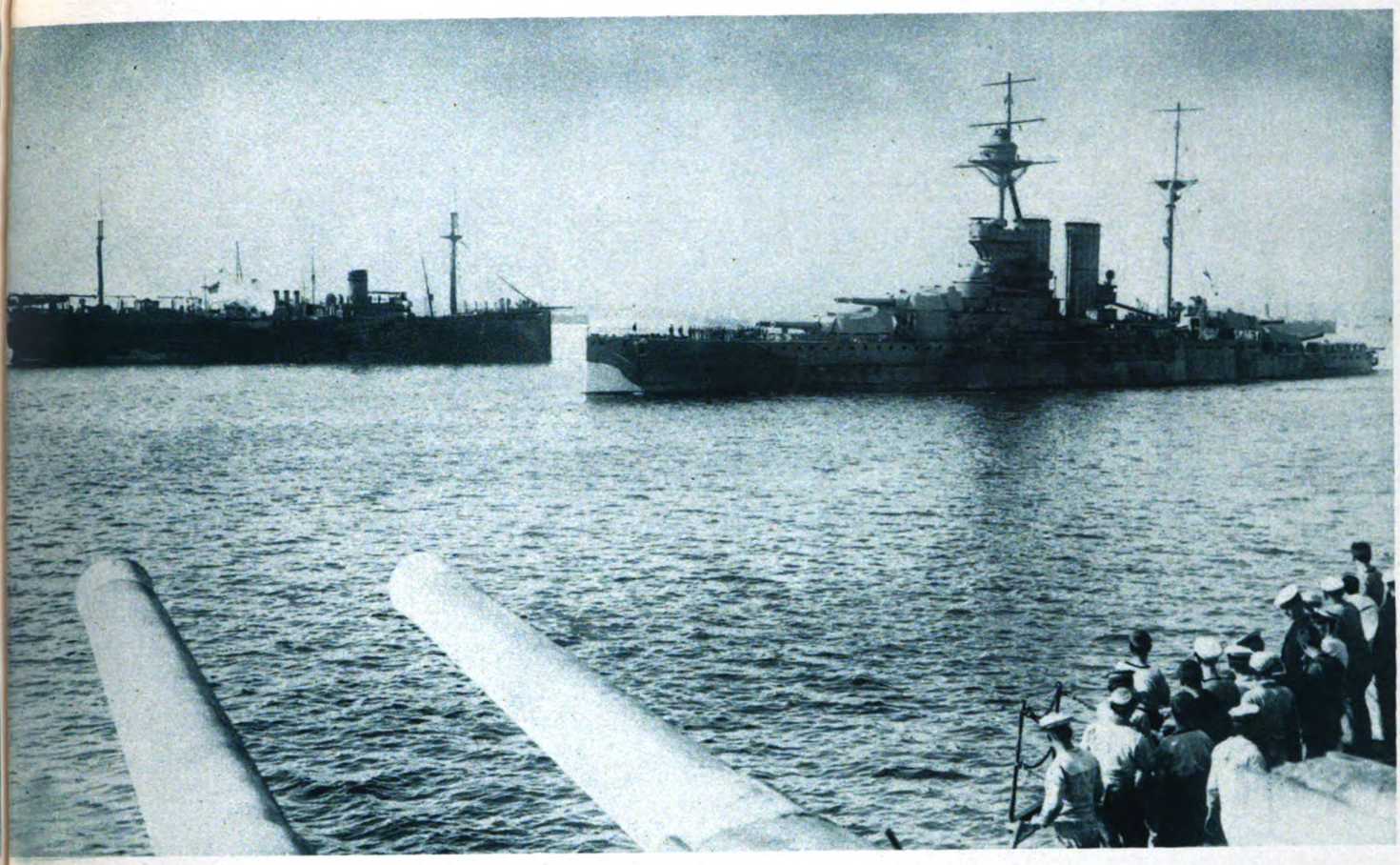


Wounded soldiers being conveyed to hospital ships at the Dardanelles.

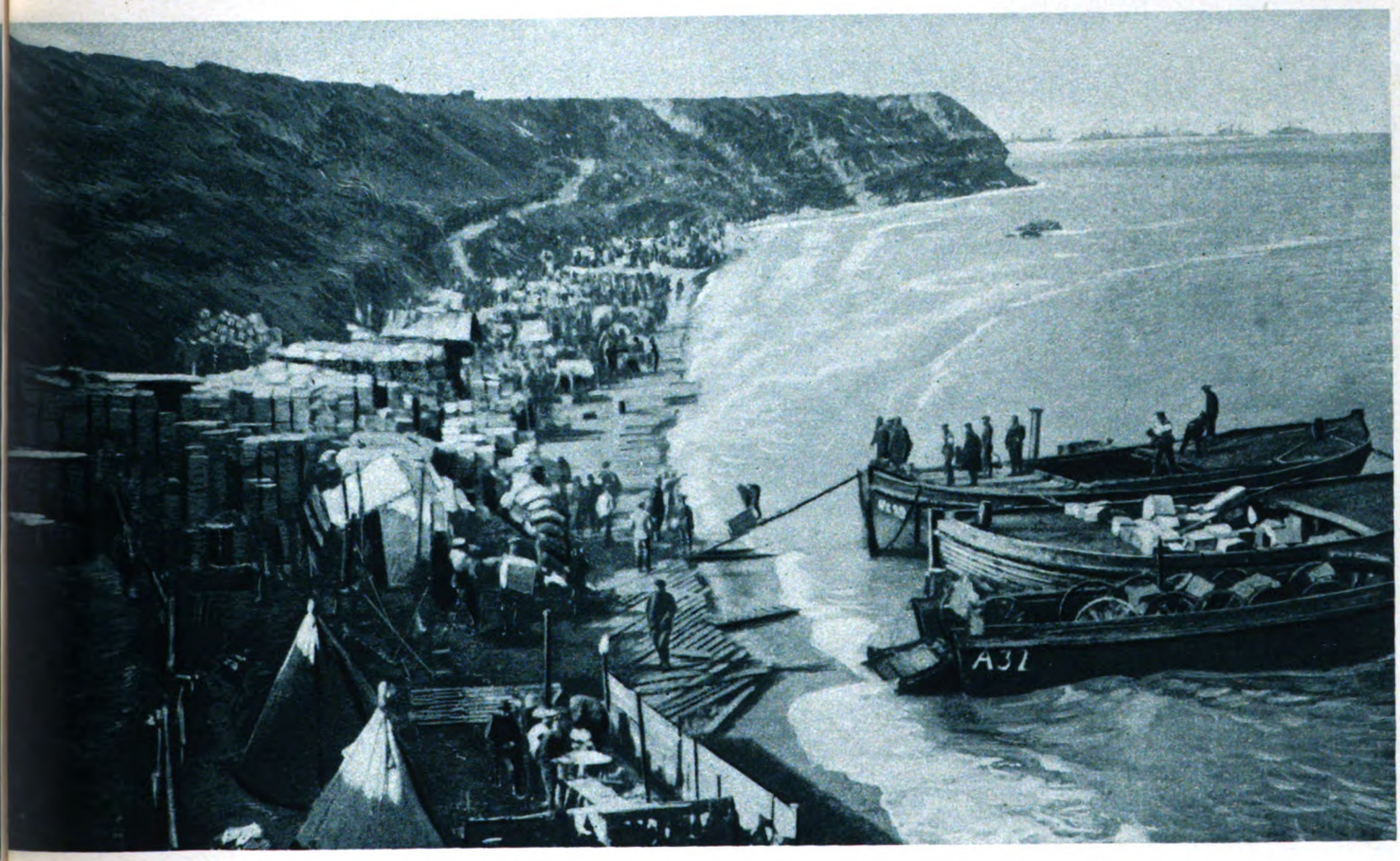


Camels from Egypt on their way to the sands of Gallipoli.

Digitized by Google



Britain's great battleship, the Queen Elizabeth, leaving Mudros.



"L" Beach, Gallipoli, the landing-place of the 2nd Royal Fusiliers.

Digitized by Google



Achi Baba, Gallipoli, seen from a point near the French lines.



Activity in Mudros Bay, Lemnos. French troops in the foreground.

Digitized by Google

advancement of Islam. It was Napoleon's scheme, revived with a larger grasp of detail, and engineered with a longer and more thorough preparation, by which the Caliphate had already been reduced to an instrument of dominion in the hands of the most unscrupulous of all the Hohenzollerns.

Our Dardanelles Committee became anxious about the situation; for it was soon known that the German Emperor, acting largely through Count Tisza, the Hungarian Dictator, had brought about an agreement between Bulgaria and Turkey. This was the most notable stroke of Teutonic diplomacy in the war. Abdul Hamid, who instituted the Bulgarian atrocities, was still living. Barely three years had passed since the Bulgarians in a successful war had avenged themselves upon their ancient oppressors. Yet so strong was the influence of Germany, exercised through the grandson of Louis Philippe of France, who sat on the Bulgarian throne, that at the end of July, 1915, Bulgaria agreed to help Turkey by mobilising against Serbia. Our Dardanelles Committee tried to answer this intricate and far-reaching German move by a sudden violent blow against Turkey. A small new British army of Yeomanry and new recruits was transported to Mudros Bay in the first week of August, 1915, and placed under the command of Sir Ian Hamilton. It was hoped that, with this reinforcement, the Mediterranean Expeditionary Force would be able to carry the enemy's positions on the Gallipoli side of the Narrows and let the Fleet through the Strait into the Sea of Marmora for action against Constantinople.

Sir Ian Hamilton made his plan of operations with notable skill and audacity. He considered that the Achi Baba position was practically impregnable to attack from the Krithia side. The ground there was only to be won by extremely heavy loss to the attacking troops in a direct frontal assault, against line upon line of trenches manned, in German fashion, by an unusual number of machine-guns.

Sir Ian Hamilton wanted room for a battle of manœuvre. He selected the apparently impossible region of Sari Bair as the scene of the new operations. The main mass of rock and scrub at Sari Bair was higher than Achi Baba, and the seamed and broken mountain land was neighboured on either side by other difficult summits, running down to plateaus which immediately overlooked the low cliff and ridge where the Australasian Army Corps was entrenched.

The attack on Sari Bair

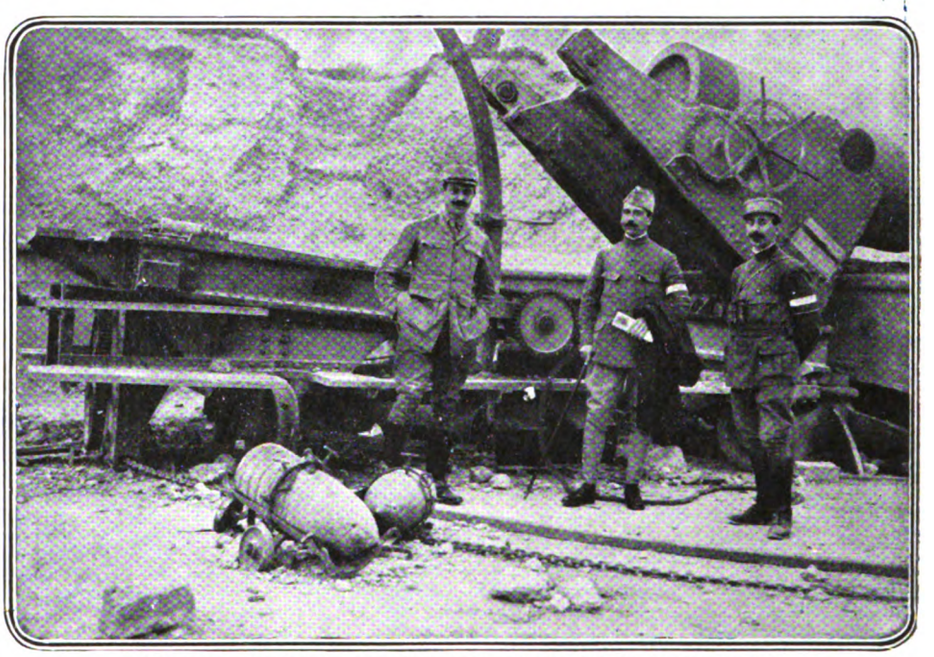
But in his despatch, Sir Ian Hamilton had already remarked with astonished admiration on the dare-devil spirit of the men of Anzac, and he now resolved that they should be his grand striking force. The task he set them was one to appal and make dizzy any ordinary body of troops. They had to storm and hold Sari Bair. They had to storm a vast mountain mass, fortified by the best military engineers in the modern world, and held in strong numbers by a race of fighting men who had proved themselves magnificent in defence. No operation of war, from the age of Alexander to the age of Napoleon, could compare in difficulty with the attack on Sari Bair; for the numerous and well-handled machine-guns of the defending army, sweeping every slope with a stream of five hundred bullets a minute, constituted a factor of resistance of enormous value. The machine-guns, as employed under the new tactical system by German officers, were more formidable weapons of wholesale slaughter than the quick-firing field-guns, which projected a curtain of shrapnel to stop any infantry charge. All this must be remembered when comparing a modern offensive movement against fortressed heights with the famous attacks on fortified positions made in the days when cannon only fired slowly round shot or case over very short ranges. In a hundred years of incomparable scientific inventiveness, the mechanical instruments of battle had been developed to an inhuman power of general destructiveness. In favourable circumstances a division of 20,000 men might be defeated by ten men with two machine-guns. Personal prowess, especially in an attacking force, seemed almost to be reduced to insignificance by the enormously increased importance of the mechanical means of destruction, in the production of which the Germans were for the time supreme.

Sir Ian Hamilton's plan

Everything that science could do for the Turks the Germans had done. They had hedged the mountain slopes with barbed-wire cables of remarkable thickness; they had converted the heights into human warrens, to shelter the Turks from both musketry and shrapnel fire; they had provided them with more machine-guns than the attacking force possessed, and had placed a large number of guns and howitzers at the points commanding every uphill field approach. Four months had been spent in fortifying the heights, and any original local weakness in the dispositions had been revealed in twelve weeks' incessant conflict, and thoroughly remedied and again tested. Yet such was the assured confidence of Sir Ian Hamilton in the heroic ability of the men of New Zealand and Australia that, having set them the task of capturing Sari Bair, he took it for granted that they would succeed.

Then on their success he based the second part of his plan.

He first reinforced the men of Anzac with the Indian troops and two divisions from the new army. Then he arranged for troopships, containing the Greek Legion and supporting warships, to make a feint of landing at Karachali, on the mainland of European Turkey, threatening both the railway to Sofia and the Bulair lines.



FRENCH OFFICERS WITHIN THE FORT OF SEDDUL BAHR.
Except for his cap, one of them is wearing a uniform resembling very closely that of a British officer.

Digitized by Google



[Lafayette.

MAJOR-GENERAL SIR A. J. GODLEY.
Commanded that portion of the Anzac line against which Enver Pasha launched a great but unsuccessful attack on the night of June 29-30th, 1915.

This demonstration was designed to check for a day or two the movement of Turkish reinforcements into the Gallipoli Peninsula, and to lead the enemy to concentrate on Bulair. The real blow then fell in an utterly unexpected manner, in Suvla Bay, only about twelve miles north of the Anzac position. The main body of the new army was thrown into Suvla Bay to storm the Anafarta Ridge, lying close to the heights which the men of Anzac were about to attack in the Sari Bair region. The aim of the operation, as planned by Sir Ian Hamilton, was to compel the Turks to concentrate against the New Zealanders, Australians, Indians, and British supports in a furious battle on the mountain slopes, and then to take the enemy on the flank with the advancing British army from Suvla Bay. It was expected that, if only the men of Anzac could storm and hold Sari Bair, the hostile pressure upon them would suddenly be relaxed by the new army driving down on the Turkish flank. The combined movements from Anzac and Suvla Bay were to form a pair of claws gripping the masses of the enemy about Sari Bair, from which height all the Turkish positions along the Narrows could be dominated and, it was hoped, quickly mastered.

Enver Pasha's third failure

While this decisive manœuvre was proceeding, the British Army Corps and the French Army Corps in front of Achi Baba were ordered to make a violent assault upon the Turkish lines, in order to prevent the Turks at Sari Bair obtaining reinforcements from Achi Baba. By a curious coincidence, Enver Pasha was busy, at the time our attack opened, in making preparations for a third attempt to drive the Franco-British troops into the sea. But he entirely miscalculated the point at which the British commander would strike; he sent his large reinforcements to the Achi Baba front, and there he was attacked and held up two days before his own plan of attack matured. The Turkish offensive was designed for April 8th, 1915, being based no doubt on information received from spies concerning the arrival of the new British army. But the Allies were much too quick and energetic for the enemy, and on August 6th the British and French troops round Krithia made a violent surprise attack which completely defeated Enver Pasha's plan. Though our action around Krithia was only a holding movement, the fighting was of a terrible character, as the advance had to be made against an enemy in superior numbers who was receiving large reinforcements during the struggle. The brunt of the ordeal of courage and endurance fell upon the Territorials of the East Lancashire Division, and in their long and desperate wrestle with death the heroes of Lancashire proved themselves to be men of extraordinary powers.

Terrible fighting around Krithia

Chief among them was a young Manchester



[Barnett.

LIEUT.-COLONEL A. S. KOE.
In command of the King's Own Scottish Borderers and the Plymouth (Marine) Battalion, Royal Naval Division, to whom the landing on "Y" Beach was entrusted.

master, Lieutenant W. T. Forshaw, who fought in a series of works known as "The Vineyard." He came up with half his company to the post, and there stayed for forty-five hours. He was bomb-throwing continuously for forty-one hours, till through fatigue he lost the use of his arm.

His own detachment was relieved after twenty-four hours, but this magnificent officer volunteered to direct the fresh troops, and with an everlasting cigarette in his mouth, which he used for lighting the fuses of the bombs, he broke down three more Turkish assaults. Towards the end of his miraculous feat of endurance the enemy got over the barricade, but leading his men forward Lieutenant Forshaw shot down the three foremost Turks with his revolver, and the others fled. At the end of the forty-five hours of continual fight the lieutenant was choked and sickened by bomb fumes, bruised by shrapnel fragments, and unable to lift his arm. Yet he said he had never enjoyed himself better in all his life.

By such deeds as this the holding forces round Krithia and Kereves Dere used up Enver Pasha's reinforcements

Digitized by Google

and greatly facilitated the main operations in the Sari Bair region. These Sari Bair operations were also opened by a great movement on the right, which was skilfully devised to draw down the enemy forces and clear the path for the chief attack on the left. The point selected at Anzac for the holding movement was Lone Pine Plateau —an upland some four hundred feet above the level of the sea, extending south-eastwardly from the main mass of Sari Bair towards the promontory of Gaba Tepe, passing Courtney's Post, Quinn's Post, and Bloody Angle. On Lone Pine Plateau the Turks were dug in with all the science their German directors could command. The deep, narrow trenches in the broken highland of sand and scrub were roofed with great logs against shrapnel, machine-gun fire, and hand-bombs, the upper heavy timber work forming a road, with holes out of which the defending troops could leap for a charge. A row of loopholes in the parapets gave the machine-gun parties and riflemen a large field of fire, while leaving them under cover and safe from everything except a well-placed high-explosive shell.

Anzac heroism on Lone Pine



LIEUT. G. D'OYLY HUGHES, R.N. Awarded D.S.O. for swimming ashore in Sea of Marmora and bombing the Ismid Railway line, on August 21st, 1915. [*Photos Russell.*]



COM. ERIC G. ROBINSON, V.C., R.N. Won the Victoria Cross for a conspicuous act of gallantry on February 26th, 1915, when he landed with a demolition party.

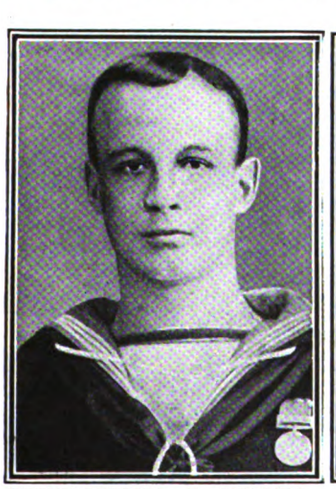
An Australian Division was given the terrible task of capturing this upland, and the dismounted troopers of the 3rd Australian Light Horse made the great attack. Most of the men were well over six feet in height, and of such magnificent build that it was said, "If these are the Light Horse of Australia, what must their Heavy Dragoons be like?" They went forward in three lines against Lone Pine at dawn on August 7th. The first line was destroyed by the enemy's fire midway between the trenches. Exactly two minutes after the first regiment, the 8th, cleared the parapet, the second line went forward in turn without hesitation. It fell. For a minute the flag which the Light Horse had carried fluttered in a corner on the Turkish mountain fortress. A few men had got home. Then the flag vanished, and with it one of the very bravest bodies of fighting men the world has seen. Then, ten minutes after the second line disappeared, the third line went over the breastworks, as steady, quick, and straight as the others, but it was stopped by order before reaching the fire zone. The movement was all over in a quarter of an hour. In the darkness of night one or two maimed figures crawled back over the British trenches.



CAPT. P. H. HANSEN, V.C., Lincolnshire Regiment. Under heavy fire saved six wounded men from flaming scrub on the Gallipoli Peninsula.

Meanwhile, the 1st Light Horse, attacking from Quinn's Post, had its first advancing line shattered by machine-gun fire, and, after taking a hill along with the Welsh Fusiliers, had to retire with heavy losses.

But those who died did not die in vain; for the following day the infantry followed the dismounted cavalry, and, after a combat of extraordinary violence, Lone Pine was won. Some of the Australians jumped, with bombs and knives, into the openings in the log roofs, and in a sort of raging madness of battle smashed and knifed the Turks, while the other "White Gurkhas," as the enemy called them, prodded with the bayonet through the roof holes or shot at the heads they could glimpse in the subterranean shadows. Essad Pasha threw down reinforcements from the mountain and hurried out his reserves from the Maidos region. Night and day the furious counter-attacks went on, with every Turkish gun and howitzer within range turned on Lone Pine Plateau. But the Australian Division could not be moved. What they had won they held, and their heroic victorious thrust forward on the left flank of the Anzac position was an operation of the highest value.



PETTY-OFFICER R. DENYER, Won the D.S.M. on June 4th, 1915, south of Achi Baba.

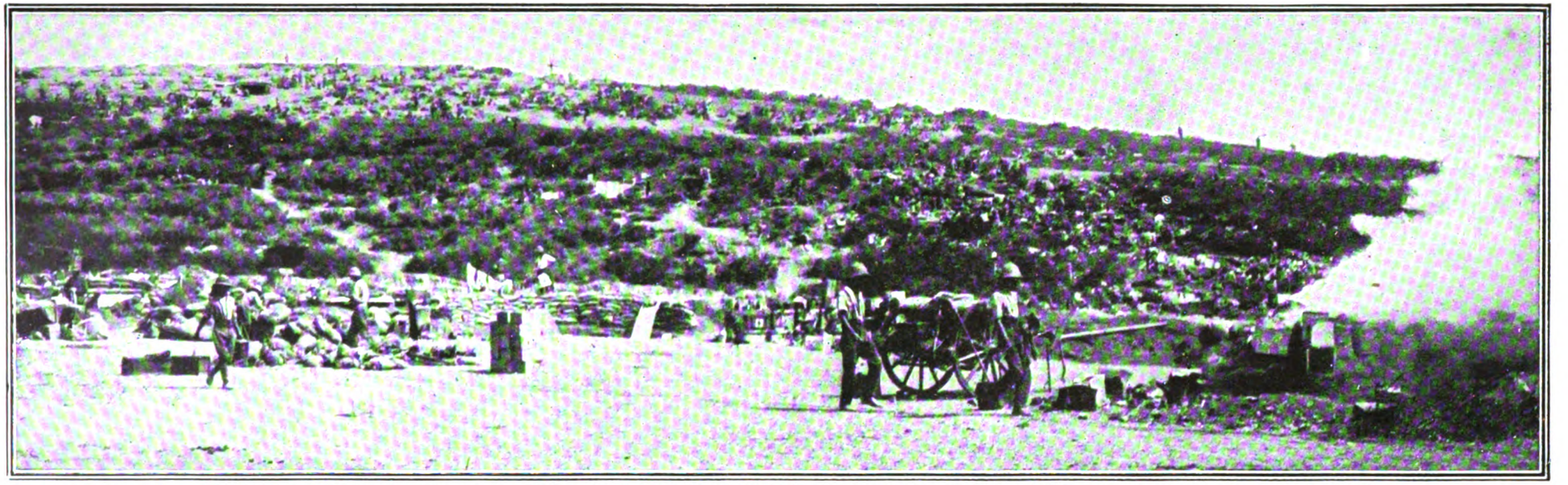


LIEUT. W. T. FORSHAW, V.C., 1/9th Manchester Territorials. Held a Gallipoli trench for forty-one hours.

For, meanwhile, something was happening on the right flank of Anzac, which should have cleared the Dardanelles of the Turk. A large force of New Zealanders and Indians, with an Australian Division in support, set out on a night march about half-past nine in the evening of August 6th. Preparations had long been going in for this stealthy, nocturnal movement. Huge stores of ammunition and supplies had been secretly conveyed at night through the bush along the coast by Fisherman's Hut and towards the ravine of Asma Dere. The country was so rough, broken, and difficult that the Turkish commander never dreamt of an advance being made against him from this side. He and his Staff knew the ground intimately and regarded it as hopeless for European troops. At Lone Pine they expected an attack, but at Asma Dere they placed only patrol parties, instead of wasting a large force on lines of connected entrenchments. All this had long since been discovered by the fearless and skilful scouts of Anzac, and the plan of attack had been based on the knowledge thus obtained and on the peculiar

Momentous night adventure

Digitized by Google



PANORAMA OF CHOCOLATE HILL: SCENE OF A BRILLIANT NIGHT ATTACK BY THE IRISH WING OF THE NEW SUVLA BAY ARMY.

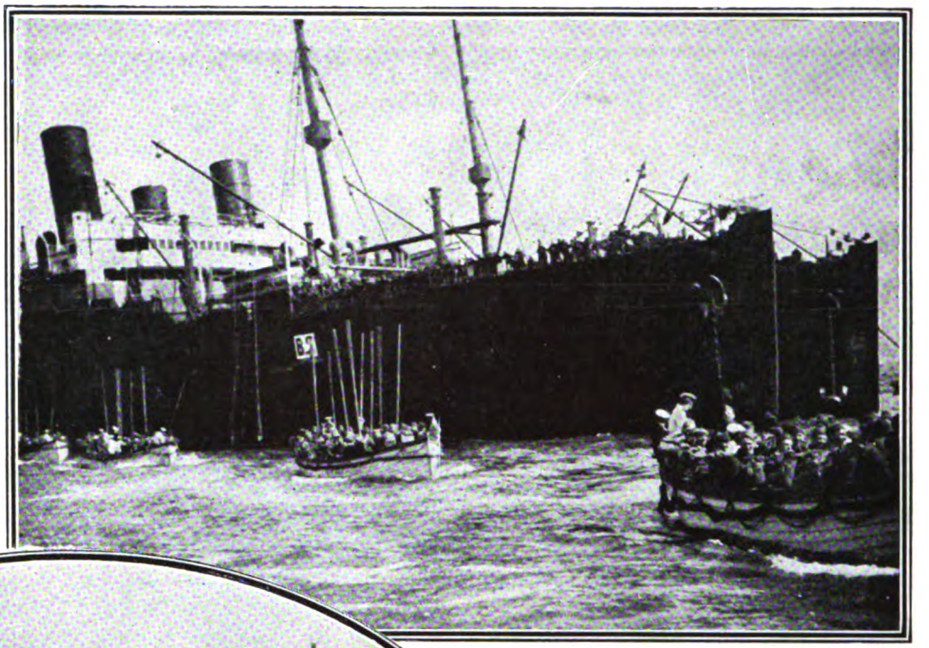


A WELCOME REST: SCENE ON THE SHORE AT SUVLA BAY. A SURPRISE LANDING HERE IN AUGUST, 1915, ANTICIPATED BY TWENTY-FOUR HOURS A PROJECTED ATTACK BY THE ENEMY.

Digitized by Google

gift of the Australasian and Indian troops for finding their way in the darkness through an unknown wilderness.

The Gurkhas, accustomed in their native Himalayan country to steer their path by the position of the stars, while avoiding the perils of the primeval bush, were at the top of their form. They scouted ahead and silently used their curious knives on the enemy patrols. The expedition worked northward along the coast for a mile and a half, and then turned inland towards a height three miles away. By dawn the column of some six thousand men, under Sir A. J. Godley, had arrived within five hundred yards of the hill. The river course of Asma Dere had been occupied, and out



TROOPS LANDING FROM TRANSPORTS AT LEMNOS.
The island of Lemnos was used as a British naval base.



"W" BEACH, GALLIPOLI, WHERE THE LANCASHIRE FUSILIERS LANDED.
H.M.S. Majestic was sunk off here.

at sea were British monitors, linked by wireless with the troops inland, and ready to direct their 6 in. guns on any indicated point of the sombre mountain heights that bent in a crescent round the line of lower sea cliffs.

It was one of the finest surprise movements in modern warfare. The design was to storm the crescent of peaks that blocked all direct advances from Anzac. Instead of attempting the absolutely impossible feat of climbing up the fortified slopes by a frontal attack from the cliffs around the landing beaches, the column had stolen along the coast northward and then swerved inland and opened a furious flank assault on the tremendous mountain position. The Australian Division on the other flank was making violent sorties from Quinn's Post, Russell Top, and Pope's Post, and fighting desperately on Lone Pine Plateau, with the result that the attention of the enemy was distracted from the vital spot in the Dardanelles system of defence.

The Turks outmanœuvred

By daybreak on August 7th the Australian force forming the left of the secret advance force, was based on Asma Dere, near Suvla Bay, where the new British army had landed. The Indian Brigade was approaching the vital mountain position of Chunuk Bair, close to the great height of Koja Chemen, and the New Zealand force occupied Rhododendron Ridge. By this time the Turkish commander was fully aware that he had been outmanœuvred and perilously misled. He threw out his reserves in constant local attacks, and the men of Anzac dug themselves in by the scrub awaiting the helping movement of the Suvla Bay army.

Then, at four o'clock in the morning of August 8th, the Australian infantry moved out from Asma Dere towards a hill from which they intended to wheel and storm Koja Chemen Tepe. But at this point the Turks were in superior force, and by the pressure of numbers they were able to endanger the Australians by an encircling movement.

New Zealanders' splendid charge

The outnumbered attacking troops had to be withdrawn to their Asma Dere position, where they held out against every hostile counter-assault. Meanwhile, the New Zealanders and Indians adopted the best means of relieving the Australians and carrying out the scheme of operations. The New Zealanders clambered up Rhododendron Ridge and, by a magnificent charge over the crest, won the south-western slope of the main peak of Sari Bair. At the same time the Indian Brigade drove upward and extended their ground beyond the farm and on the height known as Hill Q.

The exertion needed in these upward drives was enormous. The ground was so steep and rough that it would have been hard work to climb it without opposition and without a burden. But the troops had to carry kit, rifles, food, and ammunition; they fought in a great heat, and had to go without water, and from every bush and hollow above their heads poured musketry fire or machine-gun torrents of

Digitized by Google

bullets. Hostile batteries searched the clambering lines of attackers with shrapnel, and fierce, sudden, swooping counter-charges by resolute and hard-fighting Turkish forces forced the New Zealanders and Indians to bunch together in order to meet mass by mass.

By the afternoon of August 8th the energy of the advance was for the time exhausted, and the troops for the rest of the day held to the ground they won, while the work of reorganising the scattered units was undertaken. By nightfall the men were formed into three columns, and at dawn on August 9th, after a rest, in which the reserves came forward and took the strain off the New Zealanders and Indians, the grand attack opened.

Within sight of success

Naval and land guns bombarded Chunuk Bair and Hill Q, that led to the crowning mass of Koja Chemen, some nine hundred and seventy-one feet high. Then the three infantry columns swept out and upwards. The third column was checked by a Turkish force occupying some very difficult ground, but the mountaineers of Nepal, the Gurkhas, were more fortunate. They swept over Sari Bair and reached Hill Q, from which they were able to look down on the Strait. Could the commanding height they won have been held and fortified, the Dardanelles campaign would have been ended, by our guns being brought up to smite the enemy's forts and positions lying below.

Hill Q, however, was suddenly swept by shrapnel, and the Turkish infantry attacked the left column with such weight of numbers that the New Zealanders had to withdraw to the lower slopes of Sari Bair. But throughout the night the hold on Chunuk Bair was maintained, though the men were badly exhausted. Two regiments relieved the New Zealanders, and Sir A. J. Godley, in extreme anxiety, awaited news from Suvla Bay.

The men of Anzac had carried out their part of the combined operations with sublime ardour and incomparable skill. They had almost succeeded in rushing the great central clump of peaks, ravines, and scrubby slopes, with no help but that afforded by the retaining movement of their comrades round Achi Baba. Together, the entire attacking forces in the Achi Baba and Sari Bair regions probably amounted, after their wastage, to less than 60,000 bayonets, while the Turkish armies, with the new reinforcements brought by Enver Pasha, were at least double as strong in men, and placed in commanding positions of extraordinary advantage. Owing to the gift for woodcraft and tracking of the Australasians and Indians, the advantage of position had almost been wrested from the enemy.

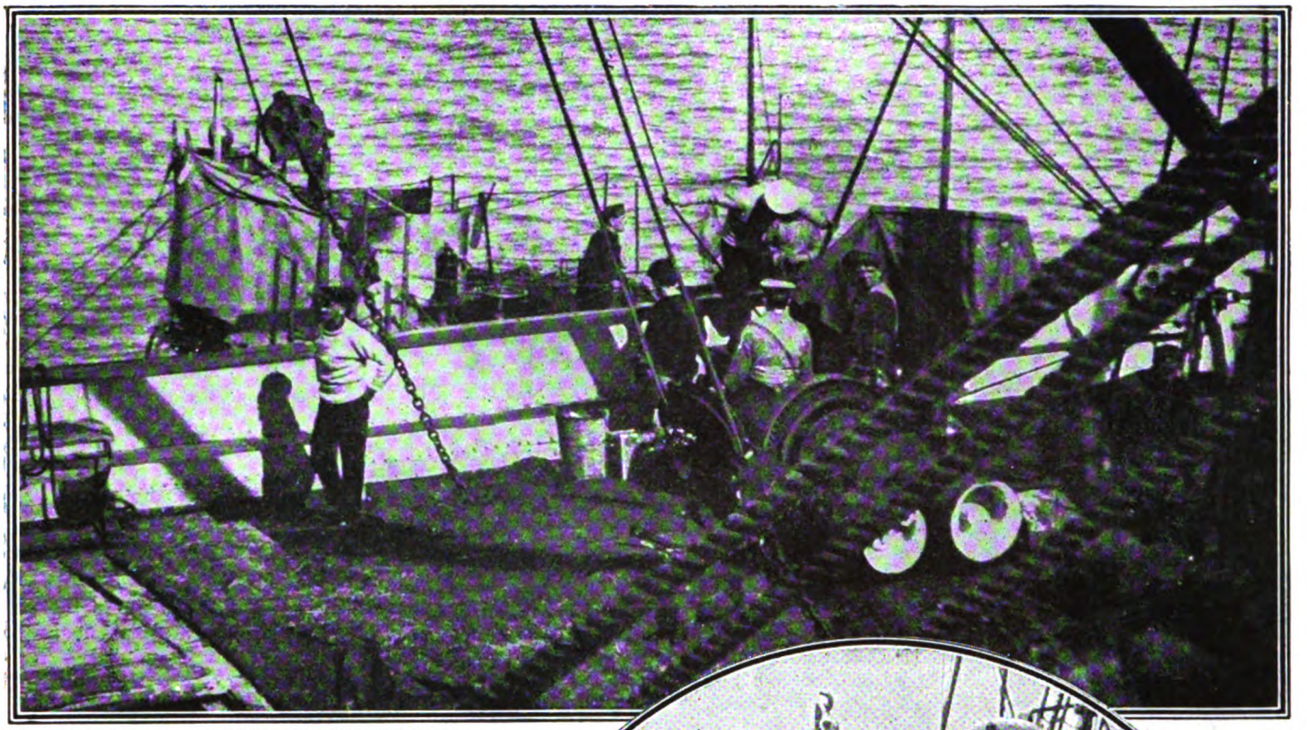
A tragic failure

To achieve victory and decide the issue of the war the Suvla Bay force had only to carry out the fairly easy task assigned to it. It was instructed to advance on Anafarta Ridge, the next height of importance north of the Sari Bair, Chunuk Bair, and Koja Chemen masses. By this movement it would threaten the flank and rear of the Turkish forces opposed to the Anzac army and seriously menace their communications. The expected consequence would



THE WAR AGAINST PESTILENCE ON GALLIPOLI: CLOTHING RETURNED FROM THE FRONT IN PROCESS OF BEING FUMIGATED AND CLEANED.

Digitized by Google



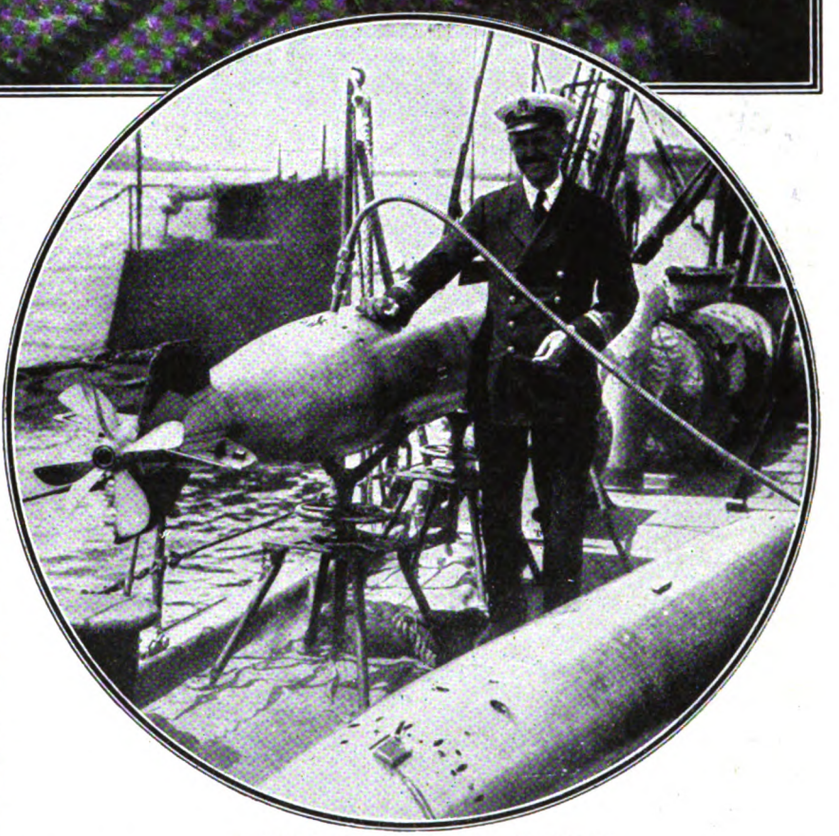
SUBMARINE B11 ALONGSIDE ITS PARENT VESSEL.
The officer on deck with white sweater is Lieut. Holbrook, V.C., who torpedoed the Turkish battleship Messudiyeh in the Dardanelles.

be to relieve the pressure against the New Zealanders, Indians, and Australians, and their British supports, and enable the range of heights to be entirely conquered. But, to the extreme and ineffaceable disappointment of the Australasian Army Corps, the movement of co-operation from Suvla Bay did not take place.

At dawn on August 10th the Turkish commander was left free to mass a fresh division on Hill Q and Chunuk Bair, and in successive waves the Turks charged downhill, with a noble contempt of death, and pushed back the two regiments which had taken the place of the outworn New Zealanders. Swept by shrapnel and overborne by numbers, the small force withdrew further down the slope of Chunuk Bair, and the victorious Turks then charged over the crest into the great gully south of Rhododendron Ridge.

Whoever then was in high command in the Sari Bair region—Essad Pasha, Liman von Sanders, or Enver Pasha — had a daring and glorious inspiration. For the gully led between the advanced lines of the Anzac forces and their base on the beach. Had the daring attack succeeded, there would have been a great British disaster. But Sir W. R. Birdwood, with Sir A. J. Godley and General Baldwin, and other able leaders, were equal to the sudden, dismaying situation. Part of our line on Rhododendron Ridge broke under the desperate valour of the Turk. Every man tried to stop the gap—colonels and generals fought by the side of privates in the ferocious hand-to-hand combats in the scrub. General Baldwin and other commanding officers were killed, but the example they had given was an inspiration to their troops, and by slow, terrible, uphill efforts the Turks were driven back and the ridge recovered.

A dismaying situation



A HERO OF SUBMARINE WARFARE.
Lieutenant Holbrook, V.C., on board H.M.S. Adamant. His right hand is resting almost affectionately on one of the deadly projectiles he used so effectively against the enemy.

The great blow was delivered by our naval guns and land artillery. The Turks came on in four lines, the men in each line being set shoulder to shoulder with their fellows. So dense was the formation that the movement was clearly visible from all our warships, and from the neighbouring land batteries. Every gunner threw up on the mountain slope whatever shell was handiest—shrapnel, high explosive, or common shell—and a zone of death was formed in front of our position. But the Turks were so impelled by the momentum of their flying charge down the steep mountain that they could not stop or turn back. They tumbled into the fume and flame and upwhirled earth, and in the explosions some of their bodies could be seen rising as a shell burst and then tumbling into the ravine. There were also ten machine-guns in the Anzac line, and the

12,000 Turks annihilated

Digitized by Google



TEUTONISED TURKS AT LEMNOS.
Turkish prisoners in charge of a guard of Zouaves on the island of Lemnos.



GERMAN HUNS IN TURKISH UNIFORMS.
German Marines in Turkish guise engaged in scouting work on Gallipoli.

remnants of choking, half-dazed Turks that got through the zone of artillery fire were felled by the smoking Maxims. For half an hour the Maxims were worked for rapid fire, and scarcely a Turk returned to the hills. Twelve thousand of them were annihilated in about thirty minutes.

Throughout the rest of the day the enemy continued to attack, but hour by hour his force slackened, and at nightfall the battle ceased, with the Australian, New Zealand, Maori, Gurkha, Sikh, and British soldiers holding firmly to the spurs of Rhododendron Ridge with the farm there, and the Asma Dere position, extending to Damakjelik Bair. All our troops were full of soldierly admiration for their opponents. There were no raw levies in the Sari Bair heights, but the flower of Ottoman valour. Never did the Turk fight better in all his warlike history. He was out to kill; he did not care what became of himself, and his stark, vehement driving power was such that the men who slew him praised him. But who shall praise the men of Anzac? Mr. Ashmead-Bartlett, our principal authority in the affair, whose gifts are equal to those of Kinglake, compares the Battle of Sari Bair with that of Inkerman. But we strongly incline to the opinion that there is no parallel to be found to the entire operations round Anzac, including the marvellous nocturnal turning movement by Asma Dere and the charge of the Australian Light Horse at Lone Pine, all crowned by the three-days' battle on the wild heights, under a tropical August sun, with no water at hand for men or machine-guns. In battles of old, men used to fight for a day, and win or fail. Even at Malplaquet, where Marlborough in 1702 lost 20,000 men in order to capture Mons, the attack on the fortified lines of the enemy lasted less than two full days. The physical and moral qualities of men in modern warfare are tested in a more severe manner than they were even in the days of the Crimea. The condition of the sick and wounded has certainly improved, but the hale fighting man in the firing trenches, in the age of magazine rifles, machine-guns, quick-firing artillery, and aeroplane fire control, has to excel all his ancestors in the power of both bodily and spiritual endurance. Naturally, man, in each generation, is inclined to flatter himself. And in fairness we must admit that our forefathers at times have, like Sir Richard Grenville in his single ship action against the Spanish fleet off the Azores,

Operations without parallel

Digitized by Google

done things which are incomparable. The clashings of well-matched lines of pikemen or bayonets, stabbing with ferocious skill till their arms tired, have been equally deadly for thousands of years. But the song of the old British Grenadier was true:

> Men talk of Alexander, and some of Hercules,
> Of Hector and Lysander, and such great names as these;
> But of all the world's brave heroes, there's none that can compare
> To the British Grenadier.

To advance, as they did, in front of their companies to the slope of fortressed works, with fuses and hand-grenades, and storm palisade and trench against cannon shot, musketry, and hand-bombs, required a cooler, steadier soul than any hero of Homer ever displayed. And the need for courage of this kind is now combined with the need for moral endurance, amid more dreadful explosive effects, and far longer periods of incessant physical strain, which might appal even the British Grenadier of Marlborough's age. Lieutenant Forshaw, who held a trench in Gallipoli Peninsula by hand-grenade work for forty-one hours, is the modern British Grenadier. As Maurice Maeterlinck justly observed, ours is the greatest of all ages of heroism, and the men of Anzac rank beside the 7th Division, the 29th Division, the Twentieth French Army Corps, and the remnant of the Belgian Army that held the Yser, as the flower of modern European chivalry. There are some Russian corps, such as the Caucasian, and some Serbian divisions, such as those which regained the Suvovar Ridge, which should be included in the annals of supreme heroism of endurance. But in any event, the men of Anzac will not fail to be mentioned.

The heroism of endurance

Their glorious effort at Sari Bair was deprived of decisive victory through the weakness of part of the co-operating forces that landed in Suvla Bay. The landing on August 6th was a fine piece of generalship, being due directly to the strategy of Sir Ian Hamilton. By feinting with the Greek Legion, composed of Cretan and Hellenic volunteers, at Karachali, the British commander drew the Turks in a



SURVIVORS OF H.M.S. TRIUMPH ARRIVING ALONGSIDE H.M.S. LORD NELSON.
The Triumph was torpedoed by a submarine at the Dardanelles on May 26th, 1915. In the smaller view some of the rescued members of the crew are seen reporting themselves on board the Lord Nelson.

Digitized by Google

mass at Bulair, and when the new army disembarked at Suvla Bay, there was no fortified line to storm against a large defending force. Disconnected parties of Turkish sharpshooters were quickly driven inland, and by nightfall on August 8th the British position was very promising. One division had swept up northward and occupied the promontory of Karakol Dagh, while the other division swerved round the Salt Lake, and advanced over the plain, wheeling into a strong line in front of Anafarta Ridge. This ridge was the key to all the operations on the Peninsula. At a distance of two and a half miles from the shore, it rose in slopes of low scrub into broken ground some two hundred feet above the sea, and then went upward in hills to the moderate height of four hundred feet, with a large mass behind it, towering to eight hundred and eighty feet. Two miles to the south-west, across a stretch of shrub threaded by a watercourse, were the slopes of Chunuk Bair, Koja Chemen, and other masses of the Sari Bair region. The intervening ground was only a hundred feet high immediately between the Anafarta Hills and the Sari Bair slope. But looking seaward from Hill 100 there was Hill 112, with its extension Hill 70, and its seaward buttress known as Chocolate Hill, rising between the men on Salt Lake Plain and the Australian Division occupying the Asma Dere position. But by a brilliant night attack on August 8th the Irish wing of the new Suvla Bay army stormed Chocolate Hill, and completed, in an admirable manner, the first linking movement with the battling Anzac force. The new army had swiftly secured a wide front on the eastern side of Salt Lake. The men occupied a large open cup, covered with thick undergrowth, trees, and farmsteads, in which hostile sharpshooters were lodged. There was only about 2,000 yards of thick cover between our line and the Anafarta Ridge, and the Turks had merely a thousand men or so entrenched on the ridge, with a few field-guns behind them. If we had attacked at once, and in great force, it is practically certain that the critical line of heights could have been won. But the Turkish commander was a man of genius, and he outmanœuvred the British generals. He held his trenches with just a skeleton line of troops, and pushed most of his men forward as sharpshooters over the broken ground sloping down to the Salt Lake Plain.

Key to Peninsular operations



DEBRIS OF BATTLE.

Piles of abandoned arms and accoutrements gathered after one of the battles on Gallipoli, and collected by the side of a shot-shattered barn.

The snipers were mainly local peasants, knowing every nook and ditch, and carrying nothing except their rifles and a large number of cartridges. By their skilful use of the ground, and their rapid movements of concentration towards any point at which our men attempted to advance, they produced the impression of being a force of considerable strength. The result was that the absolutely vital forward movement of an entire British army corps was checked by a small band of Turks on Anafarta Ridge. Then, about noon on August 9th, when the men of Anzac, having been left without help from the Suvla Bay army, were withdrawing from the heights they had won, an unexpected disaster occurred by Chocolate Hill. A strong north wind was blowing at the time, and either by accident from the bursting shells, or by skilful design on the part of the Turks, the scrub caught fire on the height known as Burnt Hill or Hill 70, and the wind-swept flames spread with extraordinary quickness. The blinding, choking smoke and the tongues of fire were driven diagonally across our front, and our infantry were compelled to abandon their advanced positions. For some hours zones of flame and black fume separated the opposing forces, and the low hill which our Territorials had won in the morning, when it was a blaze of green and bright yellow, emerged a smouldering mound of khaki colour. No further advance could be made that day, and in the night all advantage of surprise was lost by the arrival of the Yemen Division to reinforce the gallant and ingenious defenders of the Anafarta Hills. All that could be done on the British side was to extend on the right along the coast, and by the low plain running southward from Chocolate Hill, and connect with the Australian Division. The complete line between Anzac and the newly-landed forces in Suvla Bay was established on Wednesday, August 11th.

All further advances had to be made by the slow, resolute and costly methods of modern siege warfare. On September 15th the Irish Division, which had captured Chocolate Hill, made a charge against the height known as Dublin Hill. The action occurred about four o'clock in the afternoon, and was of a very remarkable character; for, as the Irishmen went out with the bayonet into the saddle between the two crests, the valorous Turks came out to meet them, and there followed a magnificent bayonet fight, in which Irishman and Turk met man to man on equal terms. But the fight did not last long, for in a few minutes the Turks began to give way, and our men captured the crest and shot down their broken, fleeing enemies. Meanwhile, the new army was reorganising for a frontal attack on the Anafarta Hills, after the breakdown on August 10th. Eleven days passed before the work of reorganisation was completed, and in the long interval the Turkish commander was able to bring large fresh forces from the Bulair lines. The enemy strongly entrenched on Hill 70 and Hill 112 to protect the flank of their main position on the Anafarta Ridge. The British general brought forward the Yeomanry Division. One brigade was launched at Hill 70, another at Hill 112, while a third brigade was held in reserve to strengthen the attacks. At the same time the troops holding the trenches in the low land

Irishman v. Turk

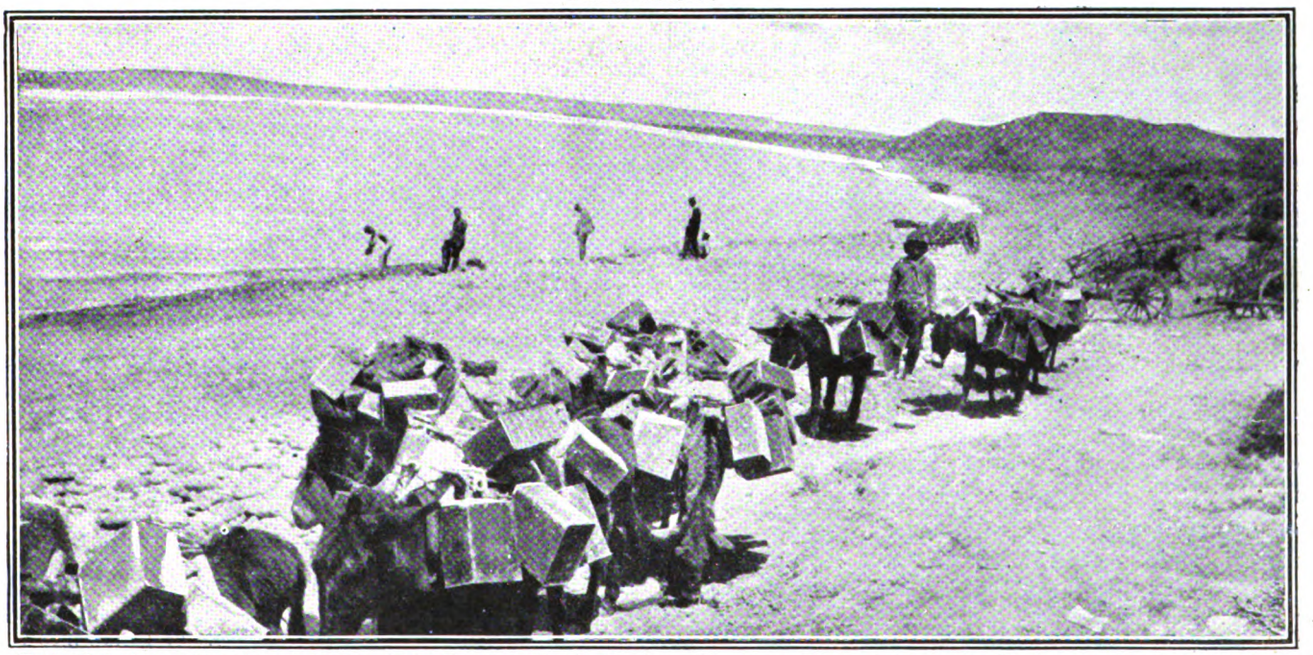
Digitized by Google



Battery of artillery rattling along the Gallipoli shore into action while a party of infantrymen were availing themselves of a brief respite for a refreshing dip in the pleasant waters of the bay.



Men of an Indian mountain battery on Walker's Ridge, Gallipoli, where, in June, 1915, their position was within seventy-five yards of the Turkish trenches.



Train of donkeys laden with a water supply for the troops in the trenches. The water was carried in a miscellaneous assortment of old petrol tins, which had been cleaned for the purpose.

CAMERA SIDELIGHTS ON EVERYDAY LIFE ON THE GALLIPOLI PENINSULA.

Digitized by Google

on the south were ordered to rush the hostile positions immediately opposite them, and to wheel northward against Hill 112 in an outflanking, converging movement.

The action began, at three o'clock in the afternoon on August 21st, by a furious bombardment of the two hills by battleships, cruisers, and land batteries. Yet though the heights were blotted out for half an hour by the smoke of the exploding shells, the deeply entrenched Turkish riflemen were not seriously disturbed; for when the Yeomanry charged up Hill 70, many of the Turks left their cover and, standing boldly up on the crest, poured down a rapid fire and then closed on the British with the bayonet. Yet such was the fighting power of the Yeomanry that they still drove on uphill, and, though held up on the north by machine-guns, they reached the southern top and occupied part of the enemy's trench line. But as they

Our Yeomanry at Hill 70



MEMBERS OF RUSSIAN COMMISSION CONVERSING WITH BRITISH OFFICERS AT SUVLA BAY.

were swarming all over the ground just below the crest, a Turkish battery, hidden behind Hill 112, swept the slopes with salvos of shrapnel at a range of twelve hundred yards. Lines of heroic Yeomanry were suddenly destroyed, and the survivors, after retiring down the slope to some slight cover, fell back to their trenches.

Another battalion then moved out to the attack, with the troops that had been held in reserve. As soon as the men came out in open order by Salt Lake, the enemy batteries swept them with heavy shrapnel fire, but the yeomen pressed on steadily without wavering, and at six o'clock in the evening the second attack on Hill 70 opened. This time our shell fire began to tell on the Turks, and many of them could be seen streaming from the northern knoll, while the Yeomanry, moving forward in a solid mass, formed up under the northern and western slopes. But the attack seemed to hang fire till, as darkness was falling, every yeoman leapt to his feet and the division stormed up the hill at amazing speed and without a single stop. The charging mass reached the crest, bayoneted all the defenders of the trenches, and went down the reverse slopes in pursuit of the fugitives. When complete darkness veiled the scene, it seemed certain that the hill had been won. But there was a knoll on the northern crest, transformed into a machine-gun redoubt, from which the Turks had not been driven; and they there brought to bear so terrible an enfilading fire that the Yeomanry were compelled to withdraw in the darkness.

The attack on Hill 70 had failed. On the right, the advance against Hill 112 was checked by a solid bank of flame, produced among the shrub by the bursting of shells. The extraordinary fire stopped all further development of the attack. It was a day of disasters, relieved only by the successes of the troops at Anzac, where the Australian infantry drove the enemy from Hill 60, a northern foothill of the Sari Bair clump, and enabled our whole front to be linked up with a trench line in place of isolated posts. The general position was further improved in the last week in August by the capture of an important tactical feature commanding the Anafarta valley to the east and north. But though one of the bitterest German military writers, Captain Persius, was moved to remark at the beginning of September, 1915, that "the English landing at Suvla Bay was carried out with surprising success, and it remains remarkable that the enemy has gained a fast footing on three points of the Peninsula," it must be confessed that, from the British point of view, the new landing did not achieve the results which had been expected.

Of the new troops, the Londoners who fought with the Australasians at Sari Bair won the praise of these veterans of Gallipoli; and the Irish Division that captured Chocolate Hill and Dublin Hill was composed of men of great valour; while the Yeomanry Division, though defeated, was glorious even in disaster. On the other hand, there were some new troops that flinched when suddenly thrown into the furnace of battle; and the genius for leadership, which might have repaired the passing hesitation of untried fresh recruits, was not clearly visible throughout the first and decisive phase of the operations. The battle for Anafarta Ridge must be ranked with that of Spion Kop; and at Spion Kop the hostile heights were held by a more numerous force than that which defeated our attempt at Anafarta.

The explanation of our failure seems to be that, as the ground was very rough and difficult, the men had to advance in very open order, becoming separated from each other, and losing touch with their officers. It needed troops highly trained in skirmishing and very self-reliant, with each man eager to push on of his own accord towards the objective, without stopping for orders or waiting to see if his comrades were following him. But these requirements were not fulfilled by the unblooded, unhardened new battalions. It is said that in the Anzac region a large reserve was ready to reinforce the troops who had gained the heights, and was waiting only till the Anzac flank was secured from attack by the forward movement of the Suvla Bay army. But the reserve was not thrown into action, when Hill Q and Chunuk Bair were won, because of the peril of a Turkish turning movement round Asma Dere, where an Australian Division had already been almost surrounded and destroyed. The plan of mastering the Dardanelles broke down at Anafarta, after the enemy had been completely surprised, and when he had only a few battalions of gendarmes to oppose the advance of the British army.

The breakdown at Anafarta

END OF VOLUME 4.

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google

Digitized by Google